



# Law Of The Devil



Chapters 0 - 100

# Law of the Devil

**Chapters 0 - 100**

**Author: Dancing**

**Translate: [Blue Silver Translations](#) - [A013](#) - [Wuxia Translations](#) - [Bcat00](#)**

**Epub: [Henkanepubs](#)**

# Table of Contents

[Law of the Devil](#)

[Chapter 0 - The Earl's Son](#)

[Chapter 1 - Retard](#)

[Chapter 2 - Won't Talk, Can't Fight](#)

[Chapter 3 - The Way of Magic](#)

[Chapter 4 - Magic Retard](#)

[Chapter 5 - Poison Master](#)

[Chapter 6 - Restless Heart](#)

[Chapter 7 - Long Legged Hot Chick](#)

[Chapter 8 - Instant Casting](#)

[Chapter 9 - Rollynn's Seduction Plan](#)

[Chapter 10 - Who Knows!](#)

[Chapter 11 - The Devil Knights](#)

[Chapter 12 - Legendary Clan](#)

[Chapter 13 - The Mysterious Events Of The Rawling Ancestral Residence](#)

[Chapter 14 - The Treasure In The Study I](#)

[Chapter 15 - The Mightiest Female Astrologer](#)

[Chapter 16 - Intractable Problem](#)

[Chapter 17 - Three Hundred Gold Coins](#)

[Chapter 18 - A Different Path](#)

[Chapter 19 - Beginning! The Devil's Road!](#)

[Chapter 20 \(a\) - Half Horn City's Magic Beast Incident](#)

[Chapter 20 \(b\) - Half Horn City's Magic Beast Incident II](#)

[Chapter 21 - Moon Clan's Secret Technique](#)

[Chapter 22 - Terror Illusion Goblin](#)

[Chapter 23 - Pitiful Vivian Young](#)

[Chapter 24 - Vivian's Sister](#)

[Chapter 25 \(a\) - Sisters' Battle \(Beginning\)](#)

[Chapter 25 \(b\) - Sisters' Battle \(Ending\)](#)

[Chapter 26 - The Scary Outside World](#)

[Chapter 27 - Don't Work Anymore](#)

[Chapter 28 - Political Influence](#)

[Chapter 29 - Night Of Romance](#)

[Chapter 30 - Roar in the Island](#)

[Chapter 31 - Duwei's Return](#)

[Chapter 32 - Monster](#)

[Chapter 33 - The World Of Three People](#)

[Chapter 34 - Leaving the Magical Island](#)

[Chapter 35 - Open Sesame](#)

[Chapter 36 - The Servant](#)

[Chapter 37 - The Legend](#)

[Chapter 38 - Heart of a king](#)

[Chapter 39 - Bless of God](#)

[Chapter 40 - Duwei's First Fleet](#)

[Chapter 41 - Captain Jack Sparrow](#)

[Chapter 42 - Duwei's Plan to Wealth](#)

[Chapter 43 - Goodbye Kiss](#)

[Chapter 44 - A Figure Comes Out of the Oil Painting](#)

[Chapter 45 - The Unusual Saimel](#)

[Chapter 46 - Solskjaer's Fire Element](#)

[Chapter 47 - Treasures in the Secret Room](#)

[Chapter 48 - Gambling with the Army](#)

[Chapter 49 - Becoming Sturdy](#)

[Chapter 50 - Playing Big](#)

[Chapter 51 - Mard Is Flying](#)

[Chapter 52 - Visit of the Magic Teacher](#)

[Chapter 53 - Vivian's Teacher](#)

[Chapter 54 - Frozen Forest, the Monster World](#)

[Chapter 55 - Frozen Forest, the Monster World II](#)

[Chapter 56 - Zombie Monster & Golden Eyed Python](#)

[Chapter 57 - The Richest Widow in the Empire](#)

[Chapter 58 - Snow Wolf Mercenary Group](#)

[Chapter 59 - The Fate of the Adventurers](#)

[Chapter 60 - Big Circle Lake](#)

[Chapter 61 - Semel's Presage](#)

[Chapter 62 - Big Circle Lake Murder](#)

[Chapter 63 - Semel's Appearance](#)

[Chapter 64 - Charnel on the Snow](#)

[Chapter 65 - Gift from the Holy Knight](#)

[Chapter 66](#)

[Chapter 67](#)

[Chapter 68 - Battle Between Magic and Sword](#)

[Chapter 69 - Chrono Trigger](#)

[Chapter 70](#)

[Chapter 71](#)

[Chapter 72](#)

[Chapter 73](#)

[Chapter 74](#)

[Chapter 75](#)

[Chapter 76 - Him!](#)

[Chapter 77 - Evil EyeTyrant](#)

[Chapter 78 - The Animal Kingdom?](#)

[Chapter 79 - The Magician That Turned Into A Rat](#)

[Chapter 80 - Queen Medusa](#)

[Chapter 81 - TheSide EffectsOf TheFountainOfYouth](#)

[Chapter 82 - Strange Palace](#)

[Chapter 83 - Test Of Medusa](#)

[Chapter 84 - I'mLonely](#)

[Chapter 85 - Hussein's Metamorphosis](#)

[Chapter 86 - The SecondSpring!](#)

[Chapter 87 - Poison Of Time](#)

[Chapter 88 - Close To The Answer](#)

[Chapter 89 - Saint-Roland](#)

[Chapter 90 - Rejected Transaction](#)

[Chapter 91 - Enemies](#)

[Chapter 92 - Origin](#)

[Chapter 93 - Great Prophecy Skill \(Part One\)](#)

[The 94th Chapter "Forgotten Ice Field: The Last Barrier" \(Part One\)](#)

[The 94th Chapter "The Forgotten Ice Field: The Last Barrier" \(Part Two\)](#)

[The 95th Chapter "Mountain"](#)

[The 96th Chapter "Du Wei's Speculation"](#)

[The 97th Chapter “Dragon Clan’s Cave” \(Part One\)](#)

[The 97th chapter “Dragon clan’s Cave” \(part two\)](#)

[The 98th chapter “The Dragon Patriarch’s hatred”](#)

[The 99th Chapter “Despicable Aragon” \(Part One\)](#)

[The 99th Chapter “Despicable Aragon – Open Or Not To Open” \(Part Two\)](#)

[The 100th Chapter “Aragon’s Heavenly Beast” \(Part One\)](#)

[The 100th Chapter “Aragon’s Heavenly Beast” \(Part Two\)](#)

# Chapter 0 - The Earl's Son

As we look back upon history, we will often find that under the surging current of history, even the wisest leaders find it hard to keep their heads over water.

—— 《Imperial Chronicles, chapter 35, note 7 —— Pertaining to reflections on the Roland Era 12》

• ;

On this summertime afternoon, the scorching sun hanging in the sky still mercilessly radiated heat. For the sake of a welcoming ceremony for a triumphant return, countless scarlet armored guards already encircled pier one in the harbor so tightly that not even a drop of water could trickle through.

And for a hundred paces around the pier were hard pressed imperial capital public security soldiers exerting all their strength. A large number of them had ripped clothes, shiny epaulets torn off, impressive hats pulled away, even their boots had been stepped on countless times.

What made the one thousand public security soldiers who had been ordered to the harbor to ensure order feel helpless, was that the enemy they confronted was more than fifty thousand enthusiastic imperial capital residents.

The crowd of citizens brimming with enthusiasm was armed with flowers, cheers, applause —— and of course, a very large number of young women ready to offer their own kisses or even chastity. In this kind of uproar, the one thousand public security soldiers felt as if they were in a broken boat at sea, about to capsize at any moment.

Right now they were extremely envious of the guardsmen on the dock, who could leisurely arrange themselves into formation, showing off their recently acquired brightly polished weapons and armor, and didn't have to worry about having their cheeks grabbed by zealous citizens at any time.

For the sake of this triumphant return celebration, his majesty the great emperor Augustine VI had ordered for the Azure Grand Canal that lead to the imperial capital river district to be widened to twice its former size! For this reason the Empire had invested ten thousand river workers for half a year,



paying close to three million gold pieces.

And the reason for this investment was to let the imperial 6th Expeditionary Fleet flagship HMS Red Eastern pass unhindered directly to the imperial capital east gate harbor, receiving the acclaim of the people and demonstrating the might of the imperial military.

Nobody cared about whether this flaunting was worth such a cost.

Because the first imperial finance minister who had raised objections had been immediately 'retired' to the countryside by the angry emperor. And the succeeding finance minister's only option had been to rack his brains and search from east to west to squeeze out the last bit of coin from the imperial finances and satisfy that "extravagant old man".

Of course, the finance minister could only bury that appellation "extravagant old man" deep within his heart, very deep, veeery deep.....

As the afternoon sun warmed the wide surface of the canal, when the first trace of a sail appeared in the distance, the crowd was unable to restrain their cheers.

Along the river an enormous two hundred paces long warship slowly approached the harbor, its awe-inspiring outline shocking everyone in the waiting crowd.

The imperial 6th expeditionary fleet flagship 'HMS Red Eastern', the pride of the imperial navy, the most enormous warship in history. For the sake of this welcoming ceremony the warship had already been repainted and overhauled, the hull lacquered an intimidating black. Amidst wave after wave of cheering, HMS Red Eastern slowly approached the harbor like a massive black beast, the bramble blossom flag fluttering on its masts.

As the ship dropped anchor, the tens of thousands of people waiting were already boiling, countless hats were thrown into the air, countless shoes were stepped on and lost, countless legs were bruised in the jostling. And those pitiful public security soldiers resisting with the best of their abilities could only watch their cordon shrink, and shrink again.....

The imperial expeditionary fleet commander, earl Lehman, stood at the prow

of the ship, expressionlessly watching the cheering crowd.

This thirty nine years old imperial first class general, imperial earl, wore his grandest attire, a set of full body light armor, a scarlet cape fluttering behind him in the wind, two medals on his chest — awarded for the previous two times he had participated in the expeditionary fleets. And no doubt this triumphant return would award him a third imperial medal.

The earl's gaze was somewhat slack, not at all focused on the cheering crowd in the port, and if observed closely one would discover that his brows were slightly wrinkled, seemingly a bit impatient.

Damn it, this armor is too heavy, and too ridiculous!

As a navy soldier, the earl didn't believe that wearing such heavy armor was suitable for naval combat. It was all a show on behest of the military. As for wearing these medals, the earl secretly thought the whole idea even more ridiculous. Just like the newly rich flaunting their wealth — true nobility wouldn't deign to do something like that. He felt such an act was beneath his dignity.

Moreover, the cheering crowd below was really too noisy, their acclaim was like a tsunami hitting the wave breakers, wave after wave eroding the earl's already worn patience.

Subconsciously he looked down at the deck.

For the sake of just this welcoming ceremony the HMS Red Eastern had already been repainted three days ago, the old bloodstains on the deck removed. The deck plants worn in the expeditionary battles had already been relaid, and even the bow ram had been replaced..... Damn it, those bootlicking courtly bastards had actually replaced the ram with a figurehead in his majesty's likeness, and reportedly this statue had been carved by an imperial master sculptor and delivered personally a few days before.

For this the imperial navy had paid an extra ten thousand gold coins.

Martial grandeur was martial grandeur. But didn't those idiots know that in naval combat, after warships collided, the first thing destroyed was the bow ram?

It seemed to him that this ten thousand gold coin expenditure was a waste. Instead of the work of a master sculptor, a sharpened stake would have a more practical effect.

In fact, deep down, earl Lehman secretly thought that even arranging this so-called 6th expeditionary fleet was a preposterous beyond belief strategic error.

For several decades the Empire had been repeatedly conducting “expeditions” into the south sea region.

He couldn't deny that there were countless islands in the south seas, casually sprinkled like pearls in the ocean, with strange forests, with barbarous stone age level aboriginal tribes, with gold, gems, spices, bounty of the sea.

But the earl couldn't consider 'going off with a dozen massive warships to bully aboriginal tribal kayaks' was anything that could be called an 'expedition'.

It was plundering, it was massacre, it was robbery, it was invasion, it was bare-faced looting!

The earl didn't believe there was anything wrong with this. The weak would always be eaten by the strong, so the weak had to maintain a servile attitude to the strong. But he believed the mistake in the imperial policy for the south seas was this: these operations called 'expeditions' were conducted far too frequently, and the results obtained became smaller and smaller.

In the first two or three expeditions, the mighty imperial navy had been invincible, when ship after ship had returned with gold, gems, spices and marine goods, it had caused a sensation across the Empire.

But after all, even an abundant granary couldn't stand repeated harvest. Excessive plundering had annihilated the aboriginal tribes near the coast, and the following expeditionary forces had no choice but to head further and further out, their routes extending, an immense trial for fleet supplies.

After all, the south seas didn't just consist of easily bullied tribals, not just gold and gems, but also stifling hot climate, rapidly changing weather, terrifying giant waves, as well as countless reefs, maelstroms, storms.....

The interim harvests had turned what was originally the Empire's granary into a desolate and overgrown field. Each time the harvest of later expeditions grew

less. But ironically, each time the triumphant return ceremonies grew more magnificent.....

Earl Lehman had had commanded the three expeditions in the last several years, gaining this earl a resounding reputation in the south seas. This imperial navy general had a series of nicknames in the south seas:

Robber! Butcher! Executioner! ..... His hands were covered in aboriginal blood, in the hearts of the aboriginal clans he was an egregious invader, a demon who burned their homes, enslaved their people.

Of course the earl wouldn't care about this, but one thing that made him a little uneasy was that the excessive invasions had already provoked some abnormal developments among these aboriginals, especially in a military aspect. Even to the extent that before he returned this time, he had heard of some aboriginal island nations already forming a so-called coalition in the most distant regions of the south seas, in order to withstand the Empire's endless plundering.

Fortunately, this particular vexation wasn't anything he had to worry about anymore. He knew full well that this was his last expedition. From now on he would stay at the imperial capital, and if everything went well, take up an illustrious position at the imperial high command, spending eight or ten years until the current military affairs chancellor retired, then using his clan's influence to succeed him. If he had a bit of luck, perhaps he could even take up a political career in his later years, trying for prime minister.

As for expeditions, fuck it. That was the headache of the next expeditionary fleet commander.

Even if those aboriginals developed to where they could build magic cannons, it still wasn't his problem.

In a wave of fervent cheering, descended from the deck under the attentive gazes of the entire crowd, and finally he again stood on the soil of the imperial capital! He waved at the crowd..... but this motion was more like waving off a fly.

First of all an official attired as a courtly attendant read out loud the emperor's commendations from the deck, and instructed him to enter the imperial palace early the next morning to receive his awards.

His wishes were fulfilled, his political prospects were bright.

But the next grey clothed servant pushing through the crowd, whispering another piece of news by his ear, dropped earl Lehman's heart to the ground.

It was news from home.

The expedition had been away for years, on the boundless sea where news travelled with difficulty. Lehman still didn't know what the circumstances were at home.

Most important was his wife and child. Three years ago when he left on the campaign, his wife was already close to giving birth, and he still didn't even know if it was a boy or a girl!

The news from home was: A boy.

But, the newborn boy was, apparently, a retard.

This one piece of bad news instantly knocked him down from the peak of happiness.

One piece of bad news!

Practically every bigwig in the imperial capital had come to welcome him, and they all saw his expression descend to critical mass of depression.

# Chapter 1 - Retard

When Duwei Roland was just born, no one dared to call him retarded. He was once so far as to be considered a genius of the Roland family.

Three years ago, when Duwei was born into the Earl Roland family, he gave a scare to the midwives. Because he never cried or make a sound.

He never needed an adult to coax him. His life is more normal than a regular adult, waking up at a consistent time, open his mouth when the meals come, and go to bed at night. Aside from opening his mouth to eat, no sound came out from his mouth. The only thing he did everyday is stare into open space.

He also rarely wet his bed, because he learned to pull the bell next to his crib. After a while, everytime he pulled the bell, the maids will come to help him. This act convinced the Roland family that the little master is a genius at such a young age.

However, this title only lasted less than half a year... because he never talked.

Children his age would have learned to speak simple words, such as “papa, mama”. But Duwei’s mouth is like sealed with a curse. No matter how much the Earl’s wife taught him, not a single sound came out of his mouth.

Even someone born mute can still hum a few sounds. But this little master is as silent as a rock. When he’s cold, hungry, needs to use the toilet, he will only pull the bell.

The Earl’s wife hired many respectable doctors, and even a few magicians to see if he’s cursed. But it was to no avail. In the end, even the optimistic Earl’s wife became sad. It seems her son is indeed retarded.

Fortunately, Duwei can walk at age three. Even though it’s half crawling, half

walking, this is no different from other children.

During a stormy night a month ago, a major event happened in the Earl's mansion.

Duwei crawled out from his room to the courtyard when the maids weren't looking. He just stood there looking at the sky. Rain was pouring on him, and even thunder did not scare him. He clenched his fists as shouted at to the sky.

The little master that hadn't made a sound in three years finally opened his mouth. He kept on shouting until the servants found him. He was soaking wet. His body was cold and shivering. His face pale.

The Earl's wife came at an instant after hearing it. Then she fainted. When she woke up, she held onto her son and wept. The doctors fed him various medicines. Even two light magicians were hired to use healing spells on him.

But the little master's body got colder and colder. His mother ran to the temple of the Goddess of Light and fetch a priest. The priest casted a blessing on Duwei. And the Earl's wife kneeled in front of the Goddess statue the whole night praying for her son.

It wasn't until the next day when the boy's body started to warm up. At least his life is saved. He remained unconscious for another day. The Earl's wife held onto him this whole time, and barely ate anything herself. After two days, her face had withered.

Then Duwei said something on his sleep. It seems to be sleep talk. Nobody can understand what it meant. But since the little master never learned to talk, it may be just nonsense sounds a baby makes.

However the Earl's wife was delighted. After listening to Duwei carefully, she asked the maids, "Is there someone called Mard that took care of Duwei?"

“Madam, there isn’t a servant by that name.”

The servants searched through the whole mansion. Then they found a stable hand by that name. The Earl’s wife summoned him immediately.

“My son was saying your name in his sleep, Mard. I don’t know why he said it. Perhaps it’s a prophesy from the Goddess of Light. From this day on, you no longer work in the stable. You will serve the little master by his side.”

Mard was delighted. He suddenly went from a lowly stable hand to the little master’s servant. He can see the light in his future.

Though Duwei didn’t know. He was only enraged and shouted against the Gods that day. He got soaked by rain and almost lost his life. He also didn’t know he was simply cursing “Fuck” during his sleep, and someone had benefited hugely from it.

Duwei’s injury lasted a whole month. That little fragile body of his became even weaker. It wasn’t until a month before his face became less pale. But the days became just like before. The little master still doesn’t talk. He even paid no attention to Mard. He stared into empty space every day. However, sometimes the maids talked about how the Earl’s wife held onto him for two days without sleep and rest, and kneeled in front of the Goddess statue for a whole night...

After that when the Earl’s wife came to see her son, there was a hint of emotion in his eyes, a hint of warmth.



# Chapter 2 - Won't Talk, Can't Fight

The day of triumphant return.

The imperial capital was basked in celebration. However the Earl's mansion was the totally opposite. It was a dead silence. No celebration party, no welcoming ceremony, not even a simple dinner.

The Earl hurried back to his mansion, and rejected to see some guests, with the reason that after three years out in the war, he needed some personal space with his family.

Even though this disappointed the guests, no one can refute this reason.

Inside the Earl's mansion, the kingdom's hero and his son were staring at each other.

The look of his eyes were deep, depressing, and complex. If he didn't firmly believe that his wife never cheated. The moment the Earl see the child, he questioned if this is really his son.

The boy's face and build is vastly different from the Earl. The men in the Roland family were famous for their image of masculinity. A typical Roland man will have a big body, a wide chest, bulked arms, squared face, the look of a hero. At least the Earl looked like this.

But this little guy...

Even though he's only three years old, he's too white, and skinny. I heard he had an injury a month ago, perhaps that's the explanation.

The three year old Earl's heir, Duwei Roland, looked at his father with indifferent eyes. He didn't cry like children his age. This disappointed the Earl. According to

customs, the louder a child cries, the stronger they will become.

Yet, this boy was a little too quiet. He just sat on his bed, with hands on his knees, and stared at me with a bit of curiosity and inspection.

The Earl thought to himself, I must be wrong at judging, how can a child's eyes have such complex feelings?

While the Earl was a little gloomy, Duwei's feelings were more complex.

The Earl's wife had soften Duwei's heart with the events that happened. But this 'father' that suddenly appeared...

"He... really can't talk?" The Earl asked his wife with a stern expression. Tears started filling up her eyes. Seeing this the Earl's expression softened. He thought to himself, he left for three years, leaving his wife alone. A woman needed her husband the most when she was about to give birth. And he was not able to be by her side. And their son became like this, there's nothing to blame on this poor woman.

The Earl said softly, "Honey, we will hire the wisest teacher in the kingdom. He will be able to speak one day. But his body is too weak. The Roland family built their reputation through battles and victories. And my son will follow my path to become a general. He can't be this weak. He's already three, I think it's time we find him an instructor. After a few years of training his body should bulk up. What do you think about Alpha? He's my most royal guard. His combat skills are high, and he's loyal to the family. I think starting next month, we can have Alpha teach Duwei some basic training techniques."

Upon hearing her poor son will have to train at such an early age, tears poured down the mother's eyes. "But.. he's still so young."

"Due to his body is weaker than most people, he has to take up training at an early age. Otherwise how can he inherit the Roland family!" The Earl took his

position firm and that was decided.

The second day, after seeing the king and receiving his third rank 1 medal, the king promoted Earl Raymond Roland as the kingdom's vice general.

Raymond Roland's son is retarded, this is not a secret in the imperial city. Everyone can see the gloom on the Earl's face during the celebration ceremony.

In the Mansion, the Earl and his son were staring at each other the second time. However, the Earl's wife is not here this time around. The only outsider is Alpha.

Earl Raymond had an unexplainable dislike to his child. He felt that the gaze in the child's eyes are not blank, there's a hint of resistance. Then he thought to himself, what can a three year old know? And he was away to war since the child was born. He never even held the boy once. It is only natural for the boy to see himself as a stranger.

Alpha stood in front of Duwei's bed and held him up. He took off the boy's clothes and touched him from top to body. Duwei resisted but his efforts were futile. The strength of a first rank swordsman isn't something he can resist.

Alpha gave out a sigh and put Duwei down. Then he said to the Earl, "Master Earl, I..."

"Alpha, you are my most trusted person. Don't hesitate too much and say whatever's on your mind."

"Master Duwei's body is very weak, and it seems like he was born.. deficient. A body like this is worse than a commoner's. If he he's going down the path of a warrior, I am afraid he won't accomplish much."

"Then what do you think?"

"Why don't we see if he has talent in other fields."

And with that, the Earl's face darkened.

The Earl was disappointed for a few days. But under his wife's comforting words, he cheered up a bit. After all, this is his only son.

The Roland's reputation were warriors. However, in history, there was one or two known for their intelligence in the battlefield. These ancestors didn't fare well in combat, but they can command the army and control the battlefield.

If he can't learn to combat, then let's educate him in literature.

How can a child that didn't know how to speak learn literature? Even if you hire the wisest scholar in the kingdom, you have to at least make the child talk first.

Differing from the Earl's wife, Earl Raymond had a feeling that his son knew how to talk, but he didn't want to talk. The more he saw his son, the more he felt that the child isn't retarded, rather someone that rejected this world.

The Earl put up huge rewards around the imperial city. No matter anyone's background, whoever can make his child speak a word will be rewarded 1000 gold.

A wide variety of people came to try out. Even a few bards from far away. These people tried everything from playing a flute in front of Duwei for a whole afternoon, to banging next to his ears, to scaring him when he wasn't cautious, even one wanted to throw the boy into a river, thinking he will ask for help, of course the last one was thrown out of the mansion.

The whole event became a hot topic in the imperial city. Yet, this difficult question was accidentally solved by a servant. And the his name? Mard.

Mard was a simple old man. The method he came up with was to bring Duwei to the stable. Normal children would be interested in animals. This method was

simple but there's no risk to a try anyway. So the Earl agreed.

Upon entering the stable...

The stable hand that took over Mard's job was being lazy the past few days and hadn't cleaned it. So when Mard and Duwei walked in, a horrible stink rushed to their nose. They ran out as soon as possible.

Duwei muttered in reaction, "That shit stinks."

And with that Mard was rewarded 1000 gold, the stable hand got 20 gold for not cleaning.

"He is your teacher from this day on." The Earl said to his son while pointing at an old man in white robe. "This is Mr. Rosia. He has the title of Star Reader (people that can tell the future by reading the stars), he's also proficient in history."

In the beginning, Mr. Rosia completed his job remarkably. After a year's teaching, Duwei can already write. Even though it's not too rare for a child to know how to write at four, it's still uncommon.

For a while, the Earl thought maybe his child is a genius?

However, when Duwei reached five. Mr. Rosia encountered a difficult problem. That night he had a conversation with the Earl.

"Master Earl, please hire someone else." Mr. Rosia said with a face of defeat. "Your son is a genius. An old man like me doesn't have the energy to teach such students."

Seeing the scholar's face, Earl's heart dropped a beat. He can guess what the scholar meant by genius. Even if the wise scholar can't teach his son, then...

“But, Mr. Rosia...”

“No, no. Master Earl, please don’t ask me to stay. I am not qualified for such a difficult job.” The scholar said it with a firm voice.

The Earl let out a sigh, is it such a difficult task to teach my son? If Mr. Rosia can’t do it then there’s no one else I can rely on.

The scholar felt unease. Words like “The sun and the moon are two big spheres,” can be seen as a child’s thoughts. But then when a five year old said “Centralization of political power is the cause of corruption,” scared the scholar so much, his heart almost stopped pounding.

In fact, after teaching Duwei for a whole year, the scholar knew that he isn’t retarded like the rumors said. He was very smart, more so than children on his age. But opinions like political power can’t come from a child no matter what. So the scholar assumed that those were the words of the Earl, and the child overheard it. The Earl has huge military power and is the second person in command of the whole army. If such a person is not content with the royal house then...

Mr. Rosia is just a scholar. He didn’t want to be part of a political war.

The Earl finally agreed to let the scholar leave. The Earl thought to himself, is my son really hopeless?

Duwei was standing by the window in his room when he watched as the scholar left.

“Little master.”

“Mard, do you think ignorance is a blessing?”

Mard didn’t know how to respond. He was not educated in any bit, so when his

little master asked, there's no way for him to know the answer. Ignorance? Is the little master troubling over himself?

"Whatever." Duwei turned his head around. His little face with fatigue.

Relative to this world, I know too much. I know why the sun and moon exist, why there are days and nights, why there are four seasons. Perhaps in this world, ignorance is a bless.

# Chapter 3 - The Way of Magic

Rumors spread throughout the imperial city. The retarded child of the Roland family made his teach left.

People were happy to talk about unfortunate things happening around such a significant person.

Earl Raymond also made a mistake when he offered the quest to find people to make his child talk. That event made Duwei famous throughout the city and became the topic of entertainment.

This day, the Earl went to see his son again. And accompanying him is a man in gray robe, gray pointed hat, with skinny fingers, and clouded eyes. This man emitted an unpleasant smell of rot and old.

“Magician Clark, this is my son.” The Earl said politely. “Can you see if he has any talent in the path of magic, even a little bit?”

If magicians are a job, then this job is the one of the most prestigious. In any place in this world, magicians is a symbol of elitists. They have the privileges of the nobility, they receive the best treatments. A strong magician can rival a small army during a war. Any country will want to recruit magicians, not just for their ability, but they also won’t threaten those in power. A magician spends most of his life in research and meditation to accumulate mana. Almost all of them has no desires of the common people. Their biggest goal is to seek the truth of magic.

But the Earl didn’t want his son to become a magician. Because magicians were feared by everyone, as monsters. They were too logical, solitary, weird, and drown in their research. No woman will like to have a relationship with a monster that dwells in his laboratory. No nobility will invite a cold magician to parties. And no kings will give a magician political power.



Duwei was the heir of the Roland family. He needed to marry, have his children, participate in social engagements of the nobles. Yet what can he do if he can't become a warrior or scholar? The path of magic is the only one left.

The Earl led Clark and his son into a concealed room.

"Listen kid." Clark took out a little bottle and poured out a bit of golden powder into his finger tip. He drew a circle around the room and looked at Duwei. "I casted a seal. No one will be able to hear our conversation here. Now tell me kid, what do you think is magic?"

What is magic? Duwei hesitated at this question. He's very curious about the magic in this world. After all, there were so many fancy legends about magic. But his impression of magic revolves around chanting a spell, then magical things happen.

Seeing as Duwei remained silent, Clark laughed at himself and thought this question was probably too deep for a child. "Magic is the power given to humans by God. It's the path for humans to reach the ultimate power. To understand themselves, understand this world, and reach the biggest gift God gave humans."

Clark's voice sounded sacred. However this did not affect Duwei. He remained silent and expressionless. Clark took out a crystal ball from under his robe.

"Spiritual power is used to measure if a person has the talent for magic, although it's not the only standard, it's the most important one. Now, let me measure your talent in mana."

"Spiritual power? Mana? Aren't magicians the only one with mana?" Duwei finally opened his mouth.

"Who told you such inaccurate statements? The Roland mansion doesn't even

have anyone with common sense? Spiritual power is what normal people says, we magicians call it mana. Magicians can use meditation techniques to increase our mana, then use it to observe this world, observe the secrets of nature, and all kinds of energy in nature. Only people with high enough mana can achieve this. Magic is the use of techniques to control the energy of nature with mana.

“I understand. Spiritual power is mana, and mana is a kind of lever. Magicians use this level to borrow the power of nature.”

“Hard to believe this comes out from a five year old. You are smart, why do they call you retarded?”

Duwei didn't answer his question and just stared at Clark. Clark didn't want to waste his time on such questions either and moved on.

“The nature contains many elements. Every one of them is a source of power. Rain, thunder, blizzard, wind, even the movements of the sun and moon, life and death of plants. A great magician can observe all the little elements. Your metaphor with lever is interesting. As you said, when your lever is bigger, you can maneuver a higher amount of energy.”

“So that's how it is. I thought a magician's power came from within his body.”

“I have to question, who taught you such non sense. Even a magic student knows that common sense. A human's power is limited. No matter how strong you are, there's a limit. But magicians can do what normal people can't. Yet, that isn't from their own power. Through magic the borrow power from nature. And in this world, God created us and the world. So when we are using magic, we are using the power of God. Remember, God created human. Human can't ever possess power equal to God. That is a taboo.”

“I am curious. Why does the Roland family has someone like you that doesn't have any common sense. I warn you not to say that power comes from a magician's body again. You will be burned in front of the temple. Because your

words questioned God.”

Duwei remained silent again.

# Chapter 4 - Magic Retard

Clark was satisfied with the child's reaction. He took a look at the crystal ball and said, "Come, let me see if you have talent. I agreed to teach you but you must have talent. Otherwise..."

"What should I do?"

"Put your hand on the crystal ball and hold it tight. Then think of something, whether it be happiness or anger. Something that can stir up your emotions. Now let me see your talent."

Duwei took two steps forward and put his hands on the crystal ball. His hands felt the cold and smoothness.

"Concentrate, now, think. Try your best to think of your most profound memory." Clark's voice sounded next to Duwei.

Duwei closed his eyes and began searching through his memory. Clark saw the crystal ball began to glow. It began with a faint glow but slowly brighten up. The magician looked astounded. He moved his eyes to Duwei and, "Hmm?"

Duwei wasn't feeling well at the moment. He's feeling agitated thinking of his past. He somehow ended up in another world. All the efforts that he made, his dream, his life, his goals, everything was gone. As he spent more time here, and as he adapted to this world, those memories were slowly fading away. A human's memory will fade, this is a normal phenomenon, yet Duwei still felt a sense of sadness.

Duwei's started to breathe rapidly. The crystal ball has a mysterious power to amplify his emotions. He could feel his heart pounding, as if it is being pressured.

Finally, a hand touched his head. A cooling sensation came from the hand and calmed his head.

“That’s ok, my child.” Clark’s voice was indifferent, but he addressed Duwei as my child instead of kid. Which means he’s satisfied with Duwei’s talent.

“Not bad.. You are not even six years old, but you have the talent of a magic student. Your mana is almost twice as a normal person. And considering your age, I am quite satisfied.”

Clark put away the crystal ball then pointed Duwei to sit down. “Now we are measuring your second talent. I will teach you the simplest magic. I want you to meditate and feel the power of nature. Then tell me what do you feel.”

Duwei memorised the chant Clark taught him. It had a simple but strange pronunciation.

“Meditate with your heart and concentrate. This is a crucial step. Many people more talented than you did not pass this step.”

“What should I do?”

“You don’t have to do anything. Just chant the spell silently, then feel your surrounding. Feel the heat, the cold, or sound, anything will do.”

Clark took out an hourglass and waited.

After a while, Duwei opened his eyes and said. “Mr. magician”

“Oh, What did you feel?”

“I...I am feeling hungry.”

“ ... ”

Clark was disappointed with this answer. This child has excellent mana talent, but not a delicate heart to observe the world.

Mana is of course important but not the only standard. You can also improve mana by meditating. Those born with a more mana only started the path at a higher level. But being able to feel the magical elements in nature was the crucial part.

Clark taught a few students. Some of their mana talent were not as strong as Duwei. Yet, one of them could hear the sound of wind within half the hourglass's time. He later became a magician focused on wind magic.

Those with real talent will be able to produce something in this step. In other words, Duwei was not suited to become a magician. It was such a pity.

When the Earl see Clark's face as he came out, he knew the result.

“Earl Raymond, I am sorry your son doesn't have the talent to become a magician. It seems like God didn't choose him. You should find him another path.” He paused for a moment then said, “During my thirty six years of research, I have never seen someone like your son.”

Clark gave out a sigh then began to leave. After a few steps, he added, “Oh, and if he really wants to become a magician, this is only my suggestion, you can let him choose alchemy. Alchemy is at least considered a branch of magic.”

Clark waved his hand then sprinkled some golden powder. His body disappeared in a ball of fire.

The Earl's face was filled with disappointment when Duwei came out of the room. Never seen someone like him in thirty six years, how untalented is his

son for the magician to say this.

He was identified as having no warrior talent, then made a scholar leave, and now a magician. The result is Duwei once again became the topic of conversation in the city.

Where does his future lie? This question troubled everyone of the Roland family... aside from Duwei himself.

## Chapter 5 - Poison Master

Continuous disappointments struck the Earl. Then he started to put in more effort.

Not to be mistaken, he had no intention of putting more effort on his son. The Earl put this effort on his wife. If this son had no future, then he wouldn't be able to inherit the Roland family and carry forward the legacy of the family. Then he would have to try and have another child.

The Earl's effort on his wife paid off. After a month, The Earl's wife was pregnant and in the next winter, Earl Raymond got his second son.

While the whole mansion was celebrating, Duwei was in his room reading about alchemy. Thank the gods the last sentence Clark said to the Earl had an effect.

For a few months the Earl didn't come to see Duwei. Even the Earl's wife didn't come often due to her pregnancy. The day after his little brother was born, the servants led Duwei to see his mother and brother.

The Earl seemed pleased. This son was crying loudly like a normal child.

Earl Raymond didn't take an extra look at Duwei, after having him see his brother, he waved him away. The Earl's wife felt a little bad for Duwei, but the newborn's crying occupied all her attention.

Duwei left the room. Behind him was the Earl's laughter and the baby's crying. Even though his heart was already numb, he still felt a bit of disappointment.

He reminded himself: Stop thinking. You do not belong to this world. He's not your father. And she's... she's not...



Thinking of that stormy night, when this woman kneeled in front of the statue the whole night. Duwei felt a little sad, but shook his head. He ignored everything and put all his thoughts into studying.

Duwei couldn't deny it, he's still very interested in magic. Even though that Clark disapproved of his talent, he's not willing to accept it. Maybe there's still a chance.

The Earl's mansion had a large collection of books, quite a few of them about magic. After reading through all those books, Duwei finally had to accept that Clark was not wrong. He didn't have the talent to become a magician. Even if he sat there and meditate the whole day, he wouldn't feel a bit of magical elements. And one time, he fell asleep.

Then Duwei turned his focus to alchemy. Because alchemy can be considered a branch of magic, and alchemists were barely considered magicians. Yet after inquiring around, he found out what it meant by barely. Even though alchemists were acknowledged as magicians, no one took them seriously because they couldn't use magic.

His analogy of this was, if you compare this to the medical field, real magicians were doctors, and alchemists were nurses.

But after researching into alchemy, Duwei's interest peaked. It was an interesting field. Like when you add a Duoluoge frog's eye ball, to the Kuai plant, you get something that can make people mute for a while.

However, all those plants and animals mentioned in the books were new to Duwei. This seemed like the chemistry of this world.

As days pass by, Duwei indulged himself in alchemy. But he was still stuck on theories. After all, the various ingredients were difficult to obtain even for the Roland family.

Only real magicians will have those ingredients in the laboratory. And in the field of magic, alchemists were usually assistants to magicians. Furthermore, no one would like a child get in touch with those dangerous ingredients.

Six years passed. Duwei's little brother Jibri grew up to be like a typical Roland. At six years old he started taking sword lessons from Alpha. And he had received favorable comments. Everyone in the mansion thought of him as the Roland family's hope. Earl Raymond also decided to teach Jibri qi once he turns eight.

Everyone from the servants, to guards, to the father loved Jibri. The Earl also planned to engage him to a girl of nobility at this age.

All the while Duwei was forgotten. The Earl rarely met with him every month. Only his mother would come over. Some nights she would held onto this poor child and sing lullaby for him to sleep. Only at times like this would Duwei's heart soften. Sometimes he had to fake sleep to avoid tearing up.

Finally when Duwei was thirteen and Jibri seven, the Earl decided to teach Jibri qi starting next year, and he also engaged Jibri to the daughter of the kingdom's financial advisor, aged 9.

Although rumors said this engagement was already decided before Jibri was born. However, the one to marry her was originally Duwei. Yet, due to his disappointments to both families, that person was changed to his little brother, someone more talented.

One night, Duwei rode the carriage and left the imperial city. His destination was the Roland's feudal territory in the far south of the kingdom. The reason being he's old enough to manage family business. But Duwei knew that he was banished.

Managing the family's business? What a joke. Every knew their most important business was in the imperial city. Until the Earl summon him, he would likely not ever come back to the imperial city again.

## Chapter 6 - Restless Heart

In this evening, a fancy horse drawn carriage slowly rode across a road in the Kete province. This carriage was made with first class materials, with a symbol carved on it, an iris wrapped around two crossing swords, a crown on top of the hilts. Two swords meant that this family once had a marshal served the king, and the crown meant they were blood related to the royal family.

There were ten knights in light armor surrounding the car. Although the armors are of good quality, the knights weren't high in spirits. Mard sat next to the carriage driver with a straw in his mouth. He looked at the sky then knocked on the carriage's window. "Master Duwei, should we find a place to rest? It's getting dark."

"Fine." As Duwei answered, a knight on horse rode towards the carriage from afar and said, "Supervisor, there's a town ahead, it seems like our only place to rest tonight."

"Master Duwei ordered, we should rest ahead tonight." Mard said.

There were only twenty knights that followed Duwei from the imperial city. A vice general could only afford to have twenty knights to accompany his eldest son to their family territory. How shabby it is. You have to know those nobility in the imperial city would bring a team of servants and guards to even a picnic.

Even these twenty knights were specially picked. Everyone knew Duwei lost the right to heir, so no one wanted to follow him and live life in a rural area. These twenty knights were either low in combat skills, or rejected by their comrades, or young and naive.

Ever since the group left the imperial city, everyone was feeling down

except Duwei. He was the only one staying normal. He had not complained once. He just sat in the carriage and read books he brought.

Jumu Town was the only town in a hundred miles. There were a few hundred families in this town, but only one tavern, the Jumu Tavern. And since it's the only tavern, their business was not bad. They had cheap alcohol, cheap roasts, cheap prostitutes... even people of the lower class needed entertainments too right?

When Duwei's carriage arrived at the tavern, he closed his book, and walked out. This group immediately caught the attention of everyone at the tavern.

Duwei came in at last. By the time he's inside, the knights already did their job and cleaned up a table. The people were examining Duwei. His attire and emblem denoted his nobility.

"Oh a noble."

"Why would a noble come to our place."

"Owner, I think you should put away the chair he sat on, maybe you can sell it for a good price."

After a while of silence, everyone in the tavern started talking about the group.

Duwei calmly drank his alcohol. Even when people were gesticulating at him, he only frowned a little.

At this moment, a group of three men and one girl came into the tavern. They had a weary face, and dressed in inexpensive attires. Obviously not locals. Foreigners just like Duwei.

The tavern went silent again. All the men had their eyes fixed on the girl.

This girl was about eighteen or nineteen, has brown hair, and a beautiful face. She's wearing a leather armor emitting faint blue glow, with special patterns carved on it, a short skirt showing most of her leg, a dagger on her belt, a scimitar hanging from her waist, and carrying a bow and quiver behind her back. The quiver was filled with silver arrows.

Duwei could recognize those arrows were made of pure silver. How extravagant!

The girl's companions, one was bulky with heavy armor and carrying a large shield. You could see that he's the strength type. Another was tall and slender, carried a longbow on his shoulders. He had long fingers and a metal ring. It was obvious that he was an archer. The last one was who Duwei paid the most attention to.

This was a man in gray robe with a common face. Common enough that most people would ignore him. But Duwei noticed him because of a silver leaf emblem on his chest. People in this rural area may not recognize it but Duwei and his knights recognized that emblem. One leaf denotes that he's a level one magician. Even though he's only level one, but he's a real magician that obtained certification from the magician's guild.

# Chapter 7 - Long Legged Hot Chick

All the men were staring at this girl. One drunk got up and started walking toward her. "Hey girl..."

Before he finished talking, the bulky warrior knocked him out of the tavern. People started laughing at it.

Duwei's eyes were filled with curiosity. A warrior, an archer, this girl was surrounded by her companions, then she's probably the leader of the party. Is this an adventure party like those mentioned in stories?

After learning about this world, Duwei knew that there exists adventure parties similar to mercenaries. The big parties contain several hundred people while small ones just three to four people. Monsters frequently appeared in the forests to the south of the kingdom. Which attracted adventure parties to try their luck to hunt monsters and trade the loot for reward. Some local governments would also hire these adventurers to do their deeds like as capturing thieves and such.

There were no adventurer guild though. The kingdom wouldn't allow such power to exist.

But there's a magician in this party? This surprised Duwei a lot. After reading so many books, he knew that magicians were very scarce in this world. It not only took talent but also many years of effort to become a magician.

According to what he read, there were only several hundred magicians in this kingdom. Even some nobilities were not able to recruit magicians. That was why magicians were paid very well. Those without a huge financial backing couldn't afford to recruit one.

Yet, a team like this had a magician in them. This was such a rarity.

The team found a table at the corner. The tavern started talking about them in low voices. Especially at Duwei's table.

The knights weren't in their best mood after being banished to this place. After a few rounds of alcohol, their voices started getting loud. They didn't seem to respect Duwei much also and started talking without holding back.

Finally, one knight said, "Look at those legs, my god, I have never seen prettier legs. This hot girl would probably cost 100 gold if it's in the imperial city's brothel!"

"What? 100 gold? Had you ever been to the imperial city's brothel. The cheapest girl there costs 300 gold." The knight beside him refuted.

Duwei looked at them, thought for a moment and said, "You think she's pretty? I say she's average, but those legs though."

"..."

The knights were shocked that their little master, who was quiet throughout the journey, would say something like this. Weren't rumors said he was retarded? That was why they said those words without avoiding him.

"What's it? Are you guys still men?" Duwei laughed. "She's only a girl and you are knights. You can only sit here and talk when you are tempted by her? I will give 10 gold to whoever dare to go up and make a move."

The knights laughed. Even though this little master lost his position, he seen like their kind of person. One knight said, "Master, give me those 10 gold then."



Then he got up and shouted at the corner. “Hey girl, how about I buy you a drink?”

The girl seen enraged and wanted to get up. But her companions held her down and pointed at Duwei. They muttered something to her. Probably because they saw Duwei is a noble and didn't want any trouble.

Seeing as they didn't respond, the knight prepared to say something. That's when Duwei got up and whistled to the corner. Then he flicked a middle finger.

The knights were shocked again! When had they seen someone of nobility done such vulgar actions. Especially the son of the well respected Earl.

While the knights were at a lost staring at their little master. The girl's reaction was way faster. She threw a cup towards Duwei.

The knight in front of Duwei reacted in time and blocked the cup with his arm, but the content inside was poured out. A bit of the alcohol landed on Duwei's arm. The knights were enraged and pulled their swords. They slowly closed in toward the corner. The girl also pulled out her scimitar and a fight was about to begin.

The tavern was in a mess. Some people fled while others stayed far away and watched.

The bulky warrior took six knights to himself. Although everyone was a little high, they held back a bit during the fight. Especially those adventurers. The magician shouted to them not to cause any critical injuries. But when the bulky warrior accidentally took a punch to his nose and started bleeding, he bashed one of the knights. The knight got knocked over to the counter and started spitting out blood. The rest of the knights started hacking harder at the warrior. Soon enough, a few injuries appeared on his body.

The archer was at the worst position. Archers were skilled at long ranged attacks. In a little place like this, his bow was rendered useless. He could only took out his dagger and attack with it. Before long, he was knocked down.

The girl seeing her teammates were falling, looked at Duwei. She dodged a knight's attack and jumped at Duwei. But the knights hadn't forgotten to protect their master. One knight threw a table over and knocked the girl away. Then another knight slashed at her armor. A white light flashed then repelled the sword, the armor was obviously enchanted.

The magician was hiding in a corner, but when he saw that the girl was attacked, his face got gloomy. He raised his hands and started drawing symbols while chanting a spell. Then a circle emitted from his fingers.

The Roland knights felt their body got heavier and their actions slowed down. Their swords felt many times heavier. Before long, a few knights got injured.

Duwei saw it and his eyes shined. Slow magic, this was real magic!

The magician's finger kept on waving, then he casted a fireball toward the knights. One of the knight slashed the fireball in half, but the ember still caught on some knights. The magician kept on firing and the knights were soon at a disadvantage.

Duwei felt something's not right. That magician had already casted eight fireballs. He didn't know how much mana a level one magician has, but it shouldn't be enough to cast this many spells. Furthermore, as Duwei was paying attention to the magician, he noticed the magician almost didn't chant anything when he casted the fireballs, and his speed was way too fast. This obviously isn't something a level one magician can do.

Duwei remembered magicians excelled at long ranged battles and weak at

close combat. He took a bottle and threw it at the magician. The magician dodged the bottle but Duwei already closed in on him. But then Duwei forgot he's only a thirteen year old. No matter how weak magicians physically were, they could at least win against a child. As Duwei was losing the brawl, suddenly, bang... the magician was knocked unconscious. Mard was standing there in panic and holding a table leg on his hand.

Without the magician's help, the knights finally took control of the situation.

Duwei found an intact chair to sit down. He got a hang of the situation. These were ordinary adventurers, their techniques were basic, and none of them knew any qi.

Yet even these people gave such a hard time to his twenty knights. Which went to show his status in the family. They gave him twenty of the worst knights.

Duwei walked over to the girl and started studying her armor. After reading numerous books on magic, he recognized there were at least two enchants on the armor, one added agility and one added strength.

An armor with two enchants would cost a lot even in the imperial city. How can this girl with such low combat skills get a hold of such armor?

Then he took a look at her scimitar. It was embedded with a jewel. Which seemed to be a magical item that can store mana. And of course the most valuable item she had was the bow and silver arrows. Silver was not great for combat due to its hardness, but it was an anti magic material. It was widely known that some metals resist magic. This bow and arrows had anti magic attributes on it.

Duwei took another look at the girl. How did she get to have such valuable equipments?

“Take off her leather armor.” Duwei causally ordered. He was thinking of studying the magical items in a room. Then the knight answered. “Uh, master, if you want to strip her here...”

## Chapter 8 - Instant Casting

“Oh, right.” Duwei nodded then laughed. “Then find her a room and let her take it off. I don’t have any other intentions. I am just interested in your armor.”

“If you dare to touch me, I’ll make you...” The girl cursed.

Duwei walked over with a stern look and poked her face with a finger. “Now I touched you. What are you going to make me?”

The knights tied up adventurers. They somehow found a chain for the bulky warrior as well. The girl was knocked unconscious and threw into Duwei’s room. It seemed like the little master was interested in this girl, then as his knights...

The magician was standing in front of Duwei in just underwears. His hands and legs were also tied up. At first he tried to threaten this little noble. “How can you treat a magician like this, aren’t you afraid of offending the magician’s guild?”

Duwei answered with a slap on the face. This shut the magician up.

“If you can answered a few of my questions, I can consider releasing you.” Duwei sat down on a chair in front of him. “You were casting fireballs without chant. Did you mastered the instant cast technique?”

This was what Duwei was most interested in. Magicians must chant when casting a spell. This was common sense in all the books he read. However, there were some specially talented magicians who mastered the instant cast technique. They would chant their spells silently in their mind, but it required a huge mana pool and extreme understanding of magic.

Another way of casting spells without chants was to use enchanted scrolls. Magicians would create a scroll and store a magic into it in advance. However, magical scrolls were very valuable. The higher level the spell, the lower the chance of successfully creating it. Some of the highest level spells had never been created into scrolls.

Some high level magicians invented techniques to shorten the chant and leave out some sounds to cast a spell faster. However, those techniques were always kept secret. That's how they would gain an advantage in battles. The technique of instant cast would be something everything magician lust for.

Duwei wasn't stupid, he wouldn't believe this level one magician could master such technique. He speculated this guy must be using some trick to replace casting. Otherwise if he was such a great magician, he wouldn't be tied up here. Duwei was interested in that secret.

The magician's expression looked horrible. He moved his eyes away from Duwei and kept his mouth shut. Duwei wouldn't expect him to spit it out so easily. They were in the tavern's kitchen. He had the time to spend with the magician.

Duwei started examining the magician's items. A regular robe and an enchanted emblem of the magician's guild. He threw both items into the stove and burned them. That emblem came with anti theft properties.

"You see, I meant no harm to you. I am just a boy interested in magic. If you will answer my questions, I can release you."

The magician was still silent.

Duwei continued to examining. There were a few low quality jewels in the magician's bag. Two regular scrolls. Some low level spells were recorded on them. Even though he had seen a lot of books related to magic, due to strict

laws, no actual spells were allowed to be recorded on books, only theories.

So Duwei who knew so much about magic and it's theories, yet didn't know a single spell.

Similar to gun control in the other world. He thought to himself. Everyone could learn about guns through the internet, but no individual could easily create a gun.

"And what is this?" He took out a few bottles from the bag. Inside them were powders of various colors. He wouldn't open the bottles without knowing what's inside. Magicians often carry dangerous ingredients.

"Then my speculations are correct. You are not a real talented magician. But from what I saw, you used some tricks. Right? You have two choices, either tell me everything and satisfy my curiosity and I will release you, or you will have a rough time."

"You are a noble! Don't you feel it is out of your nobility to treat a magician like this"

Duwei remained silent.

Noble? So what? When Duwei came to this world he lost his friends, family, goals and everything. The first few years he felt as though he was living in a chaos, without any goals to live. Now the only thing in this unfamiliar world that could still peak his interest was magic.

And everything else? He didn't care.

That was why he attacked these strangers in the tavern. To satisfy his curiosity. Were his actions morally justified? He didn't care. Duwei Roland was not a good person, and neither was the him in that world.

## Chapter 9 - Rollynn's Seduction Plan

The magician's stubbornness was more than he had expected.

"Keep your eyes on him, don't let him escape. Don't forget he's a magician. Just don't let him recover mana. A magician without mana fare worse than a normal person." Duwei told the knights looking over the captive. "Every once in a while, give him a cold bath. Don't let him have time to sleep or meditate."

Duwei got back to his room and closed the door. The girl was tied on a chair.

As Duwei stepped closer, Relin got scared. This bastard looked young, perhaps he wouldn't do those horrible things to me. Relin understood how seductive she was to men.

Though the most feared thing on Relin's mind was the boy's too young and wouldn't be interested in her body. Then she would had lost her weapon. It was not easy being an adventurer, especially when her party was weak. She had learned to use her body to deceit, as long as it didn't go past her limit. That scimitar was a gift from a large adventure team. And the magician joined the team for her. She's like a fox, cunning everyone yet at the same time protecting herself.

Relin's reason for coming to the Kete province was to escape. She seduced a noble in the north and he even gifted her the enchanted leather armor handed down from his family. Yet he got nothing much out of Relin. Before he realized it, Relin was gone.

As Duwei walked closer and his hand closing in. Relin gave a sigh and was prepared to sacrifice. She started to consider how to make Duwei release her. Perhaps acting submissive to satisfy him? Or act pity and beg for sympathy?



After balancing her options Relin decided to act innocent and naive. Yes, a shy expression, a scared look, and those innocent eyes. This should seduce boys his age.

Relin was quite confident in her acting. She believed once Duwei saw it, he would show a bit of sympathy.

“Please, don’t...” She said as a hand reached behind her back. Her body started shivering at the right time. The hand unbuttoned the leather armor, and then the armor left her body, exposing her body.

What will he do? Relin felt nervous. Will he jump on me? Relin’s mind was racing with these thoughts. And then it was too quiet.

Relin finally opened her eyes and looked at the noble standing in front of her. He was examining the armor with such concentration. Not even as to spare her the peripheral visions.

Stupid kid. Damn him. Couldn’t he see my body? Relin got mad at the sight. Is he even a guy? Or is he blind?

Relin gave a discreet cough trying to get his attention. But her efforts were futile. The noble walked away to a chair then sat down and continued examining the armor. Relin continued coughing louder and louder.

“Does your throat hurt?” Duwei casually asked after a while. Finally taking his eyes off the armor and looked at her with an expression of tease.

## Chapter 10 - Who Knows!

Relin bit her lips and continued acting. She said in a soft and low voice, "What...what are you planning to do with me?" while looking at him with a pitiful expression.

Duwei laughed and scanned her teasingly. She could feel that there was no sign of desire.

Duwei threw her a blanket to cover her body.

"I don't want a half naked girl staring at me when I am concentrating. Your acting was horrible. I still have things to do. If you want to seduce me, think of something else while I work."

This tone, those eyes, gosh, what kind of boy is this. Relin thought. He's seemed more experienced than I am.

Duwei found a comfortable position in the chair and took out a magnifying glass. He scanned the patterns on the armor carefully and even copied them down on paper.

All the while Relin didn't said a word. She just stare at this weird guy. How can a boy act like he had so much experience with women?

"I am interested in your three equipments." Duwei said without raising his head. "The leather armor has a magical pattern on it, increasing strength and agility. Looking at the corner of this armor, it seems like this armor had lived through quite some time. In my eyes, it has more value as an antique than an armor. Furthermore, there's an emblem engraved. If my memories are correct, it belonged to a branch of the Stujiad. Stujiad is an ancient family that prevailed three hundred years ago, but they started declining a hundred years ago. That's when they were separated into seven or eight

middle sized families.”

“And your scimitar. Girls aren’t suited to using scimitars, because they required exceptional strength on the wrist. Only the foreigners living on the north west use this kind of weapon. And you...” Duwei casually took a look at her. “You have brown hair and blue eyes. This denoted you have the blood of the middle south part of the kingdom. I don’t know what your combat techniques are, but from what I saw earlier, you seem more adept at using swords. Even though you don’t have the strength, the enchant from that armor helped you so you could barely use the scimitar. There’s also a magical crystal embedded on the scimitar that can store mana. And a magic circle carved onto the scimitar that lets you use wind magic. Users with enough technique could cast a Wind Blade spell using this scimitar. This... I don’t think you could do it with your current level.”

Relin was astonished. Everything he said was correct.

“But that bow is what I am most curious about.” Duwei picked up the bow. “The pattern on this bow symbolizes the power of the moon. According to what I read, there’s an ancient family that used the moon’s power as a totem, the Muen family. They prevailed seven hundred years ago, when half of this continent belonged to them. They believed in the Moon Goddess. But unfortunately, during the continental war a few hundred years back, the Muen family’s kingdom was destroyed. Then the continent was united under the Luolan. It was said the Muen family was extinct.”

“I am curious, how can a low level adventurer like you, with low level combat techniques, have three valuable enchanted equipments. Oh and one from the north, one from north west, and the last from an extinct family. So who are you?”

If Mr. Rosia were to hear what was just said, he would feel so proud for this student, and unfair that Duwei was rumored retarded. Even though the explanation seemed simple, they included knowledge of emblems, totems,

and the history of the continent. Duwei also said everything without looking up any data. As though he had memorized everything in his head.

“How...how did you know all this?”

“Books.” Duwei put down the bow. “Books contained all of human’s knowledge. And knowledge is the lighthouse for human to move forward. I started reading these books at age 6.”

“Six? Then you must be a genius. Have you read a lot of books?” Relin sigh.

“I did read quite a bit. But I am no genius. In fact, long ago I didn’t like to read. I didn’t like knowledge.”

“But you...” Relin stopped, realizing this wasn’t the time to have such a conversation.

Duwei said as if muttering to himself. “There’s a story. There’s an exquisite porcelain shop. The owner spent a lot of time and effort creating a new piece. Unfortunately a foreigner accidentally ran into the shop and broke the piece. The foreigner felt guilty and decided to create a new piece for the owner to compensate. Right... to compensate.”

“Compensate?”

“You seem to be interested in other people’s stories. But if I am you, I would worry about my situation first.”

“But you don’t seem to mind speaking to me about these things.”

“That’s because you are a beautiful girl.” Duwei shrugged. “Most men cannot help but speak more in front of a beautiful girl. That is the nature of men.”

“What do you want from me.” Relin gave up. He’s too unpredictable for her.

“Weren’t you trying to seduce me? Now why don’t you try it.”

What did he really mean by that? Relin thought.

Duwei walked over to her and put his hand on her cheeks. Then slid down to her neck. Relin felt as he’s the cat toying with a mouse. Relin started shivering and closed her eyes. Duwei removed the blanket covering her then...

The rope around her hands were cut off.

Duwei was holding a knife on his hand. He took a step back, “Ok, you can leave anytime. My knights wouldn’t refrain you. Your companions can also leave with you. But that magician needs to stay here.”

Relin was shocked and opened her eyes wide, “You said I can go?”

“Yes. I am only interested in that magician companion of yours. As to your equipments, I already studied them so I don’t need them anymore. You can take them with you.”

Relin just couldn’t understand this noble boy. “But you...you attacked us in the tavern...”

“I said I was only interested in magic, not interested in you.” Duwei said indifferently. “I am very busy and I am tired. You can leave now. Don’t disturb me. I don’t like people staring at me when I sleep.” He pointed to the door. His intentions were obvious.

Relin felt as if she was dreaming. She took the knife Duwei handed her and cut off the rope around her legs. She walked to the door like she was still confused.

“Oh yes, since fate let us meet, I have an advice for you if you don’t mind.”

“Yes please, what..what advice?” Relin said with respect.

“A girl like you better find a good guy and get married. Live in a peaceful town, marry an honest little nobility and live knowing your place. It’s difficult for a girl to survive in a world like this. Even if you don’t want to marry, you should find someone to depend on. I believe there are only few remaining of the Muen family.”

“What did you say? Muen?”

“Yes, Muen, the family that believed in the Moon Goddess. I took a look at your fingers. Your ring finger is longer than your middle finger. And there’s a bone behind your head that protruded a bit. According to the books, those are the features of someone from the Muen. These two evidences and that bow of yours, do you want to deny it?”

Relin felt feeble in front of Duwei, more so than any danger she had faced. Can he see through a person’s secrets? And that smile, that pale face, that indifference towards everything. Just like a devil.

After Relin had left, Duwei gave out a sigh and began organizing the books he brought from the city.

Mard knocked on the doors and came in, “Master, are you going to rest? Do you need anything? You haven’t eaten much this evening.”

Duwei knew that Mard was waiting outside his room the whole time, and when he saw Relin left, he was worried.

Perhaps besides the Earl’s wife, he was the one that cared most about me.

“No, and Mard, how much money do I still have?”

“1000 gold. Master, your mother gave them to you in private when you left. I have been keeping them safe.”

“I heard that Kete province produces a type of blue jewel. When we arrive there, buy some and send it back to mother.”

“She would be so delighted.” Mard said, “Master, you are smart, other people doesn’t notices it but I do. If the Earl and your mother knows about everything, they would be so proud of you, but why...”

“Why do I like to let people call me retarded?” Duwei smiled.

Mard panicked a bit but continued. “Everyone treat Jibri as a genius, but you, if it’s not you... I knew you often visit Jibri, and I saw you taught him how to write.”

“Ok Mard, I am tired. Go back to your room. We still have to continue the journey tomorrow.”

Retarded? Whatever, I don’t belong in this world.

The Earl’s wife was a respectable woman, but she didn’t know that I took the body of her first born. Even though I never wished for it.

In the end, I owe the Roland family. Especially that woman. I owe that kind hearted mother a son.

I used some methods to give them back a genius son in secret, then quietly leave that place. That is my compensation to them.

And Jibri, I hope he can satisfy them. After I left the imperial city, I couldn’t go and teach him anymore. In order to become a qualified teacher, I read and learned with all my time these years, and then found a chance to

secretly teach everything to my little brother.

Yes, secretly. The Earl thought of retardedness as a contagious disease and wouldn't let me get near Jibri often.

All the efforts these years, the passion that I never experienced even when I was going to school in the other world.

When Jibri was four and could write his name, the delighted Earl probably didn't know how much effort his elder son spent. And how hard he tried to make world history into stories so kids would listen.

In this perspective, I think I am talented as a teacher.

Even though I felt indebted to them, I couldn't accept another couple as my parents. So... under such circumstances, leaving the city after repaying them was the best choice.

Being banished... may not be as bad.

Jibri, you have to work hard. I can't tell you stories anymore, nor make those training manuals into songs so you could memorize them.

I took away your son. Then I give you back a genius son.

Roland family, that is my little compensation to you.



# Chapter 11 - The Devil Knights

Relin didn't went too far that night. She wandered around just outside the town, even though her companions wanted to leave this shitty place as soon as possible. But Relin had something else on her mind, a hint of hesitation on her face. She sat there and held on her knees staring at the moon the whole night.

The next day, Duwei continued on the road. Though this time, a ox drawn cart followed behind his group. Inside the cart was the tied up magician. The poor magician looked exhausted and soaked wet. The knights dutifully completed Duwei's order, to give him a cold bath every once in a while.

Duwei kept up with his routine and started reading in the carriage once they were on the road. You couldn't feel much vibrations even on bumpy roads with a high quality carriage.

A light knock on the window, followed by Mard's voice. "Master, there's something you need to see. Those adventurers from the tavern yesterday are following behind us."

Duwei startled for a moment then stuck his head out the window. Indeed, that girl and her two companions were following them a hundred feet away.

The knights saw this and had a weird expression on their face. They were trying their best to hold their laughter. Yesterday, that girl came out of the master's room, and now she's following, huh.

"Stop the carriage. Go and fetch that girl."

Relin had been following Duwei's carriage the whole morning. Her head was in chaos. She didn't know why she wanted to follow him. Was it because she's worried about that magician? Probably not, she wouldn't care about

that magician's life.

Then the carriage stopped and two knights rode their horses over.

"Miss, our master wants to see you, please come with us." Due to the possibility of this girl having a relation with the master, the knights said their words politely.

Relin was still dazed. She nodded and rode her horse over subconsciously. Her companions were worried and followed.

"Why are you following me?" Duwei didn't get off his carriage. He opened the door and looked at Relin.

Relin got off her horse and bit her lips. At that moment, she decided on an answer to the question she was struggling the whole night. Why? Perhaps it was that devilish smile.

She took a deep breath and kneeled down on one knee. She lowered her head and said in a serious voice. "I, Relin Muen, pledge loyalty to you. I am willing to become your subordinate. I will use my blood and life to uphold my pledge with the rest of my life! Will you accept my loyalty?"

Duwei was silent for a while. He inspected the girl and said. "You want to pledge loyalty to me? Why?"

"I don't know." Relin said what's in her heart. "Maybe you are right. I am tired. I am starting to feel I don't have the ability to maintain my life. Perhaps I need to find someone to depend on."

"And you think I am that person?"

"Yes. Even though I still don't know your identity, but you give me the feeling of... of someone extraordinary. Or you are destined to become an

extraordinary person.”

“That’s a difficult decision.” Duwei sighed and turned to Mard. “Mard, I think I have the eligibility to recruit my honor knights right? How many knights can I recruit?”

Although Mard was a stable hand, he had done his homework since being promoted to Duwei’s servant. “Yes master, you are the son of the Earl, even if you don’t inherit his title, according to the law, you can receive the title of Baron. The kingdom allows those with this title to recruit ten honor knights.”

“Thank you. Only ten, although a little bit low, but knights can recruit squires right? A knight can have a few squires, then ten knights and the squires aren’t too bad.”

After receiving confirmation from Mard, Duwei turned to Relin. “Ok, I will accept your loyalty. From now on, you are my honor knight. You are the first one that received this title from me, and a female knight too.”

“Thank you, then since I pledge my loyalty, will you tell me your identity? Master.”

“Oh my identity, the first son of the Kingdom’s vice general Earl Raymond. Duwei Roland is my name. And I forgot to tell you, i have a rather famous nickname in the imperial city. They call me retard.”

“Re... retard?!” Relin widened her eyes in shock.

Heck, if this kid is a retard then there are no geniuses in this world! If he was a retard then 90% of the world's population was mentally defective.

Relin wouldn’t dare to laugh. She stood up and pointed to her companions. “Master, these are my companions, their names are...”

“No, no, no.” Duwei interrupted her. “Sorry but I am not interested in their names. And as you heard I am only allowed to have ten honor knights. I am not going to waste those slots. I am saving them for a few high level knights or swordsmen.”

Duwei didn't even look at those two.

Don't joke around! That bulky warrior only had higher strength, and that archer... a few hundred gold could recruit four to five. Even this female knight. If she wasn't a beautiful girl, given her level, Duwei wouldn't be interested in her.

“Knight Relin Muen, now that you are my honor knight, your companions can count as your squires. About your knight badge and equipments, I will give them to you when we arrive at the destination. Now lead your people and join our group. If nothing goes wrong we will arrive at my mansion tonight.”

Relin remained silent. Though her companions were rather sad that they didn't become a knight.

There were three ways to become a true knight. One was to be high enough level and be evaluated by the Knights Guild. Second was to be a believer of the Light Temple at a young age, these people would be raised and trained then pass a series of assessments to become Templar. Third was to pledge loyalty to a noble and obtain the Honor Knight title.

These two guys were low level and not part of the Light Templar, their only chance of becoming a knight was to be recruited by a noble. But nobles with the eligibility to recruit knights wouldn't want these people.

Relin could only say a few words to comfort them. She's feeling complicated. Once she pledged loyalty, she's no longer independent. This group that she

spent so much effort to maintain would broke up. She's no longer a leader but a subordinate.

She didn't know that this day will be remembered in history.

## Chapter 12 - Legendary Clan

Duwei's group continued to move on. Obviously the addition of a female knight caught the attention of the other knights. Of course it's not only because she's the only girl in the group, but also her relationship with the master.

She came out from the master's room last night. Then the next day she came to pledge loyalty.

There's actually another reason for the attention, a bit of jealousy. Yes, jealousy, because she obtain the title of a true knight. Warding knights that belonged to a family were not real knights. They were just a title that included the word "knight".

Then a girl that they met only a day ago, a low level warrior, suddenly became what these men desired. How can they not be jealous? It was already unfortunate that they were picked to follow the little master here. Their only goal was that someday, this master would recruit them as honor knights.

Everyone knew, that this master could only be a Baron and be able to recruit only ten knights. Then suddenly this unknown girl took one spot. This left them feeling imbalance.

The most reasonable explanation was that a thirteen year old couldn't understand what knights were. He was treating such valuables as a child's game. Most importantly, what can you do about a girl with a pretty face?

Relin could feel the sights by her new companions. But she was determined. This new master won't be a normal person. This wasn't a wrong decision.

By sunset, Duwei's carriage crossed a river. It had the official name called

“Roland River”. This river was named after the Roland family.

The Roland River spanned across Kete Province and separated it in half. Once you cross this river, you were in the territory of the Roland family.

South of the river was a prairie. This was one of the most fertile land of the kingdom, and an important producer of food. It was the size of half the Kete Province and had an official name “Roland Prairie”. Yes, it was also named after the Roland family.

Two hundred years ago, the Luolan kingdom defended a huge invasion. According to history, the foreigners from the north invaded and put the whole kingdom in war. As the kingdom was declining, rebellions started to take place. The kingdom was on the verge of collapse.

During the war, a group of exceptional people surfaced. One of them was a general from the Roland family. That general accumulated enough achievements to later become a Marshal. The king also married his sister to this marshal.

Before one of the most important battle took place, the king pointed to the Roland River and said, “If you come back with a victory, then south of this river, of the Kete Province will be rewarded to you. In addition, this prairie will also be named after your family, to show the contribution your family made to the kingdom.”

With such encouragement, he won the battle and saved the kingdom. At the same time he won the promise with the king. Since then, this river was named Roland River and this prairie named Roland Prairie. After two hundred years had passed, people had forgotten their original names.

Even though two hundred years had passed, these knights felt excited as they stepped on this land. It was a sense of belonging and pride. Look! This was the land of the Rolands. This was where the great ancestors engraved

this name in the kingdoms history and in this land.

Duwei felt the carriage slowed down. He opened the window and saw the knights cheering, totally different from how they had been the past few days. Their faces were filled with happiness, pride, and worship.

“We’re home! The Rolands came home! We’re back on our land!”

Different from most nobilities, the Rolands had a tradition of recruiting only warriors from their own land. They believed this could guarantee loyalty from the knights. Even the Earl’s guard, Alpha, was from this land. These knights that accompanied Duwei had been living here for generations.

Duwei thought for a moment, then understood the reason. “Mard, have we crossed the Roland River?”

“Yes master, we arrived home.”

“Mard, tell me, were you also born in Kete Province?”

“Yes, even though I grew up in the imperial city, my father was a citizen of the Roland. He worked as a stable hand under the Roland family his whole life. And I inherited his job.”

“Master, I have to remind you something.”

“Hmm?”

“The way you just said things was wrong.” Mard had a serious look on his face.

“What’s wrong? You can point it out.” Duwei smiled.

“You asked if I was born in Kete Province. That was inappropriate. Even



though the Roland Prairie is located within the Kete Province, but every citizen of the Roland will not say that they belong to the Kete Province when asked of the origin. A real Roland citizen will say they were born in the Roland Prairie. They take pride in their identity. So master, please don't say it like this next time. Otherwise you will hurt their feelings, especially since you are the elder son of the chief of the family."

Duwei was surprised that Mard said this with pride.

Perhaps I underestimated this family. Looking at the faces of the knights, only a great family could achieve this.

Then by this situation, the Earl must felt a huge burden when his elder son was a retard. He had to continue on the legacy of the family.

Even though I didn't approve of the way that father treated me coldly. But I am starting to understand his feelings. As a father, perhaps he could tolerate his son being useless. Yet as the chief of a huge family, he couldn't accept his successor being someone useless. He must be responsible for the future of this family. Then it seems like his decision to give up me on was excusable.

For a moment, Duwei seemed lost.

Mard was surprised when he saw Duwei's expression. Ever since he became Duwei's servant, his master was always indifferent and calm. Never had he showed such expressions.

"Master... can we continue going home?" Mard asked carefully.

"Home..oh yes, go home." Duwei answered subconsciously, then suddenly a thought rushed to his mind uncontrollably.

Go home!

A light bloomed in his clouded heart. Yes, go home.

For the me that doesn't belong in this world, what I am missing the most was a sense of belonging. For these years I had been indifferent, not expressing my feelings and even suppressing some of them. The root of the cause is I never think of myself as part of this world. That's why a lot of times I see myself as an observer, a guest. This mentality caused me to feel indifferent.

Go home, such a wonderful phrase.

The Duwei that was indifferent all these years, suddenly felt a sense of expectation to arriving at the Roland's mansion.

Looking at those prideful knights. Will I be able to find my sense of belonging here? I hope so!

If I can't go back to my real home. Then maybe I can find a new home that my heart can feel connected to. After all, since I have already come to this world, life still goes on.

With a bit of afterglow left in the sky, Duwei stepped out of the dim and concealed carriage, out of the shadow, into the beautiful sunset.

Sunlight shone on his face as though it had dispersed all the haze. This boy's face finally showed a smile, and his expression finally had a hint of emotion.

That emotion was, expectation!

# Chapter 13 - The Mysterious Events Of The Rawling Ancestral Residence

The Roland family's mansion inherited from ancestors were located on south west of the Roland Prairie. A tributary of the Roland River passed through this place. The land was fertile. Several farm villages and even towns were established there.

This was the origin of the Roland family. A few hundred years back when their ancestors were a little noble who owned just a small village, their bloodline started to spread in this land.

The carriage crossed a black tree forest. The trees were lush and the air fresh. Following an even path you could see a little hill on the left, and a high tower on the right. That was the Roland's mansion.

After several hundred years of glory, the small village no longer existed. The mansion was also reconstructed countless times and it's size grew considerably. A red stone wall embracing a castle. The castle was built using white colored stones mined from the hill. It was said that there was once a small mountain to the left, but after several hundred years of mining, that small mountain became a hill.

The arrival of the eldest son of the chief of the family received much attention. The Roland family's private army, three hundred soldiers, who guarded the castle put on their shiny equipments and waited under the red wall in an array. The arched entrance gave Duwei a feeling of vigor, and he could see this wall could become a solid defense when needed.

The three hundred soldiers demonstrated qualities of abundant training. They rode on horses with a straight back and showing adept riding skills. Their equipments were also of fine quality. These soldiers were selected

from the various private armies throughout the Roland Prairie. They were well trained and could even rival the local military of the imperial city.

The black forest outside the castle was a natural hunting ground. Hunting events were held annually, which was also a type of training for the soldiers.

The castle's main body consisted of two towers. One taller than the other. It's even taller than that hill. Duwei knew from learning his family history that there was once a weird chief of the Roland family. Even though he's a general, he was especially interested in Star Reading Techniques. He even married a Star Reader. That taller tower was built for his wife so she could better observe the sky.

Red carpet span from the door of the castle to Duwei's carriage. When Duwei was about to get off, a silver haired elderly man came up to him. The old man had a slender build, dressed in a charcoal formal suit, acted old fashioned and serious.

As Duwei stepped on the ground, the old man bowed down deeply and said with a deep and slow voice, "Little master, I am the butler Sier Roland. I received info about you coming three days ago. Everyone in this castle had prepared to welcome you. Please follow me."

Then the old butler led Duwei up the stairs. His etiquettes were flawless, humble yet did not flatter. While Duwei was walking on the red carpet, he carefully walked along just outside the carpet to let Duwei experience this honor to himself.

The first impression inside the castle was the big flag hanging on the wall. The flag was about eight by six meters. It almost covered the whole wall. This was a flag of the family's emblem. The flag gave this castle a solemnity feel to it.

All the servants and maids were standing on the sides of the lobby in

uniforms to welcome Duwei. Though Duwei wasn't interested in this weird "inspection". He nodded casually and said to the butler with a low voice, "Mr. Butler, will you lead me to my reading room now? And everyone else, please go back to your work."

Butler Sier followed Duwei's order precisely. Soon, Duwei was led to a reading room. Well, Duwei was more willing to call this place a library. Because it was huge.

The room was circular, even the ceiling was rounded, and carved in decorative designs. On the sides were statues, most of them were ancestors who expressed excellence. Surrounding the room were huge shelves. These shelves were two stories tall and filled with books. Duwei roughly calculated, the number of books were several ten thousands. There were also many metallic cabinets used to store important stuff, such as the family tree or important files.

As a family that gain their power through war, even the reading room gave off a scent of warrior. A two handed sword and a huge axe hung on the wall across the entrance. One side of the wall had shelves displaying various weapons, though most of them archaic.

Duwei was attracted by these weapons. He could see these antiques were maintained very well.

"These were the weapons of the family's ancestors." The butler's voice came from behind. "These weapons were a record of their glory."

Duwei touched the desk softly and looked around. He could see everything was carefully cleaned and maintained, yet traces of age were obvious. Even the desk under his hand was probably older than the butler.

"This room used to be the center of family politics. This was where the chiefs of the family ruminated and made decisions. Every piece here carried

the traces of those glories. Although the decision making room had since moved to the imperial city. According to family tradition, every chief that came back to this castle has to spend his first night in this room so he would not forget the family's glorious history and his responsibility."

The butler looked at Duwei then lowered his head, "You are the eldest son of the current chief. You came here for inspection on his behalf, then will you..."

Duwei nodded his head cooperatively, "Traditions are traditions and must be followed. I am no exception. Even though I am not the chief, but as his eldest son and coming here on his behalf, I will follow the tradition and spend the night here."

The butler's expression and voice softened, "I will have the servants prepare. Well then... I know you are here to inspect on the businesses in this territory. Where will you begin your work at? I already have the income and expenses accounts prepared. When will you start reading these? Or do you want to wait..."

Duwei interrupted him with a smile. He casually walked passed the desk and sit down behind it and said, "Mr. Butler, I am feeling hungry after the long journey. Please prepare me some food then I will start looking through the things you prepared."

Soon enough, Duwei enjoyed a very traditional afternoon tea. Just as he was finishing up a pumpkin pie, butler Sier directed two strong servants into the room. The servants were pushing a cart with a mountain load of books.

"These are all this year's accounts?" Duwei frowned, suspicious that the butler is fooling with him.

"Little master, these all are." The butler said seriously. "These data included the land size of the family territory, size of farmable land, the accounts of six

towns, military expenses of three private armies throughout the territory, harvests, construction budgets, and even some budgeting I done for the next year.”

Duwei touched his nose and looked at this mountain of books, “... are they all here?”

“This is only part of them, and the rest...” The butler sounded a little less serious for once. “I think you will need a week for the rest.

Duwei frowned and silently inspected the butler.

This old butler doesn't seem to be joking. Is he really that naive to think a thirteen year old boy like me can understand all these accounts? Does he think a boy can be responsible for all the family's businesses? Then he must know I was sent here as a banishment. So what is his purpose for doing this? Is he dissatisfied with me? Afraid that I would take away his authority in this castle? Or did he cheated the from the family's businesses and wanted to slip away by fooling me?

Everything seems like a possibility.

Duwei didn't said anything, nor brought up any of his doubts. He took an accounts book from the top and started looking through.

After a while, he raised his head and saw the butler was still at the side.

“Oh, Mr. Butler do you still have something to talk to me?” Duwei acted carelessly and said with a cold tone, “I don't like people at my side when I am reading.”

“Yes, master.” Butler Sier showed a hint of surprise, he opened his mouth as though to say something, but then turned around and left with the servants.

After the door to the reading room was shut, Duwei put down the book and took a few steps around the room. Then muttered to himself with a smile, "Perhaps, there's really something worth expecting here."

For the rest of the day, the butler came over twice. Once to refill Duwei's tea and the second to bring him candles after nightfall. To butler Sier's surprise, this little master was really reading those accounts. And it's not acting but for real! After the old butler lit the candles, Duwei casually asked some questions about the accounts, and those questions really got to the points. This proved the little master wasn't fooling around.

Is... is this the retarded little master mentioned in the messages from the imperial city?

Even though the butler tried to hide his expression, but Duwei still caught a hint of that surprise. After the butler left the room, he finished the last page on his hand.

These accounts were interesting.

Duwei spent an whole evening on these accounts, but he didn't really look at those numbers, and not interested in seeing whether these accounts were real or fake. After all, he's not a genius and it wasn't possible for someone who had no knowledge of businesses to see anything wrong.

Perhaps no one would know, Duwei's reading the accounts with a different method.

Who said that accounts could only record financial expenditures? At least Duwei learned a lot from them! And these things were not recorded in the family's history.

Duwei got a grasp of how much the Roland family had control over their territory through the contents in these accounts. The Roland family had



their own ruling system and even a fair amount of freedom from the kingdom. They had the power to decide on the final taxes, and nominate local officials. Even though the kingdom's tax rate was fixed, they had their means of manipulating it. As long as they submit a proportion of their taxes to the kingdom's financial center annually.

And in military power, you could see from the military expenditures in the accounts that the kingdom only had a small army garrisoned in this land. Two military reserves were garrisoned on the edge of the land, and more importantly, their supplies and gears were provided by the Roland family. The Roland's private army maintained law and order in most of the land.

Duwei easily got a hold of the family's current situation in economics, politics, and military through these accounts. Perhaps if the butler were to see that he could understand these accounts, his eyes would widen in disbelief.

Duwei confirmed two points: First, through taxation, the family had total control over this place, second, it was also true in military aspects.

From what Duwei learned from the other world, there's an important common sense: a country's control over its territory was reflected upon taxation and military. And these were controlled by the Roland family! What did this signify?

That the kingdom had lost control of the territory, half of the Kete Province. This place had almost become an independent kingdom itself.

Duwei leaned on the sofa and ruminated, he's surprised by the current situation. Because when a country's political power was losing authority, it was usually the prelude of war.

Duwei just sat there for a while. The room was silent with the occasional crackling sound from the candle. Then he stood up abruptly, turned around

and stared at the wall behind him. By the wall were shelves filled with books, nothing seemed special.

Yet Duwei felt there was something special... that moment of sensation wasn't wrong.

Because Duwei had a higher mana pool and spiritual power than the average person, he's more sensitive to his surroundings. And just a moment ago, he felt that someone was looking at him. As if a line of vision came from unknown and hidden corner, and silently stared at him.

There's nothing wrong with the shelves. Duwei moved his eyes up higher. Above the shelves were portraits. These portraits lined across the top. Their age varied from many decades ago to recently. They were the portraits of all the chiefs in the Roland family's history.

The first one on the left seemed to age the most. The person was in an army uniform. He was that marshal that won the war for the kingdom and won the Roland Prairie. He looked vigorous, and those eyes had the same grimness and firmness similar to Earl Raymond. It seemed as if those eyes were looking at Duwei.

Duwei took a few steps backward, then walked left and right while staring at that portrait. Then he laughed and sighed and muttered, "Perhaps I am too sensitive... It's just a portrait."

He turned around to pick up another account when that marshal's portrait behind him blinked!

Yes, a person in a portrait blinked, those eyes that kept staring at Duwei. The still eyes that originally belonged to a portrait acted as they were given life. They looked at Duwei with a sense of curiosity.

At the same moment Duwei turned around abruptly staring at the portrait.

A person and a portrait crossed sight.

“Stop trying to camouflage. I know you are looking at me.” Duwei raised his hand. He was holding a silver spoon, the one that he used for the pumpkin pie. The spoon shined just like a mirror!

“You were looking at me, and I was looking at you through this. You don’t have to camouflage anymore. Don’t you know it’s rude to peep behind someone?”

# Chapter 14 - The Treasure In The Study I

In this old castle during the night, and in this reading room full of antique items, Duwei stood in the candlelights silently, staring at that portrait on the wall. A person and a portrait both fell into a moment of silence. The portrait didn't answer him.

Duwei frowned, "Won't answer me?"

That face still looking at his eyes.

Duwei laughed maliciously. He pushed a ladder over, climbed up the shelf then tried to take down that portrait.

The portrait's face showed a hint of panic.

"Huuu~~!" Duwei exhaled and took the portrait off the wall. Obviously something this heavy was difficult for a boy to handle. His arms were feeling sore from it. But to his surprise, there was nothing behind the portrait. There were no tricks nor anyone hiding behind the portrait staring at him. It was the portrait itself!

Duwei became a bit more serious. He descended the ladder with the portrait in hands.

The portrait's face showed an expression of bitterness and unease.

"What exactly are you? A drawing the came to life?"

Those eyes were avoiding him.

"This is the portrait of that ancestor of the Roland family... You wouldn't be that ancestor coming back to life?" Duwei laughed then shook his head,

“This isn’t right. That ancestor died over two hundred years ago and this portrait was drawn after he died. So my question remains, what are you?”

There was no answer.

Duwei’s face darkened, “Oh you don’t want to say it then? Don’t regret it.” He pointed to the candles. “You can see there are a lot of candle fires here, if you aren’t going to talk, then I will burn you. Do you want to dare me?”

Once said, he turned around to pick up a candle, then slowly approached the painting.

Fear and anxiety shown on that face as if begging for mercy as the candle drew near.

When the candle fire almost touched the painting, Duwei pulled it away and nodded. “It seems like you really can’t talk? Can you talk?”

The portrait’s head shook.

“Then what are you?” Duwei’s eyes were glittering! A talking portrait! Is this a product of magic?

The portrait couldn’t answer his questions. After escaping from the danger, it showed a sign of relief then looked at Duwei with interest.

Duwei tried to ask a few more questions, but it was just difficult to communicate. That face could barely nod and shook it’s head. After a while, he got nothing out from the portrait.

Then they just stared at each other.

At this time, a clock hanging on the wall rang. The time had come to midnight.

Then a light shone from the portrait's eyes and Duwei heard a faint sigh. Even though that voice was elusive, but he could make out that was a person's sigh.

"Listen! A magic was cast on me, I could only talk briefly when midnight comes. Once the clock's ringing is over, I won't be able to talk again. So I am just going to say this once. There is a hidden room in this reading room, and some treasures in that room. I can help you get those treasures but in return I need your help. One of the treasure can remove the magic cast on me."

Duwei's eyes widen, staring at the portrait, "Is that you talking to me?"

"Yes. No time to explain." It's speaking rate became faster. "Start from the third portrait on that wall. There will be directions. Follow them and if you aren't an idiot, you should be able to find it..."

Dong

Midnight passed along with the last ring of the clock. The light on the portrait's eyes faded away as with it's voice.

Duwei looked at the portrait again. The face was looking at him also, asking for help.

"So you said a magic was cast on you? And there's a hidden room containing a treasure that could remove that spell. Right?"

The face nodded with every line he said, with an expression of desire.

“Ok then, what good will this do to me? Why should I help you?”

The face's expression changed. It wanted to say something but no word came out of it.

“Whatever, I am also quite interested. Just treat this as satisfying my curiosity.” Then Duwei climbed the ladder again and started inspecting the third portrait.

This was also a portrait of an ancestor. He was dressed in a navy uniform with a serious face and looking straight at something far away. Duwei carefully checked everywhere but couldn't find a clue, he even took it off and looked behind the painting.

He thought for a moment then patiently started checking every detail again. He did this for three times then noticed the portrait's eyes again. He followed the direction of the portrait's eyes. They were looking at a sword hanging on the wall across them.

Duwei pushed the ladder over the other side of the room. It was rather physically demanding for a boy but his curiosity was driving him.

After inspecting the sword, he noticed it was pointing to the shelf by the side. Then he finally found it! There were some uneven traces on the shelf. After feeling it for a while, he found that those traces were words. These words were written in reverse. If someone didn't accidentally touch this area, and carefully inspect these carvings, they would probably assume this was normal decorations.

He carefully read the words. “The answer lies in the sky at night, the drinking gourd is the key to moving forward.”

What is this? A riddle? Duwei sighed and descended the ladder. He sat on the floor pondering this riddle.

“The sky at night... The drinking gourd...”

Finally, he stood up with light on his face.

What is there in the sky at night? The stars! And the gourd? It must be referring to the Big Dipper!

After thinking through, Duwei started searching the shelves for books on stars. It must be a book on the subject of Star Reading. Through the catalogue, he found where the subject was located and started flipping through every book on it.

Then there was one book that was especially heavy. This book was made of metal! When he pulled it out from the shelf, a crackling sound came from the wall.

At last, the whole shelf began rotating on its own and exposed a dark entrance behind the shelf.



# Chapter 15 - The Mightiest Female

## Astrologer

Duwei picked up a candle, thought for a moment then took a weapon from the wall. Though considering the little body he currently had, he chose a short sword. Then he took a few new candles and put them in his pocket.

Duwei stepped into this hidden room. The faint candlelight could only light up two to three steps of space. Luckily Duwei's higher spirit power allowed him to be better aware of the surrounding.

This was a secret path inside the wall, both sides were stone walls. The whole path was covered in dust. Even though tried his best to move softly, he couldn't help but stir up the dust.

He would occasionally step on some small rocks. Duwei moved forward cautiously under the flickering candlelight.

Luckily this place seemed to be ventilated. Even though the candle was flickering, it didn't go out due to a lack of oxygen.

After a while, he reached a set of stairs. Narrow spiral stairs leading down. They were also made of stones and appeared crude, but at least they felt solid enough. Following the path down, Duwei reached a small door after thirty steps.

The metallic door was rusted. Duwei tried to turn the handle but found out the door was locked. He sighed then remembered that line from the book shelf.

"The drinking gourd is the key..."

Duwei thought for a moment, then looked around with the candle. Finally he found a picture on the ceiling. The picture was carved into the ceiling. He could barely make out that was a sky map. Although he was not well versed in stars, he still found what appeared to be the Big Dipper.

The ceiling was a bit too tall for him to reach. He started studying this map with the candlelight. As a candle was burning out and he was about to light up another one, he suddenly thought of an important question.

Key? What a joke! If this secret path are to be discovered, then even if that person doesn't have a key, couldn't he just get some tools to brute force open the door? If so then the key wouldn't be too important. Yet that hint specifically indicated key. There must be a different meaning.

In other words, it wasn't possible to open the door without the key. This key probably wasn't a literal key.

Duwei sat down to think for a while. When he stood up again, he jumped and hit the ceiling with his short sword.

Bang!

Duwei's eyes lit up! This sound was a little airy.

He bent down and found a crack on the ground. Then stuck his sword in the crack and stood on top the sword. His hands could barely reach the ceiling now.

The ceiling was covered in a thick layer of dust. He groped for a while and could feel the Big Dipper felt different from the other places. He tried some methods like knock, twist, turn, *etc.*

Finally he turned some place and one of the star moved. Along with a crackling sound, the floor on the corner sank. A path appeared on the

ground leading downward.

Duwei jumped down from the short sword with a smile. Just as he thought, it was all a trick. Duwei was sure his speculation was correct. The rusted door on the side was just a disguise. The real secret was not on this door. If whoever came here didn't know the hint of the Big Dipper, then he wouldn't be able to find the real secret.

Duwei was sure the real secret lied in that new path. He walked over to the path. The entrance was very narrow, it could barely let a person in. The inside was dark, Duwei lit a candle and threw it inside. He could see the stairs weren't deep, it's just about two to three meters tall. This was probably a secret room.

He waited by the entrance for a while. When there didn't seem to be anything unusual inside, he cautiously walked down the stairs.

This was a concealed room, the sides were stone walls. On the wall were a row of chests, most of them locked and rusted. In the middle of the room was a stone stand.

The height of the stand reached Duwei's waist. There were a lot of decorations carved on the stand. The center was a big circle with stars on the side.

Duwei inspected it a little but he couldn't figure out anything. Then he moved his attention to the chests. Most of these chests were locked and the locks were rusted. After some effort he found one that wasn't locked! The only one not locked.

Inside it was a stone casket with the Roland emblem carved on it. Duwei took out the casket and opened it up. Inside the casket was a scroll. The scroll was filled with words and a hexagonal jewel fell out from the scroll.

Duwei patiently lit his third candle and started reading the scroll.

“Dear reader. You must be an descendant of the Roland family. First you must know one thing. This letter was written by your ancestor. And I am the wife of the Roland family’s seventh chief, Star Reader Saimer.”

Duwei was surprised by this opening. Saimer? He knew there was an ancestor that was very interested in Star Reading and even married a Star Reader. The tallest tower in this castle was built by that ancestor for his wife to observe the stars at night.

Duwei didn’t expect this letter to be from that Star Reader.

He continued with the letter.

“When you are reading this letter, I hope you can understand that what you are about to face is something with considerable risk. You will perhaps open a forbidden door, and behind this door is a forbidden domain out of reach by humans. At the same time, this is also the achievement of my research. If you are prepared to take the risk, then take this jewel and search the room for an opening. Insert this jewel in it and you will receive all the information I left behind. To be certain that this inheritance does not go to outsiders, you will need the blood of a Roland. Drip your blood on the jewel and it will lead you to my message.”

At the end was an extra line, “Will the great Roland family prevail. Because of my husband, I fell in love with this family. Your ancestor Saimer Kila Roland.”

Duwei finished reading and was shocked. According to what he know of the family history, he had a deep impression of Saimer Kila Roland. The wife of the seventh chief and a famous Star Reader. She was revered in the field of Star Reading. Duwei’s first teacher Mr. Rosia was also a Star Reader. The few times they mentioned her, he was filled with respect towards her. He also

mentioned that Saimer was the greatest Star Reader in the past two hundred years.

The more important reason that this name left a deep impression on Duwei was this Star Reader was someone who loved her husband deeply. The ancestor that she married didn't live long. He passed away at fifty. And she killed herself in that tower he built for her the third day he died.

Before she died, she carved a line on the tower. "Because of love, we will live forever."

These last words made Duwei remembered her.

Duwei bent down and started searching for the opening without hesitation. It didn't take long for him to find it. He cut his finger and dripped a drop of blood on the jewel. Then put the jewel in that opening. Then took two steps backward.

Suddenly the decorations on the stone stand lit up. The room became as bright as during the day. To a point that Duwei couldn't open his eyes.

These light gather together and formed a pillar of light. Inside the pillar was a human figure. This figure had the size of a real person. Though not a real person, an illusion that looked very real.

Then he remembered something important! This legendary Star Reader was also a great magician. What just happened in front of him was obviously some magic.

As the light began to dim, Duwei could finally look with his eyes. He could make out the figure inside the pillar of light.

A woman dressed in a red robe, with silvery long hair, a beautiful face, tender eyes, but that pair of black eyes gave Duwei a feel of strangeness.

“The one that opened the message, I am your ancestor Saimer Kila Roland.” This illusion spoke. “This is a magical message I left before I died. This magic circle will need that jewel and the blood of a Roland to activate. Since you can see this message, then you are the descendant of the family and you can obtain my secret.”

Duwei looked at the woman in front of him with shock. She could use a magic circle and passed down a magic for over a hundred year. This kind of magic talent belonged to a great magician.

“I don’t know how many years it has passed, or how much mana is left inside that jewel. So listen to every word I say. Because I am afraid there isn’t enough mana to activate this magic circle a second time.”

The illusion said. Even though Duwei knew this was only an illusion, he still nodded to it.

“First I have to explain, what I am about to give you, may bring you unlimited amount of profit or trouble. Because this is the achievement of my whole life’s research, no one knows about it other than my husband. Since you can come to this point, you probably has a fair amount of knowledge on Star Reading, at least on stars. First I have to tell you a crucial fact, all the Star Readers in this world are wrong! Every one of them are wrong! Because Star Reading is not only a method of telling the future based on observing the stars. Even though everyone thinks of it as a divination magic, but I have to tell you it’s a type of powerful and profound magic. Star Readers shouldn’t be just scholar with knowledge of the night sky, nor fortune tellers. Real Star Readers should have power that rival a magician. If magicians can borrow power from the nature like wind, and fire, then why couldn’t Star Readers borrow power from the stars? We could even go further than that. Because I discovered a power even magicians couldn’t master, and that is the law of the universe.”

# Chapter 16 - Intractable Problem

“The celestial bodies in the night sky, the positions of the stars, the boundless mysteries. Their positions will change bizarrely along with the passage of time, and these changes have always been considered some kind of message bestowed on humanity by God. People often believe that astrologers are only people specializing in interpreting these riddles that God set aside for humanity.

But all this, is wrong!

The stars contain boundless power. This power, compared to what we can see, compared to an immense storm, a rushing deluge, a blaze overflowing the sky, it's even more formidable than this! Even so formidable that in the end..... it made me doubt.

Could such a vast power really be created by God?

In addition, these stars seem to have been suspended in the sky since ancient times! Since long, long ago, even further back than we know about, even to the extent that it might be further back than the creation of our world!

Then were these stars still truly created by God? According to all the books I've been able to find as well as religious records, wherever stars are mentioned, the ruling theory is: “When God created this world, the stars were put in place as decorations to make the night beautiful, and so that God could change their positions whenever there was a message for the world, so that these changes could enlighten humanity.”

Yes, according to these theories the stars were created along with our world as accessories for the night sky..... but, is this really true?

Six years ago, when I was thirty four, there was a change in the pattern of the stars, one night a star fell below the horizon. All the astrologers did their utmost to determine just what hint God intended for us with this phenomenon, but I began to choose another path.....

According to the direction the star fell in that night, and consulting all possible materials, I decided to search for that fallen star! I spent more than three years,

tracking all over the north of the continent, until at last I found it!

While speaking, Saimel raised her hand, extending her hand from within her red gown and opening her palm, lightly raising a fist sized piece of dark stone.

“This is the ‘fallen star’ I found. Look, on the surface it seems to basically be a chunk of rock! Of course, this piece in my hand is only a small chunk. What I found was as big as a house. Moreover, the terrain, when it fell it smashed a huge hole in the ground, and I could see where there had been an immense wildfire, the forest was burnt to ashes, and a ravine had been cut in level ground! Such destructive force, perhaps only the most powerful forbidden spells could rival it.”

Duwei sighed in admiration.

With Duwei’s insight, this female master astrologer called Saimel was truly extraordinary!

At least she had the courage to raise questions about the lofty words that God created everything..... and in some respects she even came close to the facts!

“It’s hard to imagine that what is called the stars, are only immense chunks of stone. Even more importantly, this piece of rock is completely different from any substance known in this world! Its solidity, and it’s even brimming with a kind of magic absorption power..... I’ve spent a lot of time inquiring with very many magic alchemists, and even some aged ironworkers, but not one of them recognized this new ‘substance’! In other words..... stars basically aren’t from our world!” Saimel’s image began to flicker a bit, clearly a sign that the magic power was running out. Duwei hurriedly roused his spirits, praying that the remaining magic power would last a bit longer.

“From then on I began to question every document that speaks of God creating the world. If you say that God created this world, gave living things to this world, gave day and night to this world, the four seasons alternating..... Then tell me who actually formulated all these laws? Was it God?

I’ve spent practically my whole life studying the stars, and finally I’ve discovered that what is called ‘the changes of the stars in the sky are riddles left for humanity by God.....’ is an absurd theory! I spent ten years recording and studying the positions of a few stars, researching them every night for ten years



and recording their positions.

And gradually, on some nights when the sky was dark and hidden behind black clouds, I was unable to see the stars with the naked eye. In times like these I could only search for some other method..... I thought of magic..... Since magic can be used to respond to even the tiniest changes of everything in nature, then shouldn't I be able to feel the changes of the stars using magic when I couldn't see them?

Finally I discovered the power of the stars! And if I could use this power, then just like magicians draw power from nature..... I could draw strength from the stars!

And after discovering I could sense the power of the stars, I found something that made me astounded!

That was..... The power of the stars couldn't be sensed just at night!

Even when the scorching sun stood right overhead, I could use meditation to expand my spirit sensitivity and feel the existence of the stars! They're right in the sky! Whether it's day or night! It's just that in the daytime their light is obscured by the intensity of the sun!

And after ten years, with my recordings of the positions of those stars over ten years I discovered that even though their positions would change a bit, the changes were actually all cyclical! All of it is like a loop! For example a star that's in the east in the summer, and in the winter moves to the west, in the next year it will move back to the east..... all of it seems to follow orbit to loop repeatedly, a repeating cycle!

Consequently, this absolutely isn't any way for God to enlighten humanity! It's even less of God's riddle for humanity! It all repeats according to certain rules — the rules of the stars! The law of the stars!"

Saimel's image gradually weakened, these were the last moments before the spirit power was exhausted.

Her voice became incomparably grave: "The church tells us that the stars are a riddle and enlightenment that God set aside for humanity, my conclusion is that the stars move according to fixed rules and have no relation to any divine riddle;

the church tells us that the stars are decorations God left in the night sky, my conclusion is that they exist not only at night, that even though their light can't be seen with the naked eye in the daytime, they still exist; the church tells us that God created this world, my conclusion is that the stars are made of a never seen before stone, not any kind of substance that exists in our world."

This great female astrologer raised her head, speaking her final conclusion: "I have begun to doubt whether the stars were created by God..... and finally, I have begun to doubt what is called..... God!"

Looking at her image, Duwei felt his heart brimming with respect for this woman! Ever since coming to this world, this was the first person he had encountered with the courage call into question and challenge common sense and authority!

Compared to those people who set their mind on the belief that 'God created everything', this woman who dared question common sense and challenge authority, and who even spend her life researching it, had earned Duwei's complete admiration and respect.

"My life's work is all hidden in this room, I give all the things in the cabinets to you. But that door outside is a diversion I left behind, if the people coming here didn't understand the hints about the stars, then all they could find is that door, behind it are just some worldly valuables, while here, is the true legacy of me, Saimel Zhila Rawling!"

Suddenly the light flickered and began to dim, the female astrologer's image gradually becoming vague, her voice also starting to weaken:

"For my final advice, in that oil painting in the study is a magic creature of my devising, I sealed it in the painting for it to become your guide in learning all of this. When learning all the things in this room you will require its help and guidance. For security, I haven't recorded any of the star magic spells I created on paper, but left them with that magic creature. You must unseal it from the painting.

My child, even if I don't know how long it will be until you find this place, I believe that the great Rawling clan will definitely produce a genius in magic. You should understand that all my life's work and study, by questioning the authority

of God, definitely won't be accepted by this world! Especially those in authority, they will even more ardently use any means to eliminate it. Since I am unable to hand down all of this honestly, I can only use clandestine methods like this.

I have enchanted that magic creature so that it will only come to life at night, and will lie dormant in the day..... He he, like this it's just like the stars, invisible to the naked eye in the day. Moreover, only people with strong spirit power will be able to notice its existence. I believe that since your spirit power is strong enough to come here, you will be able to become a remarkable sorcerer. I impart all I have learned about star magic to you..... Remember this incantation, you can use it to undo the seal on the painting above. After it has been released it will unconditionally follow your every command..... And the rest, is all up to you."

The female astrologer slowly declared her last incantation, each letter pronounced distinctly, at the same time making a few finger seals with her hands..... Duwei diligently remembered everything, and afterwards..... with a small sound the light abruptly flickered once, and faded away!

The room immediately fell into darkness, and Duwei hurriedly lit the candle. After inspecting the room, he decided there was nothing to be done and carefully returned from where he came, crawling through the secret passage.

Duwei was completely covered with dust by the time he came back to the study. Fortunately, in the study was still that pile of dusty ledgers, and so the dust wasn't at all difficult to explain.

Closing the secret bookshelf door, Duwei finally stepped in front of that painting: "I went inside and saw everything. Including her last words."

The eyes in the painting seemed to relax, then seemed entreating.

Duwei clearly understood what it meant and smiled: "You want me to unseal you? Eh, I already found the incantation she left behind. Only, clearly there was a small mistake....."

Duwei smiled wryly.

The first clue that Saimel left behind was the painting! But only a person with strong spirit power could notice it! And people with strong spirit power were

almost certainly sorcerers! Even if they weren't sorcerers, they could still learn magic!

A sorcerer was required for Saimel to pass on her star magic. As a result she left behind this kind of game.

If people didn't notice the oil painting it was because their spirit power was insufficient, and they didn't have the talent for magic.

And those who saw it could learn magic..... Afterwards, they could learn that incantation from Saimel and use it to undo the seal on the painting!

But perhaps even an astute person hadn't expected that after all these years the Rawling family would produce a freak like Duwei!

He clearly possessed surpassing talent for spirit power! But from top to bottom he didn't have the slightest bit of talent for magic sensitivity!

In other words, Duwei had no way of using that unsealing incantation Saimel left behind, no way of undoing the seal on the painting.

Without this magic creature Saimel left behind..... Perhaps he would be unable to learn Saimel's star magic! Because all the spells were left with the creature in this painting!

It seemed to be an intractable problem, right?

Duwei couldn't help a wry smile.

Clearly he had found a vast treasure, he had even opened the door, but he couldn't step inside. Such a feeling was truly helpless.....

Suddenly Duwei's eyes brightened..... hadn't he captured a magician?

That fellow who only had the ability to use the lowest level magic could use the top notch 'instant casting', then perhaps.....

# Chapter 17 - Three Hundred Gold Coins

At dawn, the old butler Hill personally arrived at the study with the breakfast trolley. As he pushed open the door, he found the family's young master standing on the bookcase ladder, entranced by a thick work on astrology in his hands.

Apparently the young master hadn't slept, and even though he looked a little peaked, his spirit was still lively. He just seemed a bit dirty..... Don't tell me he was rolling about in those ledgers all last night?

He had also removed a dagger from the wall and placed it on the desk..... Oh dear, that was an ancestral antique.

The old butler sighed, immediately summoning people for the young master to freshen up.

Duwei stretched after eating breakfast: "Did you find a place for the people that came with me from the capital last night?"

"Of course, they're at the back of the castle. Your guardsmen have all been folded into the castle guard regiment, in accordance with family administration..... Excuse my presumptuousness, respected young master, you seem to have recruited a knight on the way, and a female knight at that. Originally I wanted to arrange a place for the knight within the castle, but she refused..... Since you also brought a prisoner. As I didn't know how that captive had offended you, I arranged for a cell in the dungeon. Last night that female knight and her retinue stayed in the dungeon room."

"Very good." Duwei exhaled: "Then is there anything I need to do during the day..... Continuing reading these accounts? I think that in order to finish these I would need at least three or four days..... That's just too boring. Hill, I have to find something to do."

Three or four days? It would be good if you did it in ten.

The old butler swallowed such words and kept his face deferential: "Yes. You

are the master here. Everyone in the castle are your servants. Here your will is law. As for the accounts, there is no need to finish them immediately. These are all last year's accounts anyway. I actually think that if you hereafter can find a bit of time, it would be more effective to choose a couple of places in the clan estates to inspect than to read these musty old accounts."

Duwei smiled, raising his eyebrows: "A good suggestion, Hill, a good suggestion! That what do I do today? Here..... is there any schedule?"

"Eh....." The old butler had a difficult expression: "Here, you see, is a lot less busy than the imperial capital. Even the closest town requires a day for a round trip on horseback. There are no particular activities to pass the time here in the castle, but the surroundings are pretty good. If you're interested you can take a ride, or bring your cavalymen to hunt in the woods. Even if there isn't much prey in this season, just going out is a good option."

Duwei nodded and sipped his black tea, when abruptly his mind stirred: "That captive I brought back..... Would there be any problems? I mean, do I have the authority to....."

"The authority of law enforcement? My heavens..... Young master, this is Rawling Plains! The whole plains belong to the Rawling clan! As long as you don't rebel against the Empire, the Rawling family's wishes are law here! And at present, you are the most senior member of the Rawling family in this castle."

"Good." As Duwei stood, a maid at the side came forward with a long fur coat to dress him. Duwei glanced at this piece of clothing made from the fur of some unknown animal and shook his head: "It's warm today, no need for this..... Oh, Hill, I want two attendants at my side, I like using people I'm familiar with..... Let Marde handle it, I like his company. As for the others, you said the twenty cavalymen I brought from the capital had been folded into the castle guard? That's fine, I'll find some time to go look in on them today, and inspect the castle guard soldiers while I'm there. Eh..... One last thing, as a child I was instructed by a well-known astrologer, mister Lochart, under his tutelage I gained some interest in astrology. While I stay at the castle I will use the room at the top floor of the white tower."

"White tower..... Top floor....." The old butler mouth fell open, his expression

difficult: “This..... Young master, I’m afraid you don’t know that in the clan there has always been a prohibition, besides the clan head, nobody is allowed to climb the white tower.”

“Eh?” Duwei’s eyes brightened: “Really?”

He wasn’t the slightest bit rejected, and on the contrary even excited..... Yeah, if it was prohibited then presumably there should be something of Saimel’s left inside? Perhaps he could still discover something.

As for..... not being allowed in? If it wasn’t allowed, then couldn’t he sneak inside?

“Good. Then I there are a few things I would like you to dispatch people to get me.” Duwei stopped talking and picked up a goose feather pen from the table, swiftly scribbling down a few things on a piece of paper.

These were all some things he had determined necessary to study astrology.

Didn’t researching the stars require at least a telescope? And the best astronomy telescope at that. But something like that didn’t seem to exist in this world, so he would have to build it himself.

This world had things like glass, and the craftsmanship for mirrors was very high. With a bit of research he should be able to construct a crude telescope.

Actually..... Ai, in this world there was very little use for telescopes, since its main application would be military. But this world had magic! Sorcerers had an ‘eagle eye spell’ that was far better than binoculars.

Ai, magic, magic! It seemed he would have to find a way to learn magic.

Thinking about this, Duwei immediately stood up: “I should probably take some time to go visit my prisoner in the dungeon today.”

Duwei left the study and the old butler swiftly followed his instructions, calling for Marde.

This former stable hand’s expression was a bit depressed. After all, on the road he had the pleasurable feeling of ordering twenty cavalrymen as a valet. But at the castle those soldiers had immediately been folded into the castle guard, staying in the small barracks outside the castle on the left, and the valet had

immediately become a commander without an army.

A boss without anyone to order.

The old butler here seemed to be a grandee level person in the Rawling clan, so how would he dare exert any authority? After a gloomy night in his room, Marde was still a bit worried about his future..... The little master didn't let me wait on him last night, he wouldn't forget me, right?

Therefore, when Marde heard Duwei's summons early in the morning he immediately dashed over, his hastily arranged appearance left the punctilious old butler Hill somewhat dissatisfied, but Marde didn't care. Running into the castle hall, as he saw Duwei and promptly walked up to him, he wished he could hug the little master.

"Eh, milord, I am your faithful servant Marde. Did you have any instructions?"

Duwei looked helplessly at Marde. In this place it was after all only Marde that could be considered trustworthy. Others..... Yeah, that Rolynn might be at least halfway trustworthy.

Duwei didn't worry about immediately going to see that magician, rather his first order was: From today onward, without his command, nobody was to enter the study!

The old butler complied with this strange order without a word.

First heading to the barracks where the people he had brought with him were, in the barracks were stationed three hundred Rawling private armsmen of which one hundred was cavalry, twenty to a squad, forming five cavalry squads that took turns to patrol the castle surroundings each day. The twenty cavalymen Duwei had brought from the castle formed a sixth squad, and having exchanged their equipment in the barracks they welcomed Duwei warmly.

Duwei had talked it over with Marde on the way, and Marde immediately stepped forward, selecting six cavalymen as Duwei's private attendants. Marde had observed these six on the journey and thought of them as loyal men who discharged their duties conscientiously. These six cavalymen exchanged their armor for light equipment without any objections, and left the barracks on horseback.



Their colleagues all looked at their departure with envious expressions..... Ai, they were after all at the master's side, perhaps if the master took a liking to them they might have a chance for promotion.

It had to be said that leaving the stifling earl's court in the capital for this Rawling clan territory castle was still a very pleasant life.

At least here Duwei was senior, and this kind of noble life was rather invigorating. As he was leaving, a servant immediately brought over a docile horse, its saddle and bridle both goods of the most exquisite quality. He had heard that this horse had been personally chosen by Marde in order to curry favor with Duwei. This former stable hand still had a good eye for horses.

In the morning Duwei brought the six attendants for two laps in the forest, finally he chose a spot.

At the edge of the forest some distance from the castle was a brook, a tributary of a tributary of the Emerald River (Rawling River). The stream was gentle and, on inspecting the surroundings, without any traces of large animals. Duwei immediately decided to have a log house built here.

This would be his first magic laboratory — even if he wasn't a magician right now and still didn't have the talent for learning magic, Duwei wasn't a bit anxious.

There would always be a way.

After taking note of the location, Duwai again brought the followers to look in all directions.

This young master's actions certainly seemed eccentric.

In the same morning, besides touring the surrounding forest, he went to talk to some castle servants. And the first people he interviewed were actually the groundskeeper and gardener!

Afterwards the young master unfolded a list of items of strange flowers and plants for the groundskeeper and gardener to prepare. This list quickly fell into the hands of the old butler Hill, who immediately followed the instructions without saying anything.

It was only in the evening when Duwei finally headed down to the dungeon to meet his captive.

After two straight days of torment, presumably that magician had suffered a lot. Should he take a look at whether he wanted to surrender?

Duwei very confidently brought his people back to the castle, but the first to find him was nevertheless the old butler Hill.

“Young master, regarding those several lists you issued today with things you wanted procured, I have already dispatched people to see to them.”

“So quickly?” Duwei was especially pleased.

“Of course, this is Rawling family territory, your wishes are our commands. After I received the lists I immediately dispatched people on fast horses to procure them in the surrounding towns, the items are being delivered as we speak. But there’s a minor issue.....”

“What?”

“I’m afraid you might not have enough money.” The butler replied without batting an eyelid.

“.....” Duwei hadn’t expected that: “Money?”

“It’s like this.” The old butler’s expression was calm, a calm expression to go with a calm voice, but Duwei couldn’t help be annoyed by that expression. It was because he felt the old butler’s expression clearly concealed mirth at his misfortune: “Young master, since you haven’t yet reached your majority the clan head issued a provision, besides the expenses for your everyday food and clothing, each month you may draw three hundred gold coins from the clan for your own expenses. Only three hundred gold coins each month, this is the specified amount you may use. But if you exceed this, it must be deducted from next month’s sum.”

“.....” Duwei was speechless.

Money? Duwei hadn’t expected to, as the eldest son of the illustrious earl, actually have problems with money?

The old butler swiftly fished out a monocle from his breast pocket and placed it

over his left eye, then taking out the lists of items Duwei had handed out today: “Four pieces of top quality crystal, twenty glass mirrors, one smelting furnace, half a cart of stone coal. With the gardener you ordered one batch of golden scale flower seeds, one batch of arrow orchid seeds, and further one bottle of Jarohei rugosa pollen..... Besides a set of first rate florist instruments. With the groundskeeper you purchased two tiger striped broad leaf trees, one hundred clovers, further.....”

The old butler swiftly recounted the lists, then slowly said: “Purchasing these things will altogether cost you approximately four hundred twenty gold coins. In other words, you have not only spent this month’s quota, you have even withdrawn money from next month’s limit..... Moreover, I have also heard that you plan to construct a log house by a creek in the forest. I have done the calculations and if you plan to construct a simple two floor house, I’m afraid it will require another three hundred gold coins. If you wish for the rooms of the house to be decorated and furnished..... it will be another two hundred gold coins. With these figures, I’m afraid you have already used your money for the next four months.”

Duwei was speechless.

He had realized he might have miscalculated!

Money!

The illustrious earl’s eldest son was unexpectedly penniless!

But those plants were all necessary. Those were the most basic raw materials for Duwei’s alchemical studies.

Duwei looked at the old butler, lowering his face: “Yes? You’re saying that I, father’s oldest son, the supervisor of the clan territories, can only use a trifling three hundred gold coins every month? I didn’t mishear you?”

The old butler’s manners were still very respectful: “Yes, this was all stipulated in a letter in the clan head’s own handwriting. Even though it’s true that the clan estates each month generate several tens of thousands of gold coins, you must know..... that those are public funds. You still haven’t reached your majority, still haven’t obtained your own peerage, still haven’t obtained your own territory, therefore.....”

“Therefore I only have an allowance of three hundred gold coins every month, right?” Duwei’s tone was cold, waving a hand behind him: “Fine, I get it, for the next few months I can’t casually go shopping, right?”

“I’m very sorry, these are the earl’s commands. You can at most only withdraw three months of funds.”

As the old butler saw that this little master was unhappy, he immediately took his leave.

After the old butler left, Duwei looked at Marde at his side who prudently said: “Young master..... I still have with me the one thousand gold coins you gave me for safekeeping, that the countess gave you before leaving the imperial capital.”

Duwei sighed: “Ai, I thought it was strange that mother would stealthily slip me money..... But now I understand..... Hehe, it seems that his lordship my father is afraid this retard will mess up the clan territories, afraid I will ruin the ancestral estates, so he only nominally made me the supervisor but without letting me use the funds.”

“This..... We can cut down on some expenses. Actually, three hundred gold coins every month is already a lot.....” When Marde had said this he very conscientiously closed his mouth, because the little master was thinking.

“..... Fine, since it’s like this, we’ll just have to figure out a way to make some money on our own.” Duwei immediately got over his brief dissatisfaction..... Anyway, wasn’t there a lot of valuables behind that trick door in Saimel’s secret passage? If it came down to it, he could just use the money there.

Only..... It seemed that the days he would spend here might not be as free as he had imagined.

“Let’s go, we’ll have a look at the dungeon.” Duwei waved his hand, calmly saying: “I hope that magician won’t refuse me again today. I’m already in a bad mood!”

## Chapter 18 - A Different Path

Outside the castle dungeon Duwei saw his first subordinate female knight Rolyinn, since coming to the castle she had spontaneously taken custody of the captive magician.

The magician had after all been one of Rolyinn's companions, and even if she had sworn loyalty to Duwei, she still held some nostalgic compassion. Even if the magician had originally only been attracted by her charm, and only been with them for a few days. Even if Rolyinn didn't dare go against Duwei's orders and release him, by looking after him personally she could at least show this former companion some consideration, to the limits of friendship.

At least after coming here last night, under Rolyinn's care, he had been able to eat. Even if he still couldn't be allowed to sleep or meditate. Rolyinn's two retainers, that barbarian warrior and archer, took turns guarding the magician to prevent any opportunity to recover magic power.

When Duwei reached the dungeon, this kind of damp and moist dungeon air didn't agree with him.

Actually the sight of Rolyinn in knight's attire made Duwei's eyes brighten! This long legged girl seemed to have disguised her originally seductive face, cutting her hair a bit shorter, tying a silk headband over her forehead, even trimming her eyebrows to reduce her charm a bit, but tripling her heroic spirit.

Especially putting on knight's clothing made her seem a lot more dignified — even if by not wearing a short skirt like before, she no longer exposed those beautiful long legs. Anyway, fitted with a slender sword and a light cavalry breastplate, she rather had the attitude of a knight.

"My lord." Rolyinn immediately greeted Duwei when she saw him: "You are....."

"I will see my captive." Duwei's expression was cold, his mood a bit bad, glancing at Rolyinn: "You've kept guard here all night?"

Rolynn looked a bit awkward: “Lord, that guy is after all my former companion, I would.....”

“Ask for leniency?” Duwei shook his head: “No need, I won’t make things hard for you. As long as he obediently answers my questions I’ll let him go.”

Duwei walked past Rolynn, leaving behind the words: “I’ll speak with him alone, all of you can wait in the outer room. Don’t let anyone in.”

The room where the magician was held was originally the largest cell in the castle dungeon, when Duwei entered the magician’s complexion was pale, his eyelids fluttering rapidly.

Even if the magician had formidable spirit power he had wasted a lot in that fight in the inn, instead he he had been kept from the opportunity to meditate and hadn’t even slept for two days, by now he was unable to endure.

Since coming to this dungeon, each time his eyes had closed he had been doused by a bucket of cold water. Even if Rolynn was a bit polite, her two subordinates were less so.

Originally the barbarian warrior and archer had been less than pleased to have the magician in their party since he was only attracted by Rolynn’s charm, and they had always held him in contempt. Their mutual relationship had never been amicable.

This moment, seeing this little noble enter the cell, the magician was already about to collapse. He wasn’t chained, a magician without magic power was weaker than even an ordinary person anyway. But in the damp darkness of the dungeon he had been doused with cold water more times than he could remember, and his lips were pale from the cold. When Duwei entered the cell he was sitting on a stone bench hugging his knees, while the barbarian warrior stood next to him still yelling: “Hey, don’t close your eyes! Otherwise it’s the cold water for you again! How many times do you think I’ve had to run for fresh water tonight!”

Just as he finished he turned his head and saw Duwei, and immediately shut his mouth. Duwei just gestured for him to leave and stepped over to the magician: “How is it? Respected mister magician, is everything to your satisfaction?”

Satisfaction? Do I look 'satisfied' to you? The mage swallowed his curses, an imploring expression on his face: "Mister, as a member of the nobility, why do you treat me like this? As the eldest son of the Rawling clan earl, if it becomes known you treated a magician this viciously, then afterwards it might be difficult for the Rawling clan to find friends among magicians!"

Still want to threaten me?

Duwei curled his lips: "Eh, what was that? If it becomes public knowledge that an insignificant first level magician actually mastered instant casting, then what would the consequences be?"

The magician paled, showing a terrified expression.

Consequences?

The consequences would be very simple! If other magicians learned of this, then very quickly he would become the common prey of all magicians on the continent! Any magician wanted to learn a first rate skill like instant casting! And if an insignificant first level mage actually managed to learn something like it..... Was there any need to ask about consequences?

Just like if a defenseless three year old child carried around millions of gold coins!

"Speak." Duwei smiled: "Actually, I know that your so-called instant casting isn't the real thing. You definitely used some obscure method to accomplish it, right? I'm not a magician, so even if you told me it wouldn't be any skin off your back. I just want to satisfy my curiosity."

The magician lowered his head with a struggling expression.

"What good will hesitating do?" Duwei sighed: "You're just a first level magician, even if magicians are rare and respected in this world, that only applies to mid level sorcerers or higher. For the lowest level magician like you, I'm afraid nobody would care even if I killed you right now, or maybe locked you up for life. Even the magic association wouldn't offend a great noble for the sake of a lowest level magician, right?"

"You....." The magician's expression finally relaxed as his mental barriers began to crumble, biting his lip: "You..... If I tell you, you have to promise never to

reveal it. Because..... This involves my status as magician!”

“I can do that, certainly.” Duwei immediately raised his hand and recited an oath: “I, Duwei Rawling, hereby swears that everything you tell me today, I will record in my heart and never again repeat to others. Otherwise, let the radiant goddess strike me down!”

“.....” The magician’s expression was mixed, showing a guilty consciousness. Finally his lips squirmed: “I..... Actually, I’m only a magic apprentice.”

“..... What?” Duwei was shocked: “What do you mean?”

“I.....” The magician spoke as if it cost him a great deal of strength: “I said, I’m actually just a magic apprentice, my true magic strength is only on the level of a magic apprentice. And my first level magician qualifications were only obtained by cheating.”

“Cheating?” Duwei’s heart began to stir!

Obtaining magician qualifications by cheating?

According to what Duwei knew, the examinations of the magic association couldn’t be so easily deceived! If magician qualification could be be easily swindled, then wouldn’t they be a joke?

“I started studying magic from childhood, my master was a low level magician who believed I had the talent for magic and accepted me as an apprentice, and when I was thirteen I acquired the qualifications as a magic apprentice..... that wasn’t difficult.” The magician’s tone was somewhat bitter: “There are only a few hundred true magicians on the continent, but people with qualifications as magic apprentices number in the thousands. Unfortunately, the road to becoming a true magician is too arduous, and the majority of magic apprentices, even with a lifetime of effort, are unable to pass the first level examination and can only spend their whole life on the level of a magic apprentice. And I..... Am also one of these pitiful worms.”

“Every magician will accept several apprentices, but the magician himself clearly understands that none of these apprentices will ever become magicians and will probably spend their lives as as a magician’s follower. But every magician will still accept several apprentices. Because..... The position of



magician is so sublime and revered, and for someone like that, how can they only have a few attendants? Therefore, each magician will bring along some amount of magic apprentices. These apprentices for the most part dream about magic, but in truth only a small minority are able to realize that dream. Most repulsive is that most magicians know full well that these magic apprentices don't stand a chance of becoming magicians, but they don't tell them..... Because the magicians need obedient disciples, people to assist them with magic research, people to support them, as assistants that seem more like servants..... And servants like these won't even cost them a single gold coin!

My story is just like this. I met my master when I was thirteen, he told me I had talent and brought me away from home, promising to teach me to become an outstanding magician. I followed him with boundless longing, but unfortunately..... Later I discovered that it was basically impossible for me to achieve my dream. My master had a dozen disciples, each having passed the magic apprentice examination. Our master just exploited us like free servants, free assistants.

He would deceive us with lies, but he clearly knew that of these disciples the majority would never be able to become magicians. He knew! But he didn't say anything!

I spent ten years as a magic apprentice before I discovered I didn't have the gift. It was true that I had a bit more spirit power than the average person, and also a tiny bit of affinity for sensitivity..... But that was the limit. My talent was limited.

Later, I had no choice but to..... to..... study magic alchemy.”

Magic alchemy?

Duwei's eyes brightened!

This fellow's story was a lot like his!

Only he didn't even have the ability to pass the magic apprentice examination..... Duwei laughed bitterly in his heart.

Actually, even Duwei didn't know that his circumstances weren't what he thought.

Magicians were an odd bunch. For the most part magicians were reclusive and conceited, regarding themselves as above everyone else. They could call the wind and summon the rain, they could draw upon divine power. To the majority of magicians, the mass of common people were little more than ants they could casually exploit.

A lot of the magic apprentices accepted by magicians had even less talent than Duwei! But even if magicians were wealthy, they couldn't hire servants like common nobles when they needed attendants — what would that look like!

As sacred sorcerers, as mysterious magicians, their servants naturally had to have the status of magic apprentices! If they used common servants, wouldn't their status drop?

But only a small minority of people possessed talent in magic. Therefore, with the majority of magicians looking to have magic apprentices at their side, they didn't even hesitate to lower the official recruitment standards for magic apprentices! People whose talent clearly was insufficient, as long as it was a tiny bit more than ordinary people, would still be lured in by magicians saying 'I will teach you to become a magician'.

Afterwards..... These people who lacked the talent to become magicians, would spend their lives as cheap labor for their masters!

These practices caused a great deal of disorder with the magic apprentice assessments! The standard was also unevenly matched.

However, when Duwei was tested last time in the imperial capital, it was done according to the true and strict standard! Because..... That mage Clarke didn't dare cheat the eldest son of the second most powerful person in the imperial military!

Just because of Duwei's background, Clarke didn't dare cheat him into become cheap labor.

Otherwise, if Duwei had been a commoner..... That day when Clarke saw his outstanding spirit power he would have already accepted Duwei as an apprentice!

Even when he knew that Duwei didn't possess the gift for magic, Clarke would

still have taken him on! Because having a magic apprentice with such outstanding spirit power at his side would have been greatly convenient in future magic experiments.

In fact, a lot of magicians did this. If Duwei hadn't been the earl's son, perhaps he would have been tricked into leaving with the beautiful dream of becoming a magician, serving as a magician's cheap labor, even squandering his life and delaying his future prospects.

"It was only by happenstance that I learned the facts: My master had long already known that I couldn't become a magician." The captive's voice was bitter: "He even knew it when he brought me away from home! Just that he saw that I had a bit of magic talent and wanted me as a servant by his side, and later somewhat convenient when performing magic experiments. Master had a lot of apprentices like me, some with strong magic power, some with decent magic sensitivity, but all with some major flaw. But they had been tricked into believing a beautiful dream, leaving at master's side, wasting their lives!

".....And then?" Duwei exhaled.

"Like I said just now..... At first after learning the truth I was angry, and later..... I decided to change my destiny. Since I couldn't learn real magic, then..... I decided to study magic alchemy." The captive magician sighed: "Because magic alchemists are recognized as a kind of magician by the magic association. Even if..... This is considered ridiculous by most people, even if most people don't consider magic alchemists worthy of being called magicians."

"..... And then?" Duwei felt his heartbeat speed up!

Could it be that..... This guy.....

Just like him, neither of them had the talent for magic! But now he had become a magician! And moreover, in that tavern he had used real magic!

Since he, without talent, had at last used some unknown method to learn magic..... Then as long as he could figure out what method he used..... It might be possible for him too!

If he could find a way to learn magic, then.....

Couldn't he learn the astrological skills Saimel had left behind in that secret

room, Saimel's life's research into star magic?

"You can become a magician with proficiency in magic alchemy?" Duwei looked at his captive: "From what I know, the examination for magic alchemists is completely separate from the examination for magician qualifications."

Real magicians were split into ten levels, and the difficulty of the exam would increase a lot with each level! Therefore, the higher level the magician, the more powerful.

But 'also a kind of magician' magic alchemists' exam was a lot simpler.

Even to the extent that it felt half hearted!

Magic alchemists didn't have multiple levels of examinations!

Just one!

As long as you passed the exam you were a magic alchemist! Afterwards the magic association would issue you a badge, officially recognizing you as a magician.

Even if most people wouldn't acknowledge this recognition.

Moreover, even the magic association itself discriminated against them with those badges.

The magic alchemist emblem was crafted simply in copper, and..... It didn't have any magical counterfeiting protection.

Perhaps it was because the magi association itself knew nobody would be interested in faking the identity of a magic alchemist.

A magical alchemist, often referred to as a poison master, were even lower in status than a common doctor.

And even first level real magicians had badges of silver! A first level magician had a silver leaf badge.

Duwei naturally hadn't forgotten how he had seized a silver leaf badge from the chest of his captive in that tavern!

In other words, he hadn't passed a magic alchemist's examination, but a real magician's examination!

How had he done it?

Learning magic had been a broken dream, but this moment hope once again rose in Duwei's heart!

"My gift in magic power was outstanding, and my talent in spirit power was a bit stronger than most people. For an ordinary person this might just manifest as increased vigor, not growing fatigued as easily and so on..... But I lacked sensitivity. No matter how I meditated, no matter how hard I tried, at first I was unable to even sense the fluctuations of natural forces." The captive spoke slowly: "Later, after studying magic alchemy for ten years, I began to wonder..... What are the so-called natural forces really? My teacher told me they were everything! Everything in this world! They were wind, fire, water, even the tiniest most minute things. But this explanation was still too vague. Deep in my heart I had a thought..... Just if, I could understand, just what these 'natural forces' are, then, there might still be hope for me."

Duwei calmly listened, carefully engraving these words in his mind.

"For instance, fire magic. A magician can use spells to draw support on the natural fire element in this world and use magic to change it into flame! But in magic alchemy there's a dozen different ways to create flame with preparations! Like the simplest kind....." Here the captive magician looked at Duwei: "What I'm saying, are you following?"

"Please continue, I understand." Duwei smiled faintly: "I've also read some books on magic alchemy."

"Good." The magician continued: "In magic alchemy there's a dozen different ways to produce the same basic principle as fire magic..... Flame! For instance, the most basic kind uses a sort of phosphoric grass ground into powder that can ignite on its own! So I thought..... phosphoric grass can create fire, and magician can also create fire with magic. Then could it be..... That phosphoric grass contains what is called the magic elements of natural forces? In other words, does phosphoric grass contain something that is the same as fire magic elements?"

Duwei's heart twitched as if he had thought of something, but for the moment he couldn't catch it.

The captive magician continued: “I discovered something ingenious. All magic spells! I mean all of them! Even if there are small and large spells. Let’s take another fire magic example, the simplest fireball spell, compared to ‘city conflagration’ forbidden spell that can extinguish heaven! Even if the difference in power is manyfold, in fact, the principle is the same! Both use flame for ignition! But..... What’s ingenious..... Everything that can be accomplished with fire magic can also be accomplished with magic alchemy! For instance fire magic, even if alchemy can’t produce something on the destructive scale of the ‘city conflagration’ forbidden spell, the theory of lighting a fire is the same! Other examples with wind magic, water magic, and so on..... All magic systems can be replicated with alchemy! Even if only the very simplest fundamental principles, they can still be replicated! Why is this? Perhaps..... I think, maybe, those precious alchemical materials actually contain what is called the ‘magic elements’ of each magic system! What do you think?”

The prisoner’s face was filled with pride: “Since I’m unable to use meditation to extract the magical elements in nature..... then I’ll use alchemical means, extracting magical elements from preparations! !”

# Chapter 19 - Beginning! The Devil's Road!

Genius!

This fellow was absolutely a genius in magic research!

Duwei had already made his assessment of his captive magician! If this fellow could continue his research, then one day he might become the great scholar of a generation!

But right now Duwei was most interested in how he had used alchemy to use magic.

As the magician talked about how he had expended immeasurable effort to reach results, he couldn't help but get a bit excited. Even if was surreptitious and shameful about these results by necessity, he really somewhat regretted not being able to share his life's greatest discovery with others. Now that he could finally speak without worry, the magician's eyes were shining, pride plastered across his whole face, he couldn't even help gesticulating wildly with excitement:

"Someone like me, with sufficient spirit power, that is magic power. But sensitivity a bit lacking. Unable to sense the magic elements in the surrounding nature. Then, I thought, like someone with bad hearing, if the voices are too low, he won't hear anything..... But, if the voices are louder, very noisy! He might be able to hear!"

Duwei interposed with shining eyes: "Therefore..... You thought of a way to extract something that increased the magic element content in the surroundings?"

"Yes! The most basic of basics in fire magic is 'fireball', but not even the highest level magician actually knows what the so-called 'fire element' actually is, since everyone just knows how to use it, they've never thought about how it works. But those incendiary preparations, that they can ignite proves they contain 'fire element'! I posited a hypothesis: In an equal environment where someone with strong sensitivity could feel the surrounding magic element, and I

couldn't. Then..... If I could increase the surrounding magical element, increase it by some amount, then even with my dull sensitivity I should still be able to feel it! In this case, wouldn't I be able to use magic?"

"Afterwards..... Did you succeed?" Duwei gasped.

"Yes!" The magician solemnly said: "I did many, many experiments, mainly researching fire magic. I hypothesized that those incendiary materials contained fire element. But finding a way to extract them cost me a lot of time. I left my master and headed south alone, I built a tiny magic laboratory, I filled it with refining tools, and after years of research I finally found it."

Duwei couldn't help be excited: "You found the fire element..... Then what is the fire element really?"

"..... I still don't know." The magician looked a little helpless: "I experimented with more than a hundred formulas and more than three hundred methods, until at last..... After I finished an experiment extracting a kind of powder from more than ten different kinds of plants, a kind of black dust. Afterwards..... Afterwards I suddenly felt it!"

"Felt it?" Duwei's eyebrows rose.

"Yes! I felt it! With my dull sensitivity that would usually be unable to sense the magic elements around me! Just when I worked with this powder, using a ventilator of my own construction, when this powder rose into the air..... I finally felt it! As I tried a fire spell, I discovered I could clearly feel the pulse of fire element around me! I..... I had actually succeeded!"

The magician was moved as he spoke: "I started on the path of magic when I was thirteen, and had spent twenty years! I finally used magic..... Even if it was only the most insignificant, the very lowest level fireball spell! But, when I saw I had used magic to launch that only fist sized fireball, I was so happy I could die."

Looking at this fellow's face, Duwei couldn't help sighing: "In other words, when you fought with my people in that tavern, the fireballs were also....."

"Yes." The magician nodded: "I carried some sealed bottles containing the powder I extracted, and when I needed to use magic I would open one in my sleeve, releasing the powder..... Afterwards I could feel the existence of the fire



elements, I could use magic.”

It was a strange method..... But this fellow really was a genius!

However..... Duwei suddenly recalled something, his face a little odd: “Then you used this kind of method to get magician’s qualifications?”

The magician blushed: “I know, this method is the same as fraud. But I really couldn’t control my desire to be called a magician.”

“This I can understand.” Duwei said: “But what baffles me is why you are only the very lowest first level magician? Since you have the talent for magic, and now also solved the problem of magic sensitivity, shouldn’t you be able to pass even higher level exams?”

“No, it’s impossible for me.” The captive shook his head: “My methods may have settled the issue of sensitivity, but..... I was immediately confronted with a new problem. And that problem, even after long and careful consideration, I was unable to settle.”

“What problem?” Duwei was very concerned..... After all, whether he could learn and use magic all depended on this fellow.

“After my experiments I managed to extract that yellow powder with fire element, but my sensitivity really is too lacking, so even when there is plenty of fire element I’m still unable to use more than the lowest level fireball spell.” The magician smiled wryly: “Do you think I wouldn’t want to take higher level exams? I even imagined that since I could use my own methods to raise the fire element density..... Then I should be able to increase the fire element density even higher! I might even be able to use the highest level forbidden spell ‘city conflagration’! Becoming a forbidden spell mage, wouldn’t that be glorious, wouldn’t that be an achievement? Like that I could instantly leap to the summit of magicians on the continent!”

Unfortunately his excited mood suddenly dimmed: “But, the problem is..... My sensitivity is lacking. Therefore, if I want to use higher level fire magic I have to use some way to increase the fire element content in my surroundings even more! The higher the concentration, the higher the level of spells I can use. But in fact, that powder I made already contains a very high amount of fire element! I really wanted to increase the fire element content even higher..... Moreover, I

did some rough calculations..... If I can cast the lowest level fireball spell with such a high fire element concentration..... Then in order to cast a mid level fire system spell, the fire element density in my surroundings would have to increase by several tenfold! Several tenfold! How could I do that? Only if I threw myself directly into a fire! Only flames would have such a high content of fire element! But if I did that I would burn to death before I could use it.”

“So..... Despite overcoming the difficulty of sensitivity, you could only use the lowest level spells.” Duwei concluded.

“Yes.”

“Then, your instant casting?” Duwei was still interested in how he could continuously throw fireballs without chanting.

“That is a quirk of alchemy.” The magician seemed somewhat embarrassed: “My magic doesn’t use the natural magic elements, but rather my own..... When ordinary magicians cast spells they have to use incantations to summon and find the magic elements in the air..... But I don’t need to summon anything, I don’t need to find anything, because my fire element is right there in my sleeve.....”

This time Duwei’s expression changed!

If it was like this..... Then..... If..... Suppose that!

Suppose that he could overcome the present problem, letting him use high level magic..... He could do it with instant casting!

Imagine a magician that could use high level fire magic..... And at the same time do it without even chanting..... How formidable that would be!

Duwei patiently talked with this magician for a long time, he deliberately shifted the subject to magic alchemy. What astonished the magician was how this half-sized youngster, this respected little noble (Even if at the start the magician didn’t know of Duwei’s status, nobody other than the Rawling clan possessed such a large castle in the Rawling Plain, so this youngster had to be an outstanding scion of the famous Rawling clan!)

Such a venerable noble had such proficiency in such a disdained field as magic alchemy..... this was truly rare.

But this little noble had actually done careful research into magic alchemy! His learning made even the magician feel admiring. After their discussion had become a bit amicable, Duwei finally revealed his own story: How he had wanted to become a magician, but had been defeated by the lack of ability.....

Such an experience immediately made the captive sympathetic! Giving birth to a feeling of fellow victims.

This little noble actually had a similar experience as him! They had both been brimming with a longing for magic, both discovered their lack of talent, both of them even had outstanding magic power, but lacked sensitivity!

Under such circumstances, even if their relationship had been hostile before, and with one of them even a captive, the magician's dislike for the little noble decreased significantly.

The other side also had a heart that thirsted for magic.

At least, they resembled each other in their desire to become magicians.

"Thorskei." Duwei softly spoke the magician's name (Duwei had learned the magician's name in their conversation), he looked at the magician: "I want to ask you something..... Why is it you want to become a magician? After learning magic, what do you want to accomplish?"

"..... This." Thorskei pondered it: "A magician's calling should be to investigate the ultimate mysteries of magic, researching magic, being engrossed in the secrets of magic for a lifetime. But fate made me unable to become a high level magician, so what's the point of magical mysteries, it's unrelated to me..... So I just want to obtain the things I want."

"You're talking about the position and treatment of a magician?" Duwei smiled: "It's an honest answer. And you're right. A magician is treated very well. No matter where it is, a great magician will never want for lords trying to recruit him and can obtain the highest degree of respect and pay..... But don't forget that you're just a first level magician! There are no lords that would pay greatly to recruit a mere low level magician."

Thorskei was silent..... He knew what Duwei said was true. Wherever he went, even if he had the recognition of magician's qualifications, as a lowest ranked

first level magician he would discover he wasn't as popular as he had imagined.

At first when people found out he was a magician, they would be filled with astonishment and respect! But afterwards, as they found out he was just a first level magician, the enthusiasm would immediately drop tenfold.

This was also a final wronging for Thorskei, and the reason he had joined Rolynn's little adventuring party! Originally he had wanted to join a large mercenary company, but they wouldn't even look at him.

Seeing Thorskei's helpless expression, Duwei knew the moment had come and said with a smile: "Thorskei, since your dream is to obtain the salary and respect of a magician, it would be better to swear loyalty to me! You can become my private magic consultant. I'll pay you quite well! Respect, status, and anything you want, I can satisfy. I believe you already know I come from the Rawling clan. Surely the Rawling clan's name shouldn't dishonor you?"

Thorskei's heart thumped!

Relying on this little lord..... It seemed a good option. Even if they had some conflict before, it was just because the other party was interested in magic. And their conversation just now was pleasant, and most importantly, this little noble was like himself, researching magic alchemy after being unable to walk the path of magic..... This encounter really engendered a kind of feeling of intimacy in Thorskei!

Moreover, being able to become a magic consultant under the banner of the Rawling clan, obtaining generous treatment..... What was there to hesitate about?

"I....." Thorskei thought a moment: "I would like to accept your offer, but I have to return to the south first. My laboratory is there, and I still have all my tools and a lot of precious materials there, as well as a lot of powders I've extracted. They would all have to be moved back here. I'll have to go myself..... You should know that a magician's laboratory can't be transported by ordinary people. It's dangerous."

Duwei thought about it for a moment: Releasing him to go back south wasn't a problem..... But this fellow wouldn't be trying to escape?

This fellow who had managed to cheat himself to the title of magician was worth more than ten thousand gold to Duwei! He absolutely couldn't get away!

Duwei made a decision on the spot: "Then, since I'm quite interested in your laboratory, I'll come with you to the south!"

On this day, the future Roland devil's road, had begun.

# Chapter 20 (a) - Half Horn City's Magic Beast Incident

Thorskei's laboratory was in the south because he was partial to fire magic.

In the blistering hot climate of the south, clearly nature must be a bit richer in fire elements. It's not that fire magic couldn't be researched in the ice and snow of the north, but it would be more difficult.

After Duwei had made his decision, everything moved very quickly.

Thorskei was immediately released from the dungeon, his magician's robe, equipment, those bottles of powder, magic crystals and scrolls were all returned to him.

Of course, the magician's robe was new.

That this young master could recruit a magician as his subordinate astonished the old butler. But once he learned Thorskei was just a first level magician he felt at ease..... So that's how it was.

The old butler was unable to refuse Duwei's plan for a journey, especially since he'd said that very morning that Duwei might go have a look at some of the clan's estates, and how travelling was more intuitive than reading dusty old ledgers.

Carts, horses and luggage very swiftly prepared, and this time the butler arranged things better than the wretched journey from the imperial capital. After all, it would be humiliating if the clan's great young master travelled too poorly within the Rawling clan's own territory.

It was still Marde that accompanied Duwei as his butler, but this time he had more than ten castle servants under his command, in charge of looking after the young master on the journey.

From the castle guard, two cavalry squads were detailed for Duwei's protection, and the teams were accompanied by the castle guard's vice captain,

a regular knight with outstanding martial skill. This vice captain Robert was also a regular knight! He was a person recognized by the knight's association, holding the badge of a fourth level knight!

One of the two squads of cavalry was Robert's own squad, and the other was the group that had followed Duwei south from the capital.

This fourth level knight called Robert had a tall and powerful appearance, with broad shoulders, imposing build, square jaw, and generally seemed upright and outspoken. To the little lord Duwei, this knight was always quite respectful, apparently an unsophisticated warrior. Duwei had a rather good impression of him.

Apart from all these, they were also accompanied by a female knight, naturally Duwei's first subordinate, Rolyenn.

Setting out from the castle and travelling south, Robert discharged his duties very conscientiously the whole journey, he painstakingly arranged their formation, and worked to take precautions whenever they stopped. On the occasions Duwei had a sudden burst of interest and proposed camping out for the night, Robert didn't voice any objections and just wordlessly nodded his consent. After continuing, he would also very carefully arrange the night vigil and reserves.

A model soldier.

This was Duwei's assessment of Robert. Clearly he had spent time in the army. Of the martially accomplished Rawling clan's retainers, very many were knights with a history in the army.

Compared to that old butler who Duwei disliked, this loyal and conscientious knight was obviously a lot better.

Seven days.

While travelling and sightseeing, Duwei's party finally left the Côte province after seven days. To travel further south they would have to leave the Côte province, or in other words, leave the Rawling clan's territory.

Generally speaking, Duwei was satisfied with the state of affairs in the Rawling clan's territory. On the road he had seen wide expanses of farmland, plentiful

farming villages, leisurely farmers, they had even passed a couple of larger towns. He could also see that the people here led fairly good lives.

As their convoy travelled the roads, frequently when passing a pair of farmsteads there would be farmers standing by the side of the road, and once they saw the knights with the Rawling clan's flag, the farmers would wave their hats in greeting in the distance.

It seemed that the Rawling clan had the good will of the people here.

Robert also noticed that this little lord hadn't gone out to inspect any clan estates. He had basically brought people for sightseeing.

But this wasn't strange. Considering the age of this little lord, how would Robert believe a thirteen year old boy would have the ability to manage any clan estates? And this wasn't a matter he should concern himself with, he just discharged his duties and served as the best protector he could.

This day when everyone finally reached the southern Rawling territory border town, Duwei suddenly demanded to continue going south. Even if Robert felt a bit baffled by this proposal, he still didn't object.

They were out touring anyways, and if the little lord was interested, they would continue south.

Moreover, heading south from Côte province was the imperial Lille province, and Lille province's lord governor was extremely well disposed towards the Rawling clan. The Rawling family's young master coming over to amuse himself would certainly receive some consideration, without anything to be worried about.

Duwei very quickly grew fond of this obedient knight. He also noticed that sir Robert was well liked among the guards. Young cavalymen would frequently consult him about martial skill at camp.

Robert's martial skill was outstanding — at least to Duwei's point of view. This knight could wield an immense broadsword with astonishing strength! When instructing those young soldiers, even seven or eight of them would be unable to get close to him.

Even that barbarian warrior in Rolynn's retinue admired Robert. Since in a



spar, Robert had knocked down the barbarian warrior with just one hand on his sword.

A fourth level knight really had uncommon martial strength.

Under such circumstances even Duwei couldn't help feeling itchy, and proposed asking Robert for advice in martial skill. Robert was a bit surprised at this request. Since, according to the clan supervisors, if the family head's eldest son wanted to learn martial skills, then he would find those high level knight retainers as teachers, and not an insignificant cavalry captain like him.

Robert straightforwardly agreed, his training was the battle qi training methods taught in the army anyway. It wasn't any extraordinary secret. But just like the evaluation the imperial bodyguard at earl Lehmann's side made, after a brief period of instruction Robert had no choice but to tell Duwei he really didn't have the gift for training combat skills.

Duwei's present body had since childhood, along with serious illness, been innately lacking.

Duwei wasn't dismayed, he wasn't hoping to become an expert, he just felt it was necessary to get a bit of exercise. Even if he didn't become an expert, just being a bit healthier was good enough!

Like this Duwei began to learn some of the most basic martial skills, mostly some methods for strengthening the body. But this also led to their travelling speed dropping a bit.

On the ninth day of the journey, the party reached a small town in the northeast region of Lille province..... Half Horn City.

This strange name came from the town being located next to a valley shaped like half a horn.

This little town was situated on an important caravan route, and was therefore quite bustling. Even to the extent that in this little town, Duwei's party even saw a twenty people strong mercenary company! They were escorting a caravan north, and stayed at the same hotel as Duwei's party.

Lille province wasn't the territory of any noble, but a province directly subordinate to the Empire. This little town didn't have any high officials, and

Duwei didn't care to deal with any local officials, and staying at a hotel was more leisurely. So when their party arrived they didn't disturb the local officials.

At lunch, Duwei and the others were in the hotel hall, and on the other side were those caravanners. Outside the inn was suddenly heard urgent hoofbeats, and after a brief clamor, the doors were pushed open by three cavalrymen in the local garrison's uniform and armor.

On the chest of the leader hung a knight's badge, representing his status as a fourth level knight. And judging from that armor and military insignia, clearly he was a senior officer of the local garrison.

He stepped in with big strides, flanked by a few subordinates, first reaching the side of that caravan group, declaring in a loud voice: "Everyone! I am Half Horn City garrison's second cavalry squad captain, sir Spann! Currently under the imperial 'regional military provisions law', on behalf of Half Horn City's garrison I am officially expropriating your guards! Since our current military strength is insufficient, we require your guards to accompany us on a mission in Half Horn Valley. By imperial law, you may not refuse."

His voice was loud and his manner resolute as he looked at those caravan guards: "I know you are all mercenaries, so the imperial military will reimburse you after the present mission. You have half an hour to arrange your equipment and horses! In half an hour, I want everyone to assemble at the hotel gate."

Even if those mercenaries were a bit unwilling, imperial law was like a mountain, and they couldn't refuse. They would get paid anyway.

The caravaners on the other hand were anxious watching the guards they had paid for leave, and one with a pinched face came over, trying to get this officer to be a bit accomodating.....

"Out of the question!" The knight refused him quite bluntly: "I'm very sorry for delaying your journey, but I guarantee it won't be for long. Your guards will be back this time tomorrow at the latest. You can choose a place to stay in the city for one day, and the military will reimburse your expenses! Please don't say anything else, this is a military assignment and I can't be flexible, and please withdraw your gold coins, bribing an officer is a criminal offense!"

Finished speaking, the knight pushed aside the caravan master and turned to

walk over towards Duwei's party.

He had originally planned to ask them along as well, but after two steps he suddenly noticed the clothes of the several attendants around Duwei, and Duwei's own clothes..... More importantly, he caught sight of Robert and the others behind Duwei!

Robert's armor clearly wasn't imperial standard, but rather the equipment of a noble's private army.

The authority to invite a noble's private armsmen certainly wasn't something an insignificant local garrison captain could have!

Sir Spann looked Duwei over a few times, hesitating, but he really didn't have the manpower right now, and that assignment was really urgent. He couldn't delay. Clenching his teeth, he stepped forward with big strides. First he bowed according to a knight's etiquette, then said in a low voice: "Sir, I....."

Here his voice choked off. Because right now he saw what he hadn't noticed before!

On the chests of the guardsmen behind Duwei was the grand coat of arms of the Rawling clan!

Originally he thought there might be some way to borrow the guards, but he couldn't ask to borrow from someone of the famous imperial military family!

Damn it! Rawling clan? Why would the Rawling clan be in Half Horn City? How hadn't he heard.....

Spann sighed helplessly in his heart.

"Please continue, sir knight." Duwei smiling raised his wine cup and sipped, this kind of weak ale actually wasn't bad, somewhat resembling the rice wine he had had in his previous life.

"This..... Sir. Forgive my impertinence, may I ask if you are from the mighty Rawling clan?" Spann's tone was even more deferential, he even unconsciously hunched a bit.

"Correct. We're from Rawling Plain." This time it was Robert who spoke, taking a step forward. His imposing build was half a head taller than sir Spann: "This is

my lord, Rawling clan's earl Lehmann's eldest son, young master Duwei."

Spann saluted again. The Rawling clan head's eldest son, an identity like that would even be on equal footing with the lord governor.

"Sir knight, may I ask what the trouble is all about?" Duwei asked with a smile.

"Yes....." Spann weighed it for a moment, but still spoke truthfully: "Just now I received an urgent assignment that requires about one hundred soldiers. But since it's the time of the springtime maneuvers, the majority of Half Horn City's garrisoned troops have been diverted a hundred kilometers south to participate. At present I only have twenty men under my command. Therefore, in accordance with the imperial regional military provisions law, I can only requisition local combatants within the city to temporarily serve in the military."

Duwei nodded: "Oh, then are you also planning to requisition my guards?"

"No no, I wouldn't dare!" Spann jumped with fright. That had been his original intention, but after seeing their status, how would he dare?

Who was earl Lehmann? He was the second highest in the imperial military! Requisitioning the guards of his eldest son? If by some terrible chance this little master suffered some accident due to a lack of guards at his side, even having his head chopped of a hundred times couldn't atone for his offense.

"Then, what has happened?" Duwei was somewhat curious: "After all, if something has happened and you're here anyway, I would ask you to tell us, so we can prepare as well."

Sir Spann thought it over, then spoke with a helpless and somewhat distressed expression: "It's a strange matter. Half Horn Mountain has always been quiet, the mountain isn't tall, the woods aren't deep, there aren't even any large animals. Even if there were, our local garrison troops would go out and hunt it down! But yesterday, somehow, from somewhere appeared a..... Magic beast!"

Duwei's eyes brightened!

Magic beast?

"Yes, even if we still can't be certain it's a magic beast, we can still be certain this is a large creature, because hunters have spotted its footprints. There's no

doubt. But what's baffling is that a magic beast shouldn't live near a human settlement, and even if it did, it would be in the frontier forest on the southern border of the empire. Moreover, there hasn't been a magic beast sighting in Lille province for decades. I don't know where this creature came from." Spann smiled wryly: "Me and my men have been ordered to hunt down this creature, but according to my assessment, as this is a large creature I will need at least twenty soldiers in order to kill it. And with the size of Half Horn Mountain, in order to corner it, it might be no use without a hundred men."

Magic beast..... It seemed interesting.

Duwei couldn't help being tempted.

In fact, since finding out there might be a hope for him of learning magic, he had grown a strong interest in everything related to magic.

In this hinterland of the imperial south there had actually appeared a rare magic beast! How couldn't he join in the fun?

"Excellent! I've brought forty guards, all Rawling clan elite cavalry, and my captain here is a fourth level knight. I want to let them follow you to carry out this assignment on Half Horn Mountain. After all, sitting here and watching a magic beast wreak havoc doesn't agree with to my ethics." Duwei spoke very righteously.

Spann stared blankly: "You're saying..... You want to lend your guardsmen to me....."

"Master, this is out of the question." Robert raised an objection for the first time: "You can't be without guards. If we must go, it's fine if I bring twenty men."

Robert wanted to help, he was after all a regular knight, with a firm belief in chivalry.

"No no, there's no need to worry about a lack of guards." Duwei smiled: "Because I'm going with you. I think staying next to you is the safest place, no?"

This time both Robert and Spann objected.

Especially Spann! He started to regret telling this Rawling family young master

anything!

Bringing him along? Catching a magic beast wasn't trivial! But if this young master faced the slightest mishap on the mountain, then he truly would be out of luck!

"There's no need to object." Duwei very bluntly made a decision: "There's no need to worry about my safety, don't forget that I still have an outstandingly powerful magician at my side!"

He pushed forward Thorskei.

Thorskei was helpless. Even though calling his strength outstanding was out of the question, his magician's identity was genuine.

Spann's eyes brightened!

A magician? If he could have the aid of an outstanding magician, then this time's assignment shouldn't be a problem!

Only..... This little master's safety.....

## Chapter 20 (b) - Half Horn City's Magic Beast Incident II

The subordinates really couldn't get Duwei to change his mind, and what gave Robert a headache was how this little lord seemed set on going to see this magic beast in the mountains.

Robert looked at sir Spann with an amicable expression, he knew that this trouble was all on this fellow's head. If the little lord suffered even the slightest bit of harm..... Even if he was just scared, he would have to take responsibility himself!

Even if the little lord given a good impression by not putting on airs on the journey and treating everyone mildly, going to the mountain to look for magic beasts definitely appeared to Robert like childishly wilful troublemaking!

But there was nothing to be done. Robert sighed, he could only secretly resolve to stick close to the master's side after entering the mountain, relying on the sword in his hand to ensure the master's safety.

Moreover, in such an agrarian region it presumably wouldn't be any high level magic beast.

Robert was consoling himself, but he couldn't deny this consolation was effective. On the Roland continent, creatures like magic beasts followed a kind of peculiar rule.

Magic beasts were generally a kind of wild animal that innately could use magic, and the strength of a magic beast could be estimated with an odd rule: According to the current knowledge about the majority of magic beasts, the danger level of these creatures was inversely proportional to its size.

In other words, the bigger the magic beast was, normally it would be weaker. The really dangerous ones were actually very small creatures.

Since this Spann said the nearby creature appeared to be large, his martial skill

should be able to cope with it.

But right now Spann couldn't help feeling like he had passed the point of no return. Compared to the issue of the magic beast, he was even more concerned about this little master's safety.

While Duwei had already declared he had to go see..... Spann would actually rather not have the help of these several tens of guardsmen.

But Duwei had already declared it, and his meaning was very clear. Even if Spann refused his good intentions, he would still bring people up the mountain himself! After considering it, Spann still felt it would be better if they went together. Like that they would at least have more people, and it would be safer.

• ;

Those mercenaries were actually rather efficient. When half an hour had passed, twenty mercenaries waited by the hotel door. And Duwei had the servants stay behind to look after things, while he brought two squads of cavalry.

Duwei was wearing light armor. Even if it seemed a bit weak, it still let the others feel a bit relieved. Rolynn knew that this time they were entering the mountain on a magic beast hunt — work she had experienced before. Hunting spirit beasts for coin was a very common source of income for adventurers on the continent.

Spann finally gathered twenty people from the Half Horn City garrison. Thus he had finally with difficulty managed to assemble eighty or ninety. Even if some were a bit weak, looking at the bright armor and superior weapons of the Rawling guards, Spann was still satisfied.

Worthy of the imperial army, after the two highest level knights Spann and Robert talked it over, they split the troops into three groups. Moreover the local military, mercenaries, and Rawling guards were all distributed by type. Like this each group was guaranteed to be allocated both skirmishers and archers.

Two of the groups were commanded by Spann's lieutenants, while Spann himself and sir Robert both stayed at Duwei's side.

Spann had made up his mind, even if this assignment was a failure, he still had



to one hundred percent guarantee the safety of the little master! Otherwise, if the imperial military's second head's eldest son suffered a tiny bit of mishap under his protection, then perhaps all his life's work would have been for nothing! By comparison, catching that spirit beast was unimportant.

Worth mentioning is that the other two groups only had twenty men each, while forty subordinates were with Duwei. Among them were thirty Rawling guardsmen and ten of Spann's elite archers.

Spann even gave Duwei a precious military crossbow for self defense, since he saw this little master most likely wasn't familiar with archery. With a military crossbow his safety factor could still increase a bit.

Like this, Duwei's group consisted of forty elite soldiers (Rawling family guardsmen's quality could definitely compare to the regular army), as well as two fourth level knights, and still a licensed magician.

Such strength was significant.

The three groups left the city immediately, entering the mountain by three separate paths, searching in separate directions. Each group carried a few things Duwei recognized as similar to signal flares. Once any group found the magic beast, they would be responsible for pinning it while summoning the others.

In the end the three groups were to converge on the center of Half Horn Mountain.

Duwei rode into Half Horn Mountain in a crowd of escorts. This fellow didn't seem to have the slightest awareness of having become an inconvenience for everyone..... Or more precisely, he knew but played dumb.

After the heavily armed subordinates entered Half Horn Mountain, they immediately fanned out to either side and started searching for an trace of anything suspicious. The two knights Spann and Robert kept a strict guard at Duwei's side.

The Half Horn Mountain magic beast's tracks were first discovered by a hunter from a small village on the southern slope of the mountain. According to Spann's explanation on the way, when the local hunters started to spot footprints in the forest, they mistook it for a large wild animal that had made its way into the

mountain woods and gathered a few experienced hunters to track it. But once they found its tracks on the south mountainside they realized they were facing a magic beast, and immediately ran back to inform the city garrison. According to their tale, the magic beast was enormous, the size of a lion or a tiger. While they were too far to see just what kind of magic beast it was, the creature was shining, clearly not just some common animal, that was for sure.

Everyone dismounted after following the road into the mountain forest, including Duwei. The soldiers spread out to search on either side, and a vanguard of five skilled soldiers was sent out to find a path.

Under these circumstances Duwei didn't talk about seeing any magic beast..... Every step he took was on ground that had been stomped flat by people for him! Not even a rabbit could hide in the underbrush.

Duwei couldn't help being bored. Looking around at the surrounding dense forest he could hear the chirping of birds. Looking to his side he spotted the nervous sir Spann, and smiled.

He clearly understood what was upsetting Spann: "Sir Spann, may I ask if you've encountered magic beasts before?"

Spann looked startled and pondered it a moment: "I have, I once served in the northern Imperial Storm Wind Legion for four years, posted on the eastern edge of the 'Icebound Forest' in the north of the continent. The Icebound Forest is well known as one of the most magic beast haunted places on the continent. At that time I once encountered a few while on patrol. Fortunately, the magic beasts that move in the outer edge of the forest are all low level, and not much danger to humans. When we went on patrol we never dared penetrate deeply into the forest, because those high level magic beasts in the forest aren't something common soldiers can deal with."

Duwei thought about it: "Then, what do magic beasts look like?"

Spann muttered to himself a moment: "Magic beasts are really just some wild animals. But they're much more ferocious than ordinary animals. Normal animals just use their claws and fangs to attack. But magic beasts have the innate ability to use low level magic, making them a lot more difficult to deal with."

“Then, have you personally killed a magic beast?”

Spann blushed, lowering his voice: “Young master Duwei, in those days I was only a second level knight. With my skill I couldn’t have killed a magic beast alone. However, the first time my squad went on patrol, we encountered a terrible creature. It was a creature unique to the Icebound Forest in the north, a ‘Stormwind Magic Wolf’. That creature was incredibly fast, arrows couldn’t hurt it, its fur could instantly turn into ice as hard as our armor, difficult for even swords to penetrate, and furthermore it could summon wind blades with its howl, very difficult to deal with. When our squad encountered it, ten soldiers wasn’t enough to match it..... I remember that fight, four of my companions died, and each of the survivors were injured. In the end our squad captain suffered a wind blade to sever the magic wolf’s tail with his sword..... The weak point of that kind of magic wolf is it’s tail, if it loses its tail, its magic will weaken. Afterwards we skinned the magic wolf, as its fur is valuable, and its magic core could be sold for a good price. Magicians are fond of magic beast cores, since a magic beast core is a tool for storing magic power, and they’re also used to manufacture magic scrolls.”

As Spann recalled his youth he couldn’t help sigh with regret: “I remember when I was posted by the Icebound Forest, every month there would be a lot of adventuring parties entering the forest to hunt magic beasts for money, against our advice. However, a third of them never came out alive. I don’t know how many people have died in the Icebound Forest, even magicians have died inside.”

Duwei exhaled, looking at Thorskei at his side.

Both knew that magicians wouldn’t hunt spirit beasts for coin. But magic beast cores held an exceptional attraction to magicians, for their use as magic materials.

While Spann spoke he used his sword to split a forking branch on the path, and said with a smile: “Don’t worry, young master Duwei. The bigger the magic beast, the weaker it is. When we encounter this creature it shouldn’t be too devastating. With me..... En, with the Rawling guardsmen here as well, we will definitely keep you from any danger.”

Duwei nodded and declined to comment, rather looked straight at the taciturn

Robert: “Then how about you? Robert, have you killed spirit beasts before?”

Robert’s expression grew serious, and after a moment he pushed aside his thick curly hair to reveal his neck.

Duwei discovered that there was an astonishing wound on Robert’s neck! It was clearly a scar from skewering, as if something had been ruthlessly stabbed into his neck! Even if the injury was old, and clearly a very long time had passed, the scarring was still red, clearly showing how severe it had been!

“I got this from a magic beast.” Robert’s tone was gloomy: “I was once in the southern ‘Sunset Marsh’, and in the swamps our group encountered a flock of Lion Condors.”

Duwei didn’t speak, but sir Spann to his side, as well as Thorskei and even Rolyynn behind them, all gasped! Spann even cried out: “A flock of Lion Condors? Heaven, how did you survive?”

“Lion Condor? Is this some kind of very dangerous creature?” Duwei asked.

Thorskei shook his head: “More than dangerous, Lion Condors are a kind of flying magic beasts, even if they’re not considered as bad as the legendary fierce beasts, Lion Condors are still at least accepted as one of the most difficult to deal with magic beasts. It’s a bird type magic beast, about the size of an ordinary eagle, but it can make a roaring sound like a lion, its feathers are as hard as steel, its talons can easily scratch our armor, its beak can even break the sword in a knight’s hand with a peck..... Most troublesome is how it can circle in the air, and the solid feathers that makes it invulnerable to most arrows. Moreover its call can drive people into panic, or if a bit more powerful even knock people unconscious.”

“Mental attack magic?” Duwei drew a breath.

“What’s frightening is that if you just encounter one Lion Condor they’re not much of a problem..... But this magic beast has one thing unique among magic beasts..... It’s a pack animal! In other words, this troublesome creature moves in groups. In the southern marches, even a small army would choose to retreat when facing a flock of these creatures! Because if a large group of such ferocious creatures acts together, and still attacks from the sky, it’s incredibly difficult to defend.”

Rolynn frowned as she looked at the wound on Robert's neck: "How did you survive?"

Robert shook his head: "At first I thought I was dead. That time half of us died in the swamp. My neck was scratched once by a Lion Condor, and its talons practically skewered my neck. But after that we found a hollow tree in the swamp where we hid for a full day. The entrance to the hollow wasn't large, and once those creatures lost their air superiority and couldn't attack from the sky, our situation improved a bit. Relying on defending the narrow entrance, we held out for a day until the Lion Condors left. Finally a rescue team from the clan rushed over and brought us back, and my life was saved."

Pausing, a sad expression flashed across Robert's face: "My younger brother died there. Like me his neck was scratched by a Lion Condor, but he didn't have my luck and lost his head."

Duwei's heart shook, looking at Robert he promptly said on a low voice: "I'm sorry, sir Robert, I didn't know....."

"No, it's nothing." The knight shook his head, forcing a smile: "It's an old story, moreover, since we swore loyalty to the clan, we were always ready to lay down our lives for the clan at any time."

Everyone felt a deep respect for the sir Robert, even Rolynn couldn't help watching him. But Rolynn quickly raised a question: "Lord Robert, lord Spann, I have a question."

"What? Please speak, dame Rolynn." Spann treated this female honor knight following the noble young master respectfully.

Rolynn slowly said: "According to what I know, while magic beasts live in forests, they will very rarely live at the center of the continent. Because magic beasts require nourishment from magic, they will only live at those peculiar places at the edges of the continent, like the northern Icebound Forest and the southern Sunset March. Those places are filled with all sorts of magic plants..... They're also places where magic alchemists find ingredients for their preparations. And perhaps some places that produce some kind of special minerals would attract spirit beasts into their surroundings. But..... There's only a regular forest on Half Horn Mountain, there are no magic plants, just some

ordinary pines and maples, and there are no special minerals either. Therefore, doesn't anyone think it's strange that a magic beast would suddenly appear here?"

Spann and Robert both stopped walking, their expressions somewhat serious, even the magician Thorskei frowned in thought.

"Rolynn, are you very familiar with magic beasts?" It was Duwei who spoke up.

"I have a lot of adventures behind me, I even followed a few mercenary companies into the Icebound Forest to hunt spirit beasts." Rolynn explained: "As a result, I'm perhaps the one here with the most experience with magic beasts."

"You've entered the northern icebound forest?" Sir Spann showed an astonished expression. To him it seemed this female knight must have relied on her beauty to obtain an honorary knight's title from the noble young master. He hadn't expected Rolynn to actually have such a history!

Even Robert changed color.

Rolynn said in a low voice: "That's right, I've entered a few times."

"I'm not at all too well acquainted with the habits of magic beasts, if what dame Rolynn says is true..... Then perhaps we must think it over carefully." Robert lowered his voice: "The appearance of a magic beast really is suspicious."

But Spann, even if he didn't say anything, had a somewhat doubtful expression.

Clearly, Spann wasn't convinced by Rolynn.

An experienced knight like Spann could see the skill level of this female knight, and he had determined her skill wasn't brilliant. Receiving the favor of a noble young master was most likely with the help of her pretty face..... And those long legs.

Entering the Icebound Forest? Several times? Bullshit!

After searching for an entire afternoon, everyone had come up empty handed. They hadn't even found the magic beast's footprints or excrement.

There had been no news from the other two search parties.

Looking up at the color of the sky and the descending sun, sir Spann proposed they should take a rest first, then take advantage of the remaining daylight to return to town, and continue the search early the next morning.

Such an action was taken completely because of Duwei.

If it hadn't been for this honorable young master, Spann would have continued searching throughout the night. But when bringing along such a young master that mustn't be offended, and mustn't be harmed, Spann wouldn't dare act rashly, and put safety first. Otherwise, the danger would increase when searching for a magic beast in the mountains at night.

As they rested, Robert arranged for a few people to watch their surroundings, and Spann dispatched two archers to climb the trees to keep a lookout.

"Rolynn." Looking at Rolynn who was just about to sort out her saddle, Duwei suddenly called out to the lady knight.

"Do you have any command, milord?"

"I believe you." Duwei spoke in a low voice, his words making Rolynn jolt. The lady knight inclined her head to look at Duwei.

Duwei played with some unknown flower in his hand, a leisurely smile on his face: "I know that sir Spann doesn't believe you, that he thinks you're a loudmouth."

Rolynn smiled wryly.

Just a loudmouth? More like he thought she was a lowly woman who relied on her charm and body to become a knight.

Furthermore, it wasn't just Spann. Perhaps even a majority of the accompanying Rawling family soldiers thought much the same.....

Rolynn felt helpless.

"I believe you." Duwei said in a low voice. He slowly walked forward a few steps, looking at Rolynn's helpless expression, and smiling said: "Because by lucky coincidence, I know you're a descendant of the Moon clan. And by an equally lucky coincidence, I once read in an antique book about the Moon clan's innate ability. If the accounts in that book weren't mistaken..... I believe that

entering that Icebound Forest wouldn't be difficult for you. Even a pile of spirit beasts wouldn't pose much of a danger to you."

Rolynn was more and more astonished, and involuntarily cried out: "This..... You know?"

"Books." Duwei smiled: "Books are the wellspring of humanity's knowledge. There will always be benefits to reading books."

While speaking, this half sized noble reached Rolynn's side, lightly patting her shoulder: "My lady knight, we will have to make great effort. Otherwise we would let others hold us in contempt. Like today, don't tell me you didn't see? They all thought of me as an inconvenience. But you, are my first honor knight, we both have to make great efforts for an acceptable appearance."

Rolynn cautiously watched this half sized young master, but as these words reached her, she couldn't help feel a warm current spread through her heart!

Yes! They all thought of me as a woman who slept her way up! And the one who truly respects me, believes in me, is this little master in front of me!

Rolynn bowed her head deeply to Duwei, speaking in a low trembling voice: "Yes, my lord. Rolynn will definitely make great efforts, I definitely will not bring shame to you!"

Spann immediately gathered the people after the rest, preparing to leave the mountain. He had a signal fired to link up with the other two teams, and very quickly the other parties responded. One of the other teams was unexpectedly not far from their position, just half a kilometer or so judging by their signal.

The two knights immediately ordered everyone into formation to converge with their companions.

And after everyone had walked for half an hour, sir Robert who walked at the very front could see that party of comrades already wave at them.

Just at this moment, a mournful howl came from the side! They immediately caught sight of an enormous silhouette swiftly towards them from the side! This large creature's whole body was covered with soaring flames, and the ground and trees on either side were scorched as it passed!



“..... Magic beast? ! ! !” Whoever it was that first called out, everyone were immediately alarmed!

“In formation! !” A steady call came from behind everyone, sir Robert had already drawn his broadsword, shouting in a loud voice: “Don’t panic! In formation, flank it on both sides! Don’t let it escape! Archers get ready! Front line raise shields!”

A series of commands swiftly left Robert’s mouth. Most of the people here were after all Rawling clan guardsmen, and Robert’s voice immediately steadied everyone.

Spann also wasn’t slow to act, he had already assembled the archers and ordered them to immediately climb the trees.

They didn’t know what was going on with that magic beast, against expectations it had come running out now, as if it wasn’t afraid of confronting so many humans.

Duwei finally got as he wished, seeing a magic beast with his own eyes.

This creature was even bigger than Duwei had imagined, no smaller than an elephant, on its forehead a massive monstrous horn, its skin thick and coarse, its four legs and hooves as thick as pillars, running through the mud as if flying, bashing sideways and colliding straight on, still issuing mournful howls, its whole body emitting flames!

Such a grotesque and enormous creature, emitting flames all over, made it very difficult for everyone to cut it off. The soldiers raising their shields didn’t dare block it head on and could only helplessly get out of the way. The archers in the trees fired arrow after arrow, but those arrows didn’t seem to be able to cause it any injuries.

Fortunately this creature was so enormous that its running speed was quite slow, and after some shouting and fussing, soldiers immediately raised long pikes to menace it at a distance.

“No need to be afraid, it’s just a Flame Rhinoceros.” The speaker was Rolyenn, seeming to relax a bit. This lady knight stood by Duwei’s side, and even took half a step forward to shield him. Her voice wasn’t loud, apparently only explaining

for Duwei's sake: "The Flame Rhinoceros is only considered to be a kind of lowest level magic beast, besides its raw strength and the flames it emit, there's nothing scary about it. Moreover its running speed is quite slow, as long as there are a few skilled archers it will be nothing more than a burning pincushion."

Rolynn's words were overheard by Robert who immediately ordered loudly: "Raise the pikes! Pin it down!"

This Flame Rhinoceros ran a few steps, but discovered it was blocked on all sides by humans raising row after row of pikes against it. This Flame Rhinoceros also didn't dare rush headlong into them, after all, even if its skin was thick and tough, it was still far from those high level magic beasts who were impervious to blades. Making a few monstrous howls, it still didn't dare charge against those rows of pikes and could only stop and turn to find another way, but its slow movement speed also exposed its weakness.

The soldiers swiftly outflanked it from the sides, very quickly blocking its path. At the same time the archers shot it from the trees, and even if the arrows didn't do much damage, they were numerous, and several flights of arrows stuck on its back.

The Flame Rhinoceros was besieged by the human encirclement several times, and each time its range of movement grew smaller and smaller, while its calls grew more and more fretful. At this time, Duwei's subordinate magician Thorskei acted.

The magician had already raised both hands, and after a shake of his sleeves, several fireballs launched at that Flame Rhinoceros with whizzing sounds.

An enormous bang! In front of several tens of pairs of eyes, several fireballs accurately struck the magic beast, spouts of flame radiating in all directions, to where everyone were forced to almost close their eyes against the intense red light!

An indignant and unreconciled howl resounded, and suddenly the whole body of this Flame Rhinoceros erupted in a red light! Afterwards, with a cry, under everyone's attentive gazes.....

It disappeared! !

Numerous soldiers stared blankly, but soon after everyone broke out in a burst of cheering!

It seemed this magician was awesome!! Vanquishing this creature with just one move!

But these ignorant soldiers didn't discover that the magician Thorskei's own face was vacant and baffled.

Disappeared?

I used the fireball spell, but even if fireballs could burn the creature to death, it would still leave a corpse behind!

Common soldiers wouldn't understand this, but fourth level knights like Robert and Spann would!

The moment the Flame Rhinoceros disappeared, the two showed astonished and unsettled expressions, and once the cheering started Robert called out in a loud voice: "Everyone step back! Be careful!!"

Duwei also looked distracted. The moment he saw the magic beast disappear, he couldn't help ask: "Rolynn, would the corpse of a magic beast like this disappear after its death?"

"No!" Rolynn had also changed color: "This creature..... I've never heard of the body disappearing."

At this moment a blue flame shot up in the spot where the Flame Rhinoceros had fallen! Immediately afterward a penetratingly resonant howl resounded from within the flame!

This was clearly the howl of a wolf!

After, an enormous wolf suddenly leapt out of the flame!

The enormous wolf had an icy blue fur, as if it had become crystal! And its body held enormous power, its claws like sharp blades! Its movement fast as the wind!

Just after catching sight of it, already a few soldiers were shouting in pain.....

The wolf howled immediately, and wind blades could suddenly be seen forming in its mouth!

“Stormwind Magic Wolf! It’s a Stormwind Magic Wolf!!” Spann cried out in alarm. This knight’s expression changed enormously, his face covered with fear.

This suddenly appearing creature was actually the one Spann had talked about with Duwei before, the Stormwind Magic Wolf he had once encountered, and sacrificed the lives of several comrades to kill!

But making Spann afraid wasn’t this magic wolf itself..... Rather, this was too weird!

He had never heard of a Flame Rhinoceros transforming into a Stormwind Magic Wolf after dying!

It was too late to reflect on it now, this magic wolf was indeed had crystal fur like Spann had said, difficult to injure with blades! It was also exceptionally nimble, and adding its sharp teeth and claws, in just a few pounces it had soldiers screaming miserably under its paws.

And those wind blades it had launched were originally aimed at two soldiers holding shields. The shields in their hands burst immediately, and the two soldiers were sent flying!

Duwei saw it all clearly from the distance, and couldn’t help gasping: What a ferocious creature!

“Rolynn, do magic beasts transform? Does Flame Rhinoceroses transform into other kinds of creatures? But these two creatures are so different on the outside.”

“No! Milord, Something’s fishy! This magic beast, it seems..... I don’t know what it is. It absolutely isn’t any ordinary Flame Rhinoceros!” Rolynn’s face was clouded, shielding Duwei with her sword in her hand, her eyes tightly fixed on the magic wolf in the distance.

With a great shout, Robert charged with large steps, the broadsword raised overhead transforming with a silver light! Facing the magic wolf he quickly chopped down.

Duwei’s eyes glittered in the distance: “Battle qi!”

The magic wolf also seemed to respond to the danger of the light at Robert’s

sword tip, it didn't dare take the hit and instead shook its body, throwing itself to the side, scratching at Robert's chest and shoulder.

Robert shouted loudly, his body bending like bow, holding the broadsword horizontally, light separating from the tip of his sword, thrusting at the belly of the magic wolf!

This magic wolf was indeed ferocious, it could even change direction in midair! Twisting its upper body it managed to just avoid Robert's battle qi attack, and after landing it immediately struck at Robert's arm!

Robert grunted as lines of blood immediately appeared on his arm, fortunately the magic wolf was wary of his sword, and the injury wasn't serious.

At this moment a shout echoed as Spann acted in the distance! He snatched a pike from one of the soldiers at his side and threw it hard!

The pike flew like a shooting star, firmly striking the magic wolf's back! Only everyone could hear the metallic sound as even this weapon bounced off without penetrating! It could be seen just how hard the magic wolf's crystal fur was!

But even if it had endured Spann's pike attack, it still wasn't pleasant for the magic wolf. The force sent it rolling several turns, and once it got back to its feet it seemed it had slowed somewhat, apparently having taken some damage.

"Thorskei, act!" Robert shouted loudly, raising his sword again, swinging continuously to force back the magic wolf.

The distant magician hurriedly raised his hands as he was summoned, once again quickly launching several fireballs.

Bang bang bang bang bang!

Fireballs rained down continuously, some smashing into the ground nearby, and only three struck the magic wolf's body.

The magic wolf was clearly repelled by such fire magic, and with a loud howl it became more and more frustrated. Robert caught up to its side, watching and waiting for an opportunity to strike, he chopped at the magic beast's tail!

Robert had clearly remembered what Spann had mentioned earlier about the

tail being the weak point of the Stormwind Magic Wolf!

Sure enough, after the sword severed the magic wolf's tail it collapsed on the ground with a howl. But immediately afterward Robert looked at the tip of his sword and saw a burst of brilliant light!

After the burst of light, not only had the magic wolf's corpse disappeared within, even the severed tail had vanished!

Disappeared? This pattern again?

In the distance Duwei shouted loudly: "Everyone be careful, this thing might transform again!"

Robert's expression was also strict, and just as he was about to speak up.....

Suddenly, far away a roar echoed! A roar as if from a lion!

Following after the first one came more and more lion roars, distantly, it seemed as if an unknown number of lions was heading towards them!

Don't tell me it's a flock of lions? Damn it, this isn't the plains! How would there be large packs of lions in the forest?

When sir Robert listened to the approaching sounds, suddenly he seemed to realize something. His expression instantly distorted, and he abruptly cried out madly: "Careful! Everyone be careful, it's....."

Before he had finished speaking, everyone already saw them! In the sky appeared a flock of creatures diving with spread wings! These creatures covered the sky! They had sharp talons and beaks, feathers as solid as steel, as well as..... A call like the roar of a lion!

"Lion Condors!! It's a Lion Condor flock!!!"

As if a nightmare from the past had reappeared, sir Robert's face had an expression of despair! He had personally faced a flock of Lion Condors before, and that had been a horrifyingly bitter experience!

With their present strength, what awaited everyone when encountering such a large flock of terrifying organisms could practically only be called a massacre!!!

But the knight didn't get the chance to say anything before the blood-curdling

screams had started. Two soldiers had already been pierced by the sharp talons of Lion Condor's and been thrown far away!

In sprays of flesh and blood, the large flock of Lion Condors only caught and held on before dropping them from the air.....

Rolynn's expression was also extremely unsightly, she grabbed Duwei and pulled him to the ground.....

# Chapter 21 - Moon Clan's Secret Technique

“Keep in formation! Don’t panic! Don’t panic!” Roberts imposing voice rose in the midst of the confusion, giving some calm to the panic stricken soldiers.

Roberts armor was damaged and stained with blood, his hair messy, as he made an effort to organize his subordinates, yelling: “In formation! Protect the master!! Retreat in formation! Don’t run around!”

The Lion Condor’s in the sky dove down one by one, howling resonantly. These howls indeed had the power to cause dizziness, and several Rawling subordinates felt their heads buzzing, their bodies tottering, and even unable to hold the weapons in their hands.

Robert snatched an archer’s bow from the ground, swiftly shooting up at a diving Lion Condor. The arrow covered with battle qi flew out like a streak of light, but such a common arrow apparently couldn’t withstand the knight’s battle qi, and just after the arrow had been launched it burst into a ball of light.

Fortunately, that Lion Condor seemed to be scared off, and Robert quickly retreated, with difficulty arranging a dozen men in a circle, raising their swords and pikes to defend themselves.

But like this, even more Lion Condors swooped down from the sky, sometimes injuring someone with their sharp talons and piercing beaks, blood curdling shrieks were heard on all sides, sometimes someone was snatched up by a Lion Condor and thrown into the air, immediately causing several following Lion Condors to swoop in, simultaneously using their beaks and talons to rip their victims apart!

This scene made everyone terrified!

Only half of sir Spann’s sword remained, he had dodged a Lion by rolling away, but his thigh was still drenched in blood, and even standing still he was unsteady.

Whether it was Spann or Robert, in their minds besides alarm was incomparable shock!



In the hinterlands of the southern Empire, how would such a terrifyingly vicious magic beast like the Lion Condor appear in such great numbers?!

Under Robert's cries of 'protect the master', more and more Rawling family cavalymen formed up, crowding around Duwei to escort him out.

But each time they swept down from the sky, those Lion Condor's like dreadful killing hands would immediately cause a miserable shriek, each time a Lion Condor attacked they would seize another soldier's life.

The ground was already filled with blood and terrifyingly mangled pieces of corpses. Mass death was terrifying on its own, but before such vicious magic beasts, a lot of the dead didn't even have intact corpses!

Duwei had just now seen a Lion Hawk come swooping down at him, and after Rolynn pushed him to the ground he heard a resonant animal call behind him. Even lying on the ground he felt as if he could see a golden halo flash before his eyes.....

"Master, get up quickly, we have to leave immediately." Rolynn's anxious voice rose and she dragged Duwei up, pulling him over next to a big tree.

By now there were already a lot of Rawling guardsmen around them, and Robert was swiftly dashing over. The Rawling guards held an extremely strong sense of pride and loyalty for the Rawling family, and even confronted with a crisis like this they still didn't forget their duties to run by themselves. Even though each man was terrified, they still raised their weapons and gathered around their master.

"Thorskei! Thorskei!" Duwei shouted angrily.

"I'm here." The answer came from the ground on the side, as Thorskei crawled up with an effort. His robe was already dirty, and even his face was covered with dust. Just now when the Lion Condors had first attacked he had immediately thrown himself into the underbrush.

"What the hell are you doing!" Duwei furiously rushed over and grabbed the magician by the collar: "My people are bleeding! Why aren't you using magic! Quick! If you want to live, quickly use magic!"

The magician's hat was shaken off by Duwei, and he hastily nodded,

afterwards quickly raised his hands and launched several fireballs towards the sky..... In any way Thorskei's ability was limited, his current magic attack was only the lowest level fireball spell. As for slowing spells and other such magic, when confronting large groups of Lion Condor's they might not be very useful.

Right now the Lion Condor's attacks had Spann's subordinate garrison soldiers running everywhere, this was the difference in quality to the Rawling family people who were instead gradually gathering together, building considerable strength in numbers. Despite the Lion Condors' constant attacks, each attack was confronted with rows of blades and pikes that even the Lion Condors didn't seem to dare lightly barge into. Circling their formation, making a couple of grabs, the Lion Condors were after all extremely ferocious magic beasts, and the Rawling family soldiers were still quickly dying or being injured! Practically each time the Lion Condors attacked, someone's life would be taken!

As the troops slowly retreated, Thorskei's fireball spells also blocked and threatened the Lion Condors to some degree, but more and more Lion Condors were circling them — Spann's men and horses had already been thoroughly dealt with. There were corpses everywhere, even sir Spann himself lay motionless on the ground.

Robert's expression was extremely unsightly. Squeezing the sword in his hand tightly, his joints were already pale from the force he exerted, as he spoke in a rough voice: "Master, I'm afraid today....." This knight shook his head forcefully, pulling over the lady knight Rolynn and speaking in a low voice: "In a moment I'll bring people to charge out, you immediately bring the young master down the mountain! Be quick! You have to be quick! I'll attract the attention of as many of the creatures as possible. The master..... I'll leave him to you."

Rolynn moved said: "Do you want to die?"

Robert's voice was acerbic: "I know these creatures. They like hunting, and right now we're their prey. We're too far up the mountain, and with our current condition there's no way for us to leave. We can only think of something to disrupt the situation and let the master slip away.

"But....."

"No buts! Mis Rolynn! Don't forget that you're a knight!" Robert was suddenly

angry, glaring and shouting at her: “You aren’t some damn little mercenary like before! If you still can’t understand a knight’s honor, then you’re not fit to be a knight! I’m injured and can’t move fast enough, otherwise I wouldn’t choose you to escort the master! Do you want to be a true knight? Rolyenn! Then prove it to me!!”

Rolyenn trembled, startled looking at Robert. This time Rolyenn’s eyes showed a trace of rage, raising her longsword she yelled: “I’ll definitely prove it!”

Robert laughed loudly, then he turned to look at his master.

Duwei continuously squinting looked at those Lion Condors flying about on all sides looking for the opportunity to attack their formation. He looked at them completely entranced, as if he had completely forgotten everything in his surroundings. He didn’t even seem to have heard Robert and Rolyenn’s dialogue just now. This little fellow, who knew what was in his mind right now.

Suddenly the shock and rage was swept from Rolyenn’s face, and her beautiful face acquired a kind of peculiar serenity!

Under Robert’s astonished gaze, this lady knight suddenly extended her palm and grabbed the edge of her sword tightly, making an effort to pull.....

Her palm was immediately cut open by the sharp sword, becoming drenched with blood!

“What are you doing!” Robert shouted. Rolyenn didn’t answer, only slowly moved forward several steps, lightly parting the Rawling clan guards in front.

Rolyenn stood at the very front of the formation. Watching a Lion Condor pounce, the lady knight opened both hands, making a bizarre finger seal. Immediately afterwards a yellow halo flashed out from her body!!

Within the ring of light, the wounds on her palms suddenly sprayed out blood! That quickly dissipated in the light! Immediately afterwards a huge pillar of light shot up from her chest! The diving Lion Condor was enveloped within this light, and before it could even call out, its body..... Exploded! Disappeared!

Turning into countless motes of light, this Lion Condor just disappeared!

Everyone was stupefied! Not just the Rawling family guards, even Robert and

Thorskei, everyone were stupefied! Perhaps the only one still entranced was Duwei.

This lady knight..... Don't tell me, she used magic? Don't tell me she is a sorceress?!

After Rolynn used this bizarre magic to eliminate a Lion Condor, her body seemed to sway as she loudly recited a difficult to follow sentence, after which the yellow light enveloping her grew larger and larger..... At the same time the blood flowed faster and faster from Rolynn's hand!

As this yellow light gradually enveloped everyone, the surrounding Lion Condors howled one after another, but didn't seem to dare approach the light! With the protection of the ring of light, the Rawling family group was finally safe. Only the lady knight's body softened, almost falling to the ground.

Robert was the first to recover from the shock, and he quickly stepped forward to support the lady knight, shouting: "She's injured! Who has medicine! We need to staunch the blood!"

Looking at the wound in Rolynn's hand, Robert was stunned!

What kind of wound was this! The wound had practically doubled in size, and the surrounding flesh was practically blanched white! Clearly the signs of excessive blood loss! But how could so much blood flow from such a tiny wound? Rolynn's blood was even now flowing swiftly! Such a rate of bleeding made Robert feel cold!

"No! Don't stop the blood." Rolynn bit her lip hard, saying in a low voice: "My magic, it needs my blood. Quickly, retreat quickly, use this chance to retreat quickly."

Even though he didn't know what kind of magic this was, Robert immediately understood that this wasn't the time to ask questions and shouted: "Everyone fall back! We're leaving!"

"Make sure nobody leaves the ring of light." Rolynn added.

However, when everyone started to withdraw, only Duwei didn't budge. Robert frowned and pulled at this entranced little master, he believed the little master might be frightened dumb.

“Master, we’re leaving! Quickly!”

“No.” Duwei didn’t move, and kept watching those Lion Condors in front with a deeply ponderous expression.

Robert was somewhat irritated: “If we don’t leave we’ll die!”

“No.” Duwei still shook his head, it seemed his mind still hadn’t returned.

Robert couldn’t help getting angry!

His soldiers were bleeding, the lady knight at his side was using her own blood to maintain the magic! If they didn’t quickly stop the bleeding she would die!

But at this moment this little master was still acting wilfully!!

Just when Robert was resentful, Duwei finally smiled.....

Damn it! This fellow, he actually smiled!

Duwei turned his head to look at Rolynn, saying: “Rolynn, withdraw your magic, even if the Moon clan’s ‘magic breaking field’ is the nemesis of magic it costs blood. I thank you for your self sacrificial spirit, but..... It seems we’re being played with.”

Robert stared blankly a moment, don’t tell me this little master has gone delirious? Doesn’t he understand what he’s saying?

“Robert! Quickly staunch our lady knight’s blood, do you want to see her bleed to death?” Duwei shouted loudly, this time his orders were clear. Robert stared blankly. Duwei stepped forward and raised Rolynn’s hand, pushing it at Robert: “What are you staring at!”

Duwei then glanced at Rolynn, saying in a low voice: “Thank you, your courage today was worthy of respect!”

Finished speaking, Duwei separated from the guards, loudly laughing at the Lion Hawks in front: “Come! Won’t you let me see what you’re really about?”

Amidst everyone’s cries of alarm, Duwei suddenly moved forward several steps! Robert was scared out of his mind, and hastily moved forward to pull back his master, but at this moment the Lion Condors who were anxiously circling the ring of light looking for opportunities to strike saw Duwei appear, and instantly

pounced like lightning!

Robert tried to reach Duwei, but as those Lion Condor arrived he could only use his long sword to block one before he was completely blown away! Under everyone's dumbstruck gazes, those Lion Condors' claws easily pierced Duwei's frail body! As if skewering a sheet of paper!

! ! !

All the Rawling guards felt their vision go dark, Robert nearly dazed walked forward, and the weakened lady knight called out loudly, her body going limp.

Seeing Duwei thrown away by those Lion Condors like a tree leaf, his body cutting through the air to strike the ground, everyone felt their hearts drop to the ground!

Finished! Finished!

With the little master dead here, it was all over for them! Even if they could return alive, letting the master under their protection die, with such a sin they would definitely be put to death by the clan!

Robert stood there dumbly, even unconsciously dropping the sword in his hand to the ground. This moment, the hopes of the cavalymen all turned to dust.....

"Haha....."

A grotesque laughter rose, and from the ground, Duwei's 'corpse' suddenly started to swaying crawl from the ground!

This scene made everyone's eyes practically pop out!

Duwei's body was badly mangled, and in the pit of his stomach was a gaping hole that practically ran through from front to back! Blood flowed continuously, but Duwei only frowned, bowing his head to look at his wounds before smiling: "This feeling, it's still rather painful. Heh heh..... It's very realistic!"

He touched a bloody wound, raising his hand to get a closer look, smelling it, muttering to himself: "En, indeed very lifelike, it's as if the blood is actually real....."

## Chapter 22 - Terror Illusion Goblin

This was really a bizarre scene.

Duwei just stood there with terrifying injuries, that gaping hole in his chest stretched practically from the front to the back, but it was as if he didn't even notice the flowing blood!

Just like that, as Duwei had staggered a few steps forward, a Lion Condor charged at him again in front of everyone's stunned gazes. Duwei was bowled over, the slashing sharp claws immediately sending out sprays of dark red blood.....

"Master!"

Robert recklessly charged forward with reddened eyes, but Duwei's tiny body was already crawling up, swaying, yet he still seemed to be smiling..... That Duwei could actually still smile at a time like this made everyone nearby feel indescribably strange!

This tiny youth raised his head and laughed loudly at the Lion Condors filling the sky: "If this is your illusion, then I've already had enough of dreaming. If you can, let the dream end!"

Robert charged forward, the longsword in his hand becoming a brilliant streak shooting at the Lion Condor that last attacked Duwei. This loyal knight didn't hold back any of his battle qi, even to the extent that it exceeded what his body could support. Every muscle on the knight's imposing frame burst, as if blood was seeping through the surface of his skin!

The longsword wearing that battle qi cut the sky, even impaling the solid plumage of the Lion Condor and sending it tumbling from the air!

Robert threw himself at Duwei, embracing him with all his strength while showing his own back towards the sky.....

"Robert." Duwei gasped for breath in his arms, still smiling while blood

streamed from his mouth: “Listen, we’re being played, this is all fake.” He pointed to his own wounds: “Look, with wounds like these, an ordinary person would have died long ago. But.....”

Robert wasn’t an idiot, and finally caught on to the discrepancy. The feeling Duwei gave him..... Such a small and weak youth hadn’t died while suffering such fatal wounds! Such wounds might have long since turned even a powerful warrior into a corpse.

“My spirit power is stronger than ordinary peoples’, that’s why the illusion can’t completely affect me.” Duwei gasped for breath: “Unfortunately, I don’t know how to break it..... This might be a kind of mind magic, or maybe an illusion spell.”

“Illusion spell.....” Robert thought deeply, then roared in a loud voice: “Thorskei! Mister Thorskei!”

Thorskei, protected at the very center of the soldiers, heard the call and responded.

Robert exerted himself to carry Duwei as the attacks from the Lion Condors fell like hail. His back was injured several times, and even his armor was shredded, mangling the flesh underneath.

“Think of something! Master says it’s some kind of illusion magic!” Robert roared.

Thorskei sweated freely. He wasn’t after all any true magician, and the alchemical tricks he used to emulate magic only extended to fire magic. He hadn’t even cursorily dipped into mind magic.

Robert had already quickly come running back with Duwei, and Thorskei shouted: “I don’t have any way to break the illusion..... Maybe if we could get rid of these creatures. Just like we got rid of that rhinoceros and magic wolf.”

Robert couldn’t help roaring: “No kidding! If we had the ability for that we’d have already done it!”

Duwei in his embrace suddenly smiled and said in a low voice: “Robert, let me ask you..... Listen, every knight with imperial training in battle qi will have a qi valve weak point, where is your weak point?”



“.....” Robert stared blankly, he hadn’t expected his master to ask such a question at this moment.

“Tell me quickly.” Duwei continued: “I have a plan.”

Each knight training in battle qi would have his own qi valve weak points. When the knights used battle qi their strength could reach several times that of their muscles, or even more. But their weak point was each knight’s most closely guarded secret! How could he speak of it lightly?

But Robert’s heart trembled as he bowed his head to look at his master covered in blood, and gritted his teeth: “At..... The right side of my stomach, below the fourth rib.....”

As he spoke, Duwei’s expression showed a bizarre light! Nobody knew where this weak youth got the strength, but he suddenly rolled, struggling free of Robert’s grasp, swiftly drawing the dagger tied to the knight’s leg and stabbing Robert in the chest!

Robert should have been able to dodge, but as a loyal clan knight, a steadfast Rawling clan retainer, he hesitated a moment too long. After all, this was no enemy attacking, but rather..... his own master!

His chest armor had already been torn ragged in the fighting, and the ice cold dagger pierced the right side of Robert’s chest, just below the fourth rib! Robert could even feel that peculiar sensation of the cold dagger slipping into his flesh.....

Everyone saw their master abruptly draw the dagger and stab the knight, and stared blankly!

Robert was the most shocked, looking at the little master close by his side with amazement. It had never occurred to him that the target of his devoted protection would suddenly turn on him at a moment like this! But Duwei’s expression was serene, and even a bit consoling.

“Don’t worry, Robert, I wouldn’t harm you. It’s just a nightmare.”

At Duwei’s muffled voice, Robert made a dull groan, his body going limp, abandoning his resistance.....

Robert closed his eyes and fell to the ground.....

Duwei slowly stood up amidst everyone's cries of alarm, the dagger in his hand still dripping with blood. As all the Rawling guards stared at him with shock, Duwei just laughed and dropped the dagger, smiling slightly:

"Dreamland, end!"

When Duwei's dagger pierced the knights chest, the Lion Condors filling the sky suddenly issued a mournful howl! The countless Lion Condors immediately diving towards Duwei from all directions at the same time!

It seemed like those sharp claws and beaks would tear the young Duwei to shreds!

Everyone shut their eyes, all of them believing that this time they were truly screwed!

But at this moment something fantastic happened.

The first Lion Condor to charge at Duwei suddenly exploded into countless motes of light..... All the following Lion Condors stiffened in midair! All of their bodies seemed to show countless cracks, and through the cracks burst an intense light.....

With a final cry.....

Everyone couldn't help but lower their heads in the countless rays of light, not daring to look at it directly. Duwei alone still stood with his back straight, raising his head to look at the extraordinary scene in the sky, still with a cold smile on his face.....

One by one the Lion Condors were gradually smashed into light, dissolving, becoming countless specks of light scattering in the wind.....

In the brilliant radiance the evening sky seemed to become daytime! Duwei could even feel how the air around him, right, the very space was distorting. The surrounding trees, underbrush, comrades, even the corpses and blood on the ground, all of it distorted.....

Finally, with a bang, everything became quiet.....

The forest, was still the same forest.

The sky, was still the same sky.

The distant mountain, was still the same distant mountain.

The sunset, was still the same sunset.

But the blood on the ground disappeared. Those mangled pieces of corpses disappeared.

In their place were people in complete disorder on the ground. Sir Spann, his subordinates, those Rawling family guardsmen 'casualties', were all lying on the ground with their eyes closed, but they were clearly alive.

Only unconscious.

Duwei looked at himself, the fatal injuries he had suffered had already disappeared without a trace.

Robert lay at his feet..... Astonishingly, the knight didn't actually have any injuries!

Whether it was the injuries from the recent battle or from when Duwei stabbed him..... They were all gone!

His armor was intact, with only a scratch on the right side of his breastplate, approximately at his fourth rib. That was where Duwei had stabbed him with the dagger just now, but how could a feeble youth without martial skills have pierced the armor? At most he could leave a mark on it.

Duwei made an effort to pat Robert's face, rousing the knight from his sleep.

Robert opened his eyes and found his master looking at him. Afterwards Duwei said with a smile: "Sorry, I didn't have a choice just now..... Because you were the source of that whole situation. All those Lion Condors were based on your memories of the most terrifying time of your life, manufactured from the delusions in your heart..... So I could only knock you out in the dreamland, and once you were unconscious, the illusion didn't have a source and naturally disappeared."

As for Duwei stabbing Robert just now..... He had only stabbed him in the dream.

The Rawling family guards still standing also looked down on themselves with

astonishment, then at the companions around them. They couldn't comprehend what kind of strange method this little master had used to make those terrifying magic beasts go away..... And the wounds they had just now as well.

Those already dead comrades, even those whose corpses had been torn apart, all lay unharmed on the ground.

The only one still injured was the lady knight Rolynn.

The wound on Rolynn's hand was real! What she had used was the Moon clan's secret technique..... Magic breaking field.

Within her secret technique all magic was eliminated. When she used it she actually already broke out of the illusion, and therefore her injury was "real".

There wasn't enough time to explain, and the only one who understood what had happened was the magician Thorskei. Even though he didn't have much ability in magic, he was exceptionally erudite in magic lore. He immediately pulled out several medicines and started applying them to the unconscious lady knight's hand.

Duwei picked up the dagger from the ground and gave it a look: "As expected, not a drop of blood."

Holding the dagger he walked forward. At this moment everyone discovered that there seemed to be a small creature squirming through the underbrush in front.

It was a creature about the size of a big rat, its light green fur making it really difficult to discover in the underbrush..... If you didn't look carefully.

Duwei's approach made this small creature immediately emit an alarmed shriek, but it moved too slowly. When it tried to escape through the underbrush, the dagger in Duwei's hand shot out, stabbing into the ground in front of it. Duwei placed one foot on it.....

Everyone clearly saw that this little creature's plump body, under the green fur, seemed mostly like a sphere of meat, but unexpectedly with a long massive tail..... Sort of like a squirrel.

In fact, the creature's appearance was practically just that of a squirrel ——

except for its weird green fur!

But what was different was the tiny, sharp horn protruding from its forehead. Unlike other animals this horn wasn't made of bone, but of bright crystal.

Duwei was stepping on its tail, and as the little creature struggled to get free it made tweeting screeches. Baring its teeth to screech at Duwei, the horn on its head suddenly shone with a bright ray of light that struck Duwei.....

This bright light didn't cause Duwei the slightest harm, he only felt countless memories float up within his mind, as if he was swiftly recalling all sorts of things.....

Fear?

Yes, it seemed he was recalling the most terrifying moments of his life!

He felt as if something was scanning his memories, but those dusty things in his mind weren't part of this world, and as those terrible memories were brought out one by one, Duwei shook his head hard.....

He was infuriated!

Duwei who since coming to this world had always worn an apathetic smile now had a furious complexion, anger bubbling up to his face!

Duwei looked coldly at this little thing, then suddenly bent down and used a harsh low voice to say: "What, are you looking for the things I fear..... Then I'm afraid you'll be disappointed!"

Holding out a hand to grab the little creature, Duwei's fingers wrapped tightly around its neck and pulled it up, pulling it close before saying in a low voice: "If you can understand the fear in peoples' hearts, then shouldn't you be able to understand my words? Let me tell you..... Don't think to play that game with me..... While there is fear in my heart, the things I fear do not exist in this world! The illusions you can make should be limited to only those things that are within the rules of this world..... Then, I'm sorry to say..... I don't belong to this world!"

The little creature struggled to get free, the horn on its head constantly shooting out light at Duwei, but the expression within its eyes finally showed fear and despair..... Because that light was the source of its illusion magic, and to this

human across from it..... It was completely ineffective!

“Master.....”

Just as Duwei’s anger erupted, from behind him came the surprised voice of the magician.

Thorskei had swiftly run up to Duwei’s side and carefully studied the little creature held in his hand for a long time before joyously calling out: “My God! This is a ‘terror illusion goblin’!! According to historical records, this creature went extinct several centuries ago!! Heaven! Look at its forehead, the horn is already the length of a finger! This little creature is still an infant illusion goblin, it should be less than a century old!”

Duwei’s voice was very cold: “What, it’s also a magic beast? Illusion goblin? Is it rare?”

Thorskei’s face couldn’t help showing a greedy expression as he licked his lips: “This terror illusion goblin’ can use the fears in the hearts of men to deal with its enemies. It’s a superlatively intelligent magic beast that can’t even be compared to those common magic beast creatures! And, and.....”

“And what?”

The magician’s eyes shone: “Several hundred years ago, this creature was a treasure that every magician yearned for. As long as it was captured, killed, and the horn on its forehead ripped out and carried on one’s person, it granted immunity to the majority of mind magic! It’s horn is the material for making a first class magic defense item.”

As if the terror illusion goblin could understand the magician, when it heard him talking about killing it to take its horn, its fat body immediately trembled and started struggling more and more violently, as if its life depended on it. The tiny bean-like eyes grew wide and filled with fear.

At this moment behind them the majority of the Rawling family guards had all gathered around, the others occupied with waking up their unconscious comrades and sir Spann.

Duwei looked at the little creatures in his hand and said in a grim voice: “Immunity to the majority of mind magic? So it’s actually such a precious

creature..... How is it used? Can the horn be pulled out right after it's killed?"

The magician was practically drooling: "Yes! That's right! And not just its horn, even its fur, they're both precious magic materials, it's also a precious ingredient for alchemy! With it I can make....."

Before Thorskei could finish speaking there was a sudden whistling sound from the distant mountain, immediately followed by a fireball bursting in midair. That was the signal from one of the other search parties, apparently something had happened.

As everyone were stunned, suddenly a flickering light could be seen far away in the woods, precisely from where the other search party's flare had originated!

That light flew through the air and immediately shot down directly in front of everyone! On the ground it transformed into a jade green flame, and from within the flame a person stepped out!

"Careful! This could be the high level spell 'jade flame teleportation'!" Thorskei was nervous.

The person who stepped from the green flame was dressed in an official magician's robe and a tall pointed hat, and the robe was actually golden! On the chest hung a golden three leafed mugwort badge!

Duwei who was already familiar with general knowledge about magicians recognized it with one look: this badge was the emblem of an 'archmage'!

Magicians on the continent were split into ten levels: Below the fourth level were low level magicians, the fourth rank to the eighth were generally called mid level magicians, but the eighth level and above were people addressed as 'archmagi'.

And this three leafed mugwort badge clearly stated that this magician's status was of the top layer of all the magicians on the continent! This fellow was at least an eighth level magician!

The somewhat short and thin stature was completely covered in the golden robe, appearing incomparably luxurious in the setting sun, and the magician's face was completely hidden by the pointed hat, and even the high collar was turned up so that not even a hint of skin could be seen.

Even though the face couldn't be seen, Duwei clearly sensed that the other side's gaze was fixed on the little terror illusion goblin in his hand!

A high level magician suddenly appearing here left both Duwei and Thorskei stunned. Thinking of what Thorskei had just said about the value of the little terror illusion goblin, Duwei naturally thought of what the other side coveted.....

"Who is it!" Duwei calmly shouted.

Sir Robert reacted very quickly and waved his hand, and numerous Rawling clan guardsmen formed up to protect Duwei.

So much had already happened today! A formidable high level magician suddenly showing up left sir Robert somewhat nervous..... Whether it was an enemy or a friend, only heaven knew!

"I am a knight of the Rawling clan, distinguished magician, please tell us your purpose in coming!" Robert spoke up while covering Duwei behind him.

He first made clear their side's identity before asking the other side, this was the most adequate plan. He also hoped that the Rawling clan's name might make them think of the consequences.

Before the magician spoke, they first raised their wide sleeves to pull off the pointed hat, exposing their face.

Everyone were immediately stupefied!!

"I, I, I'm s-s-s-sorry....." The magician's voice was tender and pleasant to hear, even a bit nervous and timid..... Most importantly, the magician actually stammered ferociously!

"I-I-I've come to I-I-I-I-look for it....." Raising a slender finger to point at the terror illusion goblin in Duwei's hand.

This magician didn't just have a pretty voice, her appearance was pretty as well. After pulling off the hat, this high level magician with the golden three leafed mugwort badge was actually a girl with a shy expression! Her smooth and round cheeks were bright scarlet, as if blushing with shame from all the stares. Her nose and mouth were both small and exquisite, and her eyes were large and clear. Only, the expression in those eyes was pleading.



“I-I-I’m s-sorry..... I-i-it’s m-my teacher’s p-p-p-pet, I-I-I’ve come to b-b-bring it b-back.” It seemed that the more nervous she was, this sorceress’ words stuttered more fiercely, and she looked about to cry: “C-c-can you r-return it? I-i-i..... If I don’t b-bring it back, t-teacher will p-p-punish me.”

## Chapter 23 - Pitiful Vivian Young

A magician, an eighth ranked archmage, an apparently at most no more than eighteen young sorceress, a so nervous and tense when speaking it was like a young lady from a wealthy family going out into the world for the first time-magician.

And most importantly, she stuttered.

The people around couldn't help staring wide eyed. Looking at this furiously blushing girl, big eyes close to overflowing with tears, everyone seemed to subconsciously lower the swords in their hands.

This girl didn't appear to be any threat.

Even Duwei stared..... This stuttering girl, with an expression as timid as a rabbit, was really an eighth level magician?

But this robe, and still that badge, neither could be faked! Duwei knew that all such badges issued by the magic guild would have the capability to prevent forgeries.

Coughing, Duwei couldn't refrain from relaxing the fingers squeezing that terror illusion goblin somewhat, looking at this delicate timid girl: "Distinguished magician, you're saying, this creature belongs to you?"

"Ye..... Ah n-n~~no." The girl finally started crying, tears unexpectedly flowing from her eyelids: "This is my m-m-master's. C-can't you re-re-return it to me....."

Return it?

Duwei really didn't want to return it!

Why? This little creature had ruthlessly attacked his people, leaving everyone battered and exhausted, Duwei was really of a mind to slaughter this little thing, and afterwards do like Thorskei said and take out its horn.

But, looking at this sorceress coming to bring it back..... With the kind of person this was, could he really shamelessly do it?

If he wanted to act shamelessly..... The counterpart was an eighth level magician!

Despite this girl's apparently very weak appearance.

"This..... Esteemed magician, please..... please don't worry." Duwei was patient, even so much that his voice was mild, speaking softly like coaxing a little girl: "If this little creature really is yours....."

"O-o-o-of course!" The sorceress seemed to hear what she hoped for and made an effort to wipe her tears, looking at Duwei with a hopeful expression. Those two innocent big eyes were incomparably clear, that kind of simple pleading expression from such a painfully pitiful girl, really didn't let people lower their intentions.

"Don't worry." Duwei slowly said: "Even if this little creature is yours, as its owner, I think you should take responsibility for the mistakes it committed, no?"

The sorceress' expression turned flustered, and she very timidly looked at Duwei: "M-may I a-a-a-ask....."

"This little creature, is it a high level magic beast?" Duwei lowered his voice: "As this magic beast's owner, you didn't properly look after it, letting it run off to the hinterlands of the imperial south! Don't tell me you don't know how much disorder a magic beast running all over would cause for the people in this region!"

Looking at his young master so sternly rebuking an eighth level magician, Thorskei to the side really wanted to laugh, but didn't dare to.

Because..... That was an archmage!

Looking at the badge pinned to the girl's chest, Thorskei swallowed resolutely. After all, the greatest dream of a low level magician like Thorskei was to one day advance in rank, putting on such a golden badge!

"Ah.....Th-th-th-this....." The sorceress' face showed a guilty expression, hanging her head: "M-m-my master went f-far away. I-I-I-I w-was in charge of looking after Squeaky, b-b-but it t-took advantage of my older sister coming to s-see me to r-r-run away..... I-I've already been looking for it for v-very m-m-many days."

“Your mistake cannot become an excuse for the crimes committed.” Duwei spoke righteously and sternly: “Don’t you know how much panic such a high level magic beast running off to this serene little town would cause for the residents here? These brave soldiers all came up to this mountain in order to catch it! Moreover, don’t you know how much harm this little pet of yours just now caused to these brave soldiers!”

“.....” The sorceress was speechless, she only looked at Duwei with that guilty and imploring gaze.

Duwei’s mind was set, looking at this sorceress who was perhaps a young lady who had never left home to meet the world, he would properly swindle such a greenhouse flower.

“This creature brought panic to the region! The soldiers bled, sweated, to catch it here, in order to protect the peace of this region! But you have come to take it away, may I ask with such a method, is there not a trace of shame in your heart?”

As Duwei spoke, the sorceress’ head hung practically to her stomach.

When Duwei finally was finished, the sorceress roused her courage, cautiously speaking up: “I-I-I-I want to apologize t-t-to you f-for i-it’s actions..... I-I-I’m very.....”

“Stop your apologies!” Duwei was unforgiving: “If apologies were of use, would there still be need for police?”

“P-police..... W-what’s that?”

Duwei coughed, covering up his awkwardness. That was a slip of the tongue just now, this world didn’t have things like police officers.

“What I mean is.....” Duwei stuck out his chest, his voice loud: “Don’t tell me that a simple line of ‘I’m sorry’ is enough to compensate the blood and sweat of our brave soldiers?”

His words were actually somewhat too bullying towards this little girl.

These search parties that entered the mountain actually hadn’t shed any blood, the scene of flesh and blood flying in that battle just now was all an

illusion. After eliminating the illusion, everyone were actually just confused, they hadn't suffered any injuries, at most they would have a few nightmares when sleeping. It wasn't a big loss.

The only injury was that of the lady knight Rolyynn.

Duwei naturally wouldn't waste the chance to emphasize this condition and suitably took two steps, exposing the lady knight supported by his subordinates behind him.

Rolyynn's complexion was somewhat pale, the sign of poor health from sudden blood loss, but overall there wasn't much of a problem. But looking at this woman, standing there unsteadily, hand still wrapped in white bandages, hair in disorder, still really made this sorceress feel even more guilty.

"How can I-I-I c-compensate you?" The sorceress' eyes were reddened.

Duwei drew a breath, a satisfied light flashing in his eyes, then looked at Thorskei to his side. Over this past time spending every day talking about alchemy with Duwei, Thorskei already had some understanding about the temper of this little master, and catching his signal he immediately caught on. Taking two steps forward and slightly saluting, he slowly said: "Respected archmage."

When the girl saw Thorskei's magician's robe she immediately returned the gesture: "M-Mister m-magician."

At this instant, Thorskei couldn't keep from blushing somewhat..... In his entire life he had perhaps never even dreamed of one day having an eighth level magician address him as "Mister magician".

"This, I think, this little pet of yours has already caused harm to the region, if was simply released, perhaps these soldiers who have suffered would be unable to accept it, furthermore, my master, the mighty Rawling family's earl Lehmann's eldest son, young master Duwei, also received a terrible fright in this matter today, therefore, I think, some punishment for this little creature is in order."

"N-n-n..... No, i-if when t-t-teacher r-returns he s-s-s-sees it's s-s-suffered, he w-w-will punish m-me....." The sorceress' forehead was sweating: "If t-t-t-

teacher g-g-gets angry, y-y-you'll also.....”

“Respected archmage, may I ask who your teacher is? I really would like to know which magician in the Empire could instruct an archmage level disciple.” Thorskei began to case the her background.

The sorceress had a difficult expression: “T-t-this..... I-I-I-I c-can't say.”

Thorskei frowned slightly, then immediately smiled: “Then, you should at least tell us your name?”

“Ah.....” The sorceress loosed a breath, this was a question she could answer: “M-m-m-my name is Vivian Young. Magic guild e-e-eighth level magician.” Saying this, the girl suddenly recalled the minimum level of etiquette her teacher had instructed her in. Blushing, she immediately half bowed, very politely asking: “M-may I also ask for y-y-your name, r-r-respected mister m-magician.”

This time Thorskei was truly blushing: “I..... Thorskei, magic guild..... first..... En, that, first level magician.”

As he said the last part, Thorskei wished he could find a hole to hide in.

To an eighth level magician, a first level magician was an existence like an ant! Even the disciples at the sides of many of those at the archmage level were second or third level magicians.

To the circle of magicians at the upper levels, a first level magician was perhaps no different from a magic apprentice.

But this pure girl apparently didn't understand this, and she still stooped according to her excessive etiquette. This bit immediately gave Thorskei a very favorable impression.

It had never been seen! An eight level magician actually bowing to me, Thorskei!

“Then, please show us your sincerity in compensating.” Duwei spoke up in a timely manner.

“T-this.....” The sorceress was somewhat embarrassed. After thinking, she pulled out a tiny purse from her robe and opened it: “I-I-I-I h-have a w-water orchid diamond, e-e-even though it's o-o-only m-mid rank, b-but.....”

The more she spoke the more she stuttered, and finally she could only helplessly clasp the water orchid diamond in her hands, looking at Duwei with a pleading expression.

Water orchid diamond??

Thorskei was moved! Water orchid diamond was a top class water system magic material! This crystal was a top quality material for making scrolls or maybe storing magic! If it was used by a high level alchemist for a magic wand, then when a water system magician used magic it could save at least a third of the magic power! It could even speed up casting!

Looking at this water orchid diamond, sparkling and translucent, it was absolutely mid grade or higher quality. If simply considering value, it would be worth at least several thousand gold coins!

Any water system magician would be willing to pay this price, or even several times more for this thing!

Thorskei's mouth hung open. Just as he was about to speak, behind him Duwei already placed a hand on his shoulder. Duwei's face was cold, and he even frowned as he squinted at the sorceress: "Eh, a water orchid crystal like this?"

The sorceress blushed, her expression frenetic, and in her heart she couldn't help feeling a twinge of guilt.

Ai, even though this water orchid diamond was mid grade, but..... It actually wasn't a thing she needed, she wasn't a water system magician, keeping it was useless..... Giving something useless as compensation for others, how could Vivian do something so despicable!

Omnipotent God forgive me!

The sorceress denounced herself inwardly, then hastily pulling out a dark green little thing from the pouch. Dark green radiance moved over this little thing like waves, but at the same time it seemed soft. The sorceress anxiously said: "T-t-this as w-w-w-well....."

Thorskei felt as if his eyeballs would pop out!

"G-g-green magic medicine!" Endlessly excited, Thorskei seemed infected by

the stuttering.

Duwei raised his eyebrows. With his scholarly knowledge, he also knew what kind of thing green magic medicine was.

This was a treasure any magician yearned for even in their dreams!

This thing was a kind of medicine a magician could use to replenish magic power! If a mid level magician consumed all their magic power in a fight, if they carried such a small bottle of magic medicine, they could instantly replenish their magic power!

But in the big pouch in this sorceress' hands..... There might be more than seven or eight bottles!

The creation of such a thing was extremely difficult, and the raw materials were also extremely rare. Even more important, it was a consumable good! Each used was one less!

Thorskei felt his throat tighten.

But, Duwei still looked unhappy, frowning at the sorceress: "Like this? Don't tell me the blood and sweat of our soldiers is only worth such a thing?"

Tears were roaming in the girl's beautiful big eyes, and she grabbed her hair as she thought, again rummaging around for a small yellow pearl, shyly handing it over.

"T-t-this, m-m-my own m-made f-f-fire repelling pearl."

Duwei replied: "Then for the injuries of my lady knight?"

The sorceress also took out a handful of magic beast cores! Brightly colored, more than ten low level or even mid level magic beast cores were extorted by Duwei.

"Next, the fright I myself suffered?" Duwei appeared to be the incarnation of an extorting bully.

The sorceress turned over her traveling bag, fishing out her final treasure..... Seven or eight magic scrolls!

Furthermore, Thorskei was practically dizzy at just a glance..... these were all



mid level magic scrolls! Not some low level magic goods! They were all mid level magic scrolls!! These seven or eight items were already enough to cause a duel between two magicians!!

Seeing his little master still not nodding agreement, even Thorskei felt a pang of conscience!

This innocent and naive, even somewhat foolish sorceress, had handed over “compensation” worth enough to buy a city!

Looking at Duwei still not nodding, the sorceress cried. She turned over her empty bag in the air: “I-I-I-I-I o-only b-b-brought t-t-these.”

Devil!!

At this moment, Thorskei at his side, and sir Robert, as well as all the other Rawling clan people, none could keep from sighing. Looking at the pitiful little sorceress weeping, they even felt ashamed.

Unfortunately, their little master still didn’t have a forgiving appearance..... His appetite, wasn’t it excessively large?

## Chapter 24 - Vivian's Sister

Vivian couldn't find anything else, she looked at Duwei with extremely pitiful eyes, her hands twisting the bag but apparently it was completely empty, with nothing inside at all.

"Th-th-this is all that I have". She stuttered. She actually couldn't find anything else.

Thorskei who was next to her hated that he couldn't come and strangle Duwei to let him agree already!

There was a mid-grade water orchid diamond, a magic medicine bag, a top quality magic beast core...in addition with more than ten mid-level magic scrolls.

These items are desirable by all magicians on Earth! Although many magicians are very rich but a huge pile of possessions like this is Extremely Rare.

By this time, there was no response, if anything happens, what to do? An eighth level magician is not easy to handle!

Vivian looked a little stupid in honest manner, but if she were to fight excessively, with the capability of an Eighth level magician, decimating everyone here is probably an easy task.

From time to time, this girl doesn't seem like a profound magician, but if she doesn't say anything, only one of her magic words can also wipe out my defeated force here.

Granted that she was a fool...but bullying a magician, there may be some troublesome aftermath.

Thank god, while thorskei was about to go crazy, Duwei nodded, he said calmly; "Dear Magician, I am unable to get into your feelings. You proposed these conditions, I think my henchmen will be extraordinarily satisfied."

Duwei signalled, Thorskei seemed relieved, he exhaled and quickly ran like a "robber" to take "the compensation" on hand. His eyes scowled, quickly stuffing all the treasures in his bag and tied it tightly. His face looked like a god of

treasure....If right now, anyone was to intentionally touch his bag, Thorskei will definitely risk his life for it.

“So, you can also d-d-d-drop it...” Vivian looked at Duwei, the big innocent eyes with pretty face like an angel really makes people not to make things difficult.

“My henchmens are satisfied with “the compensation” that you offered... but I may have an additional problem” Duwei didn’t change his face.

“b-b-b-b-but I don’t have...” Vivan was rattled, she quickly flipped her bag upside down with an innocent face.

“No no no, I didn’t ask you for compensation.” Duwei finally revealed his tyrannical mind. “You’re an eighth level magician, aren’t you? In this empire, the top magicians are extremely rare, especially you..I have never heard of a young lady like you, who could own a great medal for magician. Please do not misunderstand, what I want to say is...I am curious and excited about magic. I am looking forward to reaching the light of the great magic, and it takes a lot of force to study it. You see, I even invited a magician to be my advisor.”

Duwei pointed at Thorskei who was grabbing his bag tightly.

Then he deliberately sighed, shakes his head “Unfortunately. You saw, although my advisor tried his best to teach us, but he has a limited capability. So it’s quite difficult for me to search for something more. Today, in this place, I have coincidently met you, it is my great honor... even though I am threatened by your little pet, but I won’t consider it a pain out of my respect for you”

Vivian didn’t seem to understand. Just recently, this young nobleman who is a bit scary, robbed all of my treasures...but I owe him. Vivian didn’t think of using her magic to regain her items, since she was a little girl, she was educated to comply with righteousness and goodness. Because she had good mind with innocence, up until now, she never went outside, so she was quite unfamiliar with evil.

Therefore she just meekly dedicated all of her assets, she didn’t knew that, using resilience and magic incarnations can resolve this situation.

This guy is really scary indeed, but he was excited when he talked about magic with high spiritual learning...his appearance seems honest. His eyes and words

are sincere.

Moreover, he said “Regardless of him being afraid.” He is a good guy at heart... with simple thoughts, she already forgot that she have been robbed of all her treasures. Vivian stammered and said “ Th...th..Thank you for your tolerance.”

“No, no, I am not finished yet.” Duwei sighed “ Unfortunately, I am always looking for a highly capable magician to broaden my magic, teach me something... Now, I by fate, met a kind hearted magician like you. Are you willing to teach magic to a person who is sincere to study like me?”

“...” Vivian felt something wrong, but she couldn’t think of anything wrong with Duwei’s sincere eyes.

How honest is he! Moreover, the little pet threatened him.... This is my mistake. But...

“You want to learn ma-magic? But I have to return my master’s “little pet”, on-on-only....” Vivian was feeling a little awkward.

“No, no, you misunderstood me.” Duwei laughed with a serious face and said “I know that your time is precious. Your time is used for a more intensive study of magic, how can you waste it on me. So, my request is not much, I only want you to teach me something. You see, I have a magic advisor, although his capability is only limited but at least he is able to answer most of my problems. That is all I need now, just a little ‘profound’ knowledge, such as....” Duwei glanced, suddenly laughing “ For example, some advanced magic words,”

Thorskei was surprised, he couldn’t think of what Duwei just said!

If those treasures are a magician’s property, then those magic incantations are...the language of their life!!

Each magician spends all his life to study those magic incantations, they absolutely will not arbitrarily take their hard research and teach them to anyone!

Therefore, the book of magic, recorded some basic knowledge only, no great mantra was ever handed out!

No matter what the magic incantations are, a magician only orally transmits the magic to their disciples!

A magician is better than other, except for the magic, force, the most critical is.. having profound magic incantations.

Magician vary from High level to low level ones, even magic incantations will have a few different types. Some can reduce the form, increase the speed of magic through the study of their achievements! So that when fighting, they could prevail.

Also, low level magician is not able to control the power of advanced magic incantations.

Like Thorskei for instance, he can only hold a few low level incantations. If he wants to learn advanced magic, he can only study them from a senior.

He didn't think that Duwei was brave enough to ask the magicians for magic incantations. But this is the secret that can't be revealed.

Although this little girl was a bit overly innocent, but she was not a fool.... Otherwise, how can an idiot have this level of magic?

[TL Note-She's definitely an idiot, a big one at that.]

With Duwei's request, Vivian was indecisive, she repeatedly shook her little head "No no no... absolutely cannot be done. My master said this kind of magic incantations cannot be shared with anyone!"

"But, this little pet is you master's, isn't it? He also said you cannot lose it right?" Duwei seemed to lead a juvenile to guilty.

"....." Vivian was speechless.

"Should I tell the truth? Your master wants you to take care of this little pet, but you disobeyed and lost this precious pet, this is only my very small requirement. You saw we had to suffer too much because of this little pet, I was so scared... Now just to make up for your mistake, shouldn't you do a small compensation?"

Vivian is a genius, but it's only limited in scope of studying magic. And the other aspects, obviously, she really has "shortcomings". Only some of Duwei's arguments can make her completely confused.

In her mind, Vivian was bewildered between the responsibility of taking care of

the little pet and not revealing the magic words... both of them were fighting throughout the half day, ultimately Vivian started crying.

She sobbed violently “ Ok fine... but I can only teach you on-on-on-one thing.”

“You said one thing” Duwei said as he quickly pointed out a finger “As I counted, there are a total of four things, right?

“No, Not right!” Vivian started panicking, she shouted “ No, not four, is only on-on-on-one...”

She said even more feverishly, only word of one was not finished yet, when she said “one”, Duwei pointed the finger again.

Finally, Vivian was too feverish and wanted to bite her tongue. Duwei showed his ten fingers, if she had continued, he would probably count his toes as well, magician shouted “Stop, stop, stop, stop!!”

Looking at her red face, Duwei didn’t dare to force her excessively. Finally after negotiation, bilateral decision is the magic incantations for “Ten Things.”

For this type of harmful negotiation, magician had to undergo a very fierce tension... but alas, she couldn’t resist Duwei’s words. With that repartee and innocent mind, and the most important stuttering, she couldn’t win the argument with Duwei.

There is no way that a magician can only silently stand.

Dear revered master, please forgive Vivian to disobey your command...I just wanted to find your little pet. To execute your first command, I have to leave the second one...

“I am an aristocrat, you are a magician, we both have status. Making promise cannot be arbitrarily changed, I suggest we should make an oath that indicates the completion of our words...”

Then, he didn’t wait for the magician’s protest, Duwei immediately raised his voice and made an oath.

Vivian had no other way but to oath, Duwei was surprised that when executing the oath, she seriously did the article of magic, indicating that their convention must be completed.

She stuttered but the speed of mantras was just amazingly quick!

She recited the difficult incantations like turning over the beans, it was very fast, very clean.

It is very difficult to imagine a profound magician in magic incantations talks while stuttering.

It's worth mentioning that Vivian didn't even argue with Duwei at all.

Ultimately, Duwei still didn't know who is the master to be able to teach this innocent girl!

The boss's treacherous behaviour towards this pitiful girl made most of the guardians dead silent. Because even they suffered a lot of pain, so they didn't say anything at all, except the knight. The treacherous acts of Duwei towards the little girl were not right, but what could he do? How can he oppose his master?

But....the master treated an eighth level magician like this.... Won't everyone be worried?

The anxiety of Robert very quickly turned into reality!

Magician agreed to teach Duwei six magic incantations, so she had to follow him.

After getting an equal agreement, eventually she had to think which magic incantations is she going to teach Duwei, obviously, they cannot be important ones.

It shouldn't be blamed on Vivian that she was starting to think up such thoughts in her mind. Actually... after being deceived by Duwei, even an angel will learn to be a little sly.

In such a way of thinking, Vivian still couldn't decide, if not, you can only stay with Duwei to wonder.

Fortunately, her master will come back after some days, just handle this affair within this duration... Just can't be found by sister!

If I can resolve this issue, then I can return to the master's place. The outside world is indeed scary, are there more scary people like this man?

Please have mercy god, Vivian doesn't deliberately speak behind other's back, please forgive me....but, this man is really scary.

This time, I will definitely not go outside again!

Sister sister.... You won't come here so fast, will you?

===

The incident was solved without any injury to the young master, Spann was the most comfortable.

Although there was a bit of embarrassment, more than 10 equipped soldiers lost their front teeth...

Relaxing his mind, Spann was enthusiastic to invite Duwei's butler Marde and other Rawling clan members to come and have some rest outside.

Duwei did not refuse, he also hoped for a quiet place to talk about magic incantations with Vivian.

And so, the group of people, didn't go into the camp but stayed outside.

That night, Marde wanted to please Duwei so he enthusiastically entertained everyone to eat satiety. Even he decided to take some jars of wine that chief stored.

After a long tiring afternoon, eventually everyone can breathe a sigh of relief and enjoy the meal, and get over the entire scenario from today's afternoon.

Duwei formally responded to Marde's enthusiasm, and quickly found an excuse to return to rest. In fact, he was very much interested in seeing Vivian.

Marde knew that having dinner with Duwei was a great regard already, so he didn't retain him, just got up to see him out...

Suddenly, in the meantime, outside the hall, there was a huge bang!

In the peaceful night sky, there was a huge bolt of lightning! The thunderclaps woke up each and every one, even the ones who were heavily drunk.

Immediately, in the blink of an eye, the main door outside the hall was hit by a big fire and the doors burned to ashes!

While everyone was rolling their eyes in surprise, the sound was coming from



every direction!

There was sound coming from a far, it was an extremely cold sound of a Women!

“Vivian! My dear sister, do you still want to run! Give me the Terror Illusion Goblin!”

# Chapter 25 (a) - Sisters' Battle (Beginning)

The tremendous upheaval made everyone afraid!

Fortunately, inside the military camp, there were not that many soldiers, as they were training far from this place by several hundred miles.

Spann was the first person who woke up, his face was full of rage, grabbing the sword on the ground and shouted out: "Who dares to make a raid on the local military camp!!!"

Spann was angry indeed. Making a raid is the act of rebellion, high treason! If I cannot catch the enemy who burned the flag outside the camp in front of me, I will lose my position!

In the hall, soldiers' eyes were red, they quickly grabbed the weapons and followed Spann. Then, there was only the sound of weapons that hurt everyone's ears.

The Rawling clan soldiers immediately surrounded Duwei.

Duwei was ahead of the main gate with anger, and he startled due to the terrible scenes outside. Spann's soldiers were lying on the ground. Their clothes and hairs were burnt in black, everyone was moaning, unable to stand up again.

Suddenly a silver shadow appeared from the flight of steps and quickly dashed.

This shadow moved with lightning speed, even Robert couldn't clearly see the appearance of the enemy, he shouted: "Stop!"

Robert absorbed the inner force, his body immediately exuded rays of light. He slashed his sword, a bright white light immediately ran towards the flight of steps!

The shadow seemed to have no intention of stopping, it rushed towards Robert to cross swords with him.

In a split second, Robert immediately felt the cold air in his body from the sword! This weapon made the Knight shudder, each of his fingers was frozen,

he may not hold it anymore! Immediately a great force hit on the blade, Robert succumb, his whole body felt like being hit by electricity, losing all the senses.

The sword fell on the ground, and Robert fainted because of excruciating pain., his clothes and hairs were burnt in black, he fell over the ground. Obviously he was seriously wounded!

In just a split second, the new comer defeated a Knight as powerful as Robert. While Rawling clan soldiers were still surprised, the shadow ultimately stopped and stood in the central hall!

This was the woman who has spoken outside.

The girl who called Vivian her young sister, was tall and had beautiful appearance. Her face can be compared with . Her two irises were shining but they were cold eyes.

Her face was like made of ice, with murderous air, slightly narrowed eyelashes that showed the satirical implication.

She wore a strange white armour with “empty pattern” - a pattern made of a hollow carving. How strong was this armor? It was thin, although beautiful but seemed useless in battle.

Duwei and Thorskei saw them as evil patterns, or even consisting of some magics.

On her back, there was also a cold icy spear with the length touching the ground.

This girl with white armour, a long icy spear and beautiful face looked like the person who came out from the ice.

But that was not the only reason which startled Duwei!

During this time, the aristocrats who used to be calm, were threatened by this girl!

She had a long hair as white as snow!

A snow-white hair, in addition with her lips and straight nose...

Duwei seemed hit by lightning! Because he can realize her appearance!

It seems that a few days ago, in the library of Rawling clan, that's the person who found the Star magic...Saimel.

Standing in front of this girl ... if Duwei didn't know that she died hundreds of years ago, he would think that magician was standing in front of him here.

From the appearance, this girl's body was almost 90% similar to Saimel.

Duwei rolled his eyes and opened his mouth, in the eyes of others, he seemed to be threatened blankly. Everyone revolved around Duwei, some Rawling clan soldiers pointed the sword towards the girl and shouted: "Treason! You were audacious to make a raid into military camp!"

"Ha ha ha ha ..." The girl laughed coldly: "I have already done it, are you just gonna stand there and make idle threats?"

She gently lifted a finger, a ice line came out towards everyone. While no one could react, the Rawling clan soldier who just shouted, was hit with frozen body down to the ground.

She did that all too suddenly, with no signs at all! Duwei ultimately regained consciousness, he glanced over Thorskei, they can see the fear in the eyes of each other!

"The Rawling clan soldiers! Protect Duwei! Risking everything you've got! Go!" a guardian shouted out, raised the sword and went ahead, then others followed. Immediately a dozen people had gathered around and pointed the sword towards the girl.

The girl laughed and turned her body then it shined a white light in circle! It just suddenly flashed and disappeared, but those people were flying out!

Immediately, over ten bodies bumped into every direction, someone hit the wall, someone crashed into the table, even those who were out of the hall...

On the ground, there was an abundance of people, It's unknown what type of magic this girl used. All of them fainted away, there was only Duwei and Thorskei in the hall.

"I can not believe it! There is a sorcerer here." This girl saw Thorskei's robe, her eyes were shining immediately, she smiled coldly: "Sorcerer! Where is your

medal? As a magician, why don't you wear the Association's medal?! Which level you belong to? "

Thorskei immediately flushed, his medal was forced to burn by Duwei. When the enemy questioned, he stuttered without any words.

The girl shook her head: "I do not think in a small military camp, there will be a magician. So I will follow the rituals to fight with you."

## Chapter 25 (b) - Sisters' Battle (Ending)

The girl finished speaking, the long white hairs shaking like snowflakes in the North. She gently pointed a finger out. Fingertip immediately changed into a medal, then she pinned it on the Armour near the icy Spear, she said: " All right, Sorcerer, you begin first! I don't like wearing this kind of medal, we should have a fast fight and fast victory! "

Thorskei was almost going to faint!

Begin??

He just saw her medal which was made from metal, leaf-shaped, exactly same as Vivian's! They were top level magicians!

As a first level magician, how can I have to fight with an eighth level one?

Have you seen a little dog fighting with a dragon?

Thus, Thorskei reacted directly! His head turned to one side, his eyes closing tightly, he immediately fainted in place!

"...." Looking at him, the girl was also a bit shocked, she immediately pouted in contempt: "You are a coward"

"How about you? A young nobleman? I just heard your henchmen said they are Rawling clan members, right? So you are one of them, aren't you?

"Yes." Duwei's countenance didn't change: "My name is Duwei. I'm a first-born child of Commanding General, Raymond Earl is my father".

"Well, Can the name of Rawling clan family scare me?" The girl looked up and down carefully Duwei: "You are still child, why did you come here."

She seemed to quickly lose the interest on Duwei, shouted:!! "Vivian, if you do not come out, I'll flatten this place! My little sister, give me Terror Illusion Goblin! "

Then, the girl's face showed the impatience, she suddenly opened her arms, her eyes quickly turning empty, she focused on her body, suddenly, in the hall, a

whirlwind appeared! Arouse to the roof of the hall!

Bang! the whirlwind easily broke the hall roof into pieces, numerous debris thrown in every direction. It started to spread out slowly...

“Vivian! Do you think I can not do it! You should know that I dare to do everything in this world!”

She laughs loudly, her hands made a strange gesture ..... immediately the whirlwind was even more intense! The surrounding air began to have some snowflakes falling down!

Snow?

Damn! But here is the South!

Duwei was early on the ground when the whirlwind breaking down the roof.

Today, finally he can feel the great power of magician who was easy to instantly kill a large number of soldiers, there were many people in front of her without any resistance.

And this girl is too dangerous!

It's said that their capabilities of fighting are very bad, aren't they?

She wore an armor which a magician has never done ..... unless she is Mowu alike? !

“Sister ..... sister! I be-be-beg you stop!”

Finally, Vivian's voice came haltingly, she was wearing the robe which drifted out from the military camp, her body hanging in the air with a small cage in hands. She made it by herself with magic to confine Terror Illusion Goblin.

Vivian looked horrified, seemed afraid to face with her sister, but pleaded: “Sister i be-be-beg you .....”

“Poor little Vivian”, the girl sneered: “When can you be strong? you must have strong consciousness, you have powerful magic but your courage is less than a rabbit.”

Then, she suddenly pulled out from her waist..... a strange flute!

It's a green flute. The girl pointed at Vivian and sneered: ” Drop the Terror

Illusion Goblin, I will only get its horn and go immediately, otherwise, my dear sister, you will suffer a lot of pain. ”

Then, the lightning came from her flute, countless strange photosphere immediately shot out from its hole. Duwei lying on the ground suddenly heard the shrill sound!

Obviously it's a magic using sound attack.

He was far away but could still feel that sound, it seemed like he was going to faint. He couldn't imagine how Vivian felt within close distance.

Vivian seemed to be very afraid of her sister, her body shaking. She raised her hands quickly to recite a magic words, immediately a magic shield appeared in front, blocking the photosphere, then she shouted: ” Terror Illusion Goblin is Master's little pet, if you kill it, he will... ”

“People around the world are afraid of him, not me!” The girl disdain: “I need its horn, you know I can not make my magic defense weapon without it, don't you?!! ! Give it to me! ”

After saying the final word, she suddenly rushed straight to Vivian with a hand reaching out to the cage!

“No way!” Vivian didn't stuttered at that time, her body suddenly flashed and disappeared, in the blink of an eye, she appeared far, more than ten meters away.

“Ha ha ha my dear sister, your Bi Yan mobile magic is actually very skilled! But you are a coward, just using it to escape, aren't you? ” The girl sneered.

“Y-you ..... y-y-you can't force me!” Vivian was almost scared to cry.

“I'm going to force you! You are a poor little girl! I want to see you cry!!”. The girl suddenly raised a hand and recited a mysterious magic words. Her palms began to appear a mass of white mist! It became more and more intense and spread out.....

Vivian's face went white, she shouted: “No, no you cannot do that kind of magic here.”

“Why not!”. The girl finished reciting with a huge iceberg in hands!



It seemed have a moving shadow inside ready to break out the iceberg! !

Vivian suddenly turned to Duwei who was lying on the ground exclaimed: “y-y-y-you have to run away!”

Duwei was lying on the ground suddenly heard Vivian warning him. Finally he felt the difference on ice fog that the girl was using! Just an ordinary person, how far he can run away?

He did not move. The girl laughed “Oh, my poor little Vivian, why are you so concerned about this nobleman ..... Is he your lover? Rawling clan member, you can get marriage with, he looked pretty handsome too, but useless ..... ”

Then, she suddenly led to Duwei linking their fingers, then Duwei felt he can't control his body, it seemed to be tied by countless rope and quickly lift and dragged to in front of the girl.

“Vivian! Give your little pet to me! Or I will take your little sweetheart to refine the soul”. Her face expressed the murderous air.

“No, no ..... not.” Vivian hurried shouted. The girl suddenly came to her again, Vivian teleported with magic that the girl seemed have no way to control. Her speed was very fast but she still can not catch Vivian. Finally, she said in anger, “If you don't listen to me, I will kill you”.

Vivian startled, eventually she reluctantly decided.

She secretly sighed: Master, I'm sorry your poor little Vivian has no other choice.

Vivian finally raised her head, looked at iceberg created with consistent eyes: “Do you want to release the Ice Dragon? So just do it!”

After setting the mind, her appearance was better.

The girl said: “Do you really think I cannot do it?”

Her body suddenly shoved into the sky channeling up, standing higher than twenty meters from Vivian .....

The girl was dragging the huge iceberg which was multiple times bigger than her body.....She swung her arms and suddenly a small silver cone drum appearing on her hands.

She laughed then gripped it and slightly knock on iceberg ...

Sting...!!!

Then, in the iceberg, Suddenly a big roar appeared!

The roar like thunder and storm! The sound made Duwei's body shake, he felt the whole body seemed to limp down! It is unknown where it came from, but from the inner, the instinctive fear has covered his whole body!!

Strange! Speechlessly strange !!!

Subsequently, numerous small cracks began to spread on the iceberg.

Following the cracks were strong sounds which were like thunder, it seemed like something inside the iceberg wants to break out !!

"Just wait, Rawling clan member, my sister's sweetheart." The girl sneered, she gently took the drum cone knocking on the iceberg, her face was cold: "It may be the first time you see a dragon!"

Dragon...???

No time to surprise, among the loud roar, the icebergs crashed into small pieces. Immediately, a head with a huge horn on forehead broke the iceberg out to appear!

A loud, tough roar resounded through the heaven and earth!!

Vivian was too scared to be pale, she hid Terror Illusion Goblin inside the robe, it's unknown from where she had a small wand. She closed her eyes again, her face was very tensed, then word by word in the ancient language came from her mouth ...

Suddenly, A huge flame of fire erupted behind Vivian, like an overwhelming firewall, it also came with the roar.

In this situation, the girl seemed to be dealt with a serious blow! She went pale "Good! Good! I didn't think that he has taught you Dragon Chi Yan already!! My dear sister, let see today Dragon Chi Yan will melt the Ice Dragon or Dragon Ice will defeat it!".

Vivian did not answer, she suddenly lifted her little wand gently pointing out....

Suddenly, the space around began twisted up .....

Duwei was feeling like standing in front of the trains, with continuous changing scenery.....

When he could see everything clearly, he was no longer on camp!

He was in the mountain now!

“Ha ha ha ha ha ha ..... My dear sister, you really have some kind of good but silly character. You spent so much magic to get us to this place, just because you are worried that our fight would hurt the innocent man? ha ha ..... how much power you will have to control the Dragon Chi Yan when we start the fight? ”

After a resounding laughter, her mouth suddenly came out with a roar...the iceberg broke down !!

The huge head then the whole body covering with ice was completely exposed!

It's a huge body like a small mountain with a pair of wide wings, the whole body was shrouded in the cold mist, the size of the claw was as big as the carriage.

This is a “Dragon”...

# Chapter 26 - The Scary Outside World

One of the great emperors of the Roland Empire once said:

“Imperial code is sacred and inviolable! In the Empire’s territory, everyone must strictly obey the law of the Empire. ”

This Emperor later created one of history’s most brilliant era of Roland Empires, which is famous for its strict law and steady government.

However, this emperor.....it is said that apart from his famous saying, he also added a word in private. This, of course, was not recorded in any official documents, but this sentence was disclosed through the many channels, so it is also widespread.

“..... Everyonemust follow the code of the Empire, but, with two exceptions. The first one was the emperor himself. Imperial power is always beyond the law! ... .. Another exception is ... .. the magician! ”

Powerful magicians tend to possess much more incredible abilities than ordinary people, when it really goes to a certain kind of extreme, it may even be able to conquer nature, or change the destiny of a nation. According to the current documents, when the power is so strong that people cannot even worship, in the eyes of mortals, that is almost a kind of the divine presence!

Those strong can easily flatten high mountains, fill up the sea. They can summon a storm and snow, and they can turn the plain into the arid desert by the firing Sun! They can destroy an army within seconds, or create a disaster that could destroy a small country!

For such the strong, secular “code” is apparently unable to restrain them. And forcing those strong, who can dominate the nature to abide by secular laws, is also apparently realistic.

Let alone the strong in the legend who possess the power like gods. ... .. Only a fatal battle between ordinary magicians is enough to launch a small-scale disaster, which would be enough to destroy a city.

In recorded history, when this continent was not a unified nation, it was an era of war and darkness. Usually, two magician's fight can even directly destroy a city!

After a unified, powerful and complete empire, Roland, had founded on this continent, large-scale conflicts and war disappeared. Battles among magicians had gradually decreased. Even so, in the history of Roland Empire, there were records that some magicians' private duels could easily destroy one or two small towns.

However, even that being case, there were no laws that "public duels are forbidden" or similar ones for magicians. For ordinary people, fighting is not allowed in public places. Yet magicians are not included in this scope.

Even the magic union only requires magicians minimize personal conflicts at crowded places. It is simply a request, not a strict rule or so.

What's more, the agreement reached by the magic union and the empire is that if you want to convict or punish the crime of any over mid-level magician, no matter how heinous, unless he or she committed a treason felony, the trials must be made together by three disjointed parts, the imperial official, magic union, as well as the bright God temple. Otherwise, the official government of empire has no right to arrest any over mid-level magicians.

In hundreds of years of history of the empire, never was an over mid-level magician recorded crimes by the empire because of breaking the laws. These undoubtedly show that the magician are superior to ordinary people.

It is a group with an outstanding ability, as well as goes beyond the law, and acts almost entirely based on their own preferences, an almost unconstrained group ... .. In the eyes of ordinary people, the magician is such a presence, so whenever magicians are mentioned, people always take an attitude of awe and reverence, inside these, fear may take a larger proportion.

Almost all Half Horncity's residents were awakened from sleep by the turmoil.

The powerful vibrations made a lot of people awaken from a dream, even fell from the bed. Overhead lights shaking, the wooden door of home generating creaking noise, millions of people wake up in fear, only to discover that they were even unable to stand still in a violent shake.

People rushed out of the house in panic, only to discover that, what was supposed to be a dark night turned out to be a bright light shining on the horizon. The large light was flickering, and people could even hear something in the distance, not knowing what kind of beast. The roar made people genuinely feel fear!

Successive quakes were coming from the outside. All were almost as if some kind of unknown terrible things. The earthquake, with flares in the sky, with a chilling roar, made Half Horncity residents begin to panic.

The most terrifying thing was that after a wave ... .. Part of the north wall had collapsed for a while due to the violent quake! The noise of destruction made people blindly run up in the city!

In the distance, as if in the direction of Half Hornmountains outside the city, all could see with the naked eyes that two gigantic light, one is silver, and the other is fire red! The two were colliding fiercely. Collision attacks have become more and more frequent, and the brightness given off by every collision could almost light up the night! Even the moon had lost glory!

Accompanied by intense light, there is a cry from a dull ROAR! That ROAR was extremely scary, continual like a heavy hammer hit hard on the heart.

Equally rattled were the local garrison troops of light infantry left behind in the city. These soldiers patrolled the walls, faced with confusion of Half Horncity residents, but were unable to maintain order ... .. Their hands were too weak and fear inside as well.

The most frightening thing is that ... .. the news finally came! Someone went to the garrison barracks outside the city for aid, but horribly found that dozens of cavalry left behind in the camp were injured and collapsed to the ground, even Span, a prestigious Knight in the area, was also severely injured. Camp Chaos, and the burning fire looked as if it had just been attacked!

Panicked people crowded outside the city. Some climbed higher in fear... ..

At that moment, a voice like a clap of thunder came from the Half Hornmountain's direction ... .. Then a series of roar followed as if the sound of summer thunder storm ... ..

“Mountains falling down! Half HornMountain was falling down!! ”

Don't know who first screamed from the high! Immediately, the alarming news quickly spread in the crowd.

Half HornMountain was indeed falling down!!

Far away, the hill that could be seen with the naked eye when standing on the walls, the famous Half HornMountain peaks, just collapsed within sight! The entire mountain seemed to be directly broken apart as if that's not a mountain but a pile of sand ... .. Just came crashing down!

Far away is the fierce glare, even dozens of people outside can clearly see! While people with better eyesight could discover that it seems, two strange gigantic shadows were dancing in the strong light... ..

For Half Horncity residents, it would be doomed to be a night to remember all his life. Because of that unknown fear, they were dying for the dawn!

When finally a glimmer of sunlight shined, the ROAR that terrified everyone, and the ferocious light that flashed half the night finally disappeared!

Waiting for more than an hour, and assuring the unknown disaster is really over, people were gradually settled down from the fear in their hearts.

People including Sir Span, rescued at midnight last night by soldiers going to garrison barracks for help, finally woke up, as well as Robert and others.

In front of the powerful magic, they were almost defenseless and wounded, and then under the magic of snow beauty, the entire ground collapsed, People who were attacked by snow beauty at that time, several of them injured by collapsing houses.

The first one to woke up in the rescue, turned out to be a female knight named Rolyenn.

Rolyennwas injured in the fighting during the day, losing too much blood. She was resting in the evening, and Clarke gave her some sleep-promoting drugs. Yet the result was Rolyennwho was not wounded in the evening attack woke up first. She is weak because of excessive bleeding, loss of blood, after all, cannot compensate within a short period of time.

Robert then woke up, followed by Span, and then the guards of Rawling. After finding their little master and that dreadful woman attackers were gone, everyone panicked.

Knowing about situations from around, Robert, regardless of his body was charred, struggled immediately, took a few slightly wounded men and immediately went to Half HornMountain. Sir Span learned that young master of Rawling's House was gone, he felt as if he suddenly fell from the high cliffs! He had been seriously injured and unable to move, but ordered the garrison troops who still could move immediately followed Robert towards Half HornMountain! Because, according to residents, it is likely that the dreadful woman attacker last night ran to Half HornMountain.

Meanwhile, Sir Span accelerated to leave Half Horntown, going to the location of the garrison troops in spring drills for help. And he immediately reported all that happened in the Half Horncity to the provincial Governor of Lille.

Let aside how Span worried his future career. SirRobert bore the back pain and took carriages to the Half HornMountain, which had already lay in ruins, together with Rolynn, the female knight.

The scene in front, was enough to make even the soberest people astonished!!!

All these people came to Half HornMountain! Just a day before, here, they also altogether searched monster, stepping even over the entire Half HornMountain.

Yesterday when they came here, it was a typical hilly peak in the south of Empire, winding three to four miles, covered with a lush and dense forest. The whole mountain was in a "u" shape, with the highest mountain in the Middle. Standing on the top of a mountain could overlook the general outline of the distant Half Horncity.

But now ... ..

Robert and Rawling Guards, taken down the carriage by others, opened big mouth with big round eyes. The cannot believe it was the truth in front of their eyes!!

My God! If this is a nightmare, and then let it end!!!



Even though an accompanied soldier of local garrison swore that this was definitely Half HornMountain ... .. Or, the exact location of the mountain in the past.

But even this soldier himself was dazed, his eyes filled with horror!

In front of them... ..

Half HornMountain ... ..

No, it should be said that there was no “hills”!

In front of them was a big, round hole with fully three miles wide in diameter from their eyes... ..!!

Half HornMountain? Where is it?

The question was on everyone’s mind!

Carriage just stopped on the edge of the round crater. Robert felt cold all over, looking at the astonishing scene in front ... ..

The circle crater, as if left by some sort of violent explosion! It is likely that according to Knight’s speculation, it seemed that the whole mountain was bombed in the explosion! At the edge of the crater, littered with all kinds of weird, stones of varying sizes, with thick sand on the floor. The original soil had gone.

The gigantic circle crater, was shallow at the edge, while deep in the kernel!

Even more frightening is what the round hole looks like.

Such a huge round hole. It looked as if God used an invisible pen, dividing it into two distinct looks!

Bounded at the center of the circle hole, the left half is a thick layer of ice! That hard ice looks as if a perpetual accumulation of frost on the ground! That thick and hard ice, as well as frost covering the ground, make everything in the half into a silvery world! Even a stone surface is covered with ice!

While the right half is exactly the opposite!

If the left side is frozen, then the right half is like a desert!

It seems that every drops of water on the ground has be dried! Dry hard

ground littered with broken bits of gravel, and some parts without sand-covered floor, are apparently cracked surface because of drought! Here, even a drop of water didn't exist ... .. Even a stone, it is as if it had been burned to the gaping!

Such a huge circle role, the left and the right, with two completely opposite look, that gave people speechless shock besides panic.

After all a stalwart knight, Robert was the first who recover from the shock in the crowd.

"I guess ... .. Last night here was a fierce battle, whose level can be hardly imagined ... .. The magician named Vivian were gone, surely there must be a fighting here last night with the woman attacker. " Knights analyzed thoughtfully," these are things we don't have to concern ... .. Our question is, where our master is now! He was not in the camp, and he had disappeared when we were saved, he was gone! Then he is certainly being captured. ... .. Maybe even ... .. "

As for the rest of the words, Robert reserved. After all, even a mountain can be made into a hole! Magician's force was so powerful ... .. Then, to make a person disappear, isn't it very simple?

Robert's face was terrible to see to the extreme, but he is still conscious of his duty, after all he is the highest leader at present, and can't let his men down. His teeth clench together, "things might not be that bad, maybe the master himself escaped, perhaps the owner was captured to the magician. In any case, now the most crucial thing is to get our master back! "

Knight immediately issued two orders, first, all that could move searched the surroundings at once. Second, immediately ask someone to send letters to Rawling Plains Castle in Scott province!

It has been beyond the scope that people like Robert can control.

The little master, now where were you?

Each of us were wondering this problem.

So, What was Duwei now doing?

.....

Duwei was doing something he never even dreamt of before.

He was ... .. riding a dragon!

Riding on the back of a dragon, and flying in the sky! Wind around him preventing him from opening his eyes, he can barely use clothes wrapped in the head. His hands firmly held the raised scales on a dragon's back, he looking beneath this behemoth moving quickly through the clouds. Under his foot was a vast sea of clouds ... .. This feeling let Duwei could not help but scream out of excitement!

"Please, please, please, please don't hold its scales, okay?" Next to him came the weak voice of Vivian. Female magician was weakly lying on the back of Dragon, her body tightly pressing with the back of Dragon. The delicate small face looked pale as paper, becoming frail. Seeing Duwei tightly grab hold of the scales of her dragon, female magician can't help heartbreaking, "it...it...it will feel unhappy. Dragon is a...a...a species with pride. My...my "Fire Sun" is only, only a child. It..it..it doesn't like others ca...catching its sc..scales....."

"Except its scales, where else can I get?" Duwei frowned. As soon as he spoke, the wind was poured into his mouth, choking him cough, and quickly lowering his head. He turned around and caught a glimpse of the magician, "such a big wind, without a place to hold on, what if I fall down!"

Duwei said angrily: "Not scratching its scales is okay, but we have to break out of the hunt of your terrible sister at first. When we find a safe place to land, I will make a bridle to it."

Bridle?

My God! Please forgive the poor little Vivian ... .. Also forgive this horrible guy.

A bridle on the dragon ... .. God, does he think that the dragons can be arbitrarily ridden?

At this time, underneath of his whole body suddenly uttered a lament for Red Dragon ... ..

Duwei was shocked and shouted, "no, your dragon seems to die!"

Vivian was uncomfortable in the mind: "the Fire Sun is on..only a yo...young

Dragon, i..it..it is just hurt, and had to carry two people..it..it..it ... ..”

There was a gruesome wound on the left wing of this Bloody red dragon. This wound made the Dragon’s wing flapping flexible when in flight, and during flight, its body will slant down to one side.

“Come on! “Duwei shouted” otherwise both of us are going to die. ”

“My..my..my belongings have been blackmailed by you! I..I..I have no idea ... ..  
“Vivian was scared to say anything. Tears in her eyes rotated and she suddenly cried in a loud voice:

“Woo ! ! ! The outside world is so horrible! Teacher! Teacher! Come and rescue me! I want Mommy, I want Daddy! Come and save the poor little Vivian!!  
”

Eh? She didn’t stutter in her cry?!

Douri was so angry at this little silly girl that he almost fell off the Dragon’s back! At this time, she cried like a little baby calling MOM and dad!

His face turned gloomy and he scolded a few times, but at this time, the Dragon under them finally can’t stand anymore.

It fought the whole night, expiring almost all of its magic, and finally suffered a severe injury. It had escaped with its master for so long, carrying two people, with wings terribly injured. It is now stretched to its limit.

Giving a loud shriek, Duwei felt his body sank! The dragon had fallen down from the air ... ..

“God damn it! Do something! Your Dragon is dying! ”

“Wow ... .. Dad! MOM!! Mom ... .. ”

“Stop crying! Or we both fell down and died!! ”

“Wow ... .. MOM ... .. Come and save the poor little Vivian ... .. ”

# Chapter 27 - Don't Work Anymore

When Duwei woke up, he felt his neck almost broken. Just subconsciously moving his head, his neck felt severe pain.

Duwei began to regain consciousness and felt his body posted on the cold dirt floor .....

After his awareness come back little by little, Duwei made sure that he was alive.

He did not fiddle, first he laid quietly and confirmed whether his hands and feet, as well as the various parts of the body, got injured, then he struggled to sit up a little bit.

He still felt a little dizzy, just remembering the last memory before he fainted: dragon couldn't withstand the injury, finally fell down from the sky, and that silly girl, totally didn't perform like an eight class magician, when facing dangerous, she even cried for her mom.

At the last minute, that dragon used all efforts to flap its wings, trying to maintain balance, but it was still unable to support, so it just carried the two people on its' back and dived toward ground at the fastest speed.

Later, the rest of the pieces in Duwei's mind is: falling down, loud voices, woods.....

Forcibly rubbing his eyes, Duwei looked around and sighed.

The giant Dragon laid on the other end was too far away from him, there was a huge pit on the ground, which was originally a forest here. When the dragon fell down, it damaged many trees, and now the dragon laid on those trees. Dragons indeed have very thick scales. Its' body didn't suffer any injuries, but the scar in its wing seems more serious, probably because it was forced to fly such a long time, that made it's scar more severe.

Now, this giant dragon is sleeping, and it's red skin and scales emit faint light.

Looking at the dragon in such a close distance, even if it is sleeping, Duwei could still feel that this giant monster give him a strong pressure ..... Perhaps, this is so-called human nature to fear the dangerous creatures.

Dragon breathed like a storm, from its mouth and noses there was even a black smoke smog coming. That reminded him the fierce battle last night, Duwei could not help felt a little excited.

Witnessing that kind of high-intensity war is a feast for his eyes! That happened in front of his eyes! That's so much more authentic than those special effects in the movies.

Although, unfortunately, the ice beauty was right.

Vivian, this little warm-heated silly girl, afraid the war would hurt innocent people, so she cast a lots of magic spells to use Transfer Magic, which shifted the war to the distant semi-angle hill. Even though what she did had saved a lots of people's life, but after using so much magic power, as expected, she was beat by her sister.

At the beginning, the two powerful magicians all used magic spells to command big giant dragons to fight. The fire dragon and the ice dragon are evenly matched in strength, but later, since Vivian's magic power decrease, the fire dragon encountered a complete defeat

This silly girl is too kind that even when she escaped, she didn't forget to take me together. She can count as a conscientious girl.

And last night, she also saved many of my soldiers. Considering that I had been so mean to her, I also did something wrong.

Sighed, Duwei looked at Vivian, who laid on the nearby ground..... This silly girl, closed her eyes, under long eyelashes, her eyelids gently quivering. Fortunately, she didn't get hurt and breathed smoothly.

Duwei went over and patted her face, little magician pout in her dream, and muttered in vague tone: Mom..... and Dad....., I was little poor Vivian."

This silly girl, she doesn't stammer when she falls sleep.

Duwei smiled ..... She is still a child.

After surviving the disaster, Duwei felt gratitude towards the little silly girl, and patted her cheek, and then whispered:"...hey,...wake up, wake up quickly."

Vivian finally drowsily opened her eyes, and when she first closely saw Duwei's

face, she suddenly screamed out, and her body immediately bounced up, then a pair of little hand tightly caught her collar, leaned back quickly and shrunk back, her big eyes stared at Duwei, as if afraid Duwei would bully her.

Duwei saw the silly girl, and he could not help but laugh, moving back a little bit, and weirdly smiling:. “Magician Lord, you finally woke up and now our situation is not good.”

Vivian shook his head, finally calming down, and suddenly cried out: “m..m..my dragon.”

She saw the nearby sleeping dragon, jumped up, and ran towards it, threw herself on the dragon’s paws. Big drops of tear fell down, and she cried:” my burning sun....burning sun...teacher’s gift, burning sun.”

Then, she saw the wound in dragon’s body, Vivian immediately turned up her pocket, and just turned up for a while, only pull an empty bag..... remembering that long back Duwei took everything away.

Having no magic material at all, Vivian felt hopeless, and she immediately open her arms and cast a series of spells. Then faint milky white light scattered out from her hand, but the light is so faint that even Duwei, who knows nothing about magic found that there was something wrong.

Vivian also froze for a moment, she took a deep breath, stern lot, then this time, she spelled words one by one and sang those spell in deep slow voice. The white light in her hands became a little brilliant, and the dragon’s wounds begun to recover. This spell seems like a magic healing technique.....but, finally this white light is too weak, and small, that only enveloped small part of Vivian’s hands.

Compared to the bulky dragon, such weak healing technique is far from enough.

Moreover, this healing technique was just enough to heal a small part of scar which was scarified when the dragon fell down. Vivian dazzled, and sat down with a pale face, she hardly shook her head and looked at the empty hand, she couldn’t believe what she saw.

“my ..... my magic magic, don’t work.”

Duwei was shocked: "What did you say?!"

"Magic, magic, not working anymore." Vivian sadly said.

Not working? Duwei was surprised, and he still counted on her to heal the dragon, and then we could leave from here."

Surrounding is the silent forest, she do not know where the hell it is. When they flew away, they didn't know what direction they fled, and confusedly fly for a half night.

"did u lose magic power because of spiritual power shortage?" Duwei cautiously said: "you should rest first, and regain some magic power."

"No, no, I could feel the magic power, but I just cannot use it."

This time, Duwei also stunned.

Thought for a moment, Duwei frown: "Since your healing magic isn't working, what about the other magic spells?."

Subsequently, Vivian immediately tried a few times, but the results were disappointing!

For some unknown reasons, Vivian's magic power suddenly fell back countless times

She cast a variety of spells, such as fire spells, she tried her best efforts that she could only come up with a maximum of two small fireball. As for other advanced magic spells, such as moving fires, *etc.* completely became invalid! Even those low-level magic, also took lots of energy, And the magic power decreased by half.

Vivian was really petrified! Magic is her only gift since she was a kid, what she can count on is her extraordinary magic power.

But now, the powerful magical abilities, unexpectedly disappeared 99%! How this change didn't terrify a girl? She stared for a long time, and couldn't say a word.

Duwei was also a little surprised, but he couldn't figure out, ultimately he attributed this change to the war, perhaps the ice beauty cast a spell on this little silly girl or perhaps she was hurt.



Vivian lost her magic power, suddenly, her little courage became much smaller. She even didn't dare to say a whole sentence. When she looked at Duwei, her face was full of fear, and she almost cried. Duwei felt hopeless, and he said few words to comfort her: "you must be hurt.... Or your sister cast some spell on you.....Don't worry, your magic power is so strong, you'll recover sooner or later. And you have a powerful teacher, your teacher must have ways to help you recover your magic power.

Referring to the teacher, little Vivian finally calmed down a bit, it seems that in her deep heart, she worshiped her teacher and has great confidence in her teacher. Immediately she stood up: "I...I want to go back and visit my teacher!"

"Good!" Duwei said: "I also want to go back, but we have to be careful with your sister, she has chased us all the way. Only when sunrise, we can get rid of her. Now you've lost your magic power, and if we encounter her again, we cannot resist her." then Duwei pointed at the dragon: "can your dragon fly?"

Vivian shook his head, then took efforts to explain: "after dragon get injury, even without magic power, it can still recover by its own magic nature. But this speed is relatively slow, and before it recovers completely, a dragon cannot fly.

Since the dragon suffered such a heavy injury, it will take more than half year for the dragon to recover by its' own magic nature.

The idea of riding a dragon to leave became invalid, Duwei only sighed, and he decided to walk around and figured out where they were.

It is best to come out this wood, and if they are lucky enough, they may encounter one or two locals, and ask clearly where they are, and then find the nearest town.

But this dragon cannot even make a move, it can only lie down in the same place, and slowly recover. Vivian by no means will leave her pet "burning sun", Duwei felt helpless, plus he now felt he owed the silly girl. Thus he treated her with much patience. He only had to work around by himself all alone.

Snapping a stick, Duwei chose a direction and moved forwards. But he didn't dare to walk far, so he just went to scout ahead.

However, it is clear that today, Duwei is lucky, and also very unlucky!

His plan was to get out this wood and then found one or two local people, the best case is to find a village.

Walking out of this wood went smoothly

Less than half an hour as he walked out of the wood, and before his eyes is an open sea...

When he got out of the last row of trees and saw the beach in front of him, Duwei stunned for a moment.

Did we fly to the seaside?

He didn't think much, and immediately he turned around and walked back for a while, the longer he walked, the more strange he felt.

Anxiety flooded out from his heart, Duwei quickly ran back to the place where Vivian and the dragon was resting, regardless of his deep breathe, he shouted the female magician loudly: quickly, can u use the flying magic power? Fly up quickly, and see the surrounding terrains, quickly!"

Vivian froze for a moment but looked at Duwei's anxious expression, she followed his command.

Female magician's magic is not working anymore, the flying spell maximally persists up to about ten seconds

But ..... ten seconds is enough!

Vivian flew up, flew high enough ..... But then, she almost fell down from the sky in panic

Fortunately, Duwei caught the silly girl, and they fell to the ground together, sorceress even fell on Duwei's arms.

But this time, Vivian did not hurry to push away Duwei, because this time she had no expression in her face, she found a more terrible thing!

" w..w..w..w...we..we are..... on an island, an island.....!!"

# Chapter 28 - Political Influence

Towards evening, soldiers and people of Half Horn city were trying to repair the wall. At the same time, outside of the town, there was a huge cloud of dust blowing from the streets.

In the huge cloud of dust, a group of cavalymen was speeding towards Half horn city.

Every cavalryman wore an armor of kingdom's regional guards armies. After they arrived at the town, they directly marched into it.

"I want your Leader!" said the Captain of the group of knights, who is an imperial Class-Five Knight.

Immediately, Span was carried out, with half body tied with the bandage.

The Knight's Captain rode on the horseback and looked at Span, he bowed slightly:. "Dear Sir Knight, I am the Captain of the second cavalry, which is directly supervised by the Governor of Lille Province. I follow the governor's command, from now on, at the center of Half Horn town, and within a radius of three hundred kilometers area will be temporarily designed as military administrative zone! I am here to take over the command!"

During their speech, The knight captain called Goron threw a scroll "this is signed by the governor."

Span was surprised "Mr.governor, Mr.governor is coming here?"

"No, Mr.governor is in the governor's palace," said Goron with a serious face. He took a look at the bruised Span and signed: "Mr. Knight, I have to remind you that you are in big trouble now. The eldest son of Earl Raymond was attacked in your jurisdiction. The governor was very surprised when he heard this news. And I suggested that you'd better prepared for your serious negligence. This emergent letter of invitation was declared by the governor, and it was directly sent to each branch of the army by transfer magic. According to this letter, the Lille local thirty thousand garrison soldiers should stop the spring drills, center at the half-horn, and search the little master in all directions. But this time, you have reported incidents where the magician openly attacked the barracks, I

think.....you should also make some preparations. It's of high possibilities that the governor ask you come to the governor's palace personally and want you to testify in the court. You know, your report, is likely to cause tension between the imperial military and the magic union.

Span's face turned ashy, he knew that his career in the army has almost ended. The local garrison which he took charge of was attacked by a magician, and little master of Roland Family disappeared.

Logically speaking Span shouldn't have to take all responsibilities, but when facing the powerful magician, a class four knight cannot do anything to rectify the situation.

But, severe events happened, there must be someone to be blamed for, right?

Span made a salute, trying to erect himself. As half of his body was covered in wounds, erecting his body hurt him so much that cold sweat dripped down from his body. Even though, he still lit up his head and said "Thanks for your reminders, I will follow every command by the Governor. Right now, I deliver all the commanding rights to you, and ....., Sir Knight, what time we set out?

"Now," said Goron, looking at Span, a hint of frustration flashed in his eyes and he loudly shouted "the second personal order of Mr.governor! Knight Span, the vice-captain of half horn city imperial regional guards, due to serious negligence of duties, Mr.governor has stripped you of your position, and every military officer in half horn regional guards will be demoted. Every soldier atone for your crimes by doing good in the war and using your feats to make up your dereliction.! Sir Span, you must Set off now, Mr.Governor hope you can arrive at the governor's palace before the sunset.

Goron looked at bruised Span, a thought flashed in his mind, and he suddenly whispered, "Sir Span,, I know you shouldn't be blamed for the whole thing. When I looked at the wounds on your body, I knew you had tried your best. I'll report everything I saw, I also thought that you were not negligent, it was just that things were far beyond your capacity.

"..... Thank you." Span sighed, shook his head and said: "I do have the dereliction of duty..... Well, sir, Knight Robert from the Roland family is right there at the garrison barracks outside the city. I think you need to go see his

side.”

Span looked at the bruised soldiers taking off their helmets and empire officer badge, Goron could not help but sigh.

Span..... Do you have any idea what a big trouble your report has caused!

Superficially speaking, it seems to be that the Roland's family's little master was captured by a sorceress.....but in facts, even the little master is only of noble status, how can thirty thousand local army garrison stop spring drills to find him?

The root of the matter is the contradictions of military and the magical union!

Even if the magician is a recognized group that can override the law, but this time, a magician had dared to openly attack the imperial local army garrison! In the Imperial military's eyes, it's extremely serious.

This is a blatant military provocation to the imperial military, also a provocation to the Kingdom! Further, this action can be regarded as a treason, an act of rebellion against the kingdom!!

Because of this matter, now the capital of Lille province, and the governor's sides have been arguing all days! It can be predicted that after the report is submitted to the military high command, it will cause a huge reaction.

Imperial commanders always feel dissatisfied about behaviors that the magic union neglect the law, and they think that Kingdom give magician too many privileges. And this incident, will tense up the relationship between the military and the magic union.... It is heard that even the emperor is also dissatisfied with the magic union, it's because that in the last naval expedition in the south, the Magic Union did not send enough magicians to support the troops.

The emperor has thought to cut the magic union special conditions. When the attack news was leaked out to Lille province's capital, it immediately caused great indignation among the officers of the army.

Even before Knight Goron's departure, there were already thousands of imperial local garrison army officers joint signature. The governor ordered Magic Union to punish the attackers seriously

But ..... sentencing a magician, that too a level eight Archmagi?

This is the imperial unprecedented historical event.

Span went towards the governor palace, even though every part of his body was wounded, and he was totally not suitable for such a rush to take a carriage , but since the governor's order came down, he only have to reluctantly support.

Sir Goron immediately took his own soldiers and took over the city's defense, then quickly separate some people to repair the wall which collapsed in the earthquake yesterday. And then he came to the garrison barracks which was located outside the city and saw the Sir Robert, who was back to change his horse.

Robert was also wounded, but he was still trying to insist. He has been riding around whole day, and his body has been exhausted, but his spirit was still tough. Only the horse cannot stand any more, so he came back to change the horse.

Goron talked with Robert for a while. After known that the local garrison had assembled for a massive search, Robert slightly relieved.

"Besides ..... I think the Roland family's private military should be reaching shortly, no later than tomorrow afternoon, this private military should be able to enter the Lille province. The will cause a great result ..... I'm afraid..... "

Robert is indeed one of the Roland family's retainers, he has stayed in the wealthy family for several years, thus he know some situations by what he constantly sees and hears, and he immediately said: "is this incident going to tense the relationship between the Magic Union and the Garrison?"

"Yes," Goron slowly said: "I have brought a thousand cavalry, and there are large forces still gathering, and now, in a radius of three hundred kilometres, command rights belongs to me, but to be honest, I don't have much confidence, but the governor gave serious orders that we must find master Duwei at any cost. because....."

Sir Goron looked around and whispered: "the this thing is, the governor personally gave me a confidential letter, which says: Although the event was big, but presumably those Commanders still not dare to break friendship with magic union, at most, they just want to take the opportunity to suppress the magic

union, and they won't take any big actions. I am afraid that even the emperor will not dare to offend the magic union. But, the emperor is just going through with the flow. Of course, the emperor will send some letters to condemn the magic union. It is highly possible that the emperor will reduce the big trouble into a small one and a small one into nothing. Even though the garrison was attacked, but nobody was dead, thus at least on this point, it's negotiable. But... That little nobility is the key! If...in the worst case, if master Duwei had some accident, then I am afraid this matters would be hard to handle. Sir Robert, do you understand what I mean?"

Robert thought for a while , and nodded.

If Master Duwei..... if any accident happened, even.....

Then, if, for Roland family, their eldest son died, they surely won't let it go! I have heard that even Lord Earl do not like his eldest son, but, if Roland family's young master died, even though Lord Earl don't like his son, for Roland family's name, he will definitely take it to the next level! Otherwise, hundreds of years old Rolandfamily ! The Great Roland family, how could they be so arbitrary abused and bullied? If they can bear that their own son being killed, then in outsiders' eyes, the supremacy of the Roland family, I am afraid, will become shaky!.

Standing on the status of the family, Lord Earl will certainly not let this end!

And if Lord Earl didn't make a compromise, then ....considering the status of Roland family and human resources, the Roland family leader will be able to drive a considerable number of imperial military forces.

At that time, if it caused the confrontation between the imperial military and magical union, things will turn chaotic!

Therefore, Finding little master Duwei is the key to calming down this situation.

"what about the response of Magic Union ?" Robert asked

"Magic union? huh!" Goron said with contemptuous tone, it's obvious, after this matter happened, Goron was also very dissatisfied with magic union:" what else can they say? Magic union's respond is: we will handle this matter privately. See! Privately! Openly attacking imperial army is A blatant rebellion and treason! The magic union just replied with" we'll handle this matter privately!" as we all

know that the magic union protects their magician, thus even though they said they'll handle attackers privately, they usually let it go. And those magicians are very arrogant, they think that without their help, the Emperor can do nothing.

Robert thought for a moment, and suddenly said: "Sir Goron, I think, searching within a radius of around three hundred kilometers is not enough, because the power of the strong female magician who attacked the barracks, is far beyond our Imagination, I think she already ran out of the three hundred scope, so I recommend ....."

"I know." Goron nodded: "Although the scope written on the governor's paper is three hundred kilometers, but governor also told me in the confidential letter that, the scope can be appropriately expanded, even out of the Lille province, He has contacted surrounding areas' local officials and even, three hundred kilometers away is the sea, and the governor has even acquired the Imperial Navy's support, I think, the Roland family is deeply rooted in the Navy, so this time getting support from the Imperial Navy was not at all a problem."

Robert weirdly smiled: "I wonder what is the condition of Master Duwei....I hope he is ok....."

Duwei's Conditions were not as good.

Duwei's shoes have been broken. Aristocratic kind of lamb boots were not suitable to walk in the woods , and his trousers were also teared up by some thorns.

He leaned on a stick, a sharpened stick, so not only can be used as a crutch, but can also be used as a weapon.

The powerful magician lost her magic, and he is nothing but a teenager, they always have to be careful as the dense trees may have some beasts hiding within.

While staying around dragon is the safest, but the two people always need to look around ....at least to find something to eat ! and fresh water to drink! !

After looking at the island, Duwei can basically determine most of the island's terrain....Dense Forest!

His mouth was so thirsty that it almost smoked, but what made Duwei most



worried was that they were unable to find a drop of fresh water! There is no spring or a small freshwater lake in the island.

This island is not large, the overall topography appears to be a slightly flat round, from the east to the west, it only takes about half a day. According to Duwei's estimation, the diameter of the island about five miles.

A small island. In this island, if there is no fresh water, then .....

Duwei shook his head, only to sigh.

The problem now is that the dragon can't be counted on, and we can't even think about riding the dragon to get out of here. And this stupid girl also lost the magic, her flying spells at maximum will only last for ten seconds, and then she'll fall down.... But surrounding us is the broad sea!

They can not leave the island!

If they are unable to find food and water, then in a maximum of two days, these two people would die here.

Vivian, with a pitiful look, followed behind Duwei, this sorceress was terrified, she landed on this strange island and lost magic which she count on, and now she is feeling extreme loss and anxiety.

The little nobility who always bully her, following him, can make vivian felt a trace of a strange sense of security.

When Duwei proposed to look around, Vivian insists on going along with Duwei ..... Although staying with The Dragon is safest option.

Even if there is some horrible beast on the island ..... But in this world there is no beasts that dare to approach the dragon.

Losing her magic, she walked for a long time, Vivian's feet hurt, and she might even suspected that their feet have a froth, but looking at the dark face in the little nobility....., Vivian did not dare to say a word, she just frowned and followed.

Although Duwei was annoyed, but he still saw the stupid girl frown. Walking such a long way, for a delicate girl, that is definitely a bit too much.

"Rest a while." Duwei sighed and waved a stick around after making sure that

there were no snakes or something else in the glass, and then he escorted Vivian sit down.

Vivian was almost shedding tears, she never expected that sitting down would feel so good!

Duwei thought for a while, took off his coat, quickly torn his coat to pieces, and handed Vivian: "here! Your boots sole is hard, no wonder that your feet hurt. Cover your feet with those cloth strips, your feet will feel much more comfortable.

"Tha..... thank you." Thinking for a moment, Vivian said: "w... can we, leave from here?"

"Leaving ....." Duwei weirdly smile, he could not bear to disappointed the little girl: "first, above all, we have to find food and water, as for other things, we'll fix it one by one."

Duwei pondered a moment and said: "After walking for a day, I can now confirm that first, according to the wind direction, I am sure that this is the spring monsoon, concurring to this, I believe that this island is located in the Imperial eastern sea. Then, after checking the vegetation here, we should still be in the southern empire, perhaps even in the sea area of the eastern Lille province. And....."

At this moment, Duwei looked wired: "I am very worried about one problem."

"Wh..... What?"

"Don't you find it odd that, we walked for so long that we almost reached half of the island..... But we haven't found a single animal yet! Not to mention a big beast, I didn't see a snake or even a rat! This island seems to have no animals, and, listen..."

Duwei put up his hand to his ear and made a listening posture, his voice is very strange: "have you noticed that..... in such a big island and dense forest ..... there is not even a bird voice....no land animals and birds....! This is too weird!"

## Chapter 29 - Night Of Romance

When Sun was about to set, Duwei's search finally bore fruit.

He found a small puddle in the depths of the West Forests of the island. This is probably the cavity that was left after the rainy season, the island has no beast, and the puddles are located in a relatively dark side, Duwei cautiously looked around the water and did not find any trace of a beast.

After tasting a bit of water, Duwei confirmed that water in the puddle is freshwater, Duwei eased. A thirsty young teen and a thirty young lady threw themselves to the puddle, regardless of manners. Cool water with a little weird taste poured into the fiery throat, Duwei could not help but uttered a pleasant sigh. That hint of cool feeling slid down the throat, the whole body felt so comfortable that it shivered.

After drinking enough water, Duwei immediately took off his sheepskin boots and cleaned it up in the puddle.

"You, what are you are doing?" Vivian looked at Duwei

"Washing shoes," Duwei said, and kept showing his shoes. "Then use it to hold water."

"ho..hold water? Using Sho...shoes?" Vivian was revealing a strange expression.

"Of course," Duwei said, "In addition to shoes, can you find any other water storage containers? Do you have a bottle or jar? No, you don't, then you can only use my shoes to hold water. What's more, my shoes are made up of sheepskin, so it has an excellent waterproof quality, stupid girl." said Duwei and he took a look at Vivian: "Do not frown, this is our only way. Since we don't know how long we have to stay in this terrible place. We can not stay in here and just watch this puddle, we must go to the sea coast! If you think my shoes stinks, you can take off your shoes to hold water."

Vivian was still stunned, Duwei urged:. "hurry up, unless you want to drink the water from my shoes."

Maybe the last sentence stimulated the little poor Vivian, she quickly took off her shoes.

Vivian's shoes were made of leather, and her shoes seem much better in quality than Duwei's. After she had taken off her shoes, the female magician seemed helpless. She wore white socks, but her socks were stained with blood. It seems after walking for a long time, the girl's feet has been blistered, and all those Blisters revealed.

Soon, Vivian lay on the edge of the puddle like Duwei did, she quickly cleaned up her shoes. She fiercely washed several times, at last Duwei lost his patience: "Twice is enough, why do you wash so many times."

"Sh..... shoes, dirty....."

Duwei smiled, looking at the innocent little girl: "Hey, you see, this little puddle, has limited water, you washed your shoes again and again, then although your shoe is clear, but the water became dirty. What's more, in the end, you have to drink that water.

"....." Vivian stared, then she flat mouth, with unlimited grievances, she filled two boots with water and stood up: "But, but, do we really need to drink this water?"

"Wait until tomorrow, when your throat becomes dry, even if the water is ten times more dirty, you would not hesitate to drink it." Duwei lightly said : "Well, now we need to go back."

When they got back, Duwei walked in front while holding a long stick, after a while, he found Vivian falls farther behind, and Duwei stopped, frown and looked at her: "You'd better hurry up, the time is getting late. After the sun goes down completely, it will become completely dark, and even walking will be difficult. Walking in the forest at night makes it more tricky to identify the direction."

Vivian quickly nodded, picked up her speed and closely followed Duwei, one-foot deep one-foot shallow. After walking a few step, she could not help but shed tears of pain: "my..... my feet, hurt so much."

Duwei frown and walked beside her, looking down at the girl, her feet have been punctured by several thorns, a fine round ankle, as well as a few small toes are covered with mud and a bit of blood.

Sighed, Duwei was a little frustrated. Letting such a fragile girl walk barefoot in the jungle, and that is indeed difficult for her.

Duwei said with a cold face, and hang his two shoes on the neck, then turned and slightly bent.

“Up!”

“..... Ah?”

“I said up!” Duwei’s back turned towards Vivian, and his voice is still very cold:. “. Hurry up, do not waste time, I will carry you back.”

“b..bu..but but.....”

“Nothing but, listen little girl, we have to seize the time, before it gets dark, we must rush back to the dragon, we are not familiar with the island, and God knows what this island has to offer. Right now you and I have no ability to protect ourselves. We have to seize the time! Fast! Now, do not bullshit me, and come on! ”

Duwei’s stern voice made the poor little Vivian not dare to refute anything, she immediately hanged her shoes on her neck, just like Duwei did, and then obediently lay on Duwei’s back.

Carrying the female magician, after walking for a few steps, Duwei started feeling a little difficult, after all, Although his mind is that of an adult, but his body was still that of a small teenager ..... and also of someone who grew with frail deficiencies.

“thank ..... thank you.”

Walking for a while, suddenly Vivian whispered and stammered, her voice is low that Duwei almost did not hear her words clearly. But he just grunted, and did not speak a word.

Thus, on this uninhabited island, at nightfall, the poor little Vivian volts in a strange boy’s back, she could see the black shy leaked from the dense tree leaves. She bowed her head, and could see the teen could hardly move forwards, and also hear his heavy breathing.

Vivian suddenly felt that this little nobility who always bully hers, does not seem so terrible .....

Back to the place where they fell, the big dragon is still sleeping. According to Vivian's introduction on the road, sleep can increase the dragon's body recovery speed from injuries, during this time, the dragon does not even have to eat and drink.

That relieved Duwei a lot ..... fortunately, otherwise, that fresh water is not enough for us to drink, how can it feed the thirst of a dragon?

Limping back to the camps, Duwei left the female magician, and he fell on the ground, gasping breathing together.

"Dying ..... dying ....." Duwei took a deep breathe, breath like a dying man, his body is numb, and he complained: "If it was the past me, let alone carry such a little girl, even if I carry one and hold another,, I can run one thousand meters without taking a breathe, and now my body is so much worse ....." "

Vivian fell to the ground, and this time she didn't say she is in pain, but she stood up immediately, looked Duwei pant hard, she suddenly jumped up, take a slices at the tree, then sat quietly beside Duwei, lifting her hand to cool Duwei.

Duwei gasped for a moment, looked up at Vivian: "What are you doing?"

"I ..... I saw that you looked very tired, so..i was just trying to help you." Vivian opened her eyes and said seriously.

Duwei could not help but laugh, this girl, this silly little girl, but also in some degree, she is really cute: "Thank you ..... But, do you know that it is early spring, the weather is still pretty cold ?"

Duwei gently took the large patch of leaves from the female magician's hands, with a bit of a smile looking at Vivian's reddened face, and then said: "Well, we are now going to rise a fire, Otherwise, we can not stand the cold at night. We have nothing now, if we got sick because of cold, then we'll have big troubles. "

In fact, the cold fall night is not difficult to solve, as long as they slept next to the dragon.

After all, the other end is a flame dragon ..... But, sleeping near such a monster, if the sleeping dragon casually turns over, then they may be crushed to death.

Moreover, Vivian probably will become the first magician in history who was crushed to death by her own magic pet.

Duwei picked up enough leaves and branches so that Vivian can cast a Fire Magic.....a little fireball, now Vivian only has such little magic.

At night, Vivian while holding a torch, and Duwei holding enough branches, came to the edge of the beach, Duwei lit a fire, and he tried to pile the branches highly, so that the fire can burn more fiercely.

In the Darkness, catching the sight of a fire, even from a faraway place, is possible!

Duwei sighed, this is the only hope. I only hope that there is a ship passing by, the sailors can see the campfire, and send someone here, then they may be able to be save us.

After setting up everything, Duwei was exhausted, he stretched his body, and laid on the beach, took a long sigh.

At this time ..... goo!

Duwei froze for a moment, and then they heard again .....  
Goo!

He sat up, looked at Vivian with a half smile.

“I’m sorry, m...my...my belly.” Fire makes Vivian’s face look reddish, Vivian embarrassed clutching her stomach: “I...I...I’m hungry.”

“me too,” Duwei sighed: “Unfortunately, we are currently locate in a deserted island where no small animal lives, otherwise, grabbing two small animals and having a good open-air barbecue is also good.

“Then ..... What about wild berries ?” Maybe because she was hungry that the little magician became a bit smarter.

“look around, there are no fruit trees, not even mention berry fruit plants. There is only a clump of leaves and weeds?..” Duwei sighed: “Otherwise, I would like you to remind me?”

” Well, then how about fish ” Vivianlooked at Duwei with pitiful face: “there is sea, and sea have fish?”

Duwei shrugged his shoulders, and he looked at Vivian: “can you swim?”  
Vivian shook her head.

“neither can I.” Duwei smiled: “we are the same, landlubbers, as to go to water and catch fish, I do not have that ability and, during the day, I’ve been looking at the edge of the shore... I only found some empty shells and conch, can your stomach digest the hard shell? ”

“But I am so.....so hungry.” Vivian poorly curled her small mouth, blinked her eyes and looked at Duwei.

“I can not help, lets for the night, tomorrow morning, I’ll figure out a way to catch fish in shallow water area, but not now, the night is dark, and we cannot swim, if we drown now then everything is over.

Vivian sighed, she could only obediently sit down ..... inadvertently, she sat beside Duwei.

“we should have a talk, chat could make you forget hunger.” Duwei smiled: “We do not know much about each other yet, maybe, now we can be considered as friends indeed..”

“what do you want to talk about?”

“For example .....” Duwei thought, looked at the stars in the sky and holding his knee:”For example, you are so young, you are younger than me, I want to know how did you become a great magician!

“I...I don’t know” Vivian also held her knees like Duwei did and she gently sighed: “I grew up with my teacher, I never left home, and this is my second time leaving home.

Duwei looked at this little girl, suddenly he smiled: “In fact, your voice sounds good, it’s soft and sweet, if you do not stutter, then it would be better.”

” I’m really sorry, I did not mean that.” Vivian blushed: “when I was little, I didn’t know how to speak properly.

“In fact, the more you stutter, the more you should talk, if you practice again and again, then you’ll know how to do it.” Duwei laughed: “Well, tell me something about yourself, how did you become eight class magician! You must be the first person who made such a big achievement at such a young age! ”

“What?” Vivian bewilderingly looked at Duwei.



Duwei sighed and smiled:. “Hey, I praised you, ah, you give me at least some feedback?”

“Ah ..... I’m sorry, I, I .....” Vivian loses in panic again.

“Silly girl,” Duwei shook his head: “it seems that besides magic, you cannot do anything else?”

Subsequently, Duwei patiently talked with Vivian for a while, and Vivian struggled to tell Duwei her story.

She, Vivian Yang, ever since she can remember, she studied magic with her teacher

But, as to her teacher’s identity, despite how Duwei asked her, she refused to disclose anything. even when Duwei tried to cut and dry answers, she still couldn’t say a word.

Tentatively thought her teacher was an expert in the world

Since Vivian was young, she, and her teacher lived in a secret palace. According to her words, this palace’s location was in a remote, thickly forested mountains. Over the past decade, Vivian only went out twice. Beside the two journey, she spends most her time on studying magic.

All her daily work is learning all kinds of magic knowledge, reciting various weird arcane magic, as well as helping the teacher do..... Laundry.

“Laundry?” Duwei smiled: “you know how to do the laundry?”

He pulled Vivian’s a small hand and looked at her hand: “what a soft little hand, I cannot imagine that you can do laundry with this hands .”

“I....I can,” Vivian flushed, maybe because Duwei didn’t believe her words or because Duwei was holding her hands: “I...I can use my magic to wash the clothes, as long as I can cast a spell, those clothes can wash themselves.

“Oh .....then your spell is like washing machine .....” Duwei said

Vivian went out twice, the first time, she was brought by her teacher to the imperial magic union headquarters, where she participated in a secret and undisclosed magic level assessment.

Prior to that assessment, her teacher had said, “I’ll surprise all those stupid

magician in the magic union, let them know what a great magic genius I have cultivated!”

The result is that Vivian indeed left those union magic officials a deep impression.

Because, from the standpoint of a magician, Vivian is not just a genius! Infact she is the genius of geniuses!

A fourteen-year-old eight class magician! Even go through the history of magicians, you cannot find a second one.

“Well, that was a year ago.” Vivian is a little embarrassed and said: “Those magician planned to let me stay in capital, but my teacher said that she need someone to wash her clothes, so my teacher took me back home.”

“Well, your teacher just don’t not want you being taken away by the magic union.” Of course Duwei is not as innocent as Vivian: an eight class magician, at any place, can become a big man! Even in the magic unions, there are only a few eight class magicians. And well..... you are so young. ”

“yep,” Vivian blinked her eyes, however, she was not able to understand Duwei’s words. Quickly, she is happy together: “I passed that assessment, and my teacher is very happy, so she gave me burning sun as my gift.”

“burning sun, you mean the Dragon?”

“yep” when Vivian talk about her magic pet, immediately, she is in high spirits: “That is it!”

Duwei sigh ..... ? Who the hell is her teacher? Unexpectedly, She gave Vivian a dragon as a gift.

Not a cat or a dog...But a Dragon!

And Vivian stayed at where her teacher lived in seclusion for a whole year. And everyday, she was still learn magic and do the laundry.

After that, i.e., the second visit to the outside world is to recapture the Terror Illusion Goblin ..... it was her teacher’s pet.

“wait! ” Duwei suddenly jumped up, he was a little excited, looking at Vivian: “you still have that illusion Goblin, right??”

Vivian nodded her head, she looked in her robe, the little demon was shut in a small cage, hanging on Vivian's waist.

"oh belly belly, and now I know have to save u," hungry green light flashed in Duwei's eyes, and he swallowed saliva:! "Hey, silly girl, we don't have to bare hungry now, Look at this little animal, looks very plump ah! Although there are no condiments, but after we skinned and roasted it on a grill, the taste should still be pretty good. "

"....." Vivian blinks her eyes, quite a while she start to understand Duwei's words, and then suddenly she screamed: "Oh !! No no, no !! you , you, you can not eat the Terror Illusion Goblin! It is my teacher's pet if you eat it, I, I, I ..... "

"I cannot take everything into consideration....." Duwei loudly said: "We haven't eaten anything for a whole day, and then if this situation continues, by tomorrow we'll lose strength, and i am not sure whether we can catch a fish!"

"No, no, do not eat it." Vivian was struggling to put the small cage in her arms, trying her best to protect it from Duwei:. "Do not eat it, please."

"Well, then how about we eat your dragon!!" Duwei loudly said: "your dragon is so huge, cutting a piece of meat won't danger its life, right?."

"Eat..... e...e...ea..eat..eat..eat my dragon?"

Vivian almost passed out.

Just before, thinking that the little nobility is quite a good man, but in the blink of an eye, he become a devil again!

Eat dragon? Almighty God! Please forgive the little Poor Vivian! All my life, I never have heard a person who dares to keep their eyes on dragon ..... Not mention to treated it as food!

"No, no, please don't eat my pet, No, no please don't eat it.... waah ..... father, mother....." looking at Duwei's ferocious appearance, Vivian started to cry.

Duwei felt helpless, watching the little girl cry, he shook his head:!. "This is not OK, that's not OK ..... Well, all right, I'll follow your call tonight and tomorrow I'll try to catch a fish, but, if tomorrow i can not catch a fish, then we will not starve to death! If we are dead, then there is no need to talk other things! If we cannot find any food, then we have to eat your teacher's pet.

At this moment, not just Vivian was crying, but even the illusionary Goblin in that small cage was scared stiff as well, the advanced monsters, can understand human speech. A pair of big eyes beams silly looked at Duwei, the little monster, was so scared that it curled and began to shiver.

Vivian begins to plead in her mind....

Almighty God! please bless the Vivian, let the devil catch few fishes tomorrow..... oh no no no, not because the little poor Vivian is greedy, but because the little poor Vivian want to keep the dragon's life. And if it is possible, Vivian can a little eat fish, uh ..... or, just eat one fish ..... Almighty God, please bless poor Vivian ..... hum hum ..... I am also hungry, Vivian really wants to eat fish .....

# Chapter 30 - Roar in the Island

The fire had already quenched somehow when Duwei woke up this morning, smoke flying from the ashes makes him feel kind of cold. Duwei moves his body, but he feels like something is on his chest.

He looks down, found out it is Vivian who came into his chest. The little magician is enjoying her sleep, but she wrapped her body together, putting her hands inside Duwei 's shirt, seems like she was feeling too cold and wanted to get some heat from Duwei 's warm body.

Maybe she was just too cold and can't help sneaking into Duwei's chest.

Duwei had mixed feeling haunting his mind, but he doesn't push this little girl to wake her up but in fact, took off his own shirt and put it on her body instead. After doing this, he finally stood up.

As soon as he looks up, his face suddenly changes color!!!

.....

"No!!!! shit!!!! No!!!!!!!" Duwei screams out an angry voice on this matinal isolated island.

The thick fog floats on the sea, and the world seems to have been put on a white veil under this location. The moist air is everywhere, and he could barely see anything because of this damn weather.

Under this bad condition, in which nobody can see more than ten meters!!

How can Duwei not be anxious?

He was trapped in this isolated island with no food and little drinkable water. The eagerness to leave this place as soon as possible was totally dependent on the fire. Thus, the only hope he holds in the heart is that any boat passing by this island could pick them up.

For achieving this hope, Duwei has already thought out an idea, which was from this morning he would fire the woods constantly on the coast. The smoke from the fire would attract the passing boats, if there is any.

However, now, facing such a thick fog, Duwei 's heart turns as cold as ice!

Under such a bad weather, in which nobody can barely see anything. Even if Duwei fires the wood, the passing boats will also have almost no possibility to see them!!

What's worse, according to what Duwei knew before. Once the weather becomes foggy on the sea, it will last a really long time in general.

Different from the fog on the continent, which could disappear within a day or two, the fog on the sea could last for three to five days without anyone feeling odd.

Three to five days...

Do I still have three to five days left? Duwei wonders. And he has eaten nothing since now.

Vivian wakes up by Duwei's voice, she looks at the unhappy face of Duwei, feeling more or less worried in her mind.

Duwei speaks nothing, he picks up the twigs and puts them together, then, he sets the fire. He tries to make the fire more fierce, making it more blaze.

Then he comes to pick up more twigs and throws them in front of Vivian.

"you stay here to watch the fire, if there is any sign that the fire is going to fade, then throw the woods into it! What's more, do not let the fire extinguish at any cost, you understand? And by the same time, I need you to watch the sea carefully, if there is any boat you could see, you should attract their attentions sparing no means, you could make the fire more blazing or...or you use your magic, shooting the fireball into the sky! You understand?"

"ye...yes" Vivian nodded her head. But her face turns interrogatory immediately "can...can we see the boat under such a heavy fog? The boat can...can see us?"

Duwei exhales heavily and doesn't answer the question but says "just do what I told you, this is the only thing we can do" instead.

After saying that, Duwei picks a long stick and holds it in his hand for a while, then, he walks away along the seaside.

"wh....where are you going?"

“I am going to find some food!” Duwei speaks without any emotion in his voice “i think, maybe i could find some mushroom, and some berries also. Perhaps i could find something edible in this big woods. I wish i could, cause it’s easier than fishing! But if i can’t find anything, I think, i have to go to do the god damn fishing.”

Duwei stops when he says these words “You’d better bless me that i could find food, or we could only eat your pet. Humans must live before that pet!”

Looking at the cold eyesight from Duwei before he leaves, Vivian can’t help shivering.

Duwei has gone for the whole morning.

Vivian sits on the beach alone, feeling sacred from her inner heart. There is nobody around, what’s more, she feels completely lonely!

Even though Vivian lives the isolated life with her teacher in the past as well, and her teacher left Vivian alone at home most of the times. But during that time, Vivian still had magic.

However, now, Vivian has nothing.

Working on the fire for the whole morning, Vivian got two cuts by the sharp twigs in her hands, several parts of her face also turned black because of the smoke. She tried to make the fire blazing all the time, just as Duwei told her to do.

At noon, Duwei comes back eventually.

Seeing Duwei walk toward Vivian, she could see he wears a happy face, even though, his legs seem to have been injured.

There is a vine on his neck has lots of strange things hung on it. It looks like some kind of plant Duwei pawed out from the ground, it still have the black soil on it.

He uses his one hand to support with the stick, the other lifts some twigs, which have lots of orange berries on it.

The berries look so appealing, the color is so beautiful, and all are of the same size as grapes. Without any doubts, it must be tasty!

Vivian can't wait to taste these berries.

Before this experience of starvation, this female magician has never experienced the feeling of hunger!

"foooooooooood! Yooooooooou finally found it!" Vivian cheers and runs toward Duwei with bare feet happily.

Duwei smiles a little when he sees the exciting face of Vivian, then his smile fades away quickly "don't be happy too early, these are all i found through the whole morning", he says with a serious face.

Not until Vivian realizes Duwei walks in a weird way that she finds out there are several cuts on his feet. The sharp things on the ground must have cut Duwei 's feet as he walks with bare ones.

"Okay, let's eat first."

Duwei puts down his findings, pointing the unknown rhizome hang on the twig "i can figure out these plants, i know some things about pharmaceuticals. The plants like this are all wild plants, whose roots have multiple usages and are edible, what's more, they are not too small."

Duwei washes the plants in the sea water as he says, then hands them to Vivian' these are all yours, you could just eat the raw plants or, if you prefer, you could grill them on the fire.'

Vivian stops for a while, looking down the rhizome, suddenly feels kind of reluctant, she looks at the branch with full of berries on, then pouts "i...i...i wanna eat the berries, i...i..."

"no, you eat this, i 'll eat the berries" Duwei speaks with a calm but irresistible voice.

The voice scares Vivian, and makes her wanna cry.

Vivian feels deadly sad. This guy must be doing it on purpose! He is punishing the poor little Vivian! Yes, it must be, his revenge against Vivian because she doesn't let him eat her pet!

Even though Vivian feels reluctant, she still squats beside the fire, toasts the rhizome on the fire for a little while. Then just put them into the mouth



carelessly.

The rhizome Duwei picked are all very big and tastes not bad...or, you could say that tastes insipid. It 's too hard to chew, and the poor Vivian gets tired chewing that just after two stems. What's more, these are not tasty at all... They are too insipid, too plain.

Duwei just sits right in front of Vivian in silence, he pulls the berries down and throw them in the mouth one by one, chews a little while then swallows it.

Gradually, Vivian can't stop staring at it...

She swallows the saliva, that berries...must be pretty tasty...what a mean guy he is!

"Why are you looking at me?" Duwei smiles coldly "are you blaming me for not giving you the berry and letting you eat the rhizome instead?"

Vivian pouts without saying a word.

As Duwei doesn't notice, Vivian pulls a berry down from then twig... She wears a big magician robe, it's big enough to hide the berry, and she keeps her action small, so that Duwei doesn't even find out.

Then, as Duwei looks at the other direction, Vivian throws the berry into her mouth quickly and bites heavily...

Just as she hopes the sweet taste would explode in her mouth...

ewwwwwwwwwwwww!!!!!!

Vivian changes her face quickly, with a wired expression on, then, like she doesn't even realize, Vivian pukes the berry out within a second!

What the hell is this? It's too sour to eat! The puckery taste could twist and numb the tough!! Vivian can't stop to vomit just with one bite!

Are these berries really edible?

Duwei looks at the unpleasant face of Vivian, smiling as he had already guessed so. Then he bites the last one, very slowly, chewing it in the mouth, after that, he stands up "okay, once we finished the lunch, there is lots of work needed to be done."

Just at this time, Vivian looks at the bold branch on the ground, then, looks back at the two rhizomes left on her hands...compared with that sick berries, this insipid roots are more than delicious!

“you eat this, i ‘ll eat the berries” the words Duwei said haunts in her head.

The scene that Duwei ate all of these awful berries one by one calmly without a words appeared in her mind...

Vivian suddenly feels like she could not speak a single word.

She pinches the rhizome in her hands forcibly, staring at Duwei.

“What are you looking at? Focus on your food, we have a lot of things to do later!” Duwei frowns.

“okay! okay!” Vivian turns around and pushes the rootstocks into her mouth, then bouncing and vivacious towards Duwei. Her eyes and voice are softer even with an emotion of sorry “wh...wh...what should we do? I ‘ll follow your words!”

“We will go fishing, or we have only rhizome to eat! We can’t depend on that for a long time!” Duwei smiles “tie this vineon my body, i need you to hold one side, so i could walk into the water and try to catch some fishes with the branch...but...”

Not until he finishes his words, they hear a loud screaming in the air!

Suddenly, the ground starts to quake heavily! Both Duweiand Vivian lose their stand, and fall on the ground!!

The screaming seems like shouts from the hell, dreary and depressing, like a stone smashes on the heart! Duwei have heard the screaming of the huge dragon, which he thought was the scariest sound on earth!

But now, this sound is far more horrifying than the one he heard from the huge dragon! It’s louder, and it terrifies you to the bones!

The ground was constantly shaking, Duwei feels like he is going through a terrible earthquake!!

Right in this shaking, even though the sea water starts roaring... There are strong waves one by one !!

‘what...what is that fucking sound!!’ Duwei’s face changes color, he holds the

fallen Vivian in his chest.

Vivian was already scared to pale.

Right at this moment, the dragon on the other side of the woods, Vivian's pet, seems to wake up too by this loud screaming! The sleepy dragon has wakened up, but...

Apparently, both Vivian and Duwei hears a sad screaming shout from that dragon!

And there is obviously the feeling of terror in that scream!

## Chapter 31 - Duwei's Return

Duwei and Vivian ran toward the woods where the dragon slept, but only to find that in the other end, Vivian's fire dragon had already woke up, frighteningly looking around. Bursts of roars came from its mouth, obviously, it was terrified.

Vivian immediately ran up towards the dragon, raised her hands and held the dragon's claw. She slowly chanted some spells, the slightest trace of light rose from her little hands, though weak, but the dragon finally calmed down.

Roar changed into a low hum. Finally, the dragon lowered its head again, laid down and then fell into a deep sleep.

After Vivian had cast her magic spell, she looked very tired. Duwei went towards the little silly girl, found she could stand firm and held her arm quickly and gently and whispered: "what happened?"

"I don't...I don't know, burning sun seemed to be frightened, just..just now....."

"yeah, now have you reassured it?" Duwei asked, seeing Vivian nod, Duwei said in a low tone: "That earthquake and the strange roar, you should have heard it. It's right in the north of the island ..... I suspect that there may be something on this island! Something we have not found yet ..... Maybe there are some beasts."

Vivian's face looked bad, and although she was innocent, she was still smart.

Beast?

What kind of beast can make such terrible roars! What kind of beasts' roars can terrify a dragon!?"

"I'm going to see." Duwei suddenly said.

"Uh? Won't it be dangerous?"

"Danger....." Duwei shook his head: "I do not know, but I am sure that this island is probably not simple ..... You see, there are no animals, not even a bird! What does this mean? I guess it is possible that there is a terrible animal on this island, who has conquered the island into its territory, so there is no other life. Anyway, we are now on the island, and we can't leave this island in a short time. I have to figure out what kind of beast lives on this island, otherwise, maybe we will encounter it later..... Did you hear the

terrible roar just now? We have to check this situation! So even when we encounter that thing later, we can make some preparations and corresponds in advance.”

Vivian hardly nodded her head: “i...i...i will go as well!”

Duwei looked very serious: “No, listen, silly girl, you stay here and take care of your pet. If the roaring sound came again, the dragon would be alarmed again, then what will you do!? You’d better stay here and take care of that giant dragon now. And if it woke up, and you placate it. And ..... you are clumsy, you only bring me troubles. You have no shoes, can you cross to the northern island barefoot?”

“.....” Vivian was speechless. She thought, and looked pitiful at Duwei, she bowed her head saying: “Okay.”

Duwei set off with the stick. He didn’t pass through the woods, but chose a route along the beach, and took a circle route towards the north. It may take some time, but it’s relatively safe.

But the weather is foggy, and now Duwei firmly believed that this island might have some terrifying beasts. Now that he knows, it’s much more dangerous to walk in the jungle.

All the way north, when Duwei approached the northern tip of the island, he suddenly found that beside the woods, there were some low tresses, with some interesting fruits on them.

Those fruits were big and round, Duwei felt so happy, he ran to those trees and picked two fruits, but immediately he felt disappointed.

Those giant round green fruit were actually all hollow inside. Those fruits looked like the dried up gourd in the Duwei’s past world

But Duwei thought for a while, he picked off few such large “gourd” in a bustle, then tied them to his stick.

Then, if Duwei encountered some terrible beasts, he could run to the sea. With those hollow gourd strapped to his stick, those guards can provide buoyancy as swim rings do. If an emergency happened, Duwei could jump into the sea.

Finally reaching the most northern side of the island, Duwei looked around, he was shocked by the surrounding scene.

The island’s northern end was still a forest, but what surprised Duwei was that there was frost everywhere!

Along the edge of the beach, there was another small piece of surrounding woods, covered with a thick layer of frost! Just as if it had been gone through a small snowstorm just now. But what frightened Duwei was that the climate here was completely normal, there was no trace of a snowstorm.

And, obviously, frost only covered that area! Other areas were still normal!

A thought flashed through his mind, Duwei thought about something. He lifted up their eyes, looked around and researched for something, but because of this damn thick fog, visibility was too low. Duwei first searched the nearby forest for a while, then noticed the snow on the ground. He excavated the snow covering the earth arduously until he found something suddenly.

Under that frost, dirt is humid and warm. That means that frost was to be covered up in few seconds, for example, magic?"

Duwei immediately ran to the sea, he stood on the coast, waves gently slapping his leg, and Duwei tried hard to look toward the sea.

Vaguely, Duwei saw that in the front, there were something fluttering in the sea. And this object is very big. Among the heavy mist, he couldn't see those details, but only saw a rough outline.

"Is it a boat?"

Duwei's heart suddenly gave birth to a little hope, he shout loudly and then tried waving.

Unfortunately, after shouting for a moment, that thing had no reply, but it seemed that it fluttered away.

Not a boat ..... Duwei confirmed, because after long time of observation, he barely saw that this stuff has a conical shape.

No matter what, Duwei decided to take a look.

Now, in this island, food and water are scarce. If he encountered any situation, he should look into it. Since maybe he could find something.

Duwei immediately tied up those big gourds in his body, jumped into the sea, and then swam forward in a hurry.

He swam hard, but unfortunately in his past life, he was a landlubber, he couldn't swim at all. Judging from his swimming posture, it looked like a "dog paddle" posture.

Fortunately, the storm was not large, otherwise, swimming in the sea is

very difficult, because usually you swim out two meters, a wave can let you go backward by three meters!

Duwei tried his best, but, fortunately, the buoyancy of those big gourds in his body is quite good, it took a while, Duwei has finally rushed to the vicinity of the big thing.....

Watching the scene, he was stunned, a splash ran toward him, he opened his mouth, and almost choked by the sea water.

“Damn ..... Damn! No! ??”

In front of Duwei, it's a small iceberg! An iceberg floating in the sea! Not a boat, nor something useful for Duwei.

More importantly, on the ice, there was a woman.

White hollow pattern light armor, long white cloak ....., hair as was white as snow.

Vivian anxiously waits until the evening, the sky was almost black. She was so hungry that her stomach was rumbling. In her arms, there were some roots, which were digged by Duwei. But she didn't plan to eat them, instead, she rubbed her stomach, signed, and held those roots in her arm.

He ..... he didn't eat anything.

“Jojo!”

The magic demon in her waist cage uttered a scream, this little demon's name was”Jojo”, and the voice sounded like its name.

In the cage, the Illusionary goblin uttered a scream.

Vivian patted cage softly:. “. Jojo ..... stop screaming, I know you are hungry, I am hungry too. But we can't eat those things, we have to wait for him to come back.

Finally, just when Vivian almost lost hope, Duwei came back.

Vivian saw Duwei vigorously moving step by step, every step took all his effort. His back was almost bent down..... because, he carried a person on his back!

Vivian stared with her round eyes, she was afraid that she was imagining, so she rubbed her eyes again, and then she confirmed that what she saw was not an illusion! Duwei indeed carried a person on his back .

Vivian signed, and then she quickly ran towards Duwei. Duwei was exhausted, and before Vivian arrived his side, he fell down to the ground,

and the person on his back was thrown nearby.

“Water, give me some water..... My god, I am so exhausted!” Duwei wryly smiled, and signed: “this guy is so much heavier than you! My god....I almost died.....died!”

Vivian quickly held a loaded water shoes towards Duwei, Duwei shook his head, pointed to those big gourd on his back. Vivian quickly picked up one, but found that these things were heavy, she shook it, and clearly, there are water inside.

“I ..... I saw these on the trees ..... So, I plucked them off. Those things can hold water, when I came back, I went to the puddle and stored some water ..... you, you can wear your shoes now.”

Vivian felt grateful, indeed, during these days, her delicate little feet have tasted enough of the bitterness.

“And, you quickly take a look at this guy, ha ha, whether to save her, you decide.” Duwei finished his words, and then picked up the gourd. he drunk rashly, and continued to pant.

Then Vivian came to the guy.

Vivian has good sight! But when Duwei showed up, she seems to have forgotten other things, only paying attention to Duwei.

In fact, the features of the person Duwei took back are so obvious! A white light armor, white cloak, and even the hair is white.....but Vivian didn't notice at all.

However, the moment, Vivian noticed the woman, she suddenly stared with big eyes, and covered her mouth!

Then she carefully went over, and struggled to turn over the woman, then she confirmed that She was right.

“Sister ..... sister ?? !!”



## Chapter 32 - Monster

Truly, the person Duwei took back was the cold snow beauty, in order to grab the illusionary goblin, she fought with Vivian in the half-horn town.

But at this moment, this woman closed her eyes puckered her lips. As if she was in a trance, her brow wrinkled tightly and panic and terror still didn't fade from her face.

That night, Duwei witnessed the strong power of the cold snow beauty. Looking at the woman in a trance with a panic face. Duwei was lost in deep thought..... What kind of horrible things she encountered?

Associating the strange roar, and the earthquake.....

Vivian carefully held a gourd of water and sat beside her sister, then she looked up and stammered: "how did you find her? And what happened to her??"

Duwei shrugged his shoulder and explained to her what happened. Vivian also felt confused, and she even checked her sister's body. There were no injury, just shortness of breath and weakness.

Vivian tried to give her sister some water, but cold snow beauty still clenched her teethes. Duwei lost his patience. He knelt down, picked up a stick, and brutally opened cold snow beauty's jaws, then he grabbed Vivian's gourd and poured a some water into her mouth.

"oh, no, no, no you'll choke her." Vivian quickly pulled Duwei's arm, and stared at Duwei for a while, and whispered: "you seem troubled?"

"oh, should i feel glad?" Duwei shook her head "you should better think twice! When she wakes up, what will you do? Your magic spells don't work now, when she wakes up, we will be at her mercy."

He sighed, in fact, Duwei felt contradictory. When he saw this woman fainted in the sea, he thought of this problem.

Save her? But she is our opponent. What if the woman wakes up, and became crazy. Don't forgot! That day, she said she would grab me to refine my soul. Even

though Duwei didn't know what the really happened, but certainly, that was not a small matter!

Or not save her? Leaving this beauty to die on that iceberg? Duwei couldn't make up his mind..

Few minutes later, the snow beauty wakes up by choking

She coughed hardly for a few times, then she quickly turned around. After the long trance, she took some time and energy to sit up. Just as she sat up, she fell down again. But finally, she woke up.

"Si...Sister ..... "

Vivian whispered in a low tone, the silly girl felt terrified, it seemed that she was afraid of her sister. And she quickly stood up, carefully moved up next to Duwei.

"Woo ..... My head hurts ....."

the beauty on the ground held her head, and looked very in cruciating pain: "what's going on?....i.....you....."

After a short stupor, she gradually awoke, stared at Vivian and Duwei: "you two? How did you come there? i...how did i reach here? Did you save my life?"

Duwei and Vivian didn't speak a word, this woman jumped up, and she suddenly remembered something, her face changed greatly, and she screamed!!

"My dragon! Oh, my dragon! My ice dragon !! my Orcut !! "

Her face looked sad again, and suddenly kneed down on the ground, two hands covered her face, and she burst into tears .....

"My dragon ..... my Orcutt! My Orcutt ah ....."

Vivian blinked her eyes in astonishment and saw her sister's distraught look, she could not help but whispered: "..... sis...sis...sister. What happened to your dragon?"

"..... What happened !! ..... he is dead! dead" The woman cried sadly and, her hands beat the ground heavily, scratching and hitting the ground painfully, as if she had no way to vent her sorrow: "he's dead! He was eaten by that monster! he saved me, but he was eaten by the monster!! "

When Duwei heard this, his eyes gazed up!

Eat a dragon?

What kind of monster can eat a dragon?

Aren't dragons the most powerful creatures?

No matter how Vivian tried to comfort her, Vivian's sister couldn't stop crying, she cried for such a long time that she even lost her voice. Her eyes were all red, and finally she couldn't even breathe, and then she gradually stopped crying.

Duwei pulled Vivian's hand, made a gesture to her. And Duwei told to her sister in a serious accent: "Miss, I asked what happened to you. You just said it was a monster, what kind of monster?"

"Monster ....." a trace of fear flashed in her eyes: "! Monster, yes, there is a monster!"

She took a look at Duwei and Vivian and angrily said: " It's all because i chased you guys. I rode my Orcut along the nearby beach, and finally we... found this island, I thought you were hiding here....but when we approached this island, Orcutt suddenly became very strange. he kept grumbling, as if there was something he feared. No matter how i directed him, he just didn't want to land down. Finally, I used magic spells to suppress him. Then he finally settled down.

Here, cold snow beauty shed tears again: "I ..... i killed my Orcutt, my ice dragon ....."!

Duwei interrupted her with an indifferent look: "stop crying, tell us what happened!!"

Snow beauty viciously stared at Duwei, suddenly jumped up, pointed at Duwei and Vivian. And shouted !! "all this is because of you guys! Vivian, if you had given me the illusionary goblin, then I shouldn't have came here to catch up to you."

Duwei felt so angry.

This is simply a hoodlum logic.

But there was no time to argue with this woman. Her eyes revealed a trace of hate. And her hand moved to her waist.

"Are you looking for this?" from behind his back, Duwei took a green flute, which was the snow beauty's weapon, but Duwei already took it away when she

was in a deep trance.

“Well, do you think if you take away my wand, then I can’t beat your guys?” Snow Beauty stared for a while, but then she immediately roared: “come on! Vivian, even without a dragon, I can still beat you, you can never defeat me.”

Then, the snow beauty took a deep breath, and she quickly cast spells, at the same time, her body immediately flew up.

Oh shit! Duwei really wanted to hit himself! He already thought about this situation! Such an annoying woman, I saved her life, does she have to fight us as soon as he wakes up.

Just when Duwei felt angry, something strange happened .....

Her body flying up, almost reaching near the height of a branch, snow beauty suddenly changed her face, her body shook a bit in the air, then suddenly she fell down!

Fortunately, Vivian ran towards her, trying to grab her. Both of them rolled into grassland.....

Snow beauty screamed, her face turned pale: “ you! What have you done to me? My magic! My magic.”

She forcibly pushed Vivian away and started to loudly chant her spells again. But this time, her fingertips only shot a palm size snow,...hitting Duwei’s body, even though it did hurt him, but Duwei suddenly came up with an idea, and ignored the pain, and shouted: “ you lost your magic power?”

“My magic!” Snow beauty was stunned, she stared at her hands!

Just now, she indeed used a mid-level magic “Frozen Ice Fumes”. But she only shot a palm of small ice crystals.

Duwei’s face turned extremely weird, and then he couldn’t help but laugh: “You can’t use your magic Haha, even she can’t use her magic!!!”

“Damn!!” snow beauty shouted: “what you’ve done to me? What kind of magic you applied on me!!!”

Duwei coldly watched the furious woman, sneered: “Come on, from my standpoint, we are neither friend nor foe, do we obediently wait for you to wake

up and threaten us?”

“Yes, you did it!” Snow beautiful’s face turned pale, and fear flashed in her eyes.

“No, no, no ..... sister.” the silly girl said, she gently hugged the snow beauty, and whispered: “Even i can’t use my magic..... sister .....”

“Well, I know you are kind, but why are you telling this to such a hateful woman.” Duwei curled his lips, however he lost was in deep thought, then smiled and said: “It seems that we can find the source of the failure of your magic ..... Vivian, you lost your magic, and this hateful woman also lost magic..... It seems that it’s not because of you but because of this place. Maybe this place have some power to suppress all magic.

When he knew that the horrible snow beauty also lost her magic, Duwei suddenly felt relieved.

Tiger may be horrible, but when facing a tiger without a pawn, Duwei would not be so scruples.

He even went over and deliberately approached the snow beauty, chuckled: “how are you doing? Dear Magician, what do you want to do? Cast your magic spells or refined me into a soul? Hmmm....”

Watching Duwei moving towards her, snow beauty stunned. And when Duwei almost touches the tip pf her nose, then a hint of anger flashed in her eyes.

Duwei had a feeling, a bad feeling

Immediately, he felt a pain in his stomach! Then his whole body flied out, pounded to the ground!

Snow beauty tightly clenched her fists, and hatefully looked at Duwei: “well! If you think that I lost my magic power, then you can easily bully me? I am not only a magician, but also a warrior. And I have passed the six-level swordman examination.

Shit.....

Duwei smiled bitterly and laid on the ground.

It seems that he got giddy with success.... And he almost forgot, the day they

fought, the girl showed her ability. She is not like the silly girl who just know how to cast spells. She is a master at magic and sword

Even without her magic, she still has superb martial skills ..... enough to safely beat her opponent.

Snow Beauty successfully fought back, and she immediately fetched Duwei a rattling kick. Vivian immediately ran towards Duwei and opened her arm to protected Duwei; “ No, No! Sister, please don’t hurt him!!”

Snow beauty sneered, looking at Vivian: “Ah, poor Vivian, it seems that I am right, this little aristocrat is really your little lover. Ah! you protected him with all your efforts!!!!”

“No, no, no.....” when she heard “little lover”, Vivian’s face immediately reddened, his eyes flashed a trace of shy. She could not help but bow her head, and shyly said: “no, not like that. i ..... i ..... he... He, we dropped here, and h... he...he took good care of me. He found water for me, and gave me some food. And he even saved your life. y...y...you can’t hurt him!”

After listening to Vivian’s words, snow beauty pondered for a moment, and draw back her fist and coldly said: ” Well, this guy saved me, so I’ll give him a chance.”

“thank....thank you.” Vivian relieved.

Duwei laid on the ground and coldly smiled, he endured the pain in his stomach, climbed up, shook off the dust: “Well, if i knew it, i would not have pulled you from the sea! ”

“Well.” snow beauty sneered:. “Unfortunately, now you can not have the ability to throw me back into the sea.”

Duwei was not angry at all, and he said: “Yes, unfortunately, I can’t do that, it’s true..”

“Vivian said, you saved me, and brought me back here? Well, I owed you, but now i have forgiven you, and you better not enraged me.” Snow beauty leaned over.

Duwei didn’t feel angry but laughed, and he even vigorously applauded:

“Good, interesting! I have seen many unreasonable women, but I never have seen a beautiful unreasonable woman like you. You really widen my horizon.

After listening to those words, snow beauty felt a little embarrassed, and ferociously said: “How! Do you have any opinion? ”

“No.” Duwei was very calm, and peacefully said: “I even think it’s fair .....the person who has the hardest fist is the boss. Whoever has the hardest fist, no matter what he or she said ,he or she is always right. Their rules are always right! Right now you are stronger than me, I am not your opponent. If you bully me, I won’t complain. On the contrary, if I was stronger than you, i would have already kicked you into the sea.”

Beautiful snow froze for a moment, looked at Duwei up and down, and this time she was no longer angry, but her face showing a trace of strange expressions: “the little nobility is actually very interesting, and his speech is very unusual ..... Unlike other hypocritical nobles i know. ”

Duwei rubbed his belly, lightly said: “since you already hit me, then let’s talk about serious things. You lost your magic power, which means we can’t get out of the island. What’s worse, this island has no food, and very limited fresh water! Besides, as you just said, there is a monster who can even eat a dragon.....right? Now, I think it’s better that we sit down and talk about the whole thing!”

His tone was serious.

Snow beauty froze for a moment, thought of her dragon, her face has exposed a sad expression: “My my Orcutt Orcutt ..... ah .....”

“Now is not the right time to be sad, you better tell us what happened.” Duwei coldly said: “Since that monster can eat your dragon, so maybe it will eat us, so we can figure out some plans.”

The snow beauty is much tougher than her little sister. After crying for a while, she stopped crying and calmed down. Although she was still sad, but her mood was much stable.

“As I rode Orcutt to land, suddenly, on the edge of the island in the sea, a monster jumped out ..... it’s big, very big ..... i do not know how to describe it’s look, it is like a big meatball, has eyes on both sides, I do not know the shape of

it's body, because it only exposed parts of the body outside, the rest of the parts were underwater ..... Orcutt was very scared, that Monster roared, then ..... it launched an attack on us. It used magic, water magic. its magic power was very strong which was enough to set off a full thirty feet wave, almost washed me and Orcutt down from the sky."

Snow beautiful's voice was quivering. .... "Then, Orcutt fought back against that monster. Orcutt casted a snow magic, but it posed no harm to ..... the monster, the monster seemed have a magic barrier, Orcutt showered snow storm, it hit the other side of the monster's body, but immediately those snow storm was bounced back ..... I also used my magic, but it was useless! I have never seen such a powerful monster ..... i never even heard of a monster that have such a powerful magic! It's even impossible for a top class magician to cast such a powerful magic enchantment to defend themselves against a long-term frontal attack."

"And then?" Duwei frown.

"And then, of course, i thought of escape." snow beauty sullenly said: "Since we couldn't beat this monster, I immediately thought to run away. But this monster casted some spells, i rode Orcut to fly up. But only after few seconds, we knocked some invisible wall, and bounced back. Even though I tried several times, but all the directions were blocked, and ....finally

"Finally, what?" Duwei asked

"Finally ....." Snow Beauty forcibly wiped her tears: "Finally that monster summoned the huge waves, the height of those waves..... I've never seen anything like that before, I think even my teacher can not summon those huge waves. Those waves directly rolled us down from the sky....as i fell from Orcutt's body, and witnessed that monster opened its big mouth, and swallowed Orcutt! ....My dragon fell from the sky, and then that monster swallowed it in one bite!"

One bite?

Swallow a dragon with one bite?

So, how big is that monster? !

Duwei's face suddenly turned pale.



# Chapter 33 - The World Of Three People

The news brought by the Snow Beauty had turned everyone silent. Duwei's heart felt heavy; He frowned and pondered.

A monster that can easily swallow a dragon!

A monster that can easily beat a dragon and a level 8 magician!

Duwei left the two sisters; went to the seaside himself, tried to use the cool sea breeze to calm the upset thoughts in his mind.

Ah, A monster.....A place that suppresses the use of magic.....Cannot use magic.....no food, no fresh water.....

Duwei sighed, muttered "Seems like it is the only way....."

Then, he turned around to the woods, back to the side of the two sisters. This time the snow beauty and Vivian were intensively arguing about something.

Well, maybe not the word "arguing", because it is only the snow beauty who was speaking. In fact, with Vivian's stutter problem, it is simply impossible to start a war of word with her.

"You should have given me the damned goblin! You know what? That old man doesn't even know where we are now, and you still expect him to come and rescue you right? Hmph....."

"What's the problem?" Duwei walked over, took a glance at Vivian; Vivian looked grievance, her eyes are red, cautiously looked at Duwei said "Not.....nothing."

"I said what's the problem with you two sisters? One is honest as a young fledge, the other is violent as the mother of a dragon." Duwei sat down, stacking the branches himself, prepare to start a fire.

The snow beauty snorted, although she is a bit annoyed about Duwei's bold thoughtless words, but as Duwei had saved her life once, she promised that she will leave him alone, it is too embarrassing to go back on what she had said, so she pressed her temper and tolerated it.

Vivian took a glance at her sister, then took a glance at Duwei, and shifted her

body a bit closer towards Duwei.

The snow beauty looked, cursed in low voice “A little villain who abduct girls!”

Duwei shows no weakness, instantly returned said “A female robber who steals people’s goods.”

This time the snow beauty went mad, pop-eyed staring at Duwei, looks like she is about to rage.....

But coincidentally, a discord voice has dispersed the snow beauty’s anger and momentum all in a sudden.

Goo.....Goo Goo.....

Duwei couldn’t hold his laughter; he took a glance at the snow beauty.

The snow beauty’s face turned red, this time the anger on her face has reduced a bit, left with 70% of shyness and only 30% of anger, she is no longer scary anymore.

“Hmm.....That’s very strange, did I hear it wrong? What was that noise? Was that a howling from a monster in the island?” Duwei deliberately muttered loudly.

The face of the snow beauty had turned even redder, she stared at Duwei and whispered “It’s.....It’s me!”

“You?” Duwei deliberately widened his eyes.

“.....” The snow beauty felt like her lung is about to explode due to anger, finally she shouted “It’s me! It’s my stomach! I’m starving! The sky is almost dark! Don’t you all need to eat?”

“Eat, of course.” Duwei lazily stretched his body, and said “If there’s food, of course I want to eat.”

Meanwhile, Vivian on the side touched her pocket and started searching, as the snow beauty popped her eyes, she took out a black and strange looking plant roots and whispered “Sis, sister.....if you are hungry, you can eat this first.”

“What is that?” The snow beauty frowned, then she suddenly became angry, she jumped up and stared at Duwei and said “Damn you brat! This is what you

let my sister eat! This plant roots??!!”

Duwei coldly replied “It’s fine if you don’t want to eat this, then you can starve.”

The snow beauty became angrier “Asshole! Can’t you just go and catch a few beasts?”

Duwei laughed “beasts? You can catch it if you want! If you can catch one, I’m sure I will praise your greatness to the almighty God! Go for it!”

Vivian secretly pulled the snow beauty, whispered “Sister.....This island, has nothing at all.....”

Duwei had already turned his body, his voice is unconcerned “You can either solve it yourself, or you can eat this thing, or you can starve. Then I can wait until tomorrow when you have no strength, I might take the opportunity to revenge and kick you into the sea.”

This speech was more effective than anything.

The snow beauty immediately grabbed the plant roots Vivian passed her and put it in her month, and started chewing.

She frowned and chewed at the same time.....Thinking it must be the worst thing she has ever eaten! God! Can’t believe a person like me.....is eating grass? Am I a horse, or a cow!!

She got angrier as she eats, and she ate faster and faster. At the end of the day, the feeling of hunger is not good. She couldn’t believe she ate the whole plant and felt a little bit full in her stomach. She looked at Vivian and asked “Anymore?”

“.....No more.” Vivian looked helpless.

“.....No more?” The snow beauty rattled.

What has this world become! Forget about fish and meat! I can tolerate to eat this plant roots, but can’t I have more?

“Listen.” Duwei turned around, his sight is cold, stared at the snow beauty and said “I think you should be cleared about our current situation! We are in an island, with nothing to eat, nothing to drink! Do you know that the thing you just

ate, Vivian had been saving it for today! Do you know in order to get this thing; I've been running searching the whole afternoon. And you? You just sat there and ate what you were given. You ate all of your sister's food, you didn't even feel guilty. Not even a little bit appreciative. Instead, the only thing you did is complain..... Let me tell you, if you ever feel hungry, you have to find your own food! I hope you won't be taking other people's food tomorrow. In here, no one is noble, not you, me, nor Vivian! No one has to serve you!!”

Supposedly, Duwei's impolite expression would make the snow beauty very angry, and his blame would make her feel embarrassed.

However.....the snow beauty looked at the serious expression of Duwei, and found herself couldn't even say a word to refute him. This weak young boy, supposedly she can kick him with one leg, but at this moment, facing his blame, the snow beauty suddenly felt a little bit guilty.....Yes, it's guilty! So guilty that she couldn't look him in the eyes.

The first time in her life, the snow beauty suddenly felt that she didn't have a single thought to face this kind of impolite exhortation. The weak young boy standing in front of her, his sight is this calm and indifferent, his body is weak but in this dark night, it looks like a big tree!

“I.....I know, It.....It wasn't my intention to eat all of Vivian's food, I.....” The snow beauty only spoken half of her speech, but suddenly felt that her tone is so weak.....so weak that she didn't recognise herself!

Why do I have to give in to this kid!?

Duwei gently smiled, turned around and looked at the sky.

The fog has not yet dispersed, there's not a single star in the sky.....

Duwei sighed “Sleep, we still have a lot of thing to do tomorrow.”

He added a few branches into the fire, and looked at Vivian sitting quietly, felt soft-hearted, and automatically extended his arm to Vivian's head and hit lightly, softly said “Silly girl, are you hungry?”

Vivian was shocked, first shaking her head, followed by embarrassedly nodded.

“Sorry, I'm the only man in here; supposedly I should take care of you.” Duwei

smiled bitterly “Unfortunately, I am the one who makes you starve. Hum! So be it, let’s sleep, imagine this island is a huge piece of cake, all the tresses around here is the candles, you are lying on top of a sweet piece of cake.....Sleep, you can eat in your dream.”

Cake? Vivian eyes had widen.

Duwei had already turned his body, Vivian quietly looked at his back.

.....

In the morning, Duwei woke up.

Precisely, he was woken by his hunger. He only had some awfully tasted fruit, his stomach is empty, those fruits are sour and bitter, on top of the stomach acid, Duwei was tortured the whole night he couldn’t sleep well.

He found out the snow beauty had already woken up, wrapping around her belly and just sat there.

“Awake? Hungry?” Duwei felt sorry about what he said last night, at the end she is a woman who didn’t know about the situation on an island, so he tried to be a bit more friendly.

“I’m not hungry!” The snow beauty shake her head, obviously she is lying, then she said “Where’s the water? I need to wash my face!”

“You can go out a little further to the sea.”

“.....You told me to wash my face with sea water?” The snow beauty was shocked.

“I’m sorry, we only have limited fresh water, just enough for drinking.”

This time, the snow beauty didn’t argue with him, just sighed, then stood up and walked towards the sea side.

In the morning, Duwei searched for food again, this time, he spent more time, it’s because there are one more person in the group means another month to feed. He brought back a bunch of plant roots.

This time, the snow beauty didn’t say a word and ate straightaway.

Duwei smiled “Hey.”

“What?!”

“Actually.....” Duwei suddenly felt that the woman was not actually that flagitious.....From what he saw, she is just being childish. Duwei controlled his laughter “Although the food is plain.....at least you can wash away the mud before you eat.”

“.....”

Seeing the woman’s face started to turn dull, Duwei immediately changed the topic “Now we are trapped, we are a team.....I still don’t know your name.”

Then, he stood up, acted like a standard nobleman and smiled “I am Duwei Rawling; Son of Earl Raymond, current Patriarch of the Rawling family, Deputy Commander of the Imperial High Command.”

The snow beauty hesitated, it’s cleared that she is unwilling, but said “My name is Joanna.”

Joanna.....What a great name.

Vivian on the side looked at Duwei and her sister who are finally not arguing anymore and said “You can .....you can also call her JoJo.”

JoJo.....What a weird name.

“Shut up, Vivian.” Joanna shouted, then looked at Duwei “That name, only my parents can call me that name, if you dare to call me that, you are dead.”

“OK.” Duwei didn’t mind “Miss Joanna, now we know each other, next, it’s working time.”

“Work? What work?”

Duwei put away his smile and said “We need to find a way to leave here, I have an idea in my mind.....”

# Chapter 34 - Leaving the Magical Island

“What? You mean we made a raft to leave here?” Joanna frowned, and questioned Duwei “So this is your idea? You plan to sail on a sea with a small raft, and take us back to the mainland? You must be crazy!”

Duwei smiled, and slowly spoke his plan:

“I believe we have hope. You and Vivian, both are powerful magicians, you both can use any tools or mounts to fly far away! Am I right? If you still have your power, you would have used your power to leave this damn island already, right?”

“Of course!” Joanna said “If I still can fly, I would have gone already.”

“The question is” Duwei said, “You have lost your magic power. But according to my guess, the reason is not because of you, it’s the island itself! I suspected that there must be something in here that suppresses the use of magic, such as some barrier, or magic forbidden area, these kinds of things.....most likely has something to do with the scary big monster you saw. So.....I think, the barrier that suppresses magic.....How big is its reach? Does it cover the whole island, or including some part of the sea? At least I’m sure is that the field cannot be too big.

Joanna finally understood and there was no need for Duwei to carry on explaining, she continued “So, you did not plan to use the small raft to take us back to the mainland. You wanted to use the raft to sail away from the barrier, if Vivian and i can then restore our magic powers, then we don’t need the raft and can fly back to the mainland. Right?”

“Exactly.” Duwei nodded.

“What if it doesn’t work?” Joanna frowned “What if you were wrong? I mean, even though Vivian and i both got our magic spells, but if we cannot restore our magic power even though we leave the island? Or if it takes a few days, or even months until we can get it back? Then what? Even if we can sail away from the island, we cannot fly. Just by the small raft, we are sure to be dead in the sea.”

“Well, it’s just a different method of death.” Duwei raised his eyebrow “I can

clearly tell you that.....If we don't leave this island, by 2-3 days at most, we will starve to death. Although there are a lot of trees in the island, but there are only a few plants whose roots we can eat. I've found that when i was looking for food, i can't guarantee if i can find any more food tomorrow."

"We can fish!"

"Haha!" Duwei laughed "What fish? You can try! God.....Those big waves produced by that monster we saw yesterday, also the earthquake.....With these huge movements, even if there were any fishes in the sea, they must have been scared and left.

Even though the idea sounds a bit risky, after a careful thought, Joanna thinks that what Duwei said makes sense.

You either stay here and starve to death, or you go out with the risk.

Next is to find out how to make a raft.

The hardest thing is.....There's no tool!

Even if you want to chop woods from trees.....you've got to have an axe right?

Even if you don't have an axe, at least a knife would help!

But don't even talk about the knife, they don't even have a dagger!

Even though Joann is also a warrior, unfortunately, the only weapon she uses is a long flute!

Without tools, chopping woods with bare hands? Unfortunately, Duwei can't do that.

Even though Joann is a swordsman, she does not have the power to chop a big tree with her bare hand.

Duwei started to turn his focus onto Joanna's armor. Armor is made of metal, if you can get a piece of iron, sharpen it, reluctantly it can be used as a knife.

Unfortunately, Duwei was disappointed.

It is not because Joanna was stingy about her magical armor, but because her armor was full of hollow patterns, they couldn't even find a piece of iron that is the size of a palm!



After consider again, Duwei still got another idea!

Dragon scale!

Not matter how much she loves her pet, Vivian had to agree with Duwei to peel a few pieces of the dragon scales.

The scales of dragons are extremely strong and hard, in the past legendary heroes even used dragon scales to make solid shields.

Vivian used her last bit of her magic to appease her fire dragon, Duwei bravely peeled off two pieces of dragon scales.

They spent another day to find a big piece of rock by the sea side and used the rock to sharpen those palm size dragon scales into sharp knives.

Those two girls and the boy had spent two day to work.

Duwei and Joanna chopped a few big trees, Vivian was responsible for binding those vines together.

Duwei even used those tree trunks to make a few paddles. He then ran and brought back some huge gourds looking things. Those things not only be used to hold some fresh water, but can also be combined with the raft to increase its buoyancy.

Lastly, Joanna donated her white cape, and turned it into a sail.

When everything was nearly finished, Vivian suddenly remembered a very important question!

“My.....my.....what about my dragon?” Poor little Vivian suddenly remembered a crucial question!

A raft cannot take a dragon!

Actually, Duwei and Joanna had already thought about this question, it's just that they found it very hard to explain it to Vivian.

It's Vivian's pet, originally she could have used her magic power to create a magical seal and summon it when needed.

Unfortunately, without her magical powers, she cannot seal the dragon and bring it with her.

Duwei and Joanna looked at each other, struggled to answer Vivian's question.

Vivian suddenly understood, the silly girl shed a tear "No! No! I.....I.....I will not leave.....leave my dragon!! My Burning Sun!!"

She cried and ran to the dragon, thrown herself to the sleeping dragon, tightly holding it.

Duwei sighed, looking at this pure little girl, Duwei felt a bit guilty.

But what can they do otherwise?

They cannot take a big dragon like this!

Not to mention, in the bottom of Duwei's heart.....he is not like this world's people, treating a dragon like a strong, superior creature.

In Duwei's mind: talented people are the most important. No matter if it's a dragon, or a snake.....they are just "animals" to him.

Human life is the most important. Sacrificing a human life for an "animal", it is something that Duwei will never understand.

Furthermore.....Hum, if it is not because it's Vivian's pet, he would have slaughtered that big "animal" and ate its meat.

Of course if it happens, Vivian will cry and die of sadness on the spot.

In spite of Vivian not wanting to leave her darling dragon, Duwei and Joanna had to force their way.

What surprised Duwei is, that ferocious woman had rarely shown a tender side of her to her sister.

"No need to be surprised." Joanna had already known what Duwei was thinking by looking into his eyes "I've also lost my dragon, I can understand this poor girl's feeling."

Duwei could see from Joann's eyes that show a little bit sadness.

Two girls sat on the raft, Duwei was pushing the raft at the back to the sea, then he jumped onto it. Joanna controlled the sail, Duwei picked up the paddles and started to row.

Only the poor little Vivian, was forced to the raft, silently tearing looking at the

island on her back.....as well as her pet dragon.

The wave is lowest, this is very lucky.

But Duwei and Joanna were nervous.

They prayed.....

They prayed for the following journey, to not meet that monster! That monster could lurk inside the sea and attack a dragon.....which means if the monster wants them; it can flip this little raft with no difficulty.

Duwei only hoped that they can leave the island quietly to certain distant, and then hope that these magicians can restore their magic and fly.

“The Almighty God, bless us.....” Joanna muttered.

For a weak young boy like Duwei, he struggled to row the raft continuously, he is determined, to leave this island, although his arms are tired, he persisted.

Visually, it's been about 200 meter from the seaside.

“How do you feel?” Duwei asked Joanna loudly.

“No, still nothing.” Joanna tried to summon a wind magical spell to strengthen the sail. Unfortunately, it still did not work.

“Carry on.” Duwei gritted his teeth and said.

Seem like the God in this world does not protect a heretic like Duwei.

As the little raft sailed to about a hundred meters further.....

Suddenly, a big wave set off from the sea! In an instant, that scary roar appeared again.

Soon after, you can see from the eyes of the three scared people, a humongous wave that was about 4-5 meters high suddenly setting off from the peaceful sea.

Thud! With the waves hitting in, the vines from the raft fractured, the raft turned into pieces, the three people fell into the sea at the same time.....

Duwei felt that the moment his body fell into the seawater, it feels like there was a force from the sea bounding him!

He could not move his body, the moment he opened his mouth, the sea water gushed into his mouth. Duwei thought he was dead, his sight turned dark, inside the water, a swirl wrapped around him, rapidly pushing him down.....

Duwei felt that he sank.....and sank.....

# Chapter 35 - Open Sesame

When Duwei woke up, he felt that his head was lying on something soft, his body was sore, he felt like some power tore his body; every muscle and every joint was in pain.

Duwei struggled to open his eyes.

What relieved him was that the female companions were still next to him.

Duwei's head was lying on Joanna's lap, and Vivian was lying in Duwei's arms, her head was pushing against his chin.

When Duwei woke up, his two female companions confusedly opened their eyes at the same time.

"Where are we.....were we swallowed by the monster?" Joanna rubbed her head slightly, then she immediately noticed that Duwei was lying on her lap, suddenly screamed "What are you doing! Scram!"

Then, Joanna turned over, Duwei immediately rolled down.

Duwei spent a lot of effort to stand up, rubbing his thighs muscles like they had been torn.....That feeling was very uncomfortable, the same as muscles strain.

"Why are you so tense? I didn't do it intentionally." Duwei looked at Joanna, That woman moved her body and sat up, ignoring Duwei and pulled up Vivian.

Poor little Vivian was still looking a bit confused.

All three of them were wet, their hair stuck together, Duwei was a little better, but the two girls were embarrassed.

Joanna was lucky; she still had that hollow patterned magic armor on her body. But poor little Vivian was quite unlucky. The magic gown that she was wearing got tattered into pieces during the few days they stayed on the island, later she just gave Duwei the rest of the gown and tore it into cloth pieces to be used for the raft. Right now, little Vivian was only wearing a tight underclothing.

Normally, this underclothing is fine, but because she was soaked by sea water, it became a little inappropriate. Obviously this underclothing is a little too thin.....And what makes it even worse is, the women in this world had something

missing compared to the women from the previous world Duwei used to live in, a very important thing.

Bra.

After soaked by sea water, the thin piece of underclothing stuck on Vivian's body, clearly outlined her full body figure.....Especially the upper body of the female magician.....

Duwei took a glance, and couldn't help but get distracted.

Obviously, although the manner of this female magician seems a little too pure, and a little too childish.....but her body figure was already quite matured. Slightly sizeable breasts, the bud shaped of her breasts had been shown clearly under the cloth, and what even worse is, the color of Vivian's top is in light colour.....If Duwei stared at it a little longer, he was worried that he could even faintly see those pointed nipples.

Even though they are in danger, Duwei couldn't help but lost in deep thought, he looked at Vivian's innocent face, and sighed "What a pity!"

"What are you thinking about!" Joanna cautiously noticed where Duwei was looking at, she snorted heavily, grabbed her sister. After all, she is older than Vivian,,then ferociously stared at Duwei and said "Prurience little nobleman! Don't you dare to look again; I will dig out your eyeballs!"

Duwei did not argue with her, turned around, and carefully scanned the surroundings.

Clearly they are in a cave.

Just about two steps from where they woke up there's sea water.....From this point, Duwei believes that they could be in a cave undersea. Due to its special topography, there's no sea water inside the cave.

In the walls of the cave, some light was faintly flashing, it made Duwei and the group clearly see the surroundings in the cave.

Duwei stretched his arm and touched the wall, he found a rough granule, and inside the granule, something that looks like tiny sands are inside that granule and flashing naturally.

“Night Pearl? No, it’s so small, should be night sands instead.” Duwei took his arm back.

Common sense gained from Duwei’s previous life tells him that, objects that flash on their own, are in fact harmful radiation. It does no good to human beings.

“What did you touch?” Joanna asked from the back.

“I’m observing the area.” Duwei replied “We should be glad that we are still alive. We were attacked by that monster.....But I don’t understand why we ended up in here.”

“i... i....i think i might know a little bit.” Vivian was shy to speak, the silly little girl was so shy her face turned red, she was afraid to look at Duwei.....Perhaps, even though she is innocent, but as a teenage girl, she can feel that Duwei stared at her breasts before.

Duwei looked at Vivian, Joanna deliberately coughs loudly, she didn’t wait for Duwei to speak and asked “What do you know?”

“Swirl, it’s the swirl.” Vivian said “Just...just now, i....i can feel that w...we were pulled here by a swirl from the bottom of the sea.”

Duwei frowned “Is that a coincidence? We were pulled by a swirl to here, not anywhere else, but were taken to a cave like this, where we do not drown to death?” His expression was complicated “I don’t believe it’s a coincidence.....”

This cave is not big nor small, it’s shape is like an upside down bowl, there is no entrance, it’s completely sealed. I’m afraid the only entrance is the sea water corridor on the side.

“I think, I think if we want to go out, I’m afraid we have to jump into that corridor, swim along the sea water in order to escape.” Duwei concluded.

“We should have stayed on that island!” Joanna observed the surroundings and came out the same conclusion as Duwei. Looking Annoyed she said “At least there was still fresh water to drink; plant roots to eat. What about now? There’s only stones!”

“Not really, at least we have oxygen, we are not suffocating, it means there

must be another entrance, it's just we still haven't found it yet." Duwei shake.

"Oxygen? What is oxygen?" Joanna frowned.

Duwei was speechless. After all, it's too difficult to explain the idea of oxygen to someone who's from the magical world. Duwei stalled and immediately changed the topic "We need to find a way.....Can you use your magic power?"

The two female magician shook their heads, it ended Duwei's last idea.

"Now what?"

Joanna asked.

As if it was by instinct, for the last few days, these two women let the youngest in the group to be the leader. Even Joanna, automatically started to rely on this young guy. After all, Duwei is the calmest person between the three. From working out the escape plan, to searching for food and fresh water, all the important decisions were made by him, he had unintentionally taken care of these two women.

"What to do?"

Duwei really had no idea.

He is not a supernatural being! Being trapped in a place where no one can see nor hear, what can he do?

Duwei felt that he couldn't even force a smile. He just wanted to shout out loud to release his emotion, after all he is also feeling cramped.

However, those two women looked at him, especially those big eyes of Vivian, he sees complete trust from her.....Duwei sighed.

He forced a smile, Duwei tried his best to comfort the two women "No worries.....Since the God didn't let us die, took us to a place like this, then we are not destined to die in here. There must be a solution!"

Duwei secretly sighed, walked to the side of the cave, lightly touched the wall, laughed "Let's take some rest, restoring our energy. Then....." Duwei paused ".....Then, there's must be a solution.....Hey, anyone wants to hear a story?"

Joanna twisted her mouth, she is not as innocent as Vivian, She knows that



even Duwei does not have a solution in a situation like this, but for the sake of the trembling Vivian, Joanna sighed and didn't say anything.

If we die here.....then, be it! The tenacity in the heart has been suppressed for too long, maybe it's time to ease.....

Joanna didn't say anything, thinking about her thought; Vivian had already quietly walked a few steps away from her and interestedly asked Duwei "Wh....what story?"

"A tale....." Duwei smiled and said "I.....heard a story about a robber and treasure. They said, there's a young guy called Alibaba....."

Duwei slowly told the story about the famous "Forty Robbers" from his previous life once and lastly pointed at the wall in the cave and said "See, maybe God will make a miracle! Maybe if you touch the top and shouted "Open sesame" a door will appear and let us go out!"

Vivian looked down and didn't say anything, she looked up, the female magician had tears filled up her eyes and whispered " Duwei, you are, comforting, me, right?"

Duwei didn't reply, in this situation, he could say nothing and lightly touched Vivian's hair.

Vivian suddenly smiled, she tried very hard to smile, and then muttered "Duwei said there's a solution, then it must be a solution! w...we can, try them one by one! There must be a solution! Let's, let's start with the "open sesame"!"

The silly little girl put an adorable smile on her face, although there are tears in her eyes. Then she rose her hand, lightly knocked on the wall and sweetly, crisply said,

Op...open sesame.....

Duwei suddenly felt sad.....Does an adorable girl like her has to be die in here?

But.....maybe the God is playing a trick on him!

The moment before Duwei's tear dropped from his eye.....

The moment after Vivian had finished saying "Open Sesame" .....

In front of them, the cave suddenly shook a little..... Yes, the solid wall in the

cave, suddenly turned into water and rippled.

A skinny hand suddenly stretched out from the wall in the cave, appeared in front of Duwei and the group! Just before the eyeballs of the three about to fall, an old and weak voice came out from the cave wall said

“Finally.....there are guests.....please come in.....”

# Chapter 36 - The Servant

The skin of this hand was inordinately dry and old, just like a skeletal hand covered with a layer of epidermis. Indeed, it was so dry that it resembled a threadbare tree trunk.

The index finger was aimed towards Duwei's group. After the old man gestured the three individuals to come inside, the hand pulled back into the wall.

Duwei was the first to recover his mind. After taking a few steps, he raised his arm and placed it on the starting cave wall. The texture of the wall was light and soft; in fact, it felt like touching water. Therefore, Duwei decided to stretch his arm across the cave wall.

"Seems like... my hand can go in." Duwei's voice was a bit hoarse.

The two girls at the back held each other's hand, and stood close together.

"Can we go in?" Joanna looked at Duwei. She was a bit nervous. "What if the other side has bad intentions?"

The situation, indeed, was a bit uncanny.

"It's a dead end even if we stay in here." Duwei lightly replied. Then, he waved at Vivian, who immediately walked to his side.

"Do you trust me?"

Vivian nodded her head vigorously. Duwei held Vivian's hand and sincerely looked at her; then, he turned around and walked into the wall.

Vivian took a deep breath and muttered, "Oh Almighty God, please bless the poor little Vivian and Duwei... Oh... and my sister as well!"

Joanna saw the two go into the wall, gritted her teeth, and followed.

In retrospect, this is what transpired: Duwei took Vivian, and Vivian took Joanna.

The situation was mind boggling because, just then, three humans had actually walked into a wall. The cave walls looked like the surface of the water when those three walked through it. After they had passed through, the wall naturally

restored its calm and turned back into a solid cave!

For Duwei and the group, it felt like they were walking into a nightmare.

On the other side, it was so dark that they couldn't see any light; it was so quiet that they couldn't hear any noise. The group could only viscerally walk straight based on intuition. However, Duwei wasn't even sure if they were walking in the right direction.

The other side must be using some kind of magic trick. What if the other side decided to withdraw the magic when they were halfway down the path? Would they be stuck inside the stone forever, then?

Duwei pondered, how long do we have to stay in the dark?

Suddenly, in front of the group, something was released and became bigger!

It was another cave which was a few times bigger than the previous one.

Inside that big cave, there was a human standing in the middle.

The human was wearing a long black gown, and a tall pointy hat. He looked extremely dry and thin. To Duwei's surprise, the human was floating above the ground!

"Hey, it's you, isn't it? You are the one who led us in here?" Duwei asked.

That human didn't reply. Instead, he raised his hand and pointed his finger to signal something.

A big cave, dim lighting, cold air, a human floating from the ground while wearing a black gown... This situation was definitely frightening. Even Duwei couldn't help but feel dry in his throat.

"You are... scared."

The same shriveled, dead voice commanded, "Why?"

Duwei took a deep breath and gritted his teeth. "We should be the one to ask why. Why have you led us here?"

That human didn't respond.

Duwei braced up and asked "You must be the host here! Our raft got flipped in the sea. Did you do that? Or, does that monster who did that belong to you? At

any rate, we fell into the sea, and the whirlpool brought us into the cave. Again, did you do that? Where are we? Who are you? Why did you do this to us?"

No response.

Finally, there was an old "mwahaha" laugh. Even God could testify that Duwei had never heard a laugh that sounded so malevolent and repulsive!

"Stupid human..." That old voice replied. "You should thank me for saving you... If I hadn't casted the magic, you would have been eaten by it already."

The reply stunned Duwei's group!

"You mean... you saved us? What is this 'it' that you speak of?" Duwei's heart was pounding. "And who are you? Where are we?"

Another set of "mwahaha" laugh came from the old man.

That human floated towards Duwei until he was only a few steps away from the group. Duwei could finally see his face!

It was an inordinately white face! Everyone in Duwei's group was horrified... The face was so white that it looked transparent! Without exaggeration, the skin on his face was almost semi transparent! You could actually see the bones through the skin on his face!

Without any exception, anyone who has seen this face would forever have a nightmare!

Duwei bit the bullet and endured; however, the two girls on the back were terrified.

Facing someone whose face was covered with dry skin. Indeed, due to the epidermis' transparency, a skeletal face was revealed. Duwei somehow managed to keep calm, and managed to let out a few squeaks. "Please, who are you? And where we are?"

Indeed, Duwei's attitude had made a conspicuous change. He was now servilely polite.

"Can't you ask meaningful questions?" The old man had a mocking expression.

Under his black gown, the old man lightly rouse his arms.

A swarm of lights like a moving cluster of stars rapidly came out from his hands! The swarm of lights caught the attention of Duwei's group.

In this empty cave, a set of candle lights suddenly appeared on the wall! The candle lights flickered, immediately brightening the cave.

Then, at the direction of the light, a stone table, a set of chairs and a stone cabinet suddenly appeared.

These objects which appeared out of thin air were opulently sublime. In the end, a few stone doors appeared on the cave wall as well.

"Please take a seat. You are my guests." This old man pointed to the stone chairs "We can talk about it slowly."

Then, he thought, "Oh, let me guess what we are missing... Oh, I know."

He raised his head and looked up at the ceiling. After slightly raising his finger, a ray of light came out from his fingertip and shot toward the top of the cave.

Duwei's group was shocked because the top of the cave began crumbling!

Instantly, the top of the cave stopped falling, turning the dome shaped top into a flat ceiling. Moreover, a ray of light slowly illuminated from the ceiling; there seemed to be an exorbitant, gold chandelier. The twelve candles lightly swayed.

Duwei's group was gobsmacked!

Especially, Vivian and Joanna-because they were both geniuses in magic, they understood the strength of the old man the best.

His magic was marvelous and overwhelming!

"My little guests, what else do you want?" That man sounded unconcerned.

"... Food, and fresh water." Duwei testingly said. "We haven't eaten for days."

"..." The guy laughed. Fortunately, he didn't laugh out loud; it was a silent chuckle. A skeleton's restrained guffaw clearly does not make observers feel comfortable.

"I'm sorry but I can't do it." The guy shook his head. His laugh was helpless. "My magic can create anything in here... food and fresh water excepted. What

you see in here are magic illusions: the table, the chairs, and the lights. They can trick your eyes, and your sense of touch. However, I can't create food and fresh water because I cannot trick your stomach. Unfortunately, I can't help alleviate your hunger and thirst."

He looked apologetic.

But Duwei thought that the old man was powerful enough!

"Vivian, can you use your magic to create all the objects in the room?" Duwei lightly asked the silly little girl next to him.

Vivian shook her head immediately "Not even our teach-teacher can!"

Duwei looked at Joann, who said in reply "Maybe this magician is a God?"

"Oh, white haired little lady! What did you say?" The old man had heard Joanna. "You presumed that I was a god! Ah, if it were as you said..."

He floated closer to Joanna; his tone was serious and deep, "So, can you tell me who you think god is?"

Joanna was a bit nervous. Her body unconsciously leaned backward. "God... God is God! He created the world and everything....."

Not waiting Joanna to finish her speech, the man was suddenly enraged!

As his gown suddenly bloated, he gave out a ferocious roar.

"Lie!!!!!!!!!!!"

That roar vibrated the cave. It even made Duwei feel a bit dizzy!

It was clear that the man in front of them, who not had a ghastly face, had become extremely hostile.

In order to placate the old man, Duwei carefully replied, "So mister... what do you know about the 'truth'?"

This question constantly calmed the man. He put away his arm, looked at Duwei and said, "Now is not the time to talk about this."

The guy moved back a bit, looked at the three people in front of him, and said "Tell me your names ,my little guests."

“Why?” Joanna asked.

“Because this is the basic thing to do to show respect to the host.” That man laughed slightly condescendingly.

Without any hesitation, Duwei immediately shouted “Duwei Rawling, eldest son of Earl Raymond, Deputy General of the Imperial Kingdom.”

Vivian then reported her name, followed by Joanna, who hesitatingly yelled, “Joanna!”

“Ah, good.” The host smiled “A nobleman and two magicians. This time the guests are more interesting than the previous ones.”

“So, what’s your name?” Duwei smiled at him “As a host, you should show some basic respect to your guests as well.”

“Me?” The guy’s tone deepened. “My name is irrelevant. If you must know, my name is... Chris El Douri Sauniere Allah Bart Chilla Iglar.” He spoke his extremely long name in one go, it made Duwei and the group dizzy.

At last, the man moved to the subject “... Actually, I’m not the host in here. I’m just a servant. I’m the most loyal servant!”

Servant ?

A servant who owned these supreme magical powers? Who could afford to own a servant like this?!

“So... Your master is...” Duwei asked carefully, his tone was utterly venerating.

After all, even a blind person could see this guy’s strength!

“My master...” The man laughed, offering a twisted smile. “You must know his name, although his has many different names from books... But, common people like calling him...”

He paused and smiled.

“The Devil.”



# Chapter 37 - The Legend

A devil's servant?!

If there is a man who suddenly come to you and say that he is a devil's servant, then you will think he is mad.

But if he shows you an amazing magic of going through walls, if he can use magic to create a magnificent chandelier, delicate candlesticks and a lot of types of furniture in an empty cave, if he can make a cold cave into a warm room in an instant, then would you still think that the "devil's servant" is nonsense?

Duwei wanted to laugh, but did not laugh out loud. Apparently, the two girls around him didn't look so good.

Anyone knows that in front of a super magician, no one could make a joke!

"ha...haha..." Duwei felt himself that his laughter had no vigor: " You, the devil's servant....why did you take us here? "

"You can call me Chris ." The devil's servant gave a glance at Duwei. His eyes were cold and only then did Duwei come to know that his eyes had different colours! One eye was green and the other was black!

"...Well, Mr. Chris." Duwei took a deep breath: " You, the so-called devil's servant, why did you invite us here, what on earth are you willing to do?"

Chris did not reply. He gently reached on the other side of the rectangular stone table: "Mr. Young Noble! You tell me, what do you think about the history? "

Duwei, with a fast beating heart, remarked casually: "the history... it is not more than a lie written by winners."

"Ah....interesting. " Chris smiled: "This lovely young noble, in fact, theses days I kept close eyes on you, I am especially interested in you. You have a very interesting point of view. For example, you and the Sorceress had a dispute on the island, at that time you said.... Ah, right! You said 'there is no so-called justice and injustice. Who has a hard fist always has justice and who has a hard fist is always right' didn't you say so? "

Duwei nodded the head: "Not exactly, but I meant that."

"Then I have one request. Can you tell me how do you think of history according to your point of view ?"

Duwei thought for a moment...How should I say? But he still said

carelessly.

“Well, in my opinion, the so-called justice and injustice are all different, according to your standpoint. The victor is justice! The loser is injustice! The history is always written by the winners and the losers have no right to say a word, but only to accept that he is injustice. This is the most simple way of the world.”

“Very good!” Chris, obviously was very satisfied, suddenly folded his arms across his chest and lifted his head with closed eyes to sigh deeply: “The great master, I finally found a believer in you again.”

“Wait! You say...believer? No, no I am not a believer of evil.” Duwei refuted. “I am not a believer in anyone! I don’t believe in God, I don’t believe in the devil.”

“Then what do you believe ? ” Chris smiled wicked.

“I believe in myself....I only believe in myself!” Duwei shouted.

At the same time the Joanna and Vivian, behind him, were amazed and covered their mouths with their hand. Joanna even shouted in a low voice: “Oh, my God!”

Chris laughed more cheerfully: “ You see, you said that you don’t believe anyone, but yourself. It is the classical doctrine of faith in the devil!”

Duwei was rather confused.

“Well, we won’t say about is anymore.” Chris came close little by little: “With your interesting viewpoint on the history, as well as, the winner and the loser, you may think about how you can say about the God and devil.”

“Do I need to say?” Duwei laughed: “IF two strong warrior fight, the winner is God and the loser is the devil! The winner gains everything, the right to say and write the history, but the loser has to only accept consequences..... Am I wrong? So the God and the devil are not distinguished by whether he is good and evil, but whether he is the winner and the loser.”

Joanna and Vivian were still uneasy.....to their opinion, the viewpoint of Duwei was too audacious! Even heresy and traitorous!!

If anybody heard this, he would surely be sentenced to be burnt at the stakes by temple judge!

But Duwei could not consider so much at the moment. He muttered: “Winner and loser....ah I said winner and loser....So Mr. Chris, you.....”

“I am a loser.” Chris dropped his head: “It is a pity that I have lost my

master in the last battle, and I am also a loser....this is, in fact, a prison and I am the prisoner here. ”

Chris continued slowly: “I have been on the island for a very long time, so long that I am even beginning to forget some memories.”

“You said....island?” Duwei asked immediately: “You are prisoned on that island...then are we also on the island? You took us back to the island. ”

“To be exact, we are ‘inside the island’.” Chris laughed: “Or we are inside its body.”

Duwei turns ashen.

“You don’t understand...” Chris sighed: “What you are calling the monster is this island! This is not an island, but a monster. These days you have lived on the back of the monster! And I am prisoned in its body....it is responsible for guarding me!”

After having said so, Chris flicked the sleeves to stop Joanna who was about to say something: “No, no, you don’t speak, first listen what I say!”

“A very long time, so long that I have even forgotten how long I have been here.... But so far, you are not the first guests to come here. Once some other humans came to this island accidentally, and I saved them by taking into here. Some of them were wise and some were fool. And you, lovely young noble! I think the two sorceress with you are the latter, and you are Wise! ”

“You said who is a fool!” Joanna burst out her anger: “You, the devil’s servant....”

“Ah, the magician got angry.” Chris is still calm, and he glanced at the Joanna quietly. His black and green eyes were as if they could emit light! He gently asked Joanna: “The God, he claims that all power of everything comes from him! All of everything! The power of the nature, the power of magic. So you, magicians are all believer in God, right? But...I, the devil’s servant, am not the believer in God! Please tell me, where my magic power come from? Lovely young magician, can you answer me that?”

Angry Joanna, suddenly, became speechless!

Chris sighed and gave a pitying look to the sorceress: “You can’t answer me? Then I will give you the answer.....The God who you believe in, he....lies! The power of the nature comes from him? This is the downright lie!”

Joanna’s face turned very embarrassed, she felt her belief was overthrown! But she could not utter any words to contradict him!

Yes, since she had received the first magic education, she had been taught the most basic belief!

The world is created by God, all the power of the nature is from God! The magicians should devote believes to God. Thus they can lend the power of the nature from God!

This is the magic!

But now.....this devil's servant who never believes in God....has so powerful magic....how can I explain this? His magic power is also what God gave him?!

If not.....how can I explain it?!

“Look, what I said is right. Some of you are wise...and some fool.” Chris said in an old and weak voice, but his words pierced the heart of Joanna like a needle. “You are not the first sorceress to come here, so it is not the first time for me to see such a face expression as yours when faced with this question.”

Chris looked at Duwei. Looking at Duwei, his voice and eyes became slightly calm: “Lovely young noble, you are wise. So I will use the wise way to talk with you. I have been here too long, waiting for a wise man to come. I am always happy to have a deal with them.”

“.....Deal ? ”

“Right, have a deal.” Chris smiled. Then he knocked on his forehead: “Let me see, who was the last man to have a deal with me...Ah, right! His name was Aragon Roland!”

“Aragon Roland?!!”

Two sorceress, who were quite, sent out a scared scream at the same time!!!

Just because of this, the name resounded too loudly!!

He was known as one of few paladins with top power in the hundreds of years of history! He was also known as one of the super magicians with top power in the hundreds of years of history!

Aragon Roland, his name was a legend! He was the only one in the history, that practised both magic and martial art. He was the only one who had reached top level of martial art and magic to be a master!!

Joanna, herself, was one of the Aragon's admirer.... so she had selected to practise both magic and martial art!

But more important, the reason that made them so surprised is not just because Aragon Roland was a legendary top master.....

The more important reason is that.....

He is Aragon Roland!

He is now the first emperor of Roland empire!

A great emperor!! He led army and after decades of war he has unified countless small countries, cities, city unions, kingdoms and principalities to found the empire that covers entire continent!!

“Don’t be so nervous, Aragon Roland was the last human that came here and had a deal with me.”

## Chapter 38 - Heart of a king

“Aragon Roland drifted here on a wrecked boat. It was a pity that his boat approached the island. As a result, the whole boat was swallowed up. So I took him here and we had a deal.” Chris said rather unclearly. But such hint was enough!

Duwei, of course, read about the history of the Roland empire! When he was a child, his first teacher, Earl Raymond, taught him many things and he also read the emperor’s biography of the founding of the empire. He read it thoroughly.

Aragon Roland, the great founder of the Roland empire....his life, on Duwei’s opinion, seemed to be the one of the book of legends!

This Aragon had the same tough luck and experiences as most of the heroes in a book. The catchphrase of that period:

‘His luck is so strong that it has almost gone against time! His life is harder than a cockroach to determine!’

His biography has described in details the experiences of the first emperor who founded the empire. Aragon was born in a declining aristocratic family. He wasn’t even the eldest son of the family, but third, so he had no title in inheritance. Since he was a child, he liked adventurous activities.

When he was 16 years old, he left home and traveled alone through adventures. Aragon had the experience of the life of a mercenary, and he was a young man full of adventurous fantasy.

And that was the most adventurous era in Middle Kingdom. It was different from now when the entire Middle Kingdom is covered with the Roland empire banners.

At that time, Middle Kingdom was in the age of civil wars between countless small and big countries. Civil wars were never ceased, small and big countries occupied, conflicted, plotted, used tricks on each other.....we can say that the era was the era of heroes and legends.

Sixteen-year-old Aragon spent several years between mercenaries, and then he was attracted by the marine adventure.

At that time, Aragon was twenty-one years old and was a good swordsman. And during his several years of mercenary life, he had saved a

certain amount of money. He invested all his property to a merchant ship and proceeded the oceanic trade adventure.

In his first experience with the sea, Aragon had to suffer difficulties. His ship encountered perils and went down the sea. Only he miraculously escaped the fate and saved his life!

So all the historians says that.....if there had not been this shipwreck, he could have become a great marine merchant, instead of the emperor!

However, because of this tragedy, his dream of marine trade went shattered into pieces. Aragon returned home and was inherited a part of the property after father's death.

As his father was an inferior noble with a small title, so his property could not be much. Aragon again did something that the others could think that he was dissipating the fortune....he sold out all his property and organized a small private army.

Everyone mocked at his decision because his country was peaceful and far away from war, so any private army was not needed.

Aragon was confident! In less than half a year, the war will arrive. This small country will be involved in a war between two powers, and will be swallowed up in a month. And then again two powers will go to the war to take the prey back.

Two brothers of Aragon were killed in the chaos of war, and their manors and farms were plundered to ashes.

Aragon, with his private army, joined to an army of a great country and was awarded a high military position.

After that, Aragon showed his great strength!

He showed a very strong military ability. On the battlefield, he killed the enemy generals with one move, and he become the most famous General in Middle Kingdom. Aragon accumulated innumerable exploits in the war....

After the war, he received a title and manor....it was much more larger than the old manor of his father!

Later, Aragon refused the summon of that great country and quitted the army. He turned to advance in the magician union..... in less than a month, he got the magician qualification!

After three years, the war broke out again, at that time Aragon was already a senior magician!

Throughout history, no one could do this!

Once a man asked Aragon why he had become a magician, then the answer of this young noble was: My army needs the collaboration of magicians in the battle....it is a pity that magicians are rare, I can not muster magicians. So I can only learn the magic.

When the war broke out again, the country, where Aragon lived, was in great danger. Enemy besieged it for more than three months. At that time, the king ordered all nobles in his country to lead their private army to fight for the king.....but Aragon was the last to arrive.

At that moment, the friend and foe army fought to be completely exhausted.

There was no doubt that it was high time for Aragon.

In the final battle, Aragon killed the enemy general who was a great knight, again! And then Aragon cast a magic spell to nullify the magic of the enemy head magician!

The war situation changed.....the war was over, but the power of the weakened country was almost in the Aragon's hands! At that time, the king had to award Aragon the title of Duke.

A year later.....the king died of an illness (on this issue, historians have the dispute. Most think that the death of the king is too 'coincidental'. In the peak period of Aragon's prestige, the king died, and he had no immediate descendant. So the throne inheritance issue was in a dilemma. Although there are no clear historical records, but the words are implicitly suggesting us that these events were all related to the great emperor. )

The final benefited was, with no doubt, Aragon.

He married the collateral niece of the ex-king, and made her queen!

Three years later, the queen died of an illness, and Aragon was crowned king!

In the later history.

Aragon Roland was known to be an invincible commander. His army was invincible and occupied countless countries. Less than 15 years later, he unified entire Middle Kingdom, and everywhere was covered with thorns flower flags! He founded the great empire that existed so far !

All of these are like a tale in the storybook, aren't they?

Duwei tried to recall all that he could remember about the lives of the first emperor....



Apparently, according to what Chris said....Aragon had seen this devil's servant in the first marine adventure that was unsuccessful.....

Aragon, suddenly, burst onto the continent under civil wars, and it was after that marine adventure!

Obviously, the first emperor must be still in dealing with the devil's servant and gained some kinds of benefits!

He thought about the miraculous life of Aragon and his feats.....

Now, when the devil's servant proposed a "deal" ..... his heart, which had been calm for more than ten years, suddenly started beating!

"Lovely young noble, your heart is beating fast." Chris just smiled.

Duwei took a deep breath: "Dear Mr. Chris....my heart is beating because I am lured by the devil!"

Chris had a more strange smile on his face, and he suddenly waved his hand gently. Vivian and Joanna who were behind him, softly fainted down at the same time.

"No one should know about our deal." Chris smiled: "When they wake up, they will forget everything happened here and even about me."

The opportunity is here now!

Duwei began to have short breath: "A deal....tell me, what can you give me....what do you want instead?"

Chris did not reply his question, he slowly said: "Don't want to know what I gave to Aragon?"

"I think I can guess a little." Duwei hesitated for a moment and answered slowly.

What did Chris give to Aragon?

What Duwei could think out first was the great strength of Aragon! His powerful martial art as a paladin! His powerful magic as a senior magician.

Both had made Aragon be the top power on the continent! He could kill the most strong enemy warriors in the battlefield, and could defeat the enemy magicians, as well! He was known to be an invincible commander, and millions of soldiers were ready to fight for him to death!

At the same time..... Duwei had a doubt of one thing.

It was....on the historical records.....Aragon always on the countless military expeditions in his life, and seemed to have no injury! When he got

old, he had no disease or pain. But he slept to death in one night.

His life was almost perfect.

“In addition to his powerful martial art and magic, did you give him an almost invulnerable body?” Duwei inquired.

“Not exactly, but a body without any fatal weak points.” Chris smiled: “When Aragon left here, I took his heart out from his body. Even after he left, his heart never left this place. So he never got hurt! Even a fatal injury or fatal poison was unable to hurt his heart, because his heart was here with me.”

There have been convulsions around the mouth and eyes of Duwei!

Heart?

“You will need my heart?” Duwei looked at Chris a little maliciously: “What are you going to do with my heart? Surely you won’t have it for dinner, will you? Fried or grilled?”

“Neither of them.” Chris did not seem to notice the mock of Duwei, and he just reply calmly: “I still have his heart with me, just for a souvenir. A heart of true king....a heart of King....is there more interesting collection than this?”

Duwei sighed.....it would not be so simple as Chris said, but as he was not telling the truth, he had no way to know the truth.

“Then you only took the heart of Aragon?” Duwei frowned: “Anything more?”

The answer of Chris was simple: “No more, only his heart.”

Looking at the confused eyes of Duwei, Chris added with a smile: “I, personally, made a king and had his heart in my hand....this is the pleasure that you can never imagine, you young noble!”

Duwei sighed.

“Well, what do you want to take from me?” Duwei smiled: “If you want my heart, I am not sure I can agree.”

“No, no, no. One heart of a king as a collection is enough for me. I don’t like to repeat things.” Chris smiled: “Besides....such a long time has passed, and my power is now fading and weakening. I am afraid I can’t give you the same strong ability as Aragon. When Aragon left, he took half of my magic power with him. Otherwise, how a knight could be an excellent magician so easily?”

That was how....Duwei blew a whistle.

“Later, Aragon, that guy, broke the agreement. He did not accomplish the final clause of our agreement. ” Chris shook his head: “So I come to know that having a deal is very risky for me. Even if you do not keep the promise after getting out from here, I can do anything. Because I am a prisoner here, I can’t get out of this island. So, after the experience of deal with Aragon, I came to a conclusion that I will give you the power not at once, but separately in several times .”

“For example?”

“For example, I can let you enjoy a little sweet taste, my dear young noble. After that, you will do what I ask you to do. When accomplished, you come back to me, and I give you a new reward!” Chris said with a sly laugh.

“A sweet taste, can you give me a sweet taste?”

“Whatever you want.” Chris had more wicked face then !

His voice had a strange temptation!

“I can give you everything! Although it can be not so great, but it is enough to make anyone tempted! If you like girls, then I can give you ‘eyes of enchantment ’! So when you stare at any Girl, and she will fall in love with you madly. For example, if you like these two sorceress, then you stare at them, and they will be even willing to show nude dance in front of you! If the girl you like is a saintess who dedicated herself to the God, you just give a look at her, and she will take off her saint cloth to show her body to you.”

Uh...seems to have perturbation in mind.....

Duwei sighed....this is indeed a good condition, but not enough to make Duwei agree.

“You know I am a noble, and I think I am not in lack of girls.” Duwei expressed his meaning indirectly: “And I am not so fond of girls.”

“Wel...if you don’t need girls, then I can give you the heart of a dragon. Your current body looks weak.....um, if you have the heart of a dragon, your body will be strong at once! You can gain a great physical strength like a dragon! You will be an invincible warrior! I can also give you a small gift...for example, what allows you to use a small part of the dragon magic.”

Duwei imagined himself with strong muscle....

Oh, forget it....

“I am sorry. I am not interested in the war. The strength does not give me security....in fact, from a historical point of view, a strong warrior plays only

the role of subordinate for the true man with power.”

“Then I will give you power.” Chris in deep thought said: “If you like the power, I can give you a heart that can see the mind of others. You can see all disguise of opponent, you can hear the voice from the heart of the opponent! This will let you take superiority in politics...With your clever head, you will be able to become a man of great power soon! ”

“I am a son of the vice-commander of the empire supreme command.” Duwei twitched his mouth: “I am the first successor of the Rawling family, and you think I worry about my future position and power? My father will become the empire’s military commander soon, or even the prime minister. I will surely get all these as an inheritance. I am sorry, your proposal can not move my heart. ”

Actually, Duwei was lying.

But Chris have always been on the island, so he could not know that Duwei was deprived of the inheritance right within his family!

Even the powerful and clever man like Chris, thousands of years old monster, got annoyed.

“You young noble! What on earth do you want then!”

# Chapter 39 - Bless of God

Shot!

Goal in!

Inter Milan leads AC Milan by 2-1!

Great Grosso, he succeeded the glorious tradition of Italian football! Facchetti, Maldini, they are possessed by spirits.....they are not human beings! They are not a human beings!

“What a mess...” Duwei frowned watching TV: “What is wrong with this thing, how do i watch my broadcasting of the World Cup series?”

He went to the television and patted it with force, and then pulled out the a pack of cigarettes from the tea table and lit it up.....after some puffs.....

So good.... I haven't smoked for a long time, in the Roland Empire there was no cigarette.....

Huh? What am I talking about? Roland Empire?

Duwei felt a little confused in his consciousness....and then a sudden flashback came into his memory!

After that everything in front of him: living room, sofa, tea table, TV and wardrobe of his house....suddenly all twisted up! The last thing around him twirled and twirled very fast....became a huge whirlpool, and Duwei himself was standing in this whirlpool. He was immediately sucked in.....

Damn it! My Milan Derby game....Let me at least finish watching a

Bang!

It was as if there have been a clap of thunder in his head, immediately as if someone beat drum repeatedly near him....

Duwei felt a great headache....Painful! So Painful! His headache almost shattered his head!

“Ah...” Duwei could not help moaning, he held his head with two hands and came to know that his hair was wet!

How is that?

Duwei opened his eyes.....

He finally woke up.

Living room, sofa, TV, Milan Derby.....all was a dream.

Duwei was now on a raft. He was all wet with messy hair and it was a bit cold.

He rubbed his head hard but still he felt great pain, he thought that in the previous life of he had suffered a severe migraine headache.

Duwei began to massage the acupoints on his head to kill the pain.....but soon, he felt a lump on his head!

Just in the middle of the top forehead!

Yes, just in the middle! Gently pushing aside the hair, he could obviously feel the small bump on his head!

It was a horn!

The stupor daze finally went away, Duwei sighed, and recalled the deal between Chris and him!

As I thought.....horn.....haha now I have a horn on my head.

The horn was hard and cold, it was as if joined perfectly with the skin and bone of his head....it did not look like... um, it did not look to be transplanted the day before yesterday.

Fortunately, the horn was not so big, it was only in a finger node size (about one-third of a finger), like a size of a thumb.

Duwei repeatedly touched the horn on the head: "Alas, I wonder what magic material Chris used for it.....it doesn't look like a bone..."

The sea was calm at the moment, there was boundless sea around him. Obviously he has already escaped far away from that terrible island!

The raft that he was on, was the one he had made on the island! The same one! Even the rough stitch of cloth was the same! (That was stitched with a small sharp branch as needle and tree bark as thread.)

Wasn't this raft been wrecked and sank into the sea? Chris have incredible powers to recover it, his magic is really great!

And.... the two girls.

Joanna and Vivian, the two sorceress were also on the raft. Two of them, hugging each other with locked eyes, were having a sweet sleep.

The eyelids of them quivered, evidently they were to wake up. Duwei

touched his hair in a hurry. His hair was jumbled, and he thought for a while, then he tore down a piece from his cloth and made something like a sailor hat.

It was Vivian who woke up first. After opening her eyes, she looked at Duwei for a while: "Uh..I...how long did I sleep....."

Duwei smiled: "Not long."

Joanna suddenly let out a scream: "Ah!! The waves! The waves! The storm?"

Duwei blinked his eyes, and looked at her holding back his laughter: "Which strom? Which waves?"

Joanna looked confused: "I remember we had a huge waves and storms... and our raft sank."

Duwei looked at Joanna's face and sighed. He offered his hand to touch her forehead: "Do you have a fever?" he pointed the surroundings: "You see, we are on the raft, aren't we? Jeez...you must be tired, so you had a nightmare."

Then Vivian opened her mouth: "i....i...i also had a dream of storm.....our raft, sa...sank...."

Two girls looked each other with eyes full of doubt.

Duwei sighed with relief without being noticed. What Chris said was true. They could not remember what happened when they wake up.

Not clear what kind of magic did the devil's servant used, but he really erased the memory of others!!

Joanna sprang up and contacted her eyebrows: "Really, there is no strom....but my dream was very awful...it was like reality! "

With her pretty but serious face and her brows knitted, she tried to think out, but in vain. Vivian, with her wide-opened eyes blinkingly, looked at Duwei, and her face was as if she was fooled.

"Well..." Duwei laughed with guilty conscience: "I think you are very tired .....to say about the dream, you probably had the same dream....I also had a dream relevant to you."

"What?" Two girls opened mouth at the same time.

Duwei smiled: "I had a dream about the big comfortable bed in my castle, there I laid down between you, with one hand hugging Vivian and the other hand Joanna.... "

Duwei, while saying, put naturally puts his hands on their shoulders.

Vivian blushed immediately and dropped her head down. And Joanna also blushed not because she was shy, but mostly due to anger!

Skelp! She hit his hand down her shoulder, and gave him a kick.

Duwei was nearly kicked down to the sea, and smiled bitterly: "It was just a dream, why are you so angry?"

"Shut up, you don't need to say about your dream." Joanna's face flushed a little.

Then she looked around and suddenly exclaimed: "I ....we have escaped? We left that island!!"

Looking around the wide sea, three of them cheered loudly....but Duwei was the only one who feigned.

"Try your magic." Duwei smiled.

Both Vivian and Joanna could use magic.....but it seemed to have some problems.

Vivian tried to use magic of creating wind to accelerate the sail, but only cool breeze came to blow the hair of the beauties tousled up.

Joanna, who was impatient, soon flew away from there....unfortunately, she fell into the sea after a while of flight!

Duwei bound empty gourd around his body and swam to Joanna. When she was saved, she had drunk a lot of water.

Salty and bitter sea water made he sick, so she vomited for a while, after climbing on the raft.

"Well, you two sorceress...it seems your magic restored a bit, but it is not up to normal level. Just a little restored compared to when you were on the island." Duwei held his laugh and saw Joanna: "For example, Joannna....when you were on the island, you could fly just more than ten meters, but now you can fly just about 20 meters!"

"You! You are making fun of me! Wow...." she just said back the half sentence, suddenly she felt sick again and laid there to continue vomit.

Duwei smiled with narrowed eyes: "I think, even though we left the island, the suppression to you magic would go on for some period and will be fading slowly. I guess, you can get back your normal magic about two days later."



“You...How do you know that! Humph!” Joanna asked coldly.

“I guessed. ” Duwei shrugged.

Actually, it was what Chris told him.

Two days were not so tough to wait....only they hoped to be lucky not to run into a storm. And also, they have to suffer hunger for these two days as well.

On the island, three of them had to eat only roots of plants. This time on the raft, Duwei thought many ways to dig out what little food was left. But that was not enough and could last for one day only.

After sunset, they ran out of food.

These three were young man and women and their bodies were under growth, so they had a big appetite. But every day they could not eat fully. They could endure till this day, but they have already reached their limit.

Duwei couldn't help to start think of the small cage hanging on the waist of Vivian!

That was a magic monster that looked like a fat round meat!

Vivian already knew enough about Duwei! She saw that Duwei was more frequently looking the cage on her waist, everyone could know what he was thinking about.

She was frightened, held the cage tightly, and kept looking at Duwei with pleading eyes.

Oh almighty God.... please bless the poor little Vivian...and the poor chirp....

Finally, after so many days, the Almighty God heard the Vivian's prayer for the first time in that evening!

Away in the distance of the sea, there was a light! That light was coming closer and closer....Duwei saw with his own eyes, that was a boat!

Suddenly, their tired bodies were filled with energy! Joanna and Vivian jumped up, waved and cheered to the boat direction.

Duwei was staring at the boat with calm for a while.....

It came closer and closer, it was a ketch. The boat was not so big and was slightly worn out....but something made him startled.....

On the flagpole, there was a black flag! The flag of a black background with the design of a skull, below the skull there were two swords!

.....the Jolly Roger?

Duwei's mouth was smiling.... the God doesn't treat me so bad....he actually sent me a pirate ship!

## Chapter 40 - Duwei's First Fleet

The pirates on the boat could also see the three people on the raft. With the boat getting close, few sailors had already stood along the boat side, they were quite interested in the three individuals on the raft including Duwei.

Two female magicians also thought that the boat was crapped...It didn't look like a merchant ship, it's a little bit old. Though there were few cannons on the boat, the flag of the Imperial Navy could not be found.

"Hey! Look, there are a few little fellows...Oh, also with two women! Hahahaha..." The sailor on the boat screamed, followed by a burst of laughter. More pirates rushed to the boat side to have a look of Duwei and the two girls on the raft.

Duwei sighed loudly and shouted, "We had a shipwreck, can you help us?"

They laughed louder and louder, obviously, they were full of malicious intentions.

Subsequently, a rope ladder was put down, Duwei sighed, and glanced at Joanna, Joanna understood his meaning and climbed first.

Joanna was a very strong woman. Although her magic power was not fully recovered, at least recovered to one-third that was nearly equivalent to the power of a low-level magician, meanwhile, she still had her burst of martial art skill!

Though with such level, it's not enough for fighting against other masters, but it's more than enough for fighting against dozens of little pirates.

Joanna climbed first, Duwei was the next, finally it was Vivian.

Those sailors stood around and laughed at these three youngsters, it seemed like they were the lambs on the fingertips.

"Look! Such pretty girls!"

"Absolutely! Look at the girl on the left, such long legs! Captain must like her much!"

"Haha. As I said, you are on the right boat!"

These guys were scruffy, and most of them were with barefoot. Their outfits are shabby with dirty faces. But they grinned at Vivian and Joanna creepily.

Vivian was scared, her courage was far from the power she got, she hid behind Duwei. Though Joanna didn't look good, she was in bad mood already.

Even the Imperial Barrack, these violent beauties dared to attack, not to mention the little pirate on this ship.

“Silence!”

A hoarse voice came from inside, then was the sound from the boots, a tall man came out. He wore in a scruffy Imperial Navy uniform without the badges. This uniform was little dirty, but the shoes were well-polished.

His waist was also had a long and sharp sword like the Imperial Navy Officer. He wore a captain hat, with one hand on his hips and carrying a pocket watch on his other hand.

This man should be the captain. Although he was tall, he was so ugly with triangular eyes, garlic nose, and moustache...The first impression came up in Duwei's mind was obscene.

“Keep Quiet! Don't terrify my guests!”: The Captain smiled maliciously, then glanced at Duwei and the girls, when he saw the eyebrows of Joanna and Vivian, apparently there was a sense of immorality blooming. But when he saw Joanna's armor, he was a bit startled.

Then Captain released a little bit and thought, “She is only a young girl, her power must be weak? Huh...she probably comes from some noble family.”

He totally ignored Duwei.

The clothes on Duwei was already torn, his feet were bare, scruffy, his hair were messy. His body was tied with five to six empty gourds (Those used to remain afloat.). He looked like a wild man.

“Welcome on board...Let me introduce myself, I am the captain on this boat, you can call me Captain Morales or just call me Captain directly. “ He talked proudly. “ I never expected in this boring weather I can meet such beautiful ladies...Oh, my room is at the back, I think perhaps these two ladies would like to change their clothes...then we can have a nice meal! Right?”

Obviously, they hadn't eaten for many days, even the two female magicians were very pretty, they looked pale and thin.

The captain couldn't wait to thank God!

Having bad luck in recent days.

Firstly, the order from the Lille province let the whole Eastern Naval Fleet of the Imperial kingdom patrolled within the sea area nearby without knowing what the Navy was doing!

Obviously, this worsened the life of the pirates. Few days ago, this pirate ship met the warship of the Imperial Navy, after a hasty panic fight, the captain immediately ordered to escape. With the light boat, the speed could be slightly faster. The warship had been following the Captain's ship for two days! One was escaping while the other one was chasing at the back, until this afternoon, they finally escaped from the warship under the mysterious fog.

They were very tired in these days.

He didn't expect God actually sent few maidens to them as reward...

Oh, look at these two pretty chicks, they are much better than the prostitutes at the Port! If they were in nude and clean, lying on the bed, that should be a wonderful scene!

"Come on! Pretty ladies." Captain was a little bit slack, he even pulled Joanna and said, "Pretty ladies should have suffered i will take you for some rest on my boat..."

When the captain touched Joanna's shoulder, Duwei had already sighed, and he closed his eyes....

Scream!

There was a light coming from Joanna's body! That is the skills of a warrior who is above the intermediate level!

Accumulating Power!!

Captain screamed and his body was on the sky, his beautiful hat fell on the deck...and he...

Did you see the parabola in the air? Duwei smiled, with a sound of a splash, captain had already fallen into the water...

Everyone was shocked!

Soon, the pirates had come out of their trance! all of them picked their weapons and rushed over!

Joanna hummed...her anger in these few days finally found a way to be released!

Her hands were empty, she didn't take any weapon, she just readily grasped, and caught up the guy who rushed towards her and treated him as

a human weapon!

After crying, screaming and banging, the sound of splashing in the sea increased.

While Duwei was counting from one to ten in his mind, one-third of the pirates and sailors were fallen into the sea!

“Good Job! Joanna, you may stop.” Duwei thought that this was enough.

Joanna refused to stop, she kicked the guy into the sea until no one was surrounding them...Those pirates were scared and ran away.

“I said stop!” Duwei frowned, he pulled Joanna’s shoulder slightly, Joanna angrily yelled,” We are not on the island, do you think that you still can order me!”

This woman grabbed the wrist of Duwei, Duwei did not resist, he just looked at Joanna’s eyes and whispered,” Look at me!”

Joanna startled! She could not help to look at Duwei’s eyes...

Is....illusion?

Joanna just felt that the eyes of this little boy have never....never.....never been so gorgeous!

His eyes seems were becoming black in color...a scary and creepy dark black color! It felt like there are limitless stars inside his eyes, if she kept on looking.....she felt as if everything would be sucked into it...

Joanna just glanced for one time, she felt relaxed suddenly, her hands were loosened too, she even didn’t notice that she could not control her body! She was looking at Duwei’s eyes quietly...

As if her soul has already been sucked into his eyes!

“I said, stop.” Duwei spoke very slowly, word by word, extremely clear! Just like engraving inside Joanna’s heart deeply.

“...understand.” Joanna agreed involuntarily, her voice was humble and gentle without any taste of domination.

“Great.” Duwei kept looking at Joanna’s eyes, his voice was so melodious and people could not help to listen to him for doing anything...

“Now, stand behind me, don’t do anything without my words.” Duwei whispered.

Joanna’s eyes showed a little bit hesitation, it seems her stubbornness was still struggling a bit, but she still succumbed to this kind of strange feeling

..... she felt too comfortable!

Joanna stood back behind Duwei honestly...escaped from the eyes of Duwei, Joanna felt her mind was relaxed a little bit! It seems like lack of slackness, everything became clear, but she still doubted...

What's going on? Why would I listen to what this guy said!

She felt angry of herself and wanted to question Duwei, but she can't resist and felt that if she resisted Duwei's order, she would feel bad...if she stood behind Duwei and listened to his order, she would feel happier.

It's strange.

Joanna felt strange and Duwei didn't give her the time to think, he smiled and said," Joanna, if you keep on fighting...I know you are so strong, perhaps, you will kick all the people into the sea...it doesn't matter, but the ship is so large, only three of us are not able to drive this ship! We too have to keep some people to help us! We still need these pirates."

Strange....why we need these pirates...one more day, I can fly back.

Joanna thought that, but she uncontrollably agreed," Ok."

Duwei picked up the captain hat from the floor and put it on his head...with this thing, his horn would not be seen by others.

"Listen, you filthy trash!" Duwei voiced up and looked around these frightened pirates.

They were really frightened! Joanna was so strong, they were not able to fight back.

"You all are a group of filthy trash! Parasite! A group of ordinary pirates!" Duwei was staring at these guys. "You rob, murder, plunder...all of you should be hanged by the gallows! Now, you all are my prisoner! Right! Now, this ship, and you, and everyone of you! All are captured by me!"

Duwei kicked the guy next to him, Joanna kicked him before and his leg was broken. Duwei stepped on him unceremoniously, the guy screamed, Duwei spoke to the pirates words by words,

"As prisoners, I have the right to dispose you! I can throw all of you into the sea and let you die now! I can also find a port and send all of you to the local army! Looking at you being hanged till die!" Duwei smiled," But I am kind! I can let all of you stay alive! But from now on, you are not the filthy pirates anymore! You are my slaves now, my servants! According to the Imperial Order, I, as a noble, I have the right to do anything to my prisoner!

Now, I forgive your sin, and incorporate all of you to be my slaves and servants! Understand?"

All of the pirates," ....."

"I ask again! If no one answer, you can jump into the sea and join your captain!" Duwei looked around," Understand?"

"Yes!" Everyone rushed to answer.

Duwei was satisfied," Now, clean the deck! Throw the bodies which lie on the deck into the sea!"

Without any hesitation, these pirates started!

These people are villains who clutched human lives, and now, for saving themselves, they immediately started without hesitation!

People were thrown into the sea one by one, Duwei then made his second order," Throw two lifeboats into the sea."

There were nearly twenty pirates busy with swimming, when they saw the lifeboats, they swam toward the boats quickly.

"Listen! I ought to kill you! But I am kind." Duwei was standing on the deck and looking at the pirates in the sea," Now, I can let you stay alive....these two boats are for you, you will not drown....for the rest, it all depends on your fate!"

There was a burst of scream, some were scolding and some were begging.

In the ocean, there was no food to eat, no water to drink, only got these two crappy boats...it was simply not possible to stay alive!

"Sure I can be more charitable..." Duwei pointed to the other way, he was cunning and said," There, on that way, there is an island, as long as you strive for boating, perhaps, you will arrive there tomorrow afternoon! Go ahead, this is my last kindness!"

Then, Duwei ignored the pirates and looked at the "servants" , he said," Food, and water....sooner the better! Understand my words?"

All the servants rushed to prepare the food immediately.

"Duwei.....you....you will not...." Vivian felt a bit sad and looked at Duwei.

"Too Cruel? " Duwei lightly said, "These guys are bad. No need to be charitable to them! They are pirates! My little Vivian, do you know what a pirate is? They sail and attack the merchant ship, kill the sailor, rob the goods, they even rape the women on the boat! They are the locusts on the



sea, murderers with bloody hands! Do you think that I need to be charitable to them?"

"But...." Vivian hesitated.

Duwei sighed when she looked at this simple girl, he whispered," Do you know...if this time they met normal people instead of us...you two ladies would be raped by them already!!"

This time, Joanna also glanced at her sister and said," He is right."

The food on board is not really nice, but since they had not eaten well since the last few days, this food is already nice for them!

Smoked meat, dried fish, and some simple dried vegetable, and a barrel of ale.

The two girls had already forgotten the manner and ate with Duwei

Would they worry that the pirates poisoned the food?

Duwei had been learning the pharmacy for many years.

After they were full and satisfied, Duwei called out all the sailors to the deck and talked.

"Now, I announce, you can join into my private fleet. You all are one of my warships of my Duwei Roland Fleet! Understand? I am a noble, according to the order, I can have my own army." Duwei thought for a few second," Oh, right, I also have to appoint a new captain..."

Duwei looked around and point to a man who was probably the most delicate among the group.

"You! Out! Tell me your name."

The man was shocked and walked further and looked at Duwei nervously," I, I am..."

"Wait." Duwei then said," Nevermind, since it is a new start, your name should be changed to a new one!"

This kid could not stop to show his pleasure.

"You, from now on, on this ship, your name will be called....Jack Sparrow! Understand? Captain Jack Sparrow! Well, this boat....from now on, is called "Black Pearl"!"

Looking at the crowd, Duwei could not stop laughing in his mind.

Black Pearl, Jack Sparrow, famous pirates of the Caribbean, hahaha, that's

the first start of my private fleet.

# Chapter 41 - Captain Jack Sparrow

Whilst Duwei seized the Captain Rooms, the two female magicians did a thing that made the pirates felt envy...

They took a shower!

How much fresh water could they possibly have in a boat while sailing? Only enough for people to drink! It's impossible to have any extra water for doing other things. Everyone including the Captain was dirty, no one was excluded. It was very normal that people couldn't take a shower for at least half a month.

Now, these two ladies used an entire four barrels of fresh water!

Duwei didn't stop them. His reasoning was very simple. "The amount of freshwater equipped is based on the number of people there were originally...now more than twenty people were kicked off the ship. So even if some water was wasted, there was still no need to worry about the shortage in the coming days."

He also understood why the ladies wanted to have a shower so badly.

Even Duwei felt itchy as he hadn't showered for many days, and he had also been swimming in the sea for many days....Sea water was salty, and after swimming in the sea water, the skin would turn dry and uncomfortable.

When the two female magicians were showering, Duwei also had some things to do.

Captain Jack Sparrow was standing in front of Duwei....He was such a pathetic guy, not only had his name been changed by Duwei, but his outfit was also changed to a strange set of clothing!

His head was wrapped with a red scarf, his beard was tied up by Duwei, and he also had deep eye shadow now (painted with the carbon on the boat). His clothes and boots were changed too, but since there was no gun in this world, Duwei could only do that much.

Then, Duwei ordered the guy to do different poses...

He had to say, in his previous life, in the famous movie "Pirates of the Caribbean", one of the characteristics of Captain Jack was his...Lunacy! A little bit of lunacy in a Captain, was charming indeed!

After making him do some silly poses, Duwei was satisfied.

During Duwei's Cosplay Reality Show, the two female magicians were enjoying the fun of their bath in the other room.

*PR/N: I'm crying. This is making me laugh so much I'm crying. Author please...*

The pirates on the boat were in an awkward position.

Because as per the request of this little noble....they were now heading to the port!

The Captain, First Officer, Second Officer, and the Boatswain of the ship were kicked out by that horrible lady.

Now, among the rest of the pirates on the ship, the former highest status....was the caterer, which meant the cook.

The caterer was also the father of Captain Jack Sparrow, who was chosen by Duwei.

The poor pirates were worrying about their future...Although that little noble said he would let them stay alive, how could they know if they would or wouldn't be hanged once they arrived in port?

"Perhaps, we should fight against them?" One man with golden teeth said,"they only got three people! If we locked the door and stoked the fire..."

People were looking at each other...and then looked at the guy who made this proposal.

"That woman was like a monster! She could break one's bone by kicking him, she could kick the strongest man out for, like, more than ten miles! Stupid Idiot! Did you think that she can be killed by the fire?"

"Block them?! Couldn't she break the wall and escape?"

All the rooms in this ship....was actually made of simple thing wood!

The door opened while the pirates were still discussing.

With a brand new appearance, Captain Jack Sparrow came out...he was shy. When all the pirates looked at their new captain, they whistled and said," Wow! Look! Our Captain!"

"Hahaha....Captain Jack...you look pretty!"

"Right! Looks like a cow in estrus! Haha, even prettier than the bitches in Port York, hahaha...."

Our Captain Jack was a bit shy, and he coughed a bit...Now, he was the captain! He straightened his spine and walked to the desk, and said angrily,

“Shut up, guys! If anyone continues to voice up, I will put my hat into his mouth! I swear, I will do that!”

“Wow, look, our captain is getting angry!”

“hahaha...”

Captain Jack still couldn't get any respect from the pirates...but he was chosen by little Duwei!

“Ok! Keep quiet!” a hoarse voice shouted.

He was the caterer on this ship, and after the death of the captain, first officer and second officer, etc (They were just thrown into the sea, but without any food and water, and only with two crappy boats, could they still stay alive?), he held the highest status among the pirates.

The caterer seemed quite willing to protect his son,” All of you shut up! Can you get any benefit if you tease my son? Ok, come here son, I know you feel helpless. Now, the fates of everyone rely on you! You are the Captain now!”

Captain Jack looked at his father and nodded...He was still young, and he still didn't have the issues of the old pirates.

Although he was a pirate, he was still a passionate adventurer of the sea.

The Caterer picked up a thick roll of cloth from his waist,”This is...He just drew it.”

“He? Who? That little noble? That little kid?” One of the pirates laughed.

Jack got a bit angry. He looked at that pirate and whispered,”Old Bill, Listen! If you want to die, please keep on calling him like this! But if he throws you into the water, I will not help you!”

“We are all pirates...my father and I included! But, do you want to be a pirate for your whole lives?” He chinned up and looked at the pirates,

“We all know, someday, we will die in this god damned sea! Some day, it will surely happen! Die by a storm, or attacked by the Imperial Navy. Being caught by the Navy and hanged up at the Port! Our dead body will probably be eaten by those crows and seabirds, also be dried under the sun! Like dried meat being hung for a few months! That's our pirates' destinations! My brothers!”

“I love the sea, and I love the feel of adventure on the sea...But I don't think that being a pirate for my whole life is the best choice...not if we have other options! Listen, brothers! Now, our little Mr. Noble, he is a very influential

noble! I can see it! Listen, this is our chance! We can get rid of the pirate identities and become one of the members under his fleet proudly! We can keep on sailing on the sea...with a new identity! The noble private fleet! No Imperial Navy will chase us! No one will hang us at the port! We just get a makeover, with cleaner and prettier clothes. Then, we can even have a beer and become friends with that goddamn Imperial Navy. We can even ask for their protection...look, how amazing will that be?"

Someone questioned, "But, if we are not pirates anymore, what can we eat and drink? Where will the money come from?"

Captain Jack didn't answer directly - actually, he also didn't know the answer. But he said, "Can you see those girls? Can you guess what I saw just now?"

"They were bathing? Hahaha, you are so lucky..." That pirate with golden teeth laughed.

BANG!

That pirate was still talking, Captain Jack had already rushed to him and punched him!

That poor guy screamed and clutched his nose, ready to pull out his knife and fight with Jack!

"Such a stupid guy! As I said, if you dare to say those words again, I will kill you! You are such a bastard! If those ladies heard what you just said, all of us would suffer!" Jack was seething.

Pirates were looking at this guy...but no one felt sorry for him and no one wanted to help him.

It was because all of them agreed with Jack. If this stupid guy made that horrible girl angry, all of them would suffer!

Perhaps...throwing him into the water tonight was a good choice...

Captain Jack then hit his face again and the guy was dizzy. Then he turned back, "Right, let's go on! Can you guess what I saw?"

No one answered.

"Magic!" Captain Jack whispered, "It's MAGIC! Those girls are magicians! Holy shit! We are facing magicians....TWO MAGICIANS!"

Everybody was surprised!

Since a long time ago, people were scared of the magicians, and no one would have dared to aggravate them!

"I saw that those girls used magic to create fire, then dried their clothes in their room...perhaps they thought we are dirty, so they cleaned their clothes by themselves." Captain Jack whispered,"Our little noble let me see that on purpose. And I am very clear that this is a threat, as you all should understand. Magicians are not normal people! They can kill us easily! Especially that horrible woman, as she is not only a magician but also a warrior!"

"Go back to the question...captain, if we follow this noble, what are the benefits? What can we eat and drink? Will he raise us? I don't understand, apart from being pirates, what can we do?"

Though this question was harsh, obviously, they started to respect Jack and started calling him Captain.

"I don't know." Captain Jack answered. "But I am sure that first, don't forget we saved his life! We picked him out of the sea. He owes us, if we listen to him, he won't make it harsh, and I am sure he will give us some benefits. Second....two magicians! My brothers! Have you ever heard that magicians suffered shortage of money?"

'Don't worry!'

Especially the second point.

Will a magician suffer in a shortage of money?

Since a long time ago, in the view of the normal people, magicians were rich! They are the people who get the best treatment everywhere, as many rich people or nobles were very willing to give them money to please them or ensnare them.

A Magician who didn't have enough money? What a joke!

Saying this, Jack released the worry or the objection from all the pirates. He then spread out the cloth,"This is what the noble just drew....it's our new flag!"

# Chapter 42 - Duwei's Plan to Wealth

Very soon, the Black Pearl would arrive at the nearest port while wearing its new flag.

After one and a half days, the ship met the Imperial Navy Warship that had chased after the pirates two days ago.

After a tense confrontation, the officer on the Imperial Navy Warship was surprised that on the pole of the pirate ship was not hanging a pirate flag, but instead.... There was a strange flag!

The junior officer reported, that the standard-bearer of the pirate ship called Semaphore, requested for surrender...They were not pirates.

*PR/N: Standard-bearer is named Semaphore, just to clarify.*

What followed was simple.

The Captain of the Navy Warship ordered the alert, and accepted the 'surrender' of this pirate ship. Later they learned that the little master of the Roland Family, who had disappeared for few days, was on this ship...

This little master has even captured such a pirate ship!

The Captain of this Imperial Navy was shocked! According to Imperial law any prisoner, pirates captured by a noble could be pardoned by said noble... Of course, treason or other major crimes were excluded!

But, this little master disposed of a few pirates...So this kind of small thing, the Captain of the Navy Warships preferred to overlook.

He was the little master of the Roland Family! The eldest son of Earl Raymond!

Earl Raymond had served as the General of the Imperial Navy Expeditionary Fleet before; he knew many people in the Imperial Navy and held a very high prestige!

The Captain of this Navy surely wouldn't give any difficulty to the son of Earl Raymond.

The two ships sailed together side by side. The Navy brought Duwei back by the raft, for safety and sent two troops to the pirate ship to have them monitored.

"Master Duwei!" The Captain of this Navy warship was a very typical navy



officer without any armor. He was of a short body build, wearing a simple uniform. His skin color was very yellow thanks to the sea breeze and waves. He also had big hands. "Our fleet had been split up to search for you! There was an order within the navy, we had to find your boat first, only then can we rest for a month at Port York! Thank God, for letting me have such a big reward! Hahahaha..."

Duwei was shocked... The whole fleet was searching for me?

Although his father was the General of the Navy before, now he held second highest status in the Imperial Army...He didn't like Duwei.... But.... Why did he send so many people to find him?

Full of doubt, Duwei and the Captain had a conversation in the Captain's Quarters. Duwei understood the situation quickly.

It seems he became the key person in the negotiation between the Imperial Military and the Magic Union.

If they found Duwei, the problem could be solved.

If not... The conflict between the military and the Magic Union would worsen. That's not something people wanted to see!

"These two are..." the Captain looked at Joanna and Vivian.

"They are my friends." Duwei briefly answered.

He, of course, wouldn't say directly that they were the two magicians who disturbed the barrack! See that lady with the armor! She almost killed me! She attacked the local barrack!

If he said that... Everything might be ruined!

Now, the magic power of Joanna was completely recovered! If she messed up everything, she could kill all the people in these two ships easily!

This Captain was not dumb, so he didn't ask further. He skipped the topic, "So, please take a rest! I will prepare food and water... If you need any assistance, I will try my best to help you... Please feel free to ask! My brother also served in the Imperial Navy Expeditionary Fleet as an officer under your father before! I respect Earl Raymond very much, he is the pride of our Imperial Navy!"

Before leaving, the Captain could not help but ask, "Please forgive me... Master Duwei, but how will you handle these pirates? They were criminals, you..."

"They are my prisoners, I have the right over their lives right?" Duwei

laughed, " Such a coincidence, I will include them in my fleet. I need a group of experienced sailors and officers. Also, I quite like their ship."

Truthfully, the Captain would have liked to remind Duwei that he still hadn't gotten his own title, so, he actually could not have his own private fleet.

But, in fact, anyone from the noble or big families within the Imperial Kingdom could earn the title. Even if they built a private fleet earlier or later, no one would care.

"This ship, I have named it the 'Black Pearl', it will be the flagship of my fleet." Duwei laughed.

"So, your fleet is called.... No, I am not curious, but they are pirates. Although they are under you now, after coming ashore I have to document it. I must know these things to report them. To remove their names from our wanted list I need to know the name of your fleet.."

Duwei laughed and he brought the Captain to the deck and pointed at the "Black Pearl".

"Can you see the flag?" Duwei laughed happily.

"... Yes." the Captain asked, " I have never seen this kind of strange flag before...What does it mean?"

If someone who knew Duwei in his previous life saw that flag, he might have felt faint!

Because, on the flag, there was a very big 'M'!

"McDonald's!" Duwei answered, "My fleet is named 'McDonald's Fleet'! You can record this name on your report."

The Captain left confused as Duwei thought evilly...

Someday, when there would be several warships with the 'McDonald's' flags, how hilarious would it be?

The ships kept on sailing for a couple of days, and finally arrived at Port York. The port was located at the southern part of the Imperial Kingdom and the Eastern coast of the Lille Province.

It was a typical coastal port city, with a natural concave coastline. It was the best haven. There were many kinds of ships moored at the pier, different merchant ships from different places. There were even privately armed merchant ships... And numerous sailors who wanted to have fun here; head officers, tax officers, workers, and porters...

Of course, there were plenty of bars and fancy hookers, they would earn every last coins from the sailors!

After the ships stopped, everyone including Duwei finally arrived on land!

Being on the sea for so many days, when Duwei first stepped on the land, he felt a bit petrified.

He felt lucky to be still alive, and also...

Duwei laughed and touched his head.

He wore a beautiful hat having now changed into a Navy Officer uniform without a badge. He now looked like a young and handsome Navy Officer... Just too young and too thin.

Port York was a public port and not a navy port. There was no stationed Navy. The nearest barracks stationed a thousand infantry.

In this prosperous port city, much tax was provided to the Imperial Kingdom, and maritime trade was very profitable.

Once Duwei stepped on this port, he could feel the prosperity immediately.

This was different from the Majesty of the Imperial Kingdom and the luxurious atmosphere of the upper class. It was also different from the peaceful cities in the Roland Plain.

First impressions of this place was... 'Crowded!'

The roads were full of all kinds of people! Drunk sailors, fat businessmen, and tax officers on horses.

There were also different kinds of stores on the roadsides.

It was said that the developed maritime trade brought most of the goods across the globe to Port York! You could find and buy any rare goods here!

Duwei also saw the Magicians Party in this port city!

Under the protection of the Navy, Duwei didn't have much time to walk around. He directly went to a hotel that was fully booked by the Navy.

So, what next?

Duwei was waiting patiently.

Two days later, Knight Robert and Caroline rushed over here after they received the magic message from the Magic Union.

Knight Robert looked thinner than before. He looked tired and remorseful.

Meanwhile, Caroline looked pale, she had just recovered from her injury. It was hard for them to rush over here in their state.

They had brought an impressive group of private troops under the Roland Family, numbering a thousand men!

They also brought bad news.

Because of Duwei, Roland Family was forcefully involved in the conflicts between the Magic Union and Imperial Kingdom! In such a situation, even the Roland Family didn't want to be against the Magic Union, but for honor and reputation, Roland Family had no choice.

This made Earl Raymond stand at the edge of awkwardness.

From his point of view, this was all caused by his son!

Knight Robert not only brought the troops to protect Duwei, but a rebuke from the Earl, a command:

Duwei must return to the castle on the Roland Plains immediately, and is to be grounded for one year as his punishment.

Also, his allowance is reduced for a year...That means he could not receive those monthly 300 gold coins!

Duwei was also ordered not to intervene in any business of the Roland Family!

During the period of being grounded, Duwei could not leave the castle, not even a step! He must listen to the old housekeeper of the castle.

If Duwei gave any trouble to the family... Then he would probably receive a harsher punishment!

But Duwei didn't care!

He had expected that would happen.

Grounded for one year? In the coming year, Duwei had planned to stay in the castle...

He needed to 'digest' the gift from Chris! Huh...

Much time was needed for learning!

Pocket money... 300 golden coins every month? Duwei didn't care too much!

"I am grounded, cannot intervene the business of the family... That's it? Nothing else? So I can do other things, or send someone to do other things, is

it excluded?”

Robert replied, “That should be excluded.”

“Great.”

Satisfied, Duwei laughed. “Oh, Caroline, how’s your injury? Great, I have something I want you to do.”

Then, Duwei let everybody leave and invited Joanna to come.

“Joanna, look! This is your partner.” Duwei laughed, “You sure you won’t regret?”

Joanna was a little frustrated, “Ok, kid, I owe you! But you have to remember, one time only! I will only help you finish this one thing!”

Duwei invited Joanna because... He wanted her to lead the ‘Black Pearl’ and set sail!

The task was to defeat all the pirates!

Duwei’s thinking was very simple, “ I cannot do business, I don’t have money and I also don’t have any maritime trade experience... I even don’t have the pocket money. Where can I get the money for magic experience... Also my McDonald fleet?”

Duwei pondered and pondered. Then he finally came to a conclusion!

To plunder!

Steal from the Imperial Navy? No, Duwei wouldn’t dare.

Rob the merchant ships on the ocean? Duwei didn’t want trouble.

So... The only option left was to rob from pirates!

Attacking pirates was not illegal! Even the Imperial Navy encouraged that! There were rewards too! The Imperial Navy offered heavy rewards for killing infamous pirates.

Joanna was powerful, and if the Black Pearl’s crew, which was familiar with the Pirate Groups, sailed on the sea...

*PR/N: I assume Pirates Group refers to the other bands of pirates/pirate ships.*

Others could not find those pirates! But Captain Jack Sparrow could! They were pirates before!

Then, the next step would be very simple!

Rob!

Take their money! Those pirates should have savings! They should have piles of stolen loot! This would be a good addition to the pockets of Master Duwei.

Capture the Pirates! Duwei could still 'capture' those pirates, if they revolted, then he will sell them to the Imperial Navy for the reward. If they behaved well, he will keep them and let them join the Duwei's private fleet...

Take their ships! Duwei could not tolerate to have only the 'Black Pearl' under his 'McDonald's Fleet'. He doesn't have the money to buy ships, so he can only steal the pirate ships!

The strength of Joanna was a great warranty!

This kind of zero-cost trading... No one else could think of that... But, who could find a great magician to help in doing this kind of stupid endeavor?

Those magicians were so arrogant! Even the officer in the palace could not buy their service!

"Get wealthy legally!" That's the main idea of Duwei!

Of course, the usual Joanna would not agree, only that Joanna owed Duwei a favour and would help him for three months! After the three months, she would go away.

So... When Duwei was persuading her, he did use a little trick, which involved... Looking into her eyes.

Then, Caroline was the best candidate for this business! This female knight had the experience of adventure, robbery, kidnapping, rewarding, etc... She was familiar with those.

Also with the name of the Roland Family, the Navy wouldn't put any difficulty on her.

After settling everything, the female magician and female knight went away. At that time, there was someone who had waited for a long time. When he entered the room, he hugged Duwei immediately.

"My lord, I am your loyal servant Mard..." Duwei looked at him and laughed, "Oh, my dearest Mard, long time no see."

Mard was originally so very poor, he understood that everything he had came from this little master... If master died, he would return to being a stableman!

"Ok, Mard, you made my trousers dirty... Now, pack up the luggage, we're

going back home!"

## Chapter 43 - Goodbye Kiss

Duwei was a little bit sad thinking about parting with little Vivian.

That innocent lady had run to the Magic Union at Port York to complete her magician application.

Her magician gown was missing and even the Magician's Badge was lost in the sea.

Vivian ran to the Magic Union to complete the application procedure. After displaying her identity, the staff of the Magic Union immediately checked the Magician name list... And the staff, who were low-level magicians responsible for documents, were shocked.

Their attitudes suddenly changed and became very polite. It was because it's rare to meet a great magician!

In the Magic Union, famous and great magicians were all arrogant. Even the slightest careless offense to those magicians, would probably lead to big trouble!

This Magic Union Office at Port York was actually responsible for purchasing materials that the Union needed and other miscellaneous items, and the people here had almost never admitted any great magicians before.

Soon, Vivian was changed into a brand new magician gown and received a new golden badge.

"I... I need to go."

The little lady sighed, this was the first sentence said to Duwei after returning.

Duwei was silent for a while. He understood that no matter how two people depended on each other on a deserted island, once they went back to the real world, they would have their own ways to go.

"I... I really need to go." Vivian's cheek was a little flushed and her eyes were red too. Rubbing her clothes with her small hands she said, "By my calculations... Teacher will be back soon."

Duwei braced himself, looked at this lady and asked, "How can I find you later?"

Vivian was silent for a while. She answered carefully, "Teacher doesn't



allow me to expose our location...”

“...Not even to me?” Duwei asked quietly.

Vivian was barely holding back her tears. She suddenly held her mouth and cried. She hugged Duwei tightly. She was shaking and crying heavy tears as she said, “I.. I will miss you so much... I don’t want to go back... My dragon is lost and teacher will scold me...”

Duwei simply listened what she said and laughed, “Ok, you can tell me in secret. When I have the time, I will sneak over to see you... Perhaps next time, if your teacher is not there, you can also sneak over to see me! Isn’t that great? We’ve known each other for so many days and I treat you as one of my best friends. You are no longer a little girl, how can your teacher lock you in that secret place for life? You need to have some friends.”

Vivian thought for a while, obviously doubtful... But she had already broken many regulations this time already, what was one more?...

We regret to announce that our little Vivian, to a certain extent, had been led astray by Duwei.

In the past, little Vivian would not have had these kinds of thoughts.

“I...I live in...” Vivian whispered and told Duwei where she lived, Duwei remembered it and smiled, “OK! When I have time, I will go to see you!”

Vivian was a bit reluctant and said, “That place is hard to find and also hard to enter. My sister spent a full day trying to find her way the last time.”

Perhaps there were some magic arrays... Duwei thought briefly and smiled, “Ok, I should be able to find the way.”

Vivian looked at Duwei for a while, then picked up a parchment from her pocket and gave it to Duwei. “This... This is what I promised to give you.”

Duwei scanned the item. He could only read a few of the lines written in black ink... The wordings were old-fashioned, but the meaning was hard to understand...

Oh, these are spells!

“There are a total of six incantations.” Vivian was shy and said, “Yes, that’s what I promised you.”

Duwei stared at the parchment and said, “You... Should know that from the very beginning, I lied to you, right?”

“Yes.” Vivian bowed her head and didn’t dare to look at Duwei. In a slightly quiet voice she said, “This... These are the most powerful spells that I

know... If you don't have the magic power, please do not use them."

Duwei received this parchment and placed it carefully in his pocket. Then he looked at this lady, looked at her shyness, looked at her dodgy eyes. She was a little bit shy. In this moment, Duwei was inwardly a little bit excited.

After receiving the gift, even Duwei thought himself to be slightly evil. He had already lied and gained so many things, yet he still wanted to cheat her heart? She was such an innocent girl.

Duwei shook his head, then he asked his people to prepare a horse and let Vivian go.

"I... I will leave now." Vivian was sad.

Duwei suddenly said, "There is something you need to bear in mind!"

Deeply inhaling, Duwei said, "I know that your dragon was left on the island and you are very sad about it. I think that you will want to go back and bring it back, right? But I request that you don't go! That island is not just any old island! Your sister's magic power is not weaker than you, she brought along her dragon, but still almost died on that island! That dragon was also eaten by the monster... So if you go back, you will die! Listen to me, don't have any thoughts about going back to that island! Understand?"

Vivian bowed her head, "I, I get it. But, my teacher may go there too."

Duwei sighed.

But he had heard what the devil servant Chris said, that the giant monster could move. It didn't always stay in one place, and after a period of time it would move to other places. This meant that the location of that island was not fixed.

Perhaps, when Vivian's teacher went to that island, they would not find that island, instead finding nothing but ocean.

By the way, Vivian still didn't mention who her teacher was. But Duwei thought that her teacher must be a very strong master! Otherwise, Vivian could not be such a great magician at her age.

"Those... What are those people doing?" While Duwei was lost in his thoughts, Vivian pointed at the distant people and asked curiously.

Far away, there were many sailors that were preparing to leave. They were saying goodbye to the women. Some of the women were their wives, their lovers, even the hookers whom they had only shared one night with.

But, the people who lived on the seas were always facing all kinds of

dangers. When men went back to the sea, the women... Even the hookers, were generous in giving their blessings.

And far away, there were a few couples kissing goodbyes.

“They... Are saying goodbye.” Duwei answered.

A strange look came over Vivian, and she became shy. She abruptly kissed Duwei on his left cheek... Just a peck.

Then, a trembling Vivian quickly got up on her horse and rode away.

Duwei was then touching his cheek and looking towards the end of the streets...

Protected by the private troops of the Roland family, Duwei and the soldiers left Port York and headed towards the North, going back to the Roland Plains.

While passing by the Lille Province, the Governor of the Lille Province met Duwei in person to give him some words of encouragement and also many presents. Duwei earned something.

Since he was under punishment, his allowance had been cut, so he should be the poorest noble within the Imperial Kingdom.

Joanna left earlier. She brought Caroline and joined the ship of Captain Jack Sparrow. They restocked on supplies and began Duwei's Wealth Plan.

Imagining his future McDonald's Fleet, as well as the future coming events, Duwei could not stop laughing while lying inside his carriage.

Imagine... In the coming days, how that poor pirate captain would introduce himself to others.

“I am the Captain of the Black Pearl under the McDonald's Fleet. Call me Captain Jack Sparrow!”

In his previous life, this kind of introduction would have no doubt caused people to explode with crazy laughter.

While he kept thinking, suddenly he sat down.

He was excited and interested!

This world... He was totally not familiar with it! Like a blank paper, he could draw anything on it!

He thought, having already built his 'McDonald's Fleet', that there could be even more amusing things he could do!

At this time, our young main character seemed to have found a few new goals, though his intents were evil.

15 days later, Duwei was back in the castle of the Roland Family located near the Jade River of the Rolland Plains.

The scale of the welcome ceremony was smaller than usual, and the troop that protected Duwei didn't enter the castle, instead just leaving after completing their task.

Duwei met his old housekeeper Bill, who was the one Duwei disliked. This time, when this old man saw Duwei, he seemed happier.

It was normal since, if Duwei had run into trouble, this old housekeeper would have been partly responsible!

"Master, you finally came back." The old housekeeper was so happy. But Duwei sensed, that beneath his happiness he was gloating a little. "I have received the letter from the Earl..."

"I know! Being grounded for a year and my monthly allowance is cut too, right? Ok, my Mr. Housekeeper, may I ask where you are going to lock me up?"

The old housekeeper was shocked and said, "This... Master, you scare me! Who dares to lock you up? Within this castle, you can still do anything you want. You only cannot step out of this castle in the coming one year. That's the order from the Earl."

"Ok!" Duwei laughed and he glanced at the old housekeeper, "According to my habit, I just came back. So tonight, I will sleep in the study room. My dear housekeeper, please send someone to go prepare!"

# Chapter 44 - A Figure Comes Out of the Oil Painting

Not wanting to be dressed by his servants, Duwei stopped them from serving him. He even locked the door when he bathed.

He stood in front of the mirror and poked his hair gently; there was a horn on his head.

“This Chris... Can’t he make it look better?” Duwei sighed. He had to remember to not let others touch his head in the future.

Luckily, the horn was small and short. It could be covered by his hair... Duwei’s hair was very long, also... In the future, if suitable, he would wear a hat.

While looking at his reflection in his mirror, he had a weird thought...

Chris had given him new eyes...

Right... These were the Eyes of Enchantment. Duwei thought that this was not a meaningless magic to let the ladies love him... It’s a very effective... Instant hypnosis.

Duwei recalled how he bargained with his evil servant at the beginning...

What did he desire the most from this guy who could be regarded as the Devil’s Representative as a trading condition?

At that moment, Duwei really wanted to say:

I want to go back!

Go home! Return to the world I came from!!

In that world, I had my parents, my own friends, the girl I liked, and everything I had!

In this world, although it was mysterious and entertaining, a place that was full of magic... This was not his home.

If possible, Duwei would have told him without any hesitation that he would like to go home.

So, he carefully asked Chris, “May I ask if you know any magic related to space?”

Continuing, he tried his best to ask in a simple way, “I am wondering if

Space Magic can send me to another world... I've been curious about that for long time."

Chris felt shocked.

Oops, no no, of course he knew Space Magic actually.

As the Devil's servant that had unlimited life, he was the most knowledgeable existence in the world.

Was there anything at all he did not know?

But Chris was still curious. Pursuing Space Magic was the dream of many super magicians... But Duwei was still such a young kid, he hadn't even started enjoying his life... But for him to request this, it really confused Chris.

"I know some Space Magic... But, I can't use it."

This was the answer from Chris. Then this Devil's servant explained a bit and Duwei understood immediately.

"I was locked in this place," Chris smiled, "If I could use Space Magic, I would have escaped a long time ago."

It was reasonable.

Duwei bowed his head then, his dream of going back now gone.

Luckily, he was familiar with this world after many years. With his adaptive ability, Duwei was less disappointed than expected. He was silent for a while and raised another request, "I want to learn magic."

Our little noble pointed at his head, "I think, I am talented in the spiritual area. But... My sensitivity is not good. I cannot sense the fluctuation of any magic element nearby."

Then...

Then, a horn grew out on the head of Duwei!

Seems... Duwei touched his head and looked into the mirror...

It was like adding an antenna onto a radio with poor reception!

This horn was the antenna of Duwei! It allowed him to feel the fluctuation of magic nearby! His sensitivity... It was far greater, even more than other magicians due to this horn.

This was the gift from Chris.

Perhaps, this request from Duwei was too simple. It was too easy that

even this Devil's servant felt sorry about that. So, Chris said, "Your request is simple, from this trade, I won't gain benefit from you, my little friend. So, I can give you something a little extra... You can pick any one from the list I told you just now."

Oh, the "Eyes of Enchantment", the strong "Dragon's Heart" and also, hearing the thoughts of others, the ability to see through others' camouflage...

He made a very normal choice, as a man, a very typical man!

Duwei chose the "Eyes of Enchantment".

Imagine, by using these eyes, he could attract all the beauties in the world. It's actually quite evil, right?

For the Dragon's Heart... Duwei didn't plan to become a muscular fighter.

Being able to hear the thoughts of others or to see through others' camouflage... Duwei felt these were boring. Only politicians need those. He didn't have the slightest interest.

So... Duwei chose the "Eyes of Enchantment".

A high level hypnotism.

No one could escape from these eyes; not even strong female magicians, or even holy virgins.

But... There was only one weakness and that is...

It is only effective on females!

Duwei stretched his arms and spread his palms; closed his eyes and breathed in deeply.

He tried to feel around with his heart.

The confusion of the past had disappeared!

The feeling of emptiness in the past had also vanished!

Duwei could feel his surroundings with clarity! He spread his spirit around. It seemed like his spirit could touch everywhere in the room! The water dripping from the tap, the eroded tiles, and even the bubbles from the bath...

Such awareness! This feeling was so amazing!

Duwei couldn't help letting out a small moan.

He still didn't know magic, but using his spiritual power, he lightly waved

his hand... The vapour on his palm formed a little water ball.

The water ball was crystal clear and rolled on Duwei's palm.  
"This... It's magic... Great!" Duwei could not help, but to slightly squeeze...

The ball lost its shape and the water dropped.

He started to sense the magic element. In the bathroom, Duwei could easily sense and control the water element.

Now, he only needed to learn a spell!

With his vigorous well of magic power and his keen sensitivity, if he learnt some spells...

Then, he could become a magician.

Duwei stayed in the bathroom for at least two hours. When he went to the study room, he found the old housekeeper Bill had been waiting for him for a long time.

"Master, your dinner..."

"I will eat in the study room." Duwei waved his hand, and looking at the silent old housekeeper, he suddenly laughed and said, "Ok, my dear housekeeper, I know father ordered you to monitor me, but don't worry. During this one year, I will follow my father's orders, I won't leave this castle and won't intervene with any businesses within the territory... For my monthly expenditure, don't worry, I won't ask you for that."

After a while, Duwei looked at the eyes of the old housekeeper, "I don't hate my father... I understand that, from his standing, he cannot only be a father, but must also be a General! Sometimes, perhaps father doesn't want to punish his son like this, but being a General, he has to do it, I totally understand."

The old housekeeper was shocked... He was going to say something to comfort Duwei.

Now, he understood that this little master was not any idiot. He was a special person with a different way of thinking.

When the old housekeeper prepared to leave, Duwei asked, "Before I left I requested that a wooden house be built..."

"It's completed." Old housekeeper answers, "It's exactly based on your request, you will see it tomorrow."

"Thanks, I am very satisfied." After Duwei said that, he looked to the other side, which meant he wanted the housekeeper to leave.



Duwei closed the main door of the study room. He climbed up the ladder, randomly chose an astrology book from the shelves. He started reading it quietly.

It was almost midnight.

When the bell rang midnight, Duwei stretched a bit, then, he checked if the door was locked. Finally, he moved the ladder and removed the oil painting on the wall.

It seems that the servant responsible for cleaning his room was very thorough. No dirt could be found on the oil painting. Duwei looked at the eyes on the painting.

After midnight, those eyes came to life and looked at Duwei with hope.

“Haven’t seen you for a long time, you must have been anxious.” Duwei smiled, “Last time, I had a look in the basement and saw what the Great Star Reader Teacher Saimel left... Now, I have the spell which can release you from the painting.”

As this was the first time for Duwei to use magic, he was actually quite worried.

He tried imitating the great magicians... Slightly opening his arms with a serious look, he cast the spell in a soft voice...

Duwei didn’t notice that his gesture and movement was similar to what little Vivian did.

Casting the spell, Duwei suddenly felt a mysterious power fluctuating nearby...

Then, Duwei could feel with his strong power, there was a current... It was like an invisible straw drawing on his energy...

Then...

Small lights burst from his fingertips, which was then sucked into the oil painting!

... Was it completed?

Duwei stepped back a bit and stared quietly at the oil painting.

BOOM!

Flames flew out from the oil painting, and the painting caught on fire instantly... Duwei was shocked!

He knew that this painting was the antique of the family! If it was burnt,

the old housekeeper may make a complaint to his father.

But the flame was so quick that Duwei didn't have enough time to extinguish it.

That was it. The whole painting turned into ashes within a couple of seconds! Then the flames floated down, from the desk to the floor... The ashes scattered and something in the fire moved.

Then, Duwei saw a leg appearing from the flame...

The skin was so white and soft... The toes looked like pearls...

These were perfect legs! Long, firm, straight, round...

Wearing a red gown, as bright as spring roses! Under the red gown, the white skin was so fine!

The long hair was like silvery snow! The light body under the shadow of the red gown... The neck and curvy breasts... A person could not help imagining... Did she wear anything under her clothing?

Looking at her face!

This was the third time Duwei saw this face!

The first time was in the basement, in the magic array by Saimel, when he saw the illusive image of Saimel.

The second time was the strong female magician, the frozen beauty, Joanna!

And this was the third time!

This face didn't have the arrogance of Joanna, but had a calm, hypnotizing look. The round eyes were rolling but softer than Joanna's.

Duwei was simply speechless!

Long white hair, a red gown, she was an absolute beauty...

The woman who appeared from the burnt oil painting... There was no question about it...

This was the great Star Reader Teacher Saimel!!

## Chapter 45 - The Unusual Saimel

Duwei did have his suspicions, he had imagined something was sealed in this oil painting.

Saimel used magic to leave behind an “illusion” to explain that this was the magical creature left by Saimel.

Perhaps, it was a ghost? A monster? Even the speaking skeleton left by Saimel, all of those had not shocked Duwei.

But this was unforeseen!

The thing that came out from the oil painting, was Saimel herself!

Looking at this lady with silver hair and her red gown, Duwei took a deep breath and murmured, “Never expected... Never expected...”

“What did you never expect?” Saimel asked. Her voice sounded just like the voice in the magic illusion, very soft and gentle, mature and husky.

“I never expected you to seal yourself in the painting.” Duwei forced a smile. He had already experienced many amazing things. He recovered quickly from this little shock. He looked at this lady and asked, “How should I call you? Great Star Reader Saimel? Or... My great great grandmother?”

Puff!.

Saimel laughed. When she smiled, her eyes were curved like the crescent moon.

“None of them.” This lady with silver hair looked at Duwei. She spoke to Duwei politely, “I am not Saimel, I am a... Clone.”

Duwei was confused.

“Saimel left the guidance to me... I am the magic creature that inherited part of her knowledge... to be exact, I am a spiritual creature, I don’t have a body. I

mean physically... I am a shadow only, an illusion.” She looked at Duwei and smiled, she then held out her hand towards Duwei slowly and touched his face.

Gradually, her small hand ‘went through’ Duwei’s head.

“Look, my body is immaterial but with a solid form... I was cloned with part of the memory of Saimel. My appearance...”

She blinked a bit and said, “ I choose this. My memory is the memory of Saimel, the memory of lady Saimel was the only one I have seen... To a certain extent, I was part of Saimel. So, I finally chose my shape and decided to meet in the appearance of Saimel.”

And suddenly, this ‘Saimel’ looked at Duwei and whispered, “My... Master.”

God was the witness to this moment when this creature said ‘Master’, its eyes flashing with a cunning light.

Duwei immediately sensed that this creature was not so simple... It didn’t seem inclined to completely obey!

Not the real Saimel...

Duwei relaxed a bit. He had faced so many things already.

If there was one more resurrected granny, it would be troublesome.

“Can you change into another appearance?” Duwei sighed, “Your current look gives me discomfort... And if others saw how you look.”

“No worry, I was released by your spell. That means only you and I have a spiritual connection... No one else can see me.” She laughed.

“So, what should I call you? You must have a name, right?”

“Saimel.” She thought for a while, “I like this name, call me Saimel.”

Duwei felt helpless... Still, my great great grandmother.

“Can you teach me Star Magic?” Duwei frowned.

This Saimel should have been sealed for a very long period of time, now, she was curious about everything.

She was sitting on Duwei’s desk and her white legs were showing in Duwei’s

eyes, swinging and swinging. My god, didn't she know that her gown was not long enough?

If she kept on swinging her legs like that, she would be exposed.

It should be a happy thing... If it was a beautiful lady standing in front of you.

But if she looked like your great great grandmother... To say the least, it was rather distressing...It's strange!

Though Joanna looked alike too, she was a different person. This made Duwei feel only a bit uncomfortable.

But this Saimel, she not only looked alike, her memory was cloned from the real Saimel!

"OK, come!" Duwei went to the corner of the study room, threw a blanket from the couch, "Wear this."

Duwei originally planned to oversleep in the study room, and the servant had prepared this blanket.

Saimel was slightly shaking. The blanket did not cover her, but went through her, and she maliciously laughed," Oh, boy, why are you so red? Am I not pretty?"

"No, I just feel a little awkward..."Duwei said, "You are pretty, but I can't stop thinking that you are my great great grandmother."

"Hahahaha..." Saimel laughed loudly, then squeezing her eyes, "It's funny!"

Duwei started to have a headache.

Saimel was not a tool without thought, she was almost a live person, the real Saimel with a part of her original memory... But having being sealed for almost two hundred years, she was bored for such a long period of time!

This magic creature, perhaps when she was cloned, her personality was blank, but... After two hundred years, undoubtedly, her personality had been 'filled in' by something.

"Did you know? My cute, handsome little master." Saimel jumped from the desk, but her body flew towards Duwei like a ghost, her eyes smiling, "I have

been living in the study room for almost two hundred years! I have seen many things in this room!”

Duwei was curious and ask, “What are they?”

The ancient ancestors of the Roland Family had made important decisions here! As well as many major decisions related to the prosperity of the family in this room.

Of course... The secret of the family!

But... Duwei was disappointed.

This Saimel, she was not speaking of any secret or major event of the family...

But...

Chattering!

Right, some idle gossiping!

For example... Someone was having sex with a servant in this room. One Patriarch was writing a love letter to his lover... Even Duwei’s grandfather, the father of the Earl, who was a strict and stubborn man. He had brought two noble girls to this room and had sex after a ball in the castle...

“These... Are all I have seen before!” While Saimel was talking about that, she was excited,” I also know that in this room, there are some ‘prohibited’ books, do you want to see the private collection made by one of the ancestors? My little cute and handsome master?”

Duwei laughed unnaturally. He looked at the malicious Saimel, sighed, “I don’t have an interest in those... Listen! Your little cute and handsome master, the only thing that I have interest in is... Star Magic. I want to learn Star Magic from Saimel, understand?”

“Star Magic... Always Star Magic...” Saimel was disappointed, “Why do people want to learn magic... Is Magic fun?”

The smile on the woman disappeared, she became serious, and said “You want to learn Star Magic, so I have to remind you that you cannot regret in the future! I tell you, if there was no Star Magic... Saimel would not have died so early!”

Duwei was shocked, “What? Didn’t Saimel commit suicide out of grief after her husband died?”

“Sorry, this is the only secret I cannot tell.” Saimel blinked her eyes, “The order I was given is that: unless you learn the last and most difficult spell of Star Magic, otherwise, before that, I cannot tell you this thing.”

Duwei was annoyed, “Ok, I don’t have much interest in it, so shall we start?”

“Sorry, not tonight” Saimel was shaking her head, “Star Magic is different from other Magic, we cannot learn here... Saimel left a white tower in this castle. In that tower, you can observe the stars clearly, that’s a good place for learning... In this room, you cannot see the starry sky, it’s not suitable for learning Star Magic.”

White tower...

Duwei frowned, “Why must it be the white tower?”

Saimel thought, “If there is no white tower... Better find a spacious and quiet place where you can observe the stars... The key requirement is that you should be able to see the sky.”

Duwei checked the time, “So, we can begin from the next night... See you tomorrow.”

Duwei had no intention to talk much with this Samiel... Since looking at his great great grandmother swinging her legs in front of him was not very pleasant at all.

## Chapter 46 - Solskjaer's Fire Element

The next morning, the sun was rising and Duwei was enjoying his breakfast when someone came to see him.

It was.... The lying Magician Solskjaer.

After all, the people had thought that Duwei was kidnapped, Solskjaer was so stressed...He was the only magician staying with Duwei! But he didn't have a single mark of a fight on him!

Everyone was wounded except him!

His colleagues caused Solskjaer much stress.

To be honest... He also thought that that day was embarrassing, when he was too scared and passed out because of the Grade-8 Magician before the fight even started.

That's reasonable, right? A Grade-1 Magician(He even got his qualification by cheating), fighting against a Grade-8 Magician.

It wouldn't be even a contest... It would have been a suicide!

"Oh, my little master, I am so happy to see you again..." Solskjaer was beaming when the door opened.

Bang!

Duwei's reply was to kick him.

Duwei just kicked him once and this magician fell down. He looked at him and then closed his eyes, whispering, "My dear Solskjaer... But I am not happy to see you."

Solskjaer stood up and fixed his hat awkwardly, "... My little master..."

"When I remember how you acted on that day, I feel embarrassed." Duwei said angrily, "My Mr. Magic Consultant, you passed out directly when the fight just began... You have the heart of a rabbit!"



On that day, Solskjaer was the last person Duwei had, but this useless guy wasn't of any help and instead, merely passed out! Duwei was pissed off!

"Forgiveness little master! The opponent was a Grade-8 magician! Grade-8! Master Duwei!" Solskjaer argued, "My level is only of grade-1, my real ability is even weaker than a magic apprentice! You should understand that... Don't you agree that I couldn't defeat that Grade-8 magician?"

"But you should not have passed out. It's so shameful!" Duwei was shaking his head, "As your employer, I feel totally disappointed in you... Right, where were you in these past few days?"

"I... Brought several people and went to the south, I relocated my stuff in the laboratory to here." Solskjaer's answer satisfied Duwei's mood a little.

"You relocated your laboratory over here?" Duwei was surprised, "Did you expect me to return soon? Were it not for me, you think this family would still hire you?"

Solskjaer felt awkward, he could only tell the truth... He was informed that master Duwei of Roland Family was found. So he had rushed back.

"Oh, I see... If I didn't come back, then you would have permanently left, right?" Duwei looked at the crafty guy, "With the 'trophies' I gave you, right?"

Solskjaer was in silence.

"Ok, bring that stuff to me." Duwei mentioned all the things that Vivian gave him.

It was almost by instinct, that Duwei felt that he wanted to keep 'Vivian's belongings' all by himself and didn't want to give any away.

Solskjaer hastily said, "Master Duwei... You are not a magician, these things can only show its true value on a magician..."

Didn't want to give it to Duwei?

Huh!

The burning candles on either side immediately flared up, and the flames flew into Duwei's palms to form a fireball in an instant!

Solskjaer was shocked, “Magic? Oh My God, you can use magic?!”

“You think I am performing acrobatics? I learnt this from the Grade-8 magician!” Duwei sneered, “Give it to me.”

“Can I have the magic crystal?” Solskjaer was testing Duwei, “Just a small piece... My experiment needs a high quality magic crystal to save the fire element...”

Duwei didn't say anything but just spread his palms.

Solskjaer sighed and gave the bag to Duwei.

“Ok, don't sigh, my Mr. Magic Consultant.” Duwei regained Vivian's items and was feeling happier, “You will get what you want soon. I can guarantee.”

“A magic crystal with reasonable quality will cost at least several hundreds of gold coins.” Obviously, Solskjaer knew the current situation of Duwei. Most of the people in the castle knew about the order of grounding and reduced allowance.

“No worry, I will have money soon, very soon.” Duwei wasn't worried.

The plan of robbing the pirates was still undergoing, but soon, there would be much profits to be had... Also, he remembered, under the study room, there was a secret room. Saimel's treasures were inside this secret room.

“Right, Solskjaer, come, let's go see your new laboratory! It is in the forest outside the castle!”

When they left the study room, old housekeeper looked at Duwei and laughing, Duwei pointed at the ash on the floor, “My dear Mr. Housekeeper... I am so sorry. Last night I was reading books. Don't know how but the painting on the wall dropped and there was candle stand near it... Then it burnt up. I think you will let the servant clean it up, right?”

The old housekeeper looked at the place, where the oil painted once hanged, and then back at the ash on the floor.

Oh my god... That was an antique!

The word 'spendthrift' was in the old housekeeper's mind, but he could not speak it out. He just lightly bit his lips and then nodded calmly.

Duwei brought along Solskjaer to leave the study room and headed to the forest next to the castle.

Within the deep forest, there was a wooden tower on the riverside that was already built.

There were three levels and it was well constructed. Obviously, the construction materials were of high quality.

“Satisfied? This is the magic laboratory... Our magic laboratory!”

On the first floor, there was a spacious area with basic furniture, for example, the large table to be used as a working bench that was specially requested by Duwei. There were also some glass containers on the cupboard that were requested by Duwei too... All of a different variety, some even made of crystal.

The second floor was full of metallic cupboards for storing different kinds of raw material.

The third floor was a private space for Duwei. There was a rooftop where Duwei would observe the stars.

Duwei had even personally made his telescope and placed it here.

“Satisfied?” Duwei looked at Solskjaer happily.

Solskjaer was overjoyed and said, “Great! This place is very spacious and good for my experiments!”

Duwei then brought him to the backyard and gestured towards the plants on the ground.

These were the basic ingredients for Magic Alchemy... Of course, there were still many magic materials that Duwei could not buy, not even in town stores. They could only be bought from the occasional adventuring teams, or from the Magic Union.

But since the Magic Union was not opened to the public, if the person didn't have the magicians qualification, he could not buy anything from the Magic Union.

“The basic plants I have prepared... For the remaining, we can only buy those from the Magic Union. This is something you need to do, you know the rules of the Magic Union. Money... We will have soon, no worry, very soon.”

Solskjaer was silently contemplating everything.

He was already very satisfied!

From a normal person's viewpoint, Magic experiments were just like burning money!

Those scarce materials might be completely wasted in a failed experiment.

In the past, Solskjaer didn't have money to buy experimental materials. Most of the materials he acquired had come from his teacher, which he secretly stole. He also needed to work for the adventure team to earn money or to find cores from magic monsters.

Now, with the promise of this little noble, he didn't need to worry about money again, and he could experiment as much as he wished!

Duwei had great hopes of Solskjaer.

This guy could study the method of simulating magic... He was such a genius! If this fake magician were to continue his study, who knew what kind of things he could invent!

"Oh, right, let me see what you have brought from the south!"

Compared with this laboratory, the things that were brought by Solskjaer were relatively shabby.

He brought some containers... Half of them were pottery, obviously this poor magician didn't have the means to buy beautiful glass containers.

Inside these containers, there were several magic elements refined by Solskjaer, mainly of the fire element.

These werewhat Solskjaer had called, 'yellow powder'.

Duwei was interested in this 'fire element' the most.

With the consent of Solskjaer, Duwei opened one of the containers, and he saw the 'yellow powder'!

Upon seeing the contents, and discoveringafamiliar smell... Duwei was shocked!

He could not help squeezing some with his fingers and sniffed it...

“This is the ‘fire element’ you made? Duwei seriously asked Solskjaer.

“...Yes.”

Duwei tried to calm down and said, “You... Refined this thing, what is the success rate for refining this?”

“It depends on the raw material. The main ingredient is powdered Fire-Scale herbs, but have to refine it six times carefully and make sure there is no fire nearby... I nearly died in an accident before.”

“If I were to give you sufficient material?”

Solskjaer was thinking and calculating, “I guess if there is sufficient material, perhaps I can refine three bottles per day.”

Three bottles?

Solskjaer pointed at that container. The size was like the beer bottle in Duwei’s previous life.

Three bottles per day... Is quite an impressive speed.

Duwei tried to stop laughing and hugged Solskjaer tightly, “My Mr. Magic Consultant... I am very satisfied with your fire element... I will pay you more! I mean after I get my money! Ha ha ha...”

After a while, Duwei whispered, “Listen, we have to keep the recipe of the fire element secret! Understand?”

“Sure!” Solskjaer answered quickly.

Solskjaer temporarily used this laboratory. He he was staying here to store his containers, also some tools including several pots and some refined containers and burning tools, *etc.*

Duwei left alone.

The two servants, who were following him, were peering at this little master. He was barely concealing his laughter.

Duwei had moved a far distance, before finally succumbing and burst out laughing.

His laughter revealed his extreme happiness and surprise, as if unlimited gold

was falling from the sky and that money was rolling into his own pocket only!

“Hahaha... Fire element! It’s sulfur! Haha, I have sulfur now!!”

# Chapter 47 - Treasures in the Secret Room

He obtained sulphur accidentally, but how useful was it in this world?

To make a weapon? To change the trend, to change the era of weaponry immediately?

What a joke!

Duwei was not stupid. He knew that sulphur alone was not enough for making firearms. Firstly, why make a weapon? A coup to seize power? War? Duwei was not interested in those. Secondly, making firearms was not an easy task. Not to mention guns and cannons...

In his previous world, after the development of sulphur in China, people only knew how to use sulphur to create fireworks for a long period of time.

Were firearms easy to be developed? Rifles and cannons, not to mention an entire gun, even just the barrel of the gun which should be the simplest one... Duwei didn't know how to make a single piece.

Apart from that, this was a Magic World! In this world, even if you were armed with a gun, magic was still a better tool.

For example, if a junior magician knew flying magic and simple fireball magic...

He could throw the fireball from the sky. Basically, he could be like a human helicopter with a weapon!

In this case, only some sulphur, and making the weapon with the rough technique ...was there any advantage?

How useful was the sulphur?

Duwei's thought was very simple: Profit!

Duwei was getting used to this world. He had created the McDonald Fleet and the Black Pearl by a joke, also the Captain Jack Sparrow...He started to be interested in this world.

He was interested in other things apart from Magic.

He knew that he could not go back...so he still needed to find something

interesting.

Even the all-knowing devil servant could not send him back. Duwei had almost given up. Meanwhile, if Duwei was released and started to prank, the result would be hard to estimate.

At least, at this moment, Duwei only kept thinking of how to scare his poor old housekeeper.

Duwei went back to the castle and he called his favourite servant Mard. In the private coffer of Duwei, where Mard was responsible for maintaining the safety, there were a thousand gold coins being held by this servant. The countess gave him these coins when he was kicked out from the Empire City.

“How much do we have now?” Duwei simply asked.

Mard quickly answered, “Eight Hundred and Ninety-two gold coins.” After a while, the loyal servant said, “That is because the cost of the construction of the tower and such have used much money. The pocket money has been overused for several months already, but as since from now your pocket money is cut, we need to pay for the expense with our own money.”

Mard talked with bitterness, mainly because of the old housekeeper Hill. It seems that this former groom was confined by the old housekeeper a lot.

“Also, in the coming one year, we cannot get any money from the old housekeeper.” Duwei sighed.

“Right!” Mard was a little depressed, “Master, I think you may need to think of some method...the Earl treats you too harsh. You are still a kid, and this time, he shouldn’t blame you. You didn’t want to be kidnapped, did you? But I have an idea...”

“What is it?”

Mard was looking around and whispered, “Two months from now is the birthday of the countess. If you can send a gift to Empire City on time with a pleading letter, and if the countess can help you in ask for a favour...perhaps, your order can be removed earlier.”

Duwei bowed his head and said, “That’s a good idea, my dear Mard. It’s such



a good idea, not considering pleading, I still have to do something for mother's birthday...but, only eight hundred something coins, what kind of present can I buy?"

Mard kept silence. Obviously, this question was out of the thinking scope of Mard.

Duwei didn't plan to let this groom continue, he just touched Mard's shoulder and said, "Ok, I have my idea. But thank you for your notification. Now, I need you to help me to do something."

Duwei then drafted a list quickly and gave it to Mard.

"Help me to buy all the stuff on this list...Also, I have written some names of craftsmen on the list, I need them too."

After Mard received the list. He had a quick glance and calculated a little bit. He almost cried and said, "Little master...If we buy all of these, and include the salary for the craftsmen...we won't have much money left..."

Mard was already a bit conservative. In fact, he would've liked to shout, "We won't have any money left!"

Duwei laughed confidently and said, "Mard, just do what I ask you to do. Don't worry, we will have a lot of money soon, not only a lot, we will be extremely rich! Just...I have a huge amount of money outside, and I am unable to get the money within these two months. But mom's birthday will be after two months, so I have to think of some methods. Ok, go ahead!"

How to do it.... If Duwei could wait for three months, the Pirate Robbery Plan of McDonald Fleet would be completed and he would have a huge amount of income.

But right now, he didn't have money on hand!

But what about the secret room under the study room...Duwei had gone there last night.

Guess what was inside?

Not gold, not jewellery...there was something that put Duwei in a tight spot! Those things were undoubtedly worth a lot. But...if sold it within a short period

of time, that would be hard.

For example, a samurai armor made up of more than three hundred pieces of the finest gem and sewn with a golden thread! This thing was not useful during the war, but as an artwork, its value would be extremely high!

This thing probably could not be sold in this little city in Rolands Plain, perhaps it could be sold in Port York or Empire City.

Of course, if Duwei needed money, he could disassemble this thing and just sell one piece of the gems. But it would destroy this amazing masterpiece! Duwei surely wouldn't do this silly thing.

Another example, a Miter carved from the completely finest natural amethyst! That was four hundred years ago, when the Imperial Kingdom was very strong, where the king at the time invited lots of skilful craftsmen to make it, and also embedded it with twenty-nine of the finest magic gems. There were bush flowers made of dissolved silver, and on the petals of the flower, there was a big prismatic diamond!

Duwei had seen this Miter in a book before.

People said that this luxury Miter was the coronation gift from the king to the new pope of the Continental Bright Pantheon!

But it's a pity that during the war in the northern territory that it was the period of the rise of the Roland Family. The family won the Roland Plain in that war...

But this Miter was mysteriously lost by the Bright Pantheon!

This was regarded as a shame by the Bright Pantheon during these hundreds of years! The Pope's coronation Miter was lost! In these hundreds of years, all the popes wanted to find this Miter back and treated this as one of their inherited wishes.

So, would Duwei dare to sell this thing?

Perhaps, the Knight of the Pantheons would find him immediately after he sold the Miter!

In that secret room, Saimel had left a total of nineteen collections! Each

collection was very expensive but could not sell!

In fact, when Duwei saw these treasures, he was daydreaming a bit...how great was Saimel?

How could she get these things?!

He had asked the cloned Saimel but could not get any answer. It was because she didn't have this recollection in her cloned memory.

So, even though Duwei got this treasure, he still needed to worry about the money in this short period of time.

He was not in a shortage of money, he just lacked liquidity.

After analysing a bit, he decided to give the remaining eight hundred coins to Mard for purchasing. In the coming three months, Duwei, the eldest son of the Earl, the Little Master in the Roland Family, would not have any money left.

But, the future magic experiments, the setting of the magic medicine, the refinement of the plant, all were consumer goods and needed continuous buying and refill.

How to get one or two thousand coins for an emergency?

During the whole lunchtime, Duwei was thinking of a method to make a profit. Lunch was still good. There were several pieces of foie gras, with that toasted bread, and a yummy seafood soup...obviously, the old housekeeper didn't make any difficulty on this little master except the order from the Earl. He still took care of Duwei's meal. Duwei's favourite food was not cheap, but the old housekeeper didn't dare to treat him bad.

After lunch, Duwei drank some tea. In this world, there was no coffee, but tea. The drinking habit here was quite different, the nobles would normally like to add some honey or sugar...also for some nobles with special taste, they might add some mustard into the tea.

Of course, the taste of the tea in this world was stronger.

After drinking some black tea with honey, Duwei saw the busy old housekeeper.

Hill was so unsatisfied with this little master! He destroyed a two hundred

years old painting! Oh my god! Didn't he know that the picture was the portrait of the ancestor of the Roland Family! Didn't he know that this oil painting had experienced a lot?

He burnt it!

Hill, who was responsible for protecting the property of the Roland family, was angry with this little master! He had prepared to write this down on the letter to Empire City!

"Little Master, do you need anything else?" The old housekeeper was still in good attitude, but just a little bit cool.

"It is such that, if I don't leave this castle, I can do anything I want here, right?" Duwei asked.

"...Yes." The old housekeeper answered with anxiety...what did this little master want to do now?

"Great, I need a girl servant who can sew. Also...bring my horse to the door."

## Chapter 48 - Gambling with the Army

In the afternoon, Duwei went to the barrack next to the castle. There were more than 300 barracks for the private army now.

Ever since Duwei had been kidnaped by the magicians, the Family strengthened the internal safety of the castle. A group of infantry had been mobilized to this barrack already. Now there were almost a thousand private soldiers in this area for guarding the castle.

Duwei entered the barrack by riding a horse, Knight Robert immediately brought some people along and met Duwei.

Because Duwei was kidnaped, Robert was demoted by half a grade officially, but in fact, he was still leading the Knight Troop. Probably before the end of the year, they would find an excuse to promote Robert again.

After Duwei had entered the barrack, everyone paid attention to...the horse of this little master!

This horse had been carefully picked and was the best horse in this castle...even Knight Robert wanted to have it for a long time...

But now, the white horse...it's tails was bald!

Duwei seemed very happy on this horse...but Robert felt creeped out, and doubted; what did this little master wanted to do?

"My dear Knight Robert, I just came to have a look and check what these guys are doing," Duwei's laugh looked harmless to both humans and animals..

"Little master, it is still in spring. Therefore the Spring drill just finished. Right now, soldiers are recovering. For the daily patrol, the Knight Troop handles that...I don't know what kind of thing you would like to see?" Robert looked at the smile of Duwei with a bit of a shock. He tried to test Duwei and said, "Perhaps, you would like to go hunting? If so, I can instantly call a troop and go

along with you.”

Roberts thought that this little master might be too bored because of his grounding and would like to have some fun.

Hunting was just a tiny thing.

“No, don’t want to go hunting.” Duwei laughed happily, “Today, I come here because I want to show my new game to all of you!”

Duwei took something from the saddle. Robert saw that it was a small bag.

After opening the bag, Duwei took out a ball!

Right, Duwei spent lots on this ball.

Duwei didn’t have much money to buy the leather, so, he just went to his room and got his leather jacket. Then he just simply described his request to his female servant who knew embroidery...

Just sewing something into a ball shape, this job wasn’t difficult. The maid completed this task very quickly with high quality.

What was the stuffing for this ball...

In this world, since there was no rubber, he could not make a real inflatable ball. So, he could only find some some sort of soft materials to fill it up. The best choice would be something hairy....for example, from a horse’s tail!

So, he donated his leather jacket and the tail of his horse to make a ball.

During the production of the ball, the servants thought that Duwei was using things recklessly. But Duwei didn’t care.

This might be a chance for Duwei to get some pocket money.

“Robert, look, this is my new game. I call it...football.”

“There will be eleven members on each side and one of them is the goalkeeper. Only the goalkeeper can use hands, whilst the other team members can not use any part of the hands to touch the ball. Otherwise, it is a foul! The aim of this game is to kick the ball into the goal of the opposite side using teamwork! Also, you have to stop the opposite side from kicking the ball into your goal...”

Duwei explained the basic rules of football roughly. Since the rules were not

complicated, the soldiers could easily understand.

They were using their legs to kick the ball!

On the training field, two saddles were used as the goal.

Duwei also got involved in the game. He picked Knight Robert, along with several cavalymen who were out with Duwei before. They formed a team. Meanwhile, the other soldiers formed another team and the game began.

In the beginning, there were a lot of funny things that happened. The soldiers of the Roland family hadn't play football before, so they always violated the rules. Some people even broke the ball because they wanted to pass the ball further.

Luckily, Duwei had predicted that would happen and he had brought some maids that knew sewing, and they sewed the ball immediately...the Knights only had to donate the hair from the tail of their horses.

There was also one knight rushing forward, and when the opponent tried to stop him...they naturally did something violated the rules...Duwei had broadened his horizon!

Usually, one member led the ball and ran for half of the field, the opponent blocked him and then proceeded to kick him. Right, they kicked the person instead of kicking the ball! Then the two persons would give up the ball and start fighting!

Not to mention, these soldiers of the Roland Family were good at fighting, with excellent physical fitness. But Duwei was so weak that after running for a while, he got exhausted and replaced by another soldier directly. He became the judge of the game then.

After giving out a tone of red cards, they finally had a qualified match.

Duwei also showed them how to lead and kick the ball to them, and tried a random passing. Finally, the soldiers knew the basic football rules after that afternoon.

Even the rules of "offside", "foul inside the penalty area", "direct free kick" and "indirect free kick", they understood well.

In the evening, a smart guy even learned diving in the penalty area!

Although this guy was performing very poorly, he got great respect from Duwei along with a Penalty. It was because in his previous life, his favorite football star was Inzaghi, who was the King of Diving.

PR/N: This is...Just how much other culture has this author brought in?! I'm just scared for the future of where this novel goes >.>

This Penalty also won the "black whistle" from the audience.

After the afternoon, all the soldiers in the barrack loved this manly sport!

As one of the Top Sports of the World in Duwei's previous life, it deserved the love!

In the evening, Duwei found that there were several senior officers who had donated their leather jacket and asked the maid to sew a ball...they also donated a few horse tail hairs.

The sky was almost dark, but the people didn't want to leave the field. The winning team was cheering like they had won a war, and the losing team were disappointed and asked for another match tomorrow.

Duwei was very satisfied with the result!

At night, Duwei went to his own tower. Solskjaer went home and had a rest. Only Duwei was in this tower now.

He ordered the guards standing outside to stop others from entering.

Duwei climbed up to the third floor and stood at the rooftop, looked at the sky.

"What have you done today?" Saimel was sitting on the fence and asked. Her white and long legs made Duwei feel a bit dizzy.

Duwei tried not to look at her and sighed, "Earn money".

"Earn money?" Saimel laughed loudly. She had been following Duwei for the whole day. But only Duwei could see her. Saimel laughed for a while and obviously she didn't believe him, and said, "You lost a leather jacket, and cut the hair off that horse's tail. Sweated for the whole day, two outfits were dirtied with dust...is that called earning money?"



Duwei ignored her and said, “You know what? Just wait and watch.”

It was already midnight, there were no clouds, and the sky was full of stars. Duwei checked the time and asked, “Shall we start?”

“The training of Star Magic is not hard...but the hardest part would probably be at the beginning.” When Saimel mentioned Star Magic, she looked serious. At that moment, Duwei thought that she looked like the real Saimel.

Duwei sat down in accordance with the guidance of Saimel.

“Use your heart to feel it.”

“What?” Duwei opened his eyes.

“The Stars!” Saimel answered slowly, “Feel the power of the stars.” After a while, she explained, “Of course, in the beginning, you cannot feel the whole space, I just request for to you pick one of them, then after you sit down, you have to use all your magic sense to feel it...feel the energy of the star...it’s hard, and you may not be able to sense it at night.”

Then after Saimel taught Duwei a magic spell, she requested Duwei to use this spell in his heart, and picked one star as his target.

“Which one should I choose?”

“The biggest and brightest one.” Saimel answered.

Duwei was shocked, “The Biggest and the Brightest? Gosh. There are so many stars in the sky, which one is the biggest and the brightest?”

Saimel laughed mysteriously at that moment. She lifted her hand slightly and point to the sky...at the moonlight, Semel’s smile was very gorgeous, with a little mystery, calmness, which seemed unpredictable!

She pointed at....the MOON!

Duwei was shocked!

Moon! That was the Moon!

He was shocked and looked at Saimel...the greatest female Star Reader...She even knew that? According to the previous life of Duwei, the sun was a star, and the moon was the Earth’s satellite. They were the largest in the sky, it was

because of their volume, as well as the distance from the Earth!

Actually, in this world, even the magicians would separate the sun, moon and stars into three categories!

But no one should've known that... the sun and the moon should be included in the star category\*!

[TL - Note I think the author is trying relate how moon shines because of the sun at night.]

“Feel it, feel all the fluctuation! Even a slight shock. The duration will be long. It can be one day or even a year...if you can pass this stage, you will be able to learn Star Magic...otherwise...that means you don't have this talent.”

After Saimel had finished her words, she was lazy and sat aside, looking at Duwei who was closing his eyes trying to focus on the sky...

With the “horn” on his head, the perception of Duwei was very strong, he could even feel the current and the wind in the sky, also the river miles away...he could even hear the sound of the river...

But, stars and the moon...

They were too far away!

Too far away!

Duwei tried his best to expand his spiritual power, but his power was getting weakened when he reached towards the sky...even when Duwei tried using all of his force, he could only feel the wind...that was his limit!

Moon?

Duwei was a reincarnated person, of course he knew the distance from the here to the moon...but how far was it actually! With that distance, Duwei won't believe that his spiritual power alone could allow him to pass this distance!

Obviously, Duwei failed in the first night.

“I cannot give you the guidance specifically because you have to feel it by yourself.” Saimel sighed, “This thing you have to feel yourself; I will not be able to help you perceive this.”

Luckily, Duwei didn't feel disappointed. Just as Saimel said, this was not an easy thing. Duwei had plenty of time! He didn't have anything else, but time.

In the morning, although Duwei didn't sleep for the whole night, he did his meditation for the entire night and he felt very energetic without any tiredness.

Duwei felt that the spell Saimel told him was helping him with the growth of his spiritual power! It was a much better and efficient method than the meditation method of those normal magicians!

This type of growth, did not refer to the total increase in the spiritual power, but was the practice of refining the spiritual power!

In the morning, Duwei went to the barrack again, and he called more soldiers to come...almost all the soldiers except those that were patrolling came to the training field.

Yesterday, they only spent half a day and all the soldiers who did participate in the football match, loved this sport.

Today, Duwei raised a new method to play.

"I will give out one hundred coins" Duwei laughed, "You all can form your team freely and participate in the game! The match will be grouped by drawing...loser will be eliminated and the winning team can continue to compete with other teams! The final winner will get the prize."

Although Robert thought that this game was a bit worthless...but this game is good for the soldier as it can strengthen their physical fitness. Also, the Spring drill just passed and the soldiers were in the recovery period. Training could not be too harsh for them.

Additionally, this little master was so interested in it, it's not good to turn him down...

Of course, the main reason was that Knight Robert also loved this game too.

The suggestion from this prestiged noble was accepted by the officer, surely the soldiers would not reject this suggestion too.

Also...there was the prize!

To ensure the continuity of this “match” and maintain the fitness of the soldiers, Duwei shortened the period of the competition.

In his previous life, the regular duration was ninety minutes, and now, Duwei had cut it by half.

Soon, the many officers who were responsible for back-up, were responsible for the registration of the soldiers, who, according to their own personal inter-relationship, formed their teams and entered the competition.

The situation was very busy and lasted for the whole morning. Finally, there were 40 teams registered.

According to the rule that Duwei wrote, there would be 15 people in a team; included were 11 participants and 4 substitutes.

The total participants were nearly 600! That included more than half of the entire troops in the competition.

Luckily, the size of the training field was large, and there was a large area of forest and grassland. So, location was not an issue.

Duwei started to draw the lots for grouping. Thus the first session of Roland Family football Competition started...

Since the competition was adopting the elimination system, after the first round, there would be 20 teams left.

Because of the location, this first round could not be processed simultaneously. So the top twenty were born in the afternoon!

At that time, Duwei had already watched most of the matches. With his strong spiritual power and his memory, he got enough information!

Which teams had a better fitness, which team members knew diving, which team members were more talented, and which teams were weaker...

Duwei remembered these details firmly.

Then, before the next round started, Duwei smiled and suggested,

“It’s quite meaningless and boring if we just watch others playing...perhaps, we can do some betting!”

# Chapter 49 - Becoming Sturdy

Most of the soldiers immediately supported this suggestion!

Being a soldier, there was no fun in the barrack. Sometimes, they might go to the bar and drink some beer nearby, or go to find a prostitute.

As a soldier, there was one more thing that was popular among them, and that was Gambling!

The football game suggested by Duwei had already gained their pleasure...and now, this interesting game could link up with gambling!

Many officers seemed illuminated! And most of the people who had lost in the first round, became happier too!

This Master Duwei.....was f\*\*king interesting! He knew how soldier's thought too f\*\*king well!

Under the cheers of everybody, Knight Robert, who originally planned to stop this idea, hesitated for a while. Then he looked at Duwei and sighed. Finally, he didn't speak a word.

Actually, it wasn't a big deal...and now that they were in the recovery period, it was normal that the soldiers gambled. They usually didn't care.

Duwei had lots of ideas about gambling!

Only winning and losing? That was too childish!

Duwei immediately explained his ideas...

Simple winning and losing?! After modifications, how many score the winning team would get, with how many score the losing team would lose were at stake! Even guessing who would get the goal! How many goals! When!

They could even bet if anyone would be sent off...there were various options...

The soldiers and officers were confused about these complicated number games. After the explanation by Duwei, they all thought that they had a chance to win money and felt interested. So, they immediately went back and got their

money.

Duwei was extremely happy about that.

He studied mathematics in his previous life, and probably no one in this world would understand this number game. In this world, probably no one could understand the Arithmetic, not even the scholars.

But Duwei, by using the calculations and equations, with the imposition of some bet limits, listed out the rates...no matter who won or lost at the end...

Duwei, as a banker, would win the most!

By the way, the salary of the private troops of the Roland's Family was really high! Most of the soldiers got a few golden coins as extra money, and those officers were even richer. They could easily get three to five golden coins out of their pocket.

The most important was that Duwei had the right timing! After the Spring Drill, the troops just received their salaries!

Most of the soldiers didn't understand the betting, they just bet according to their favorites. For example, the one who they were closer, or the one they disliked...

The second round ended in the afternoon.

The busiest should be at the registry officer in the barracks, they calculated the betting and the rewards quickly.

After Duwei knew the result, he was so happy.

Most of the soldiers lost money in the ten matches in the second round, only some lucky one won a bit. Finally, 600 gold coins in total were in Duwei's pocket!

Those rich officers lost the most in betting.

Duwei was very satisfied with the result!

Oh, one thing had to be mentioned, in the last match, both sides were almost tied and this was out of Duwei's expectation...Even Duwei did some predictions, though it wasn't exactly accurate. If the result of that match were different from the expectations of Duwei, then Duwei would've earned less.

Luckily, before the match ended, someone saved Duwei!

Duwei expected the winning team would get a Kick Request, but a knight ran forward and kicked a curve ball! Directly into the goal!

After the competition, Duwei met that hero in person...he saved the pocket of Duwei!

This hero was under Robert's Knight Troop. He was a handsome blonde man with great body shape. He was energetic.

"May I ask what your name is?" Duwei asked.

"Your Majesty, my name is David...David Beckham!" This little man was a little bit shy and nervous.

Duwei was shocked and said, ".....%#...\$#...."

After earning a huge load of gold coins, the competition on that day ended. After the second round, there were ten teams left. There was a huge roar for the remaining ten teams from the audience. All the football players were very tired, but were still very energetic and looked proud of themselves. If the sky were not almost dark, they would've liked to continue.

Next, since there were ten teams left...how would the coming competitions continue?

If the elimination systems continued...ten teams...after the third round, there would be five teams left. But five was an odd number! The game couldn't continue. There would be one team without any opponent!

Duwei had his plan already. He showed his crafty smile.

"I have an idea! If the elimination system isn't applicable...then use the league system!"

League system?

Duwei explained the league system quickly. That meant every team had to compete with the remaining teams! If the team won, then the team would get 3 points. If tied, then the team would get 1 point. If lost, the team wouldn't get any score!

After all the competitions finish, the team that got the highest score would be the winner.

Duwei's scheme was despicable...

The more matches there were, the more the gambling he could offer!

"Let me say it again...you are really vile." At night, at the rooftop of the third floor, Saimel looked at Duwei and felt bewildered, "How could you think of this idea?"

PR/N: "Let me say it again...you really are an asshole and should die right now...so how do we keep doing this? *Evil face*

Duwei said, "Hm...I can't tell."

"Don't think that I cannot figure out." Saimel stared at Duwei, "I have calculated the Betting market you made many times! I found that no matter how, you, as a banker, always win the bet...How could you calculate that? These complicated betting markets, a banker, rules. All of these are your idea?"

Duwei didn't answer and he closed his eyes and started meditating...

Of course, to some extent, he didn't want to see the secret part of Saimel... Why did this lady likes to sit on the fence so much?

Although her legs were very pretty...

At that night, Duwei still couldn't feel the "Energy of the Stars".

But after the meditation, with the spell that Saimel taught him, Duwei felt that his spiritual power did improve!

If it went on, even if he could not learn the Star Magic, he could greatly increase his Spiritual Power.

Duwei could clearly feel the refining of his spiritual power...the word "refine" is hard to be described. But the details were clear...

For example, the vision, the sound, the smell and so on. During the meditation, Duwei could hear the wind. Under the refined spiritual power, Duwei not only could hear the wind, he could determine the virtue of the wind! He could feel even the strength of the wind!



These feelings were really detailed, the spiritual power could capture the details clearly...this feeling was very comfortable.

On the third day, the First Session of the football League of the Roland Family began.

Duwei knew that this was not a long term income source, and he also knew that the betting of these thousand soldiers could not be too high. Since the soldiers were not rich and the salaries were limited. It was too despicable if he kept on winning their money.

So, Duwei thought that if he want to earn big money...the only way was to extend the scope!

After negotiating with the officers in the barrack, they got the agreement.

That day, Mard was ordered to go to the towns nearby and publicize the posters.

In a little town, Duwei used the status of the Roland Family to borrow the square in the town for a day.

Afterwards, Mard brought two troops and came to the city today...they performed football tricks to grab the attention of the people.

The three-day football match Competition had successfully caught the interest the people in this town.

Then, under the authorization of Duwei, Mard brought the people before the match and started the betting!

"I am the inventor of football in this world..also the organizer of the first gambling group." Duwei evaluated himself.

Despicable or noble, he didn't care. After seven or eight days, Duwei had already earned more than ten thousand gold coins!

In this town, there were lots of monopolies. The rich merchants also thought that this gambling way was very interesting. These people bet for more than hundred gold coins usually!

The news brought by Mard made Duwei unspeakable.

First, there was someone intimidating.

This sport spread out quickly, and there were some people starting to play this game, there were even casinos trying to form their own teams and attract more customers.

Second...which made Duwei more disappointed...there were someone trying to control the result of the competition! Someone tried to bribe the soldiers! Some casino even operated an outside bet.

Who dared to compete with Duwei?

The money from Duwei could not be stolen by others!

This was the only income source for Duwei. He didn't aim at promoting the Gambling industry. He also didn't want the Gambling to be strengthened in the territory of the Roland Family.

So, Duwei came up a solution quickly!

After two days, there was a notice in the town:

Exclusive Operating Right!

Within the Roland Family's Territory! No one was allowed to operate in the gambling activities related to football! The right of operation could only belong to Duwei, who was the inventor of this game!

If there was anyone operating in this kind of action without permission, he/she would be fined by the executive and tax department strictly!

This order was issued by the executive officers nearby!

Was the exclusive right compatible with the Imperial Law?

What a Joke!

This was the Roland Family's territory! All the officers got paid by the Roland Family! If the little master of the Roland Family requested, no one would say no.

So, Duwei became the monopoly of this game!

With plenty of money, Duwei was more generous. He first gave out three thousand gold coins to the one thousand soldiers in the barrack at one time.

This was treated as the compensation for winning their money before, and the reward for the physical consumption involved in playing football.

He won cheers from the soldiers in the barrack! Although the football game was very fun, this game cost them too much. Which led to some dispute among the soldiers.

Now, with the shiny gold coins...all the soldiers were satisfied. Most of the soldiers got back the money they lost before.

Duwei kept the remaining coins as cash flow, and placed in the magic laboratory..

What was Solskjaer researching for?

He had two tasks now. Firstly, he had to refine a certain amount of “Fire Element” everyday, that’s the Sulphur Duwei mentioned.

Secondly, he was now researching a new method to strengthen his magic power.

Before, Solskjaer could make some magic element and use those elements for practicing low level magic. Since the sensitivity was limited, he could not use the advanced magic. Now, he had an idea...

This idea...If this idea could succeed, even if he was to go bankrupt, Duwei still thought that this was worth it!

# Chapter 50 - Playing Big

Actually, in this amazing magical world, magic was very complicated. To be a qualified magician, there were three conditions.

First was the spells. This was the simplest task of the three. You just had to find a master and become his student; and then you would be able to learn a simple spell at least.

In my point of view, the remaining conditions were the key; which were magic talent and your sensitivity to magic.

Magic talent was the same as spiritual power. Duwei and Solskjaer were the same kind of people. They were born with magic talent and their spiritual power was more outstanding than others.

But, they both were lacking in magic sensitivity and this limited them so that they could not be a real magician.

Now, theoretically, Solskjaer had overcome this issue. He created different kinds of man-made magic elements by using Alchemy. This could increase the concentration percentage of the magic element nearby. So, with this method, even people with weak sensibility could use magic...though it was limited to the low level magic. But at least, theoretically, he had overcome this issue.

Now, the aim of Solskjaer's research was the other side!

Magic Power! That was the same as the Spiritual Power!

Duwei and Solskjaer were those who got the magic power but didn't have the magic sensitivity.

Then, that implied in this world, there were some people in the opposite case: whose Magic sensitivity was great, but that didn't have the magic power!

If magic element could be created by humans...then, perhaps, magic power could be created manually too.

What would be the result...

When Duwei and Solskjaer thought of this point, they could not help but be emotional!

If the issue of magic sensitivity and magic power could be solved...then, that implied that the age of the arrogant magicians would be at an end!

If you had the magic power, but not the magic sensitivity, sufficient magic elements could be created for you! Then you would be able to use the low-level magic spells! Become a junior magician!

If you had the Magic sensitivity, but no magic power! Then Magic Power could be improved! Then you could also be able to use the low-level magic spells! Become a junior magician!

Even a normal person, who didn't have any magic talent and sensitivity! Without any issue, both could be created for him!

So, if Solskjaer's research could be succeeded, then, Duwei thought that this might mark a new turn for this world.

Every person could become a magician!!

Since Duwei had this great target, he was willing to try his best to satisfy the costly request from Solskjaer even under his tight economic situation! He spent thousands and thousands of coins without any hesitation, and now, if possible, he didn't mind spending more golden coins on it!

If this alchemist formula could be developed successfully in order to enhance the magic power...

Duwei could not help but dream of this!

Gather three to five thousands soldiers! Give everybody a bottle of Magic medicine with sufficient magic elements...then all the soldiers would become magicians!

Even though they would become a very junior magician... this was still sufficient enough to change continental history!

More than thousands of Magician Troops!

Also, if the production was fast enough...even the Magician's Troops with numbers equalling 30,000 to 50,000, it was possible theoretically!

He was already emotional about having this idea in his mind!

But now, even though Solskjaer was very busy, and spent the whole day in the laboratory whilst only sleeping for a few hours...there was still zero progress.

Duwei did think of doping or something similar...since magic power was actually the same as spiritual power. Duwei thought that surely if there was doping or similar drugs, which could be found in his previous life, that could make people feel excitement mentally, was it the same as the strong spiritual power?

Solskjaer had seriously thought of the Duwei's hypothesis, but he immediately turned him down.

"There are many things that can make people feel excitement, for example, from what I know, there are some things called "Ice Berries" grown in the frozen forest in the north. It has this effect... After eating the "Ice Berry", people will feel excited, and if overdosed, people will have illusions and feel stoned. I heard that many nobles love this "Ice Berry" very much, they use it on almost every occasion...hmm, in private gatherings, they will use this as food to raise the atmosphere.

Duwei's eyes blinked rapidly...was that a rave party? Seems no matter how much the world changed, the life of the rich were still very absurd...

PR/N: LMAO

"But, this effect of mental excitement is limited. It can only make people feel a bit more excited. It cannot make the total spiritual power of the person increase much. The required spiritual power for using magic is much higher than the spiritual power of the normal person! This type of doping cannot meet the need. I have calculated, and if you want to increase the effect of this kind of doping to the extent that would be sufficient for normal people to use magic it isn't possible, unless..."

"Unless..." Solskjaer had a wry smile and said, "Unless the person has eaten a hundred buckets of the Ice Berries! But as everybody knows, people can't eat that many Ice Berries. Not to mention 100 buckets, even a small plate is already enough to stop your heartbeat because of the over-excitement! Then immediately die!" Solskjaer continued, "Unless you've got a very strong heart like the heart of a huge dragon, only then, perhaps can you bear the side effect of

these 100 buckets of Ice Berries. But, if we can find that huge dragon...the magic power of the dragon is already strong enough, so it is meaningless to use this method to become a magician!”

Duwei thought for a while, then he patted the sleepy Solskjaer and said, “The Future’s still bright! The road is tough!— I believe in you, work hard!”

Then, Duwei passed this difficult question to Solskjaer to handle readily.

Duwei was not in a hurry. He didn’t get worried about that.

Although he had been learning “Star Magic” for a period of time, he still couldn’t overcome the first obstacle. He couldn’t feel the power of the star. But with the spell that Semel taught him and the mediation every night, Duwei’s spiritual power had been improved a lot.

Now, it seemed, there was no urgent need for him to grasp the issue of this tremendous magical power.

He, as a noble, didn’t need to worry about his living state. He always had many servants to take care of him, and now with the football gambling monopoly in the Rolands Plain Area, Duwei didn’t have a shortage of money.

Did he have anything to worry about?

Oh...perhaps there were still little problems.

At the back of the castle, it was farmland originally. This farmland could provide sufficient food including vegetables and fruits; part of the products were consumed in the castle and the remaining would be put up for sale.

Duwei utilized the abandoned warehouse next to this farmland, and now, Duwei would spend some time in this place every day.

The sulphur made by Solskjaer was now intensively used in the creative work process...

Duwei asked Mard to buy different kind of materials and recruit some craftsmen including carpenters, carvers, blacksmiths and even a tailor; and with several servants from the castle, a development team for fireworks was formed for Duwei.

After Duwei obtained the sulphur, this was his first idea that he came up with

which was that he could use the sulphur to make fireworks and earn money! This world didn't need sulphur, as no projectile weapons were needed. It was because even a junior magician could use fireball, the power was even the same as an individual rocket launcher.

Not just a magician, a warrior who knew aura manipulation, could also launch different kinds of wind sword with his aura.

Under this situation, Duwei thought that he could only develop some useless and simple artillery and guns.

It was more practical for making fireworks!

Thanks to his experiences in his previous life, Duwei grew up in village. He had seen the production procedure of a firework in the village. He could even use several newspapers with a little portion of sulphur to make a firecracker! Although it was rough, it worked!

Duwei showed how to make it in front of the craftsmen, and all of them felt super amazomg! After verifying this little master was not using magic, Duwei explained the usage of this yellow powder and then mentioned his requirement.

Duwei wasn't interested in those 'amazing' firecrackers. He only wanted to make some beautiful fireworks.

This firework was different though. After lighting it, there would be colorful flames spreading out!

With the sulphur, there was no difficulty with construction. The workshop in the village could make it, and Duwei believed that he could make it too.

Duwei didn't know how to create different colored flames, but he was familiar with the alchemy of this world. He knew there were some special materials that would produce different colored flames after burning, It just needed the sulphur to work as a complement.

The craftsmen were not silly. After understanding the theory, someone started to make firecrackers which were much prettier than Duwei made. After lighting it, the effect was very loud!

Later, fireworks were created. The most interesting thing from Duwei was that



he requested a carver to carve a statue of a wooden goddess with a water bottle in her hand. After igniting a lead wire, there would be four different colors of flame coming out from the bottle.

In this age, this thing was undoubtedly a miracle! After this, everybody there was shocked! Even the craftsmen and the carvers, who had been involved in the production, after looking at this amazing scenery, could not help kneeling in tribute to the great bright goddess with the most pious voice. They thought this was a gift from god!

Duwei instantly came up with an idea in his mind, and he named the product, “Forgiveness from the Goddess of Dawn.”

Duwei was still unsatisfied after stealing the name from the classic trick of the Aquarius Golden Seiya in the Anime Saint Seiya!

PR2/N:hehe

PR/N:LMAO

The bottle of the “Forgiveness from the Goddess of Dawn” was too small. The firework could only fly to one person’s height.

If you want to make it, then make it bigger!

Duwei thought of the fireworks he saw in his previous life. When it was the National Day! That kind of sison! When it shot towards the sky! Then exploded in the air, flames were radiated out! That scene was very cool!

Compared with that, the Goddess of Dawn was just a kid’s toy.

But this one was so difficult to make!

Duwei had explained for half a day, but still could not explain how to “paint” the flame on the sky to the craftsmen! After thinking for a while, Duwei understood and he did this and that, after solving the issue about the scene... it was already higher than the level of the firework, it even got the “cannon add-on!”

It was really hard to explain the explosive power of the sulphur, the injection theory, the recoil and so on to the craftsmen...The final result was: there was a brave craftsman who tried once. But since too much sulphur was used, it finally caused a small scale explosion and accidentally hurt two people... (It was not a

serious injury, only two day rest were enough.)

But all people thought that this was the warning and punishment from the gods!

So, even though Duwei was the master, no one dared involve themselves in this thing.

Duwei was speechless, “Religious worshipers are so bad...”

Since it didn’t work if shot towards the sky from the ground. Duwei could only start thinking of a new idea.

After thinking of that for a night, Duwei got a more amazing idea:

Since it didn’t work if shot from the ground...perhaps I could drop it from the sky!

But...how to fly into the sky...use the Flying Magic from the Magician?

It’s not cool!

Duwei looked down on this idea.

Also, any magician who could use Fire Magic should be able to make a scene more glamorous than a firework. If he recruited a magician to do this, fireworks were not needed! Why not throw a fire spell out that was glamorous!

But, if not relying on a magician...how to fly?

Duwei suddenly thought that he was hilarious...he could not do everything from the beginning, like making a plane?

(๐ 5 ๐), he thought bigger and bigger now.

The ability of making a plane, Duwei absolutely didn’t have that...So, apart from the plane, what else could he do?

Duwei’s eyes were shining!

# Chapter 51 - Mard Is Flying

Basically, Duwei had passed the Soccer Gambling business to Mard...although he was free, he was grounded because of the order from his father. He had no way to manage his business as he was not allowed to leave the castle.

But, Mard, who was the former horse groom, had a complete change in his status now! Originally, this follower and the disgraced master were sent to Territory of Rolands Family together but now he became the “General Director”, most of the people knew that he was a groom before. The old housekeeper was the highest leader of the servers in this Family. Although to outsider Mard got the highest title, he was just a dummy leader.

But now was totally different! He was Duwei’s General Director! He was the person-in-charge for the soccer gambling business over the Rolands Plains and half of the Cote Province!

Now, if Mard had to go out, the bosses of those large casinos would send people to welcome this General Director. Wherever Mard went, there would be a group of people, who were engaged in the gambling industry, following him.

This group of people were all waiting and hoping that they could gain some benefit from Mard when he was happy. So, if Mard was eating the meat, they would still go and get some soup for him to eat..

Under the authorization of Duwei, Mard has pretended that he accidentally disclosed the betting odds of several soccer matches, the bosses who operated the illegal soccer gambling really earned some great money from that.

Duwei understood the human behavior all too well. Although there was the exclusive operation right that officially let Duwei to be the monopoly in this industry, unofficially, there were still many people operating in this.

Even in his previous life, the underground soccer gambling could not be stopped.

Duwei just didn’t wanted to be the first one for promoting the Gambling over the Rolands Plain. As long as it could not be blocked, then it’s better to guide it!

Duwei just thought for a few seconds and come up with this decision! From now on, all the soccer gambling in the cities nearby had to be closed! Duwei needed to fix it!

Duwei just spoke it out and Mard would execute what Duwei ordered.

Duwei had offered an urgent intensive 3-day training for Mard, no matter how much this former groom understood, Duwei continued to give him many materials for study.

If there was anything that Mard didn't understand, he could only self-study on the journey.

First, as Duwei said, Soccer Gambling, the word "Gambling" could not be spoken! The Little master had created a weird thing, which would be sold openly before each match. Although it could predict the same match result, it's a little bit different.

"From now on, we are not the banker of the betting! We are the store selling a product! The things we will sell are called...Soccer Lottery!" Duwei looked serious when he was saying that, it's kind of a holy feeling. After a while, this little master explained a bit, "From now on, "gambling" should not be spoken! We are not a gambling hub, we are....legal betting!"

How legal is it., Duwei had made a very simple definition: Ten percent of the revenue would be donated to the government authority!

OK!

No matter how much Mard understood, he now could just sit in the carriage with a few servants heading to different towns over the Rolands Plain, and ready for the trading of "Soccer Lottery" as Duwei said.

By the way, before departure, Mard could not help to ask one more question, "Little master, if we are planning to open a store for trading...so, our store should be named."

"Soccer Lottery Center!" Duwei answered immediately.

So, our Mr. General Director Mard, in the foreseeable future, he got a new title in his mind: Director of the Soccer Lottery Center!

The second thing Duwei wanted Mard to do was...Duwei was ready to have a significant amendment on the current “League”!

Up till now, in the league system, all the teams and team members were coming from the troop of the castle nearby. Now, the recovery period of the soldiers was almost ended.

If these soldiers kept on playing soccer and stopped the military training, Duwei worried that the old housekeeper would probably report it by writing the letter to the Imperial City.

So...Duwei was preparing to establish the real league!

Now, every troop could only have a team in the system. Duwei requested Mard to go to few cities and establish one team in one city! Now that soccer was very popular over the Rolands Plain, it's was not difficult to find ten to twenty good soccer players in every town.

After that, team from each place could start their league competition...this idea made Mard very excited!

Duwei listed out all the thing, seems like this league competition could bring lots of revenue...Firstly, soccer players from Roland Plains, they didn't request for high joining fee and high salary. Most of them were farmers, craftsmen, carpenters, blacksmiths, miner, even the barbers. They were happy playing the soccer occasionally. One to two golden coins as rewards were already sufficient for them to play in the competition passionately.

The expected high revenue from the soccer lottery was sufficient to pay for these soccer players.

But Duwei didn't give up the target of getting maximum benefit...he even let Mard to go to find the biggest leather merchant in the city nearby...That merchant had been providing different kind of leather products to the Rolands Family for a long time.

Duwei promised, in the future “Soccer League”, when the soccer players were in the competition, they would wear uniform...the name of the merchant's shop would be written on the uniforms!

Considering the popularity of this game was still high. Every time when there

was a match, there were still many people centralizing in the City Square....this kind of popularity...

This merchants had given five hundred golden coins to Duwei generously as the “Naming Right” fee for the future one year.

So, the team in this city would be named as “Rolands Plain Jade Town Old Clone Leather Store Soccer Team”!

Duwei sold the naming right for the first soccer team in the league in front of Mard. Then next, Mard was responsible for selling the naming right of the twelve teams to the local rich merchants.

With all these things...Mard almost started to admire this little master who was raised up by himself.

Who said our little master was an idiot?

Have you seen any idiot who could earn hundreds of thousands of gold coins?

Mard was so tired. He was busy with going to different cities and towns, from south to north, east to west in the Rolands Plain, he had gone to more than ten cities and towns! The twelve soccer teams were finally established and all the naming rights had been sold out.

Duwei didn't care how weird the names were...He was satisfied with the thousands of gold coins brought by Mard. He earned total five thousand gold coins from these twelve teams.

“This is just the first year, my dear Mard. If we organized the league competition well, you wouldn't be busy with selling the naming right in the future. Those merchants will beg you with the boxes of coins! At that time, I am afraid only few thousand will not be enough for buying the naming right for one team!” Duwei looked at this loyal servant, he felt touched. So, he decided to give more rewards to this loyal servant.

“My dear Mard...are you interested in being the first president of Rolands Plain Soccer Association?”

So, apart from the title of “General director” and “Director of the Soccer Lottery centre”, Mard got another amazing title: President of the Soccer

Association!

Although he still didn't understand what this title meant, Mard was impressed as this little master esteemed him most, he accepted Duwei's suggestion happily.

Duwei was very happy.

It was because the coins brought by Mard could help him enormously.

The soccer league was not started yet, the revenue from the soccer lottery was still zero, these five thousands golden coins from the naming fee was the only liquidity for Duwei.

God damn it...Solsjaer still didn't have any progress even after he spent thousand and thousand of gold coins.

With the money brought by Mard, Duwei could relax a little bit. With the happiness, Duwei brought our President of the Soccer Association to see his new invention.

At the place, where Duwei had his firework research at the back of the castle, Mard admired his little master much again.

Although he still didn't know what this little master invented.

The thing in front of him was like a huge basket.

Right, this was a huge basket. It was even large enough to let three to five people to stand inside. The fringe of the basket was high that was about the human's waist. When people stood inside, it's like sitting in the carriage with open-top.

Above it....was a gigantic spherical thing that was sewn with a dozen of leather, gently floating above the baskets!

Right, it's was gigantic hot air balloon!

Under it was a stove, which was heating up the balloon, heating up the air inside the balloon.

The color of the flame was very bright. Duwei had used some magic in this step...that's the fire magic he just learnt. Solskjaer made something that could help in strengthening the burning effect of the sulphur.

"This thing is called Hot Air Balloon! My dear Mard." Duwei was very happy.

This was the result after one month of effort! Although within this period, nearly fifty high-quality leather was destroyed...these leather were bought from the merchant, who was the first one to buy the naming right of the soccer team, at a very low price.

Duwei ignored the blankly Mard and briefly introduced his new invention.

Mr. Mard, who was the former groom, the current General Director, the General Director of the Soccer Betting Center and the President of the Soccer Association, was fainted. He looked at this little master and stammered, "Little master...you, you said this thing can fly? You said 'Fly'? Right?"

"Yes, you are right, my dear Mard!" Duwei smiled, "So, I offer you an honor! Have a trial flight with me! This is the historical moment! You will be the first human who can fly into the sky without any magic help!"

After that, it was like a dream for the Old Mard!

Duwei cut the rope tied on the basket, the buoyancy of the hot air balloon brought the basket with Duwei and Mard up!

When the basket was a little bit off the ground and getting higher and higher... every person stopped breathing without making any sound. They stared at Duwei and Mard flying into the sky. They were shocked...

There were even some people who forgot to clean up their saliva!

For those people, who were living in the age without any flying tools, this scenery was too....magnificent!

Until the hot air balloon, where Duwei and Mard were inside, reached the highest point of the castle, the craftsmen on the ground started to scream and cheer! Everyone knelt down on the floor and praised the great god...

Compared with the cheerful people on the ground, Mard felt that he could not stand up with his legs!

This was the first time for him to fly into the sky, Mard kept shaking since he was off from the ground. He looked pale and the eyes were getting as big as the bovines, his teeth made some weird sound, he kept on clutching the edge of the



basket tightly...

"How is it? My dear Mard..." Duwei looked down...the hot air balloon was floating slowly. From this angle, he could see the scenery around the castle, the mountains far away, the forest close by!

"Is this scenery unforgettable...." Duwei was enjoying.

"Little master..." Mard tried to swallow his saliva and asked carefully, "This...I am speechless now...this is so amazing...but, I would like to ask...now that we are flying so high...but, how can we land off?"

"..." Duwei looked pale too, he looked at Mard and said, "Shit...I only know how to fly...but I don't know how to land off."

Matt said, "Little master....you are the most talented genius I have ever seen..... %✂%× ; ✂.....× ; (.....✂"

Duwei said, "Mard! You spit on me!"

The people on the ground started looking at each other after the excitement, "When will they land off? It's almost dinner time?"

Under the sunset, the hot air balloon was floating higher and higher, further and further under the infinite glow...

How amazing the world was! Right?

# Chapter 52 - Visit of the Magic Teacher

Mard was staying in his room for two days after the flying trial. After recovering from his illness, he still felt that he could not walk properly with his legs.

But Duwei still gave a reward to this loyal servant. It was because that day on the Hot Air balloon, when they were struggling how to land off, the panic Mard suggested an idea, he asked if they could shut off the stove in order to land off.

This suggestion inspired Duwei. The energy for the Hot Air Balloon was related to the temperature of the air inside the balloon. If they shut down the stove, the air inside would be cooled down, the balloon could land off then.

But after this poor Mard landed off, he almost spitted everything, and finally he needed to be carried back by the cavalry.

When everybody in the castle was guessing what kind of new thing this little master would make...Duwei simply remained silent..

In these days, Duwei didn't invent any new things. Duwei knew that he didn't has any interest to make so many things that would use up his energy. The fireworks, soccer betting, these were the idea for solving the liquidity problem he had.

Duwei didn't aim to have the costly Industrial Revolution. His target was earning money for supporting the expensive magic experiments.

Now, since he didn't need to worry about the money, he stopped all the thing.

Apart from going to Solskjaer's laboratory to check the progress of this magic alchemist everyday, going to check the research team of the Hot Air Balloon and the Firework afterwards, he spent the remaining time on learning magic.

Every night he would go to the rooftop on the third floor of the magic laboratory alone and spent a night there. He had a tacit agreement with Solskjaer that Solskjaer would use the laboratory in the daytime and he would

use the laboratory at night. They could not intervene each other.

Almost a month, but Duwei still could not overcome the first difficulty of the “Star Magic”. The concept of the “Star Energy” was still too vague. Without any specific standard and description, even Saimel could not accurately explain what “Star Energy” was... Since this Saimel was not the real Star Reader, she was only a clone and got a part of the memory. This Saimel was not able to answer most of the difficult questions from Duwei

Apart from learning Star Magic at night, Duwei also learned the traditional magic on the ground at daytime...Solskjaer did help him a bit, since he was a magician. Duwei still could learn some low level magic from him.

In this one month, Duwei had learned some low level spell basically, for example, the simple Fire Magic, Fireball, also the Wind Sword from the Wind Magic. Duwei could use these easily. Among the low level magic, Duwei knew the “Vertigo technique” and “Acceleration technique” well.

Finally, Solskjaer also admitted that the magic power of Duwei was better than him...in terms of the magic power or the magic sensitivity. If Duwei were willing to accept the assessment from the Magic Union, he could easily get the qualification of Grade one Magician easily with his current ability.

In fact, Duwei had slightly hidden his real power.

Although Duwei still could not learn the Star Magic, with the spell learned from Saimel, his spiritual power had a great improvement. Now, his magic power reached at the Grade three level already.

For the magic sensitivity...with the “Horn” given by Chris, Duwei’s Magic sensitivity was much better than many intermediary magicians!

In the afternoon, Mard was given an important task from Duwei!

As being the General Director of Duwei, Mard would be responsible for preparing the birthday present and going to Imperial City to celebrate countess’s birthday.

Duwei had spent a night to write a letter...Duwei had a considerable feeling to this beautiful and gentle countess. Especially when he got sick in childhood, the countess had kneeled for a night, praising and taking care of Duwei...Even after

the birth of his brother, every family member has neglected him, but Countess didn't and she still kept going to Duwei's bedroom every night, cuddling her little son and singing a lullaby for him.

Duwei was very touched. He could feel the motherly love from this beautiful and gentle woman. Although Duwei felt guilty about his love...as he was not her real son. But because of this love, he always missed this beautiful and gentle mother.

The birthday present was the "Forgiveness from the Goddess of Bright" that was prepared by Duwei.

Duwei was confident that after this unprecedented present arrived the Earl Court, certainly would cause a great shock! Duwei didn't care about the shock, he just hoped that Countess would feel happy in the birthday party.

Mard was heading to the Earl Court by carriage with few servants. The Countess's birthday would be seven days later. If everything's right, they would arrive two days before the Countess's birthday.

After sending Mard away, Duwei was relaxed a little bit, he was actually a bit selfish. He felt bad in the grounding period, he could not leave the castle. He felt bored in this one month. He hoped that this birthday present could make his father felt better about him. He didn't care of the three hundred golden coins. He just wanted his grounding order to be removed if the Earl felt happy about the present.

At the night when Mard left, the sky was very clear. Duwei suddenly got an idea at that night. He ordered the servants to prepare a stove and placed it on the rooftop on the Laboratory tower, and ordered the chef in the castle to prepare some sirloin, lamb chops and some vegetable grown in the farmland behind the castle...also a bottle of red wine.

Duwei planned to have an open-air barbecue.

The steak was placed on the hob of the stove, Duwei used the brush he made and dipped the seasoning, smeared on the steak. He did it very carefully. He tried his best to let every part of the steak was evenly spread with the sauce.

The grilled seasoned meat scented, Duwei was enjoying and have a deep breath, he even hummed a ditty.

Saimel looked at the pleasant Duwei strangely.

"Which song are you humming? It seems like the song from bard...but why can i not understand every single word of it?"

Duwei was too lazy to explain, he grunted and flipped the steak by using the folk, then drank some wine.

"Red wine with red meat." Duwei was so satisfied and sighed, "The sky is so clear, with the breeze...such a good evening. Eat some grilled meat and drink some good wine...but it's a pity that there is no music."

"You, little noble, really know how to enjoy life." Saimel sighed and said, "Will you learn Star Magic tonight?"

"I have learned for more than a month." Duwei wry smiled, "The training of spiritual power is very effective, but the star power, I still cannot get it. Not because I am lazy, I just don't understand it. This can not be solved in one or two days. I am tired in this month, I need to squeeze some time for relaxing."

Then, he used to fork and lifted the grilled steak and had a bite, it's so yummy. He smiled and said vaguely, "Yummy! So yummy! Unfortunately, you cannot eat such a yummy food."

Saimel rolled her eyes directly. Since she was a magic creature, technically an object with spiritual power...without a physical body, she was just an illusion, she didn't need to eat or drink or sleep.

Duwei unlocked her seal, her spirit was deeply engraved on Duwei's magic mark, she almost became the shadow of Duwei.

"You don't eat, don't drink, don't sleep...so, is your life boring?" Duwei looked at Saimel and sighed.

Saimel was still wearing the Red gown. After few reminders from Duwei, she finally learned how to pay attention to her appearance, and not swinging her beautiful legs on the fence.

Saimel rolled her eyes again.

"Are you eternal...hm...I didn't ask you about that before." Duwei blinked his eyes, "How long can you live?"

"Same as you." Saimel felt helpless when she said that, "I was released by you, the spell of unlocking the seal let my life linked with your spiritual power. So, how long you can live is the same as how long I can live! If you died, your spiritual power would be gone, then I will disappear as well."

"So, that means we live and die together?" Duwei looked strange.

"Be careful with your words, my little noble." Saimel smiled maliciously, "Don't forget I am your great great grandmother."

Duwei let out a Bah cry and stared at Saimel, "you are only the clone, not the real Saimel. Also...great great grandmother? Have you seen any grandmother swinging her legs in front of her grandson all the time?"

Saimel was angry and looked at the sky.

Duwei was chilling on the chair. He was eating the grilled sausage, looking at Saimel sitting on the fence. The light of the moon reflected on her face, her red gown was floating, her hair was like the snow. Her face looked soft, but with a confused expression...

"What are you thinking?" Duwei asked.

"I don't know. So I am thinking." Saimel answered weirdly with a low tone.

Then, Saimel looked at Duwei, she was confused, "Actually, I feel that I am weird...when I was sealed, I always hoped that someone will unlock me. But after I have been released, I find that I don't know what I can do...I am not human. But...Saimel had given me part of her memory, let me think in the human way. In these days, I kept following you, I felt confused...I don't know what I can do. Although I feel relaxed when I am spending time with you, it's much more free than being sealed in the painting. But I am more confused...You are human, with your current age, you at least can live for few decades or even hundred years... So, is it meant that I have to spend time with you in the coming hundred years and only talk to you and be your shadow? Looking at you every day for hundred years till you die?"

Duwei sat stricter a little bit and he looked serious. He looked at Saimel and sighed, "I am shocked...your thinking style is close to the human. To be honest...I cannot answer your question. It is because your question is the most difficult question that even the cleverest person in the world cannot answer - Meaning of

Life.”

”Meaning of life...” Saimel was pondering this sentence.

Duwei was looking at the sad Saimel, he suddenly thought of a fairy tale in his previous life: Pinocchio.

Duwei immediately told this story to Saimel.

This magic creature was fascinated, she even didn’t said a word when she was listening.

When Duwei said that the puppet “Pinocchio” told a lie, its nose would get longer, Saimel could not stop laughing. She laughed happily and looked a bit... innocent.

When Duwei said “Pinocchio” hoped to become a real human, with the real human body...

Saimel bowed her head, very low, even Duwei could not see her expression clearly.

Finally, Duwei finished his story, at the end, the puppet could turn into a real human...

”I also want to have a real body.” Saimel suddenly spoke.

Her voice was very soft. But in her voice, Duwei could feel her hope!

In the past, Duwei didn’t have any feeling about this story. But tonight, he was looking at this magic creature sitting in front of him, and said her wishes sadly...

He suddenly felt the compassion, but he didn’t know how to comfort Saimel. ”Perhaps...” Duwei thought, “Perhaps we may try....perhaps the magic can....”

”It’s late now, I want to have a rest.” Saimel interrupted Duwei. Her words were strange because magic creature didn’t need to rest.

Obviously, she was escaping, escaping from the impossible comfort from Duwei.

BANG, Saimel disappeared. Duwei sighed as he knew that Saimel didn’t want to speak. Although she was the magic creature, when Saimel didn’t want to speak, she could attach to anything next to Duwei.

Ring, badge, clothes, even the book. As long as Saimel wanted to, she could even attach on Duwei's belt. Otherwise, she would be floating around Duwei for the whole day, Duwei also felt that someone was following him.

Duwei sighed and he didn't stop Saimel...although he could order Saimel to show up because he was the one that released Saimel and magic creature might listen to all the order from Duwei. But at that moment, Duwei knew that she was sad and didn't want to talk much.

After drinking the wine, extinguishing the fire, Duwei was chilling lazily and looked at the sky.

The sky was still bright, and Duwei suddenly asked himself, "For me....what's the meaning of life?"

He was sitting for a long period of time there. When he started feeling tired and ready to go to bed, Duwei was a bit shocked! He felt there was a strong spiritual power in the air nearby!

The slight fluctuation of the current could not be hidden from the spiritual power of Duwei, he sat and looked around!

"Seems your sensitivity is strong." In the dark, there was a melodious voice suddenly passed over here!

This voice seems old, but the tone was very soft and even with a smile, "According to what I heard of your situation before, you should not have this level of spiritual power...Mr. Duwei Roland."

There was a shadow that suddenly showed up near the balcony!

In the darkness, this man was wearing a white gown, it was a magician gown. He had an old face, long beard, his eyebrows were fine, his smile was very calm. But when he looked at Duwei, his eyes were sharp like needles!

Duwei was uncomfortable about that.

"Who are you?" Duwei puzzled, "A magician? I didn't have any contact with the Magic Union."

This old man flew across the fence and landed next to Duwei. He was still smiling...by the way, although he was old, he had very fine skin and flashing eyes



which didn't match with his age!...Duwei never saw anyone that looked like him!

"You made me shocked...before, I thought you are just a little noble boy who knows some tricks." This old magician smiled and looked at Duwei, " But now, seems you got outstanding spiritual power...oh, you know magic too? You don't have to be in the position of using fire magic...don't need to be cautious about me...Because it's useless."

Duwei looked at this guy intensively, "Who are you?"

"Who am i...." The old magician went to the side of Duwei, he bounced and grabbed the bottle on the table, and drank a little bit and sighed, "Nice wine. The wine from Roland Family was always good...you should feel honored as my little kid, you are the first one who treat me wine from the Roland Family in these hundred years."

"You just....looking at me secretly?!" Duwei was worried! The existence of Saimel was a great secret and Duwei didn't want other to know there was an invisible magic creature following him.

"No. I don't do this kind of meaningless thing." The old magician smiled, "I just arrive....hm, I haven't been to Rolands Plain for couple years. I almost got lost. Right...it's so late. You are not at your room but drinking wine in this place...Is it the discipline of the Roland Family so loosened and lax?"

Duwei was wary, "You seems like you know the Roland Family well?"

"No no no..." The old magician smiled relaxingly, "I just know some people from Roland family when I was young. Hm...that happened a long time ago."

"ok..." Duwei spoke carefully and sat slowly. He hid his hands in the sleeves, slightly withheld the magic scroll, "Magician, a night visit, you are not only passing here, right?"

"I....came to see you." Old Magician thought for a while, and suddenly noticed his reason for coming here, "I came to find you to get back a couple of things."

"What?"

"Several things." The old magician sighed, "You had extorted many things from my stupid student...although that kid was innocent, as her teacher, I cannot just

stand here and see how she was cheated by others.”

Duwei finally understood, “You....you are Vivian’s teacher?!”

## Chapter 53 - Vivian's Teacher

"Right, I am."

Then, as the old magician slightly crooked his finger, Duwei felt his hand suddenly felt light! The Magic Scroll hidden under his sleeve was gone and amazingly was now in the hands of the old magician!

"Look, this scroll is made by me." The old magician glanced at it then put it away in his gown. "Finally returned to its owner."

"You...you came here to take back Vivian's things." Duwei smiled forcefully.

"That was my original purpose...but, after meeting you, I changed my mind." The old magician laughed...

Duwei sensed that something bad would happen, but when he was about to jump up from the chair, he felt very light...

The old magician didn't use any spell. He had merely beckoned his finger towards Duwei and Duwei could not move! He started floating in the air!

Having lost control over the rest of his body, he could only roll his eyes. He felt just like a huge lump of meat hanging on a hook!

"Listen, kid." The old magician touched Duwei's head and said, "Oh, seems like I am right...you have an interesting object on your head...you use magic with this thing?"

Duwei was too shocked to even roll his eyes this time!

How did he know?!

"My lovely student was going out for the first time on her own, then was cheated out of all her belongings...she even almost died on that island and lost her pet..." The old man said in a mocking tone while staring at Duwei. "As I was heading back home, I coincidentally discovered that a part of my poor student's memory was erased with magic! As a responsible teacher, shouldn't I do something about it?"

The old magician waved his hand, and immediately, Duwei was able to talk, “You...you think I did that?”

“Hard to tell. I didn’t think so at the beginning.” The old magician’s eyes flashed, “But you, a kid from the Roland Family who was without any talent in magic, can now suddenly can use it? I should think, that island must be the key right?”

Duwei carefully examined this magician.... He wanted to defend himself, but the old magician put him at a loss with only one spoken sentence!

“May I know....Chris, is he good?”

Duwei was truly astonished this time!

Chris! He knew that Devil’s servant, Chris!!

\*\*\*\*\*

The next morning, all of the servants were frightened...their little master was missing!

On the rooftop that Duwei had rested, there was a letter written by the person himself.

“A magician has taken me away.”

This single line was written by Duwei. He didn’t write “kidnap”, but only left behind a vague message of “taken me away”.

Obviously, Duwei’s note was approved by the magician, who took Duwei away.

It was because, on that note, there was not only Duwei’s signature...but also a symbol.

No one knew what it was, except Solskjaer, the only magician in the castle, who understood.

“It seems like the private stamp of a magician.” Solskjaer thought for a while. “Some of the older magicians are used to leaving that mark in place of a signature. We can go to the Magic Union and check it.”

What made everyone in the castle feel nervous was...that Duwei was taken away by a magician! The last time when a magician kidnapped him was only a

month ago!

Was it because at that time, the Roland family and the Magician ran into a dispute? Was this an act of revenge?

This urgent matter was immediately reported!

But the strangest thing the people felt was, when the symbol stamp was sent to the Magic Union, they unexpectedly maintained silence!

Even Earl Raymond, when he came to know that his eldest son was kidnapped by a magician again, his first reaction was anger! No matter how much he hated this son, but to carry out the same act twice, this meant that they were provoking the Roland Family!

But, after seeing that symbol...Earl Raymond immediately calmed and kept silent! That's right, he didn't say a word to anyone about it!

It was all was so different from the last time. After Duwei was kidnapped this time, the Roland Family and the Magic Union both kept a strange silence, as if there was an unspoken agreement between them. News of this event was suppressed...

Solskjaer, who was getting nervous, finally got a piece of information from the Magic Union. It was disclosed by a staff member who was selling magic components in the Magic Union.

"The stamp belongs to a very great magician, who the Magic Union don't dare to offend! He is not recorded in any documents in the Magic Union...that man, don't mention your little master, for even if he takes the son of the king away, the King would also keep silent!"

\*\*\*\*

Duwei felt terrible!

First of all, he didn't know what kind of magic this man was using on him... because Duwei only felt his body was not responding at all!

This was a strange "kidnapping" event!

For the Duwei right now, his head and consciousness were the only things that was still his own, but everything else was controlled by the magician!

Just like now!

The old magician was relaxing on the grass, leaning under a tree and observing Duwei when he suddenly gave an order.

Duwei cursed this old man from the bottom of his heart, but he didn't have any way out of this situation!

Because this old man just said, "Set up a fire!"

And the powerless Duwei could only stand. He got busy with picking up sticks, setting up a fire, no matter how much the black smoke affected him, no matter how angry he was...his body was totally out of control!

He was just like a puppet!

He looked at the old man, who brought out something from the little pocket of his gown. It was obvious that it was a magic tool, because the old magician retrieved a lamb shank, a nice bottle of wine, even a set of new clothes and some bottles from that little bag.

It seemed as if an unlimited number of things could be stored in that bag.

Then, the old magician ordered, "Grill the meat!"

Duwei then "looked at" himself and carried out what the magician's command!

This was torture!

As Duwei worked, he spoke angry words of abuse.

But the punishment from the old magician was very simple. He just glanced at Duwei and said, "Slap yourself."

Duwei could only watch helplessly as his own hands moved to slap him!

After few slaps, Duwei could would only stay silent and did not complain... although he continued to curse the old magician over and over again in his mind, he didn't dare to say a word out loud.

After the old magician felt full, he looked to Duwei at the side, and suddenly laughed, "Your cooking skill is so nice. I haven't had such a tasty grilled meat for long time."

Duwei directly rolled his eyes.

"Now, sleep!" Old Magician finished his talk, leaned against the tree and closed his eyes.

And what about Duwei?

He didn't want to sleep! But his body was controlled by the old magician! He could do nothing as he stretched his body, lied down and closed his eyes!

No matter how hard he tried, he could not open his eyes and remained still!

It was because the order of old magician was: Sleep!

What's going on? Duwei felt like he was a computer in his previous life, coding the program, which would then execute its functions without hesitation...it didn't matter whether he was willing to do this or not!

In the past five days, the old magician had brought along Duwei while always heading north.

From the beginning, the old magician had taken Duwei away from the castle by flying that night, and afterwards continued moving north. After one day, they had passed a town where the old magician let Duwei buy two horses.

Duwei didn't resist, he couldn't even escape. Right now, he only had the freedom of thought, because the old magician fully controlled his body.

Duwei had asked the old magician about the magic that was used on him.

He didn't answer.

Duwei had also asked him why he knew about that island and Chris, and whether he was acquainted with him.

He didn't answer.

Duwei asked where they were going to.

He didn't answer.

Duwei was going crazy.

Busy with traveling in the daytime, especially riding on a horse for long hours. Since Duwei was not a strong person, this was a hard experience for him. His

body could not stand the tough journey, but the old magician did not want to let him free.

“Why do we need to ride on horseback?” Duwei finally asked, “You are such a great magician, you can go everywhere by flying.”

Finally, the old magician answered this time.

“The place we are going to is a very special. Long hours of flight would use up my magic power. I have to conserve all of my strength before arriving.”

That was the only question from Duwei that the old magician bothered answering.

What made Duwei feel frustrated was that...he could not call Saimel out!

He knew Saimel was inside his body, but this magic creature wouldn't show up.

Heading to the north day by day, the climate got a bit cooler. The Roland Plains was in the south with a warm climate. Duwei was wearing a very thin shirt. During the next few days, Duwei could feel the cold of the environment, his hands becoming stiff. When he was on the horse, he was always shivering.

Finally, the old magician showed a bit of sympathy towards Duwei. He taught Duwei some weird gestures, and when Duwei was about to rest, he had to perform these gestures once...

It seems like the exercises in Duwei's previous life, but much more foreign. Also, there were some actions that required bending the body, which were too difficult for Duwei. But under the “orders” of the old magician, even though it was painful, he would still do as he was told!

But oddly enough, it had a significant effect! Every time Duwei performed the exercise once, he felt a warmth from the inside! This heat overwhelmed the cold!

He did this exercise every day, and Duwei could feel his body getting stronger, day by day!

On the 20th day, they arrived at the Northern Continent. The weather here was still colder than before. There was no green areas nearby, because everything was covered by ice.

When the winds in the North Continent blew over Duwei's face, it was like



being cut across with a knife. The difficulty of the journey was rising even more.

They encountered a blizzard!

The snow blocked the road, and the horses could not pass through it. When people walked in the snow, the snow was too deep enough to bury a person up to the calf.

The old magician finally showed some kindness when they found a small town. In a small pub, the old magician let Duwei stay in the room, and then he went away.

Duwei didn't escape as the magician left orders to make no sounds and only to stay in the room.

In the evening, the old magician came back and brought along a large amount of luggage. He opened the things he brought in front of Duwei, and from it came out a coat, leather armor, a sheepskin hat, and a pair of boots. Finally, there was also a long knife.

"Get dressed, we are about to go." The old magician gave a simple order.

"Where...are we going to?" Duwei asked again.

And at last, the old magician gave the answer, "The Frozen Forest."

# Chapter 54 - Frozen Forest, the Monster World

The thing that made Duwei confused was that the old magician spent Duwei's money to buy all the things. When Duwei was caught, in his pouch there was more than a hundred gold coins.

Duwei wore a fur coat, a sheepskin hat that covered his ears, and he also put on some snow boots with a broadsword hanging on his waist...Duwei looked like an adventurer, who had always gone to the Frozen Forest.

When they left the hotel, there was a small sleigh outside, and four grey dogs were lying on the floor.

The sleigh was really small, Duwei could only squeeze in with the old magician, and the magician was still wearing the white gown....he seemed to not be scared of the cold. When Duwei was sitting next to him, he found out the secret. This old man had used magic. When Duwei was sitting next to him, he felt like he was sitting near a heater. The old magician was emitting warmth from his body.

"Huh, knowing magic is not such a big deal." Duwei hummed.

But he was curious, as there was no driver for this sleigh.

This old magician was really a "Genius", he even knew how to drive a sleigh; he didn't even need to yell, he just sat in the sleigh and said, "Let's go!".

And then the dogs started running! The old magician didn't need to control the direction, the malamutes would know the way and they kept running. On the white snow, there was a very long track formed from the sleigh. They were heading towards the north.

Even though Duwei had worn the coat and the hat, he still felt the biting pain when the freezing wind blew on his face. He couldn't even open his eyes. He could just sit closer to the warm old magician to get some comfort.

The wind in the North was like a sharp knife...Duwei had lived in the southern

area even in his previous life, and he never went to the north before. He had just experienced this freezing climate a few times before.

On the way, he had to stay with this evil old magician and this god damn climate!

It was still sunny, but there was no warmth. Duwei was frozen like an ice cube. If he had rubbed himself a bit, his skin would burn. Duwei was in so much pain that he thought that he might die.

The Frozen Forest was located to the north...where people said it was at the most northern part of the continent.

There, was also the official “Borderline” of the Roland Empire. Normally, the citizens of the Empire were not allowed to head to the north.

As they went further to the north, there was not only the freezing snow storm in the Frozen Forest, nor the unlimited forest area...but the most important thing was that it was one of the two places where there was magic monsters living on the continent.

The Empire had troops stationed to the south of the Frozen Forest. Northern “Storm Troopers” of the Empire were spreading along the borderline at the south of the Frozen Forest, and there were checkpoints along all the roads to the Frozen Forest.

Of course, these were only the observable ones.

But secretly, there were many mercenaries, and also some small-scale adventure groups, which headed to the Frozen Forest every year...and these people were all talented. There were terrible magic monsters inside the frozen forest, but in their eyes, these were shining gold coins!

If they sold the monster’s fur, or the different monster cores of the monsters in the south, much more money could be earned.

This “Smuggling” was almost an open secret. The Empire actually acquiesced.

The troops stationed at the Southern boundary of the Frozen Forest were used to blocking normal people from entering this dangerous area; but for those adventurers with great skill such as magicians, or senior knights, they could hide

silently from the patrols of the troops. For those large scale teams, they even fought with the troops because of the benefits gained from the smuggling.

People in the Roland Region loved fighting much, and although there were only a few magicians, there were many knights. But due to the benefit gained from adventures, many people had still tried to fight for that.

Duwei and the old magician were heading to the north from that town, and after a half day, they arrived at the checkpoint. When the Empire soldiers saw the white gown...These soldiers were obviously stronger than Duwei. There were a few senior knights only wearing a leather corset, with their hairy chests were exposed. They were standing at the checkpoints, whilst grabbing some snow and rubbing themselves. They sang very loudly while they were rubbing.

This checkpoint was built on the continent without using stones...The frozen soil in the North was much harder than the stone. Every summer, when it was warm, they would just grab some softer soil and build it up, water it, and after the freezing night, a wall would be built.

Looking at those soldier with a thick white gown, leather hat with icicles, Duwei didn't know if he should feel shocked or what, so he just huddled tightly.

The old magician whistled, and the four Malamutes stopped just before crossing.

There were almost a hundred soldiers at this checkpoint. When they saw a little sleigh stopped in front of them in this snowy place, they immediately gathered around it. These soldiers were intentionally touching their broadsword. The leader stopped showering with the snow and also grabbed a spear whilst he rushed to there.

On the snow, this knight's running speed was very fast. He just ran a bit and then he stood in front of Duwei. By looking at his appearance, he could be called a "barbarian", as the long beard almost obscured one-third of his face, which made him look very rough, but therefore his martial should be very great by looking at him and how he ran on the snow.

These soldiers blocked the road, and when there was a person who wanted to speak, he glanced at the outfit of the old magician, and he shut his mouth immediately!

The soldiers in the North knew many things, such as every year, there were magicians who liked to come to this place, and catch some rare magic monster in the forest since the magic cores were their favourite magic ingredient.

They looked at the outfit of the old magician and they knew his identity... Although this old magician didn't have any badge on the gown.

It was normal to have this thing happen in the Frozen Forest...the magicians that came to this place knew the prohibition of the Empire. Although the status of magicians were prestiged, to avoid provoking the Empire, they hid their identity by not showing their magic level badge. So, they could show their identity of being a magician to threaten the soldiers while they could hide their real name and identity.

Since there were only a few magicians on the continent, if they hanged the badge, other people would know their level. If people wanted to give them trouble, they could go to the Magic union and check. Based on the level, the appearance of the magicians could be found out.

So, in the Frozen Forest, the magician would only wear the gown without the badge. This was not a secret habit...It was so called "Doing a bad thing anonymously."

Duwei was staring and looked a bit excited. In his point of view, it is impossible for this small troop to block their way. Although Duwei didn't know how powerful the old magician was...by virtue that he could have trained a magic genius like Vivian, and that he could give a dragon to his apprentice as a gift ... the strength of this guy should not be weak.

If they really got a fight, Duwei bet that the magician could defeat these hundreds of soldiers in a few seconds.

But Duwei was disappointed.

The magician stopped the sleigh quietly and got a Parchment from his pocket - in the Magic Union, they didn't like using the normal paper, all the things were recorded on parchment.

"Sir, here is the official document from the Magic Union." The old magician gave the parchment to the Barbarian Knight, "The Magic union give me the

authority to enter this Frozen Forest.”

By looking at this calm old magician, the leader of the knight's was shocked a bit.

Although he looked rough, he actually was a detailed person. In the past few years, he was ordered to be stationed at the checkpoint of the Frozen Forest, and he knew many things. This was not the first time for him to meet a magician.

But most of the magicians were arrogant. They could actually use magic and fly over the checkpoint, or act like the wind to enter the forest directly; most of the soldier didn't even know that.

But most of them liked to show off their magic to the soldiers and walked through the checkpoint.

Since this was the habit they all knew, if a magician really wanted to insist forcing his way through, no one could block him.

So, it was very rare that such a kind magician could bring out the legal document politely and looked like wanting to negotiate.

With suspicion, the knight leader received the parchment.

The parchment looked old, the words on it were blurred, there was even some scrap. The leader put it on his hand carefully as he was afraid of destroying that.

As he read the words on the parchment...the leader felt shocked!

“The person with this letter can enter the Frozen Forest without condition, any Empire Arm Force or local authority cannot stop him or her! The validity of this letter is for...one hundred years!”

What the f\*\*\* was that? One hundred years validity?

.....

This old man was not joking? The leader could not stop to think about this and that. He did meet some liars before....

Everybody knew that in this place, the army generally didn't dare to stop the magician, but there were some liars wearing the magicians gown to cheat the army.

But, by reading the signature on the document...

“King of the Roland Empire, Austin V, and the Leader of the Roland Continent Magic Union, Julidia.”

The King of the Empire and the Leader of the Magic Union countersigned on the document?

The most unbelievable thing was...

The King of the Empire Austin V had been dead for 60 years already! The Leader of Roland Continent Magic union had been changed too! The Leader who signed this letter died 40 years ago when he was 119 years old.

Signatures from the former king and former leader of the Magic union?

Who the hell was he?

The leader could recognize the Authenticity of this document surely! The signature could be fake, but the stamp on it could not be fake! The stamp of the King of the Empire and the Leader of the Magic Union both got the magic security marking!

When he received the document on hand, the two stamps gradually appeared on the parchment, then faded out...

The leader immediately showed serious respect!

This old magician in front of him must be at an extremely advanced level! At least he was an old man who was living in the period of the former Empire King and the former President of the Magician Party!

This kind of person, the little leader could not take the responsibility of infringing!

The leader even could not stop thinking...100 years validity...so how old was this old man now?

He rolled up the parchment respectfully, gave it back to the magician with both hands politely and said, “Dear sir, welcome to the Frozen Forest! 27th Patrol Unit of the White Wolf of the Regiment of the North Imperial Storm Legion welcomes you! Should you have any requirement, we will try our best to help you! ”

The old magician replied politely, “No, please just get out of the way.”

In short, soldiers in front moved away, even swept out the snow at the gate immediately, and then lined up to farewell the old magician's sleigh.

They left until they could not see the gate, Duwei could not stop to ask, "Is the document real?"

"Yes..."The old magician replied, "But, today is the last day of the validity."

Duwei said, "Last day?"

He looked at the side of the old magician and asked, "How...old...are you?"

"Little kid, has the Roland family teacher degenerated to such an extent? You should use an Honorific when asking the age of the senior." The old magician laughed and said, "Hm....my age..."

At this moment, the old magician's eyes flashed a trace of melancholy and said, "I forgot it."



# Chapter 55 - Frozen Forest, the Monster

## WorldII

The sky was getting dark, and the sleigh was moving towards the Frozen forest slowly. In the boundary area of the forest, where trees were scattered, it was hard for the sleigh to go through the gaps in the trees.

Duwei was surprised that the magic the old magician had used on the malamutes was so amazing! He didn't use the whip or slogan like other trainers. He normally just gave some simple orders such as telling them to run or to stop. But sometimes he just whistled or used a simple gesture! The malamutes seemed to understand the human language and the gestures, following every order from the old magician as if they did.

"You... can also use magic on the dogs like using magic on me?" Duwei curiously asked. In these past few days, Duwei liked to ask questions even though he could not get any answers from the old magician for most of them. He knew that as long as he didn't try to escape, and didn't make this old man angry, he'd be fine.

"What do you think?" The Magician replied teasingly, "These dogs are more obedient than you!"

The sleigh started decreasing in speed; as the forest in front became narrower, it was harder for the sleigh to move further.

The magician stopped the sleigh and kicked Duwei gently, "Get off the sleigh, kid, don't just stay here without moving. Has no one ever taught you before that in freezing snow, if you don't keep moving, you will be more likely to die because of the cold?"

After Duwei had stood up, the old magician looked around and said, "Tonight, we'll stay here."

"Stay here?" Duwei couldn't help but mutter, "You...it's better to stay in the

town, but you insist on living in this forest...I was thinking you planned to travel through the night without stopping! If you don't have any plan, why didn't we just stay in the town?"

"Because I like it, does that satisfy your curiosity?" The old magician laughed and answered. He looked at Duwei with kindness, "Now, there is a tent in the baggage under your butt, and if you still won't stand up, I can guarantee your face will hurt again."

A painful face...this old man wanted to order him to slap himself again! Duwei couldn't stop muttering. Although, Duwei was very smart, while facing this old man...this old man was much stronger than him... thousands of times over... so he didn't have any alternatives.

Duwei was pissed off, so he stood up slowly and opened the baggage, then started barring the tent.

Duwei was very used to barring the tent these days.

The old magician this time didn't just stop and look at Duwei, he also got busy.

Duwei secretly glanced at the old magician to see what he was doing. The old man brought out a little bottle from his gown, then spread out some green powder evenly.

He spread the powder around and formed a big circle; the tent, the sleigh and both of them were in this circle.

Duwei didn't know what this powder was, but after it was spread on the floor, the snow immediately melted, and there was some greenish light released from the darkness...like some sort of ghostly fire.

Then Duwei noticed that those Malamutes were scared of the unnatural powder! The calm malamutes became scared. Their bodies hunched, and they kept shaking. They were also making some creepy sounds.

The magician completed this and felt satisfied. He looked at the green circle, then went to comfort the dogs. He just used his thick palm to pet the malamutes, then whispered happily, "It's fine...don't worry...."

The dogs then lied down again.

After the tent was done, Duwei went to him and asked, "What is it?"

"Something to avoid trouble." The Old Magician took the bottle back. He just had a thin gown, so Duwei really didn't know how he could carry so many bottles. When he just wanted to use one, immediately he could get it out .

"Trouble...?"

The old magician laughed, "Kid, this is the Frozen Forest! There aren't only plenty of trees, but also numerous Magic Beasts! Most of them you haven't heard of or seen before. Especially during the night, the magic Beasts love to attack those who don't have any defense, and are asleep. There are many adventures who become the dinner for Magic Beasts, when they are sleeping... then become feces the next day."

"But you are such a great magician, are you really scared of those magic Beasts?" Duwei teased.

"I am not scared." The magician shook his head, "But just the two of us are like two meat bags being thrown to a group of flies! Do you understand? This will definitely attract many things out there, but those things aren't a big deal. But if more and more 'flies' come, it will become a great disaster. And, as I said...before we arrive at our destination, I cannot use much of my magic power. So, light the fire when we are ready to sleep...but remember before you sleep to do the exercise which I taught you before. Otherwise, you will become a popsicle by midnight, and I won't be able to take care of you."

Duwei was speechless...he didn't want him to be a robot that was controlled by others, so he just did it himself.

Although this kind of stretch was painful, Duwei knew that it was good for him, therefore he had to complete the whole set of exercises, even if it felt painful.

The old magician looked at Duwei, who was doing the exercises, and once he was satisfied, he brought out a scroll and gently opened it.

This was the wind magic scroll that the old magician had used to form the boundary; suddenly he pointed at the tent, "Okay, now it's time to sleep."

" I still want to ask...what is the green powder?"

"Are you curious? I worry that if you know this, you won't fall asleep." The old

magician maliciously smiled.

“...Please tell me.” Duwei said, “I am very curious, if you don’t tell me, I can’t fall asleep.”

“Ok! That is...the poop of a dragon.” The old magician shrugged his shoulders, “You don’t mind sleeping around the poop?”

Duwei, “...”

Dragon’s poop?

That explained it...Most of the animals relied on smell and taste of feces and piss to determine the others’ boundaries. Dragons, undoubtedly were the strongest creatures in nature.

By spreading the dragon poop here, other Beasts would think that there was a dragon!

Which magic Beast dared to cause trouble for a dragon?

Although this method was good...Duwei shook his head. Luckily, the poop was not smelly.

In the middle of the night, Duwei woke up because of the cold.

Inside the tent, the old magician had his eyes closed, slept gently, and breathed evenly. There was a crystal ball hanging inside the tent. The old magician was kind enough that he used the Fire Magic Scroll and turned this crystal ball into a heater, so it was getting warmer inside the tent.

But in the middle of the night, the heat of the crystal ball had been used up, and Duwei was freezing and got out of the tent to exercise once again.

After completing the whole set of the exercises, he felt warm again, and sighed,

“If you would have met me earlier and did this exercise twice every year, you would have been stronger.” In the tent, the old man suddenly said while his eyes remained shut.

Duwei was not surprised...this old man could seem fast asleep, but could still hear all the things around him! For this point, Duwei had confirmed a few days

ago when he tried to escape.

“Never thought that...The family of Proud Knights, the next generation of the Roland family, could have such a weak kid.” Old Magician finished his words and then continued sleeping.

Duwei sighed, he was standing in the snow and looking at the sky...

The moon was in the sky, the moonlight shined on the forest and on the snow; it was actually quite pretty.

In the forest, it seemed there were something howling further away, didn't know which kind of magic Beast was howling. But those Malamutes were sleeping well. Duwei tiptoed to the side.

In the midnight, he wanted to pee, so he found a big trunk inside the circle of the dragon poop, dressed off his trousers and pee, and shuddered fiercely.

People said that if heading further to the north, the weather would be even colder, and it was dangerous to even pee! Under such cold weather conditions, no one dared to pee in the outside, as their little penis would be frozen!

Duwei sighed and looked back to the tent...When would this end?

This old man kidnapped Duwei and then didn't answer anything, Duwei had lots of questions already. He didn't even know where he was going to.

Revenge for his apprentice? To be honest, Duwei treated Vivian very good except cheating her for some magic tools. When they suffered on the isolated island, he took care of that little lady.

Even he wanted to get back on this old magician. Duwei had suffered lots in the journey, thus the old man should feel much better.

So, did he want to blackmail the Roland Family by kidnapping Duwei?

Duwei laughed...This old man should have a very great background, and even though the Roland Family was powerful, he might not care, so what else did he want?

So....was it because of the prisoner Chris? But this old man should know more than Duwei! It was meaningless to kidnap him.

Duwei kept thinking for a while, but still didn't get any idea, then as he was

ready to go back to sleep...

Suddenly, in the dark forest, there was a sound that shocked him!

Chup!

Duwei shook! His spiritual power was very good now, and he was very sensitive to the surrounding! He stayed at the barracks near the castle for many days, and from that sound...that was the sound of archery!

Then, there were some people screaming far away!

Among the screams, there was something howling, then more people screamed...

The location should be on the Northeast side. Duwei saw that there was a red light flashing in the darkness! It was just like something was on fire!

Then, there was a roaring sound, followed by the sound of people running...the sound seemed very desperate, like they were escaping...

Duwei frowned, then crouched down and listened...

1...2...3...Seems there were five to six people, they were breathing shortly, and running in panic. They were approaching Duwei now!

Among the howling...seems like there were some animals howling, then there were people screaming again, seems the animal had caught a person...

The stepping sound was less than before, one more person should've been killed...

After just a few seconds, the stepping sound was nearby. Duwei saw there were four people running out from the forest, they were dressed in leather coats, with a corset and a knife...but the knife was cut in half!

The last one was the poorest one. Half of his body was in red, and Duwei couldn't figure out if that was his blood or the others. He was carrying a bow, running and screaming, "Faster! Faster! It's nearby! It's close! It killed the leader! Run!!!!!"

The man at the front had already run through some trees, and when he looked at Duwei he yelled, "Someone's here!"

Duwei still didn't respond, while the four Malamutes had already woke up and started barking at those people...

# Chapter 56 - Zombie Monster & Golden Eyed Python

The man running at the front almost crashed into Duwei. The other two also entered the circle of dragon's poop, while the four Malamutes had already rushed up towards the group!

"Woah! Friend, can you control your dogs!" The running men were scared. One of them had clumsy movements because of receiving an injury, so he was almost knocked down by the dogs, while the other two quickly dodged. The four Malamutes could not recognize their target, and Duwei had to yell at them loudly in order to stop their attack. Since the dogs recognized Duwei, no one was attacked anymore.

At this moment, the last bloodied man had already run to their location, looking terrible. When he saw Duwei, without caring for his appearance or age, he still kindly shouted, "Friend! Run! The zombie monster is coming! Run!"

After speaking those words, his body trembled and fell to the ground. From his warning, Duwei came to have a good impression of him, and he tried to hold him up. He sniffed a strong bloody smell, but the most disgusting part was that there was a piece of bloody flesh stuck to his body! It must have been from one of his companions.

Out of the three people at the front, the first one had run away, but when the other two heard that the last man fell, they only hesitated for a while before they stopped running and went back to help him.

Although the bloodied man had fallen, his hands were still holding onto his bow tightly. He was shaking his head as he shouted, "All of you run! If that thing catches up, all of us will die! Leave!! Faster!"

The two companions tried to help him to escape, but his legs were hurt too badly because of the vigorous running he did, and his legs could not support him anymore.



The other two companions felt such a strong brotherhood that they didn't want to escape and leave him there alone to die, instead they tried to lend their shoulders to help him up.

"You guys don't actually have to run." Duwei sighed. From the beginning when the first man had tried to warn him, that had left on him a good impression of the man. Also, the bloodied man didn't want to drag his companions into danger and would rather stay if it meant his companions could escape safely. This impressed Duwei by a fair bit. Even those two other men hadn't wanted to leave their friend behind. Admiring the brotherhood between these men, Duwei decided he would help them this one time.

"All of you just stay here. Don't worry, nothing bad will happen."

At this very moment, with the help of the moonlight they could see how Duwei looked like. Duwei looked just like a thirteen year old kid, so they thought Duwei was crazy. The two men shouldered their wounded companion and were ready to run, when they suddenly smelled a strong bloody odor followed by a shrill roar...

"Shit! We are going to die..." The three people were so very afraid. But the man with the bow and arrow was decisive. He immediately yelled, "Leave me! Fight against the monster!"

The two companions looked serious. One of them was holding onto broken sword with a tight grip, while the other one that was without any weapon just randomly picked up a thick tree branch from the snow, to use as a mace.

From within the forest, there was a certain creepy noise coming closer...It seemed like there was something passing through the trees, causing the snow on the branches to drop...

Because of the moonlight, Duwei could clearly see what was inside the forest. Just 30 steps away, a monster popped out from the trees!

Duwei only glanced once and almost vomited up last night's meal!

These men had called this monster a "zombie"...that name was really appropriate!

The monster had three legs, but with different sizes! One was a horse leg,

another was a deer leg, and the remaining one was so hairy that Duwei could not figure out which beast this leg belonged to...All three legs were bloody, and were stuck to the body...it was like they were only temporarily attached to the body...

Its body was even more stranger! Above its waist, there was two upper bodies! One was like a bear, and the other was...a human body!

This thing was just like a puzzle, made by joining different pieces of different creatures together, its body entirely smeared with blood, covered with black and white long hair!

“What the f\*\*k is this thing!” Duwei felt disgusted.

“A zombie.” The man sitting on the ground said, “It’s a type of magic monster...this thing kills its prey and attaches parts of the victim’s body onto its own...Damn! It used the captain’s body as well!

He was upset and angry, and the other two were sorrowful too.

It was true. The human part of this monster was very bloody, but you could still see the yellow leather coat and the head above the neck, looking just like it was bitten off by some beast! The brain was already missing, only half of the neck was left, and you could even see into the flesh and white bones! The most gruesome part was that the left eye was flopping outside of its socket...

The running speed of this monster was quite fast, but when it reached the outer part of the dragon poop circle, it suddenly stopped. Its two heads, the human part and the other bear part with sharp teeth, breathed a little and screamed loudly. It stepped backward and began stalking around the circle...

Its roar seemed full of suspicion. It could recognize that dragon poop was harmful and didn’t dare to move forward. But it could see where its prey was and the smell of blood was causing it to be excited...

This creature walked around and hesitatingly moved closer.

All of them turned pale except Duwei. The man holding the bow and arrow quickly picked out three arrows from his backpack and shot out each one continuously!

Duwei was impressed! The archery skill of this man was pretty good. Even

though he was suffering from a terrible injury, he could still steadily shoot three consecutive arrows!

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh....the three arrows shot towards the two heads and a leg of the monster!

Thunk, Thunk, Thunk....The monster was hit by the three arrows, but it merely shook its body and turned around, using its hairy claw at the back and plucked out the arrow in its body, then tore off the brain of the bear and shrieked...

It was bleeding, but the monster didn't care. Blood splashed onto the snow, and upon contact, green gas suddenly steamed up!

"The blood of this monster is highly toxic. If we happen to come into contact with it, then we will die immediately." The archer had finished shooting, shaking his head. "Don't care anymore, we are done...we are not strong enough to fight against it." He looked at Duwei and said, "Who are you? You are such a small child, why did you come to this frozen forest...sorry, we dragged you into this mess by drawing this monster here.

With an angry roar, the man who was holding the tree branch rushed towards the monster. Gripping the thick branch, he brutally smashed against the waist of the monster! Bang! The branch hit the monster, but it didn't get hurt. Using a hairy claw, it grabbed the branch, and flung it away...

With a scream, that man was propelled away and crashed onto a tree. As he fell to the ground, he spilt some blood. The man with the broken sword looked pale. His sword was originally usable for fighting, but now only half of it was left. This monster was so strong with toxic fluid in its body. If they approached any closer to the monster, they would definitely die. But seeing his companions act, how the one who was seriously wounded but still shot arrows and the other was flung away into a tree, he shouted out and got ready to fight with his broken sword!

Duwei closed his eyes....and breathed in deeply

This warrior with the sword yelled loudly and swung his sword in an arc! Suddenly, two blades of wind appeared that hit the monster and caused a serious wound on the left leg of the Zombie.

The warrior quickly dashed towards the monster and used his broken sword to attack the brain of the zombie!

The speed and the power of his attack was excellent, but the monster suddenly stepped backward and a bloody sting came out from its body! This warrior had jumped into the air and could not dodge, and his shoulder was pierced! He now hung in the air, impaled on the stinging tail of the monster!

There were many hooks on that sting, causing the warrior with the broken sword to loudly scream! He hurled his broken sword to the brain of the monster. Bang! The sword struck the bear head of the monster and was stuck there, but the monster didn't seem to feel anything from it...

The archer sighed. Since the three of them was not strong enough to be the opponent of the monster, he simply closed his eyes and waited for death.

In that moment, when Duwei saw the warrior impaled on the monster's sting, he suddenly took out a bottle from his pocket and threw it towards the monster!

Shatter! Colliding with the monster, the bottle broke immediately, and a yellow powder spread over the monster's body. Then Duwei breathed in deeply and quickly casted a spell!

His chanting speed was very fast, and in moments, a blade of wind shot out!

The wind blade didn't strike the monster directly, but accurately sliced the stinging tail of the monster!

Snap! The tail was cut, and the warrior fell to the ground. Duwei shouted loudly, "Move fast! Hurry up!"

The warrior was feeling intense pain, but when he heard that voice, he immediately ran towards the side!

Duwei's gown was getting bigger as he squeezed his fingers and casted another spell. Several fireballs could be seen blasting towards the monster in the dark night!

The spiritual power and magic sensitivity of Duwei was very strong, thus he was able to cast three normal fireballs simultaneously! The three fireballs crashed into the monster body and lit up the yellow powder, which was actually

sulphur...

Boom! The monster was instantly enshrouded in flames. Within the fire, the monster wailed and it became even more ferocious!

Not hesitating a moment, Duwei used another hasten magic and rushed towards the zombie beast. He began running around it in a circle as he moved his fingers in a specific pattern and cast confusion magic on the zombie beast!

The blue light from the confusion spell was continuously shot towards the monster, but it only screamed loudly from inside the fire and tried to catch Duwei. But Duwei only sped up even more, and used seven to eight confusion spells. Because of dizziness this caused, the movements of the monster gradually slowed down and after a single roar, it collapsed onto the ground....

Without a moment of delay, Duwei used his last two sulphur bottles, throwing them towards the zombie beast....

When the two bottles of sulphur came into contact with fire, it immediately exploded. The monster instantly exploded into pieces, leaving behind a smell of roasted meat in the air...

Looking at the zombie monster lying on the floor, Duwei relaxed a bit, and then went back to lean on a tree...

Damn, why didn't that old man come out...he only continued to ignore what happened just now!

Going back, Duwei found that no one was inside the tent! The old man had disappeared!

Just as he was about to yell, suddenly he felt like someone passed him an object into his hand, and he heard the voice of the old magician in his head, "I hate trouble and I don't want to see anybody, I will find you later."

The invisibility magic of this old man was too great, that Duwei could not even feel a thing and couldn't see a trace of him. He just totally disappeared.

Looking at his hands, he saw there was a small bag. He squeezed it and felt some bottle shaped objects inside.

Having seen how Duwei defeated the monster, the three men were shocked

and kept on staring at Duwei. A while passed, and they started cheering!

Magician! This little kid was a Magician!

Three of them were hurt, so Duwei brought them back one by one...the warrior with the sword was in the worst condition, because he had come into contact with the toxic fluid of the monster, and a certain rotting smell was coming out from his wound...

Duwei immediately checked inside of the bag and found that there were many medicine powders. Luckily, Duwei had studied Magic Alchemy before. He found two bottles that were specialized for curing wounds.

But the rotten flesh on the warrior's body...

When Duwei sighed, the warrior displayed his bravery. Holding a tree branch in his mouth, he drew out a knife from his boot. Although the pain was intense, he cut off his wound by himself!

"This is just to delay the venom from spreading..." The warrior profusely sweated as he spoke with a shaking voice. "I cannot cut my shoulder completely...for the venom of this monster, we have to go back to find a temple and ask the people there to use light magic in order to expel all of the venom..."

The man who was thrown into a tree laughed and said, "Great, we are still alive. This is the best fortune I've ever had! You just have to suffer for a couple of days...not a big deal."

The archer looked at Duwei, full of gratitude and respect, saying, "Dear Mr. Magician...Please kindly forgive what we said before...I didn't know that you are a magician. I...appreciate your help very much, thanks for saving our lives! If possible, may I know your name? We will remember it forever!"

Seeing Duwei hesitate, the archer realized he was asking for too much and laughed, "I know, in such a place, a magician would not tell his name to others...but I can swear on my life, we won't tell your name to others! Having our lives rescued, if we didn't know the name of the person who saved us, we would feel terribly ashamed!"

Then, he stood up and said, "I, Dardanelles, am the vice captain of this adventure team...our captain has died already. This guy carrying the sword is

called Frank, and the other one, you can call him Montenegro. We are the personal attendant guards of Marquise Lister. We had come to this place to find a magic beast...”

Dardanelles hesitated a moment before continuing to talk:

“We are searching for a magic beast called ‘Golden Eyed python’ because our Marquise had incurred a serious illness. People have said that the eyes of the ‘Golden Eyed python’ could cure the Marquise of her illness, so we came to this Frozen Forest...I personally received the honor of knighthood from the Marquise. Upon my knighthood I swear, I won’t tell your name to others. But you saved the people from the Lister Family. We have to remember your name! People from the Lister Family must repay this debt!”

He took a deep bow and looked forward to getting a response from Duwei.

“My name...” Duwei hesitated for few seconds. He would give away his real name. Sighing he said, “Ok...I am a magician...my name....is Harry Potter.”

“Harry Potter...” Dardanelles remembered this name and said, “I will remember this name! Mr. Magician, if in the future, you come into the territory of Lister Family, you only need mention my name to receive a VIP treatment!”

Duwei laughed.

By using the identity of a Magician, he could get special treatment anywhere. But Dardanelles was so sincere, obviously, he really appreciated what Duwei’s actions.

Duwei felt a bit sorry for telling him a fake name, but he didn’t want anyone to know that Duwei could use magic. So, he just changed the topic,

“Oh, right, you said something about the Golden Eyed Python. What’s that thing? A python?”

Dardanelles looked a bit confused...normally, a magician should understand magic beast well, but why didn’t this young magician know that?

But still, he respected this young magician, so he answered immediately, “The Golden Eyed Python...is really a type of python, but it is very dangerous. Its eyes can radiate the Petrification Magic. Any creature will be petrified after looking at

its eyes directly! In this frozen forest, Golden Eyed Python is regarded as one of the most dangerous magic beasts!”

Although Dardanelles tried to hide his suspicion, Duwei still knew his thoughts by looking into his eyes. Duwei laughed and placed some medicine by Dardanelles’ feet, and said, “I am still very young, and just started learning magic. I don’t know much about magic beasts...that’s why, I came here to have a look.”

After a while, Duwei asked, “But...may I ask...if this Golden Eyed Python is so dangerous, how can you all be sure to catch it?”

What Duwei implied was crystal clear: These few men could not defeat one zombie beast...how could they catch the Golden Eye Python, which is regarded as the one of the most dangerous magic beasts in the frozen forest? Its must be much, much stronger than the zombie beast!

Dardanelles didn’t care and laughed, “Our life always belonged to the Marquise. We work for her and we won’t give considerations for danger...but we did our preparation before we arrived here...before we started our journey, we made great efforts in obtaining a certain tool. With that tool, we can resist the Petrification Magic! Without the Petrification Magic, the Golden Eyed Python is just a simple python, not that hard to deal with.”

Then, Dardanelles looking a bit shy and whispered, “Dear Magician, forgive my insolence. I know my request is very unreasonable...but we originally had eight people. After departing, we had been here for three days, walking around. Some of my companions are now dead, and the remaining men are severely injured...I am afraid our strength is not enough to find the Golden Eyed Python in this frozen forest...You are such a great magician, I would like to ask...if...”

Duwei pondered, “You want my help?”

Dardanelles then stood up straight, “This is concerns the life of our Marquise. I know this request is very unreasonable. But if you can help, after succeeding, you will be the greatest benefactor of the Lister Family! Anyone of the Lister Family would be willing to impart hospitality to the benefactor of our Marquise!!”



# Chapter 57 - The Richest Widow in the Empire

Duwei thought for a while.

Duwei had heard of The Marquise Lister before. Her title was not hereditary, but life-long. Such a title was only valid when the person was alive, and their descendants could not inherit it.

The Marquise Lister was a widow originally. Her husband was the uncle of the current King of the Empire Austin VI, who was a Duke. But, amazingly, this Duke was much younger than the King Majesty...This was not surprising in such a huge royal family.

Mrs Lister was born in a famous Sea merchant family in the Empire. She was very beautiful. When she was 15, she married the uncle of the King, who was forty something years old. But, when she was 22, she became a widow.

The Duke was very weak, and died when he was fifty. After the Duke died, the king entitled this poor widow a royal title...'Marquise'. According to the Empire Order, this life-long title was not hereditary.

Later, there was a rumour that the King of the Empire Austin VI loved this beautiful Marquise. A few years ago, this rumour was spreading over the world.

Finally, the Marquise had to move out of the Empire City when she was 30. She moved to the ancestral house in the Northern land alone in order to get rid of the rumour.

The Marquise after becoming a widow, used her previous last name, Lister. The Marquise Lister was very rich and famous among the Noble Circle in the Empire!

Although she could not inherit the title of the Duke, since the Duke didn't have any child, all the possessions was left to this young wife. The father of Ms. Lister, the Sea merchant, also left an incredible amount of wealth to his daughter!

Even in the Noble Circle, there was an indecent nickname about this woman, called the Richest widow in the Empire.

This was all the information of Marquise Lister Duwei had heard before.

“Oh, Marquise Lister. I heard of her name before.” Duwei tried to act casually, and asked, “May I ask, which disease the dear Marquise has?”

From this question, Dardanelle and the other people were angry, but Dardanelle still talked about that, “Sigh, this was the most shameful thing of the Lister Family!”

But, he still told the truth.

The Marquise was now 33. Seems like the God of time\* loved this woman a lot and offered her incredible beauty. Although Duwei hadn't meet her before, he heard that she was very beautiful before.

TL Note - In the raws, it was actually referred as the Time/Light Lady which can be termed as the God of time/light.

People said the Marquise had skin soft as a baby, as smooth as milk. Her eyes were as pretty as gems. Her hair was as shiny as the sunlight reflected by the river...you could not find any mark to show her actual age!

This woman had captured the hearts of many nobles, even the King.

To get rid of the rumour, Marquise moved to her hometown, but she still could not get rid of the trouble because of her beauty. Just two months ago, Marquise was hiking with her retainers when she met a lecher.

To be more accurate...This lecher was an asshole!

According to the description from Dardanelle, that old man was wearing a green gown, with a green flute. When he saw the Marquise, his eyes were blinking and immediately approached her. He not only praised the beauty of Marquise with some frivolous words, he even requested to play music for the Marquise.

This behavior made the retainers of Marquise angry. In the hearts of the retainers, the beautiful Marquise was like a goddess to them...

“Shall we check the style of the gown of that old man, and if he looks like the

magician...we will throw this old bastard into the river!" Dardanelle said.

"Magician?" Duwei frowned.

"No, I don't think he was a Magician." Dardanelle shake his head, "That gown was similar. But I have never meet a magician with a green gown. Mr. Potter, you are a magician...May I ask, in the Magician level in the Magic Union, what level of magician wears a green gown? Seemed like none!"

After a while, Dardanelle explained, "We didn't punish him because he was a magician, it's because the Marquise was too kind. You should know that on that day, there was a Holy Knight from the Bright Temple protecting Marquise, a real Holy Knight, whom was called Knight Geoffrey! Mr. Geoffrey was a great knight, whose martial art was very famous in the Empire. He came here for appreciating the great donation to Temple from the Mistress. With Mr. Goffey, not to mention the fake magician, even a strong magician, Mr. Goffey was still able to deal with."

For this point, Duwei had nothing to say.

Great Knight was the top of the Knight unit. He was even the Holy Knight from the Temple of light! From Duwei's knowledge, the Holy Knight from the Temple of light was much stronger than the normal knight. It was because the weapon of the Holy Knight was supported by the Light Magic, and had a special effect. The senior Holy Knight could even use some magic skills!

A Great Knight was also a Senior Holy Knight. He could defeat a normal magician.

"Marquise was kind, and didn't put any difficulty on that guy, but if that guy continued to muddle..."

The result was so simple.

That Goffey was obviously an arrogant man. As a knight, when he saw his beautiful Marquise being harassed, he should express his Knight spirit well.

So, Mr. Knight "punished" that fake magician in green robe.

According to what Dardanelle described, seems the knight didn't get any benefit as the fake magician escaped fast.

But, when the fake magician left, he dropped a word, “You won’t be good because you offended me. Just wait for my curse! You are beautiful, but I will freeze your beauty...just like a stone!”

Dardanelle felt sad, “Although that guy didn’t look like a magician, his curse was real!”

Three days later, Marquise got sick. Her skin was becoming stiff and petrified! It was just a small part at the beginning, but then it spread over the whole body,,,The Listers were afraid, we had found all the doctors, but they could not help. Finally, with the answer from a Magic Pharmacist, they found hope. It may be the Petrification Magic. It’s not a normal petrification, even the magicians could not help with that.

To lift this curse, unless it was lifted by the person who cursed, or...

“Or, go to the Frozen Forest and find a magic monster called Golden Eye Python, and get its eyeball, that can help.”Dardanelle looked decisive, “Marquise is the goddess of the Lister Family! Every honor knight working for Marquise is willing to die for Marquise! So, we came to this place.”

Duwei sighed, but he was not as calm as he looked like!

Curse? Was that the Curse?!

Seems Dardanelle really didn’t understand the magic well!

That guy in green gown might be a Magician! Also a very powerful magician!

Curse was the most difficult magic! Even some senior magicians could not learn this magic in their lives!

Duwei thought a bit and looked around, the old magician had gone already. But Duwei believed that if he tried to go home, he would probably be caught again.

It was because that old man said he would come back! So he could not escape...

“Ok.”Duwei sighed, “I am ready to look around in the Frozen Forest, and perhaps, I can go with you. Maybe I can help a bit.”

Although he said these, he thought, “This old man must be looking at me. As

long as he is here, I won't get hurt."

The medicine Duwei gave Dardanelle was very effective. Under the effect of the Magic medicine, the wound on Dardanelle's body had been cured. But, the granuloma was quite disgusting.

But the warrior was not as lucky as him, the toxic fluid of the zombie monster could only be removed by the Light Magic in the temple. So, after discussion, only Dardanelle and Duwei stayed in the forest and continued to find the golden eye python.

The other injured just went back.

Then Duwei did something strange on the people of the Lister Family. He got an empty bottle from the back, then went to the burnt dead body of the zombie monster and extracted some toxic fluid and put it into the bottle.

The toxic fluid had the effect of being rotten and erosive. Perhaps, it might help in the future.

## Chapter 58 - Snow Wolf Mercenary Group

Looking at this little magician using the bottle to collect the venom from the zombie beast, Dardanelle and the other two Lister family members were shocked. This little magician collected this disgusting stuff as though he thought it was a treasure, and stored it properly.

Looking at the repulsive rotten meat, they all sighed and wondered if this unfathomable magician could do what others could not.

The gravely injured Sword Warrior and the guy who spit out blood would ride on Duwei's sleigh and leave the forest. Duwei was tying the four malamutes to the sleigh. Since these dogs belonged to the old magician, Duwei just gave them away generously. In addition-because the path became increasingly arduous the deeper one went in the forest-they would have to walk, thus rendering them unable to use the sleigh.

However, before the two injured left, Duwei hesitated. Since both of them were injured, if they met any beasts on the way back, they would not be able to save themselves.

Duwei pondered this for a while; then, he gathered up the dragon poop powder that the old magician had spread on the floor the night before and used some paper to pack it well. While ignoring the strange looks from the injured, they applied the remaining powder on their body.

"This way, you won't have to worry about being attacked by magical beasts again on the way back." Duwei said relaxingly: "You two have wounds and smell bloody, which I am afraid will indubitably attract the magic beasts."

"What's that stuff?" Dardanelle looked at the green powder. He made the same face as when Duwei asked the old magician about the powder.

"This..." Duwei smiled mischievously, "This is poop-Dragon's poop."

“Oh...” The three people were relaxed; not harboring any feeling of sickness or unease, they only felt shocked.

The sword warrior was, in fact, very happy and said, “Great idea! Haha, when we were in the northeast, we also spread Lion’s pee on the tent to repel the wolves on the grassland. Haha... but this is Dragon’s poop; a magician is really a magician! Can even get this precious thing...haha.”

It seemed like this guy thought that they had not received enough dragon’s poop; seemingly, these preferred wanted more of the substance.

After sending away the two injured, Duwei began packing the remaining things. The old magician’s items were too incredible; the bag he left contained many different kinds of magic medicine, even a small magic crystal. Duwei had a deep look: he could tell that these materials were used for setting up magic arrays. As a result, Duwei collected them all.

Dardanelle brought Duwei to their previous camp site. It was a disaster after being attacked by the zombie beast.

Dardanelle chose two arrow bags and carried them; then, he chose two swords from the dead bodies of his companions and did the same. Afterwards, he dug a hole and buried his companions.

They originally were an eight people group. Now only three remained.

There was a sleigh as well, but the malamutes had escaped during the attack last night. One was even bitten by the Zombie Beast. During the night, the body that remained had frozen.

The tent was messy, but Duwei and Dardanelle tried to find something useful in it. Finally, Duwei noticed the overturned sleigh.

The sleigh was broken already; in all likelihood, the zombie monster stepped on it last night.

Dardanelle was confused as he watched Duwei use a knife to cut the wooden boards from the sleigh. Immediately afterwards, Duwei cut some rope from the tent and tied two wooden boards to the soles of his boots.

“What’s that for?” Dardanelle asked, confused.

“These will help us to walk on the snow. You can try it. They are very useful.” Duwei said.

Dardanelle respected this unpredictable young magician very much. Although he didn’t understand what the boards were, he mimicked Duwei’s actions.

While on their way, he started to admire this young magician who could construct such useful paraphernalia.

As they went further into the forest, the accumulated snow became increasingly thick! When one stepped on it, the accumulated snow reach one’s knees. However, the width of the boards could resist the sinking force by spreading spreading the pressure over a larger area. So when people walked using the boards, their feet would not sink deeply into the snow.

Moreover, Duwei even taught Dardanelle how to ski on the snow using the boards!

Skiing was one of Duwei’s favorite sports in his previous life.

With the simple and rough “skis,” it was easier to walk.

“Right...Dardanelle, last night you said there were five people running. I saw that the person at the front ran away...Is he also a person from the Lister Family?” Duwei asked randomly on their way.

“Hum... the Lister Family doesn’t have such a coward.” Dardanelle disdained him and said,”That was a leather merchant from the Southern town. We gave him money to guide us in the forest. But that stupid jerk brought us and walked around in the forest for 3 days, but still could not find the thing we wanted. This time, after we return, I will kill him definitely!”

After a while, Dardanelle whispered, “We are different from the other adventurers. We are from the Lister Family and, thus, cannot force our way past the border patrol team. We cannot make any trouble for the Lister Family. So, using the relationship with that guy, we bribed off the officer of the patrol team to let us go inside. But now, it seems like that guy most likely pocketed the money.”

They kept on walking on the snow from early morning to afternoon. Even with the skis made by Duwei, under the freezing and windy climate and the snow, it



was a harsh challenge for their physical strength and stamina.

Dardanelle was a warrior; he was much stronger than Duwei. But since he was hurt last night, and although the wound was cured by the magic medicine, the lost blood could not be replaced by magic. In other words, his body was inexorably weaker than before.

Duwei was very tired, too. Although he was stronger than before after doing the exercises that the old magician taught him, since he was only 13 years old, his body was not extremely strong. Without the skis, Duwei probably could not have made it.

If he knew flying magic, it would have been better. Duwei murmured a bit, but looking at the freezing wind, he sighed.

Even knowing flying magic, with his magic power, it was not sufficient for him to fly a long way under this level of wind.

They were heading to the north and went deeper into the forest. Dardanelle knew more about surviving in the wild than Duwei. From their conversation, Duwei surmised that Dardanelle was in a mercenary group when he was young. But he hadn't come to the Frozen Forest before. When he was young, he had been the guard of a leather merchant in the Northeast Grassland.

He was used to living in the wild.

Since the title of Marquise Lister was not hereditary, she could not have her own territory and private soldiers. She could not even recruit private warriors and armed forces as other nobles did.

Therefore, the people being sent to the forest were the servants of Marquise. Dardanelle was the vice captain; the captain died last night while protecting his companions.

"We didn't bring many people here as this place is too dangerous. People with normal skills would probably die or even become a burden." Dardanelle's nose was red because of the freezing climate. He stopped and rested for a while. In actuality, he was not tired: he just wanted this little magician to have some rest.

Through their conversation, Duwei construed that Dardanelle was a passionate and congenial individual, and he also treated Duwei with much respect. After he

came to this world, he hadn't made many friends. He quite liked this passionate warrior.

Dardanelle grabbed some snow and put it in his mouth. After letting his warmth melt the snow, he drank some water.

After quenching his thirst, Dardanelle looked at the sun in the sky and said, "Dear Magician..."

"Please use my name." Duwei smiled, "No need to use honorifics, Dardanelle. There are only the two of us and we are traveling together now. Furthermore, I am younger than you."

"Ok, Harry." Dardanelle refreshingly smiled, "I guess the afternoon just passed. In this northern area, it gets dark sooner than other places. We better hurry up and go forward, and hope that we can find a place to sleep before dark. Also, if I may ask, do you still have any dragon poop remaining?"

"I may have enough left." Duwei laughed.

"That's great." Dardanelle's eyes had a flash of sadness and whispered, "It's a pity... if we had met you one day earlier and you had that dragon's poop, we wouldn't have been attacked by that monster and the captain would not have died."

"He will rest in peace, my dear Dardanelle." Duwei comforted him, "We have to continue his mission. As long as we find the golden eye python, the dead's sacrifices will not have been in vain."

Dardanelle cheered up a bit and said, "Right! Harry, your words are reasonable... Magicians are talented and possess quite some knowledge, right? Let's talk more about you. You are so young. To have become a magician at your age is very impressive! Let me know more about your background, are you from a great family? I ask because only rich families have the chance to meet magicians and learn magic."

Duwei remained silent.

He was regretting that he'd lied at the very beginning. Being faced with this guy's smile, Duwei felt sorry and just said few things, then moved to another topic.

In the evening, at sunset, they finally found a place that was in a lower area. In this location, one would not encounter any wind.

But when they left the forest, they found that this place was occupied by others already.

“Warning!!”

There was a whistling sound in the forest. Suddenly, two men dressed in white emerged from the top of trees. Duwei looked at them carefully. These two people were wearing white coats, and the people at the back were fully armed! Some of these men were wearing coats whereas others were wearing leather armor. They also had different weapons on hand. Some of them carried knives, some carried swords, and some even carried axes.

The people at the back were carrying bows and arrows, targeting Duwei and Dardanelle.

They were humans, not beasts. The watchmen relaxed a bit.

“Great, two humans. Seems we met some interesting fellows.” The person who seemed to be the captain came out and laughed, “Oh, it’s rare to see people who can get so far into the Frozen Forest!”

Dardanelle was holding his shank, alert to these people. Duwei smiled and shouted, “Who is the leader of your group?”

“I am.” The leader looked at Duwei with contempt, “Oh, it’s a kid...oh, I know, you two are looking for a place to sleep? I am sorry, this place is occupied by us. If you don’t mind, we can allow you to stay in the campsite next to us. But be careful, don’t intrude on our circle.”

“No no no...” Duwei shook his head, “encamping in the forest, we don’t want to be dinner for the magic monsters! Let us in please. Can we join you in your campsite? It’s only two of us, we won’t occupy much space... and you are a mercenary group catching magic beasts, right? Perhaps, we can help.”

These people looked around and suddenly laughed loudly. The leader looked at Duwei with contempt and said, “Kid, how can you help us? Are you going to wake up in the middle of the night and help us go urinate? Ha ha...go away! Since you are fellow adventurers in this Frozen Forest, I won’t make any difficulty for

you as long as you don't give me trouble."

Duwei stepped forward, "No, I insist in my request."

The leader got a bit angry, "Oh, do you want to make some trouble? Kid..."

Dardanelle pulled Duwei a bit and whispered, "I know the badge of these men, they are the 'Snow Wolf Mercenary Group.' They have many people here so we better not make any trouble." Dardanelle looked at the badge of the leader and said, "We will move to a different place."

Dardanelle had adventuring experience from when he was young. He knew the famous mercenary groups on the continent well, and he knew that he should stay away from this mercenary group in particular... because all of their members were Outlaws!

During their adventures, some of these people even fought against one another

It was common occurrence!

Luckily Duwei and Dardanelle hadn't brought many things along. These guys knew that Duwei and Dardanelle were not armed, so they didn't pay much attention to them.

If Duwei and Dardanelle had brought many possessions...these mercenaries would most likely have wanted to kill them or rob them!

It's not wise to have conflict with them. Although the little magician was quite powerful, these ten people were only the guards on the outer layer; there might even be over a hundred people in the campsite.

Just the two of them were not enough to fight against these mercenaries, so it was better to not make any trouble.

"Hey, Dardanelle, listen!" Duwei was excited, he was so sure that the old magician was there nearby...

Duwei made an expression of pride deliberately and looked at the leader. He was wearing leather armor and had an outstanding weapon. However, he probably he had just a small role, "Oh, you are the Snow Wolf Mercenary group, right? You, should be the little leader, can you possibly represent the whole

mercenary group?”

Duwei was right, this guy was only a little captain who was responsible for the alert nearby. He frowned, “Kid, what are you going to do? If you want to suffer a bit, I don’t mind to stretch my body a bit.”

Then he held his sword with a weird smile and walked towards Duwei.

However, after a few steps, he froze!

Duwei was still standing there with a smile. But he lifted his right arm with his palm facing up, and made a burning fireball!

The people in the mercenary group were not idiots! They looked at this smiling kid who easily made a fireball!

“Snow Wolf mercenary group, are you going to treat a magician in this way?” Duwei smiled with contempt, “Ok, I will remember that.”

After Duwei completed his words, he pulled Dardanelle, “Let’s go, my friend. Seems like these people are very strong and they don’t need a magician. In this dangerous place, they even don’t understand the rules of mutual help.”

Magician! This kid was a magician!

All the people were shocked including that leader. He looked at Duwei, not with contempt, but respect!

“Go away! A bunch of idiots!” There was a yell coming from the forest and there was a very tall and strong man coming out.

He was wearing rhino leather armor. His shoulders were exposed in such cold weather. His muscles explained everything. He also had on a white cap, and had a yellowish beard. He seemed very strong. He wasn’t carrying any weapons. But when he walked out, the patrol people moved back, “Commander!”

That commander stepped forward immediately and stared at the leader, “You are such a shame, my bro, move back.”

Then, the commander ignored his men and walked to Duwei and smiled, “Mr. Magician, my subordinates were so rude! I apologize for their rudeness!”

Duwei smiled, “You are?”

“This is the commander of the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group, Bein Heinrich!” A mercenary shouted. His voice was loud and contained a little bit pride.

Dardanelle’s eyes were blinking and he whispered, “This guy has a nickname - he’s called ‘Son of the Storm’. He is a famous person in the circle of mercenary groups in the north continent. He is one of the three heroes of the northern mercenaries. I’ve heard his name before.”

Bein Heinrich laughed a bit and said, “Son of the storm-this name was only given by others. Ok, the introduction is complete. Dear Magician, may I know your name?”

“Harry Potter.” Duwei answered. “I don’t have a magician gown or badge, but this is common in this area, I hope you can understand.” He looked at the eyes of the commander, Duwei said, “I and my companion don’t have any bad purpose, we have our things to do in this Frozen Forest. I believe, in this area, if there is a magician joining your mercenary group...maybe for a couple of days, it’s mutually beneficial, right?”

“The Snow Wolf Mercenary Group always welcomes the joining of a magician!” Bein Heinrich laughed, “I am always preoccupied whenever I come to this place. Those magic monsters are so annoying. If we have the help of a magician, our business will get substantially better!”

Bein Heinrich looked at Duwei and looked forward to his answer.

“I am willing to provide some help.” Duwei answered Bein Heinrich happily, “Mr. Commander, as you see, we only have two people. It’s better to have more companions in this area, right?”

“Please bring Mr. Magician to our campsite at the front, there are two nice wines in my tent.” Bein Heinrich laughed and led the way enthusiastically.

Dardanelle frowned and Duwei pulled him to the side and whispered, “Dardanelle, stop saying that! This is our first time coming to this Frozen Forest! We don’t know this place! But these guys are frequent visitors to this place! They understand the landscape and the environment in this place well! It’s better than searching aimlessly in this area by ourselves!”

# Chapter 59 - The Fate of the Adventurers

The campsite of the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group was above standard. You could see that they were used to living in the wild.

The low level terrain effectively played the role of 'windproofing' them. The stiff slopes at the sides played the role of protection. If there was any accident, they only had to protect the gap in the middle, and then the safety of the campsite was guaranteed.

Duwei and Dardanelle followed Commander Bein Heinrich and entered the campsite. The mercenaries that greeted them looked at them weirdly.

Duwei estimated that there were almost hundred people in this campsite. They looked different from the private soldier of the noble or the local garrison of the Empire he saw before. They didn't have a uniform of armour or weapons. Their outfits were very personalized. Some were wearing a leather coat, some were wearing a leather gown, some were even wearing leather armor.

But, since they had to hide in the snow, most of them chose white as the color.

Their weapons were even stranger. They had swords, machetes, axes, short spears...Duwei even saw one using a mace.

These people seemed very defensive and unruly without exception. When Duwei entered the site, there were some shining their weapons and looked at Duwei and Dardanelle coldly.

There was someone yelling, "Hey, commander! Why did you bring a kid! Ha ha ha, is he the one you want to recruit as a newcomer? He seems like he still has his milk bottle!"

Everybody was laughing at these words.

Bein Heinrich was angry and yelled, "Don't bullshit! Do what you have to do! This is our VIP, behave well!"

It seemed the commander was very prestigious. After his words, everybody

shut up although some of them had an objection.

“Sorry, Mr. Magician, these are rude men and don’t know about manners.” Heinrich invited Duwei to his tent, but Duwei rejected politely. Afterwards the commander had his men make some space for them to build a tent.

After a while, the commander had his men to bring two thick woollen blankets.

“These people seem to not like us.” Duwei looked at the mercenary who brought the tent to them and looked back at Dardanelle with a smile.

“It’s normal.” Dardanelle said, “In this kind of team, a newcomer is always hard to be accepted by others. They are more willing to trust an old person who has experienced life and death together before; even in a normal army, it’s the same.”

At night, the mercenaries lit the fires in the campsite and they would sit around the fire and wait for their dinner.

Heinrich invited Duwei to join their dinner in person, and squeezed near the fire together.

The mercenaries treated them much better than before. It seemed the commander had announced Duwei’s identity as a magician. But still some people looked at Duwei with suspicion...because Duwei seemed too young.

Not only the mercenaries, Heinrich was also suspicious about Duwei too.

Sitting next to the fire, taking off the hat that covered one-third of Duwei’s face, he looked even younger...Heinrich could not stop suspecting ‘Is this little kid really a magician?’

Perhaps...even if he was a magician, with his age...he was probably a beginner or Level-one magician?

Magicians were rare. But if he was just a beginner or a level one magician...it was pointless to recruit him.

The mercenaries were isolating all the other things and focused on doing their things. They used some pans and boiled the snow into water, then the two strong men brought something weird out of the tent. Those were the dead bodies of the animals...Duwei looked at those carefully but still could not



distinguish if it was a cow or a sheep. But Dardanelle could recognize it, he whispered, “ Oh my god! That’s snow camel beast, that’s the drilling cow...Oh, there is one Snow wolf beast! God, these are the things you eat tonight?”

Heinrich laughed and said, “No, we! We, including the two of us! We, will eat these for dinner.”

“The corpse of a magic beast...” Dardanelle sighed.

“Yes, magic beast.” Dardanelle laughed, “In my point of view, these things are the same as a normal beast...at least the taste is similar. They just knew a bit magic before they died. After they die, they become our food.”

Duwei didn’t say anything. He saw the two men using the sharp knife, easily dissecting the corpse into pieces, and then putting the pieces into a big pan to cook.

The leather of the magic beast had already disappeared, Duwei saw the two strong men went back into the tent and got more magic beasts out, he could not stop to whistle and he looked at Heinrich, “Mr. Commander, seems you had a great harvest.”

Bein replied plainly, “Living is not easy. We use our lives to fight. You are right, the harvest this time was great. We have been here for five days, and have gotten more than 20 magic beasts, but at the same time, I lost 7 to 8 men. Three died and three more were permanently disabled.” He sighed, “These magic beast’s meat could be sold at a high price in the south, and their magic core...the magicians are all willing to buy them at a high price.”

Duwei looked at those magic beast corpses again...

The mercenaries brought out a snow wolf. Duwei recognized it. Last time when he was teased by the demon in the Half-Angle City, he saw that in the illusion.

But the one the mercenaries moved out were much smaller than the one in the illusion.

The water in the pan was boiling with the tasty meat smell, and many mercenaries could not help but stop to inhale the fragrance.

The commander asked someone to bring some wine from his tent. The

mercenaries were very happy; they passed the few bottles around and everyone was able to have a sip. In this freezing weather, it was enjoyable to have some wine for warming the body.

Heinrich didn't forget to treat Duwei. He got a silver bottle from his belongings and said, "This is my private collection, the best wine in the north...Mr. Magician, do you want to try a bit?"

Duwei had a sip, and then he choked!

"Cough! What is this wine..." Duwi coughed terribly, and his voice was getting hoarse. He felt like there was fire burning in his mouth!

Duwei was quick to grab some snow and it into his mouth! He swallowed a mouthful of snow three times before his throat started getting better.

Bien laughed and said, "Dear Magician, this...is a really good wine! I use the magic nuclei from the Flaming rhino to make this wine! When you drink it, you will feel the fire in your throat! It's so awesome! Especially under this weather, just have a sip, you will feel burnt throughout the whole body! You will be very warm during the night!"

Duwei squeezed his nose, "Thanks! But I cannot seem to stand it."

Bein laughed and had a sip, then he seemed to feel painful but happy. Then he shook a bit and gasped, whilst at the same time, shouting, "Awesome!"

Then he gave the bottle to Dardanelle, "Friend, have some!"

Dardanelle hesitated a bit and then drank some. But since his affordability was stronger than Duwei, after he had a sip, he acted the same as Bein, shake a bit with enjoyment. He praised, "Good stuff! My body is getting warm now! Damn, it's just like there is a fire in my stomach!"

Then, Duwi tried the cooked magic beast meat, the meat of the Snow wolf was a little bit stiff, with a sour flavour. Duwei was not used to eating these things. But in this freezing place, it was already a good thing to just have some warm meat.

Last night, when he was with the old magician, he only ate some dried food.

'Hm...don't know if that old man is watching me nearby...I am eating and

drinking while that old man was in the windy place, it's quite nice.'

After Duwei ate something, he was much more spiritual now. He then tried to drink some Bein's special wine. Since this time, he got prepared, he felt more comfortable for drinking that. Also, this wine was actually quite good. After drinking this, it seemed like there was a fire running over his body inside. The cold had been expelled completely!

"Mr. Magician, you came to this forest probably because of finding some magic beast?" Heinrich said, "Most of the magicians come to this place because of this reason. If so, maybe we can help each other. Perhaps I've got the magic beast you want."

Dardanelle and Duwei looked at each other, then Duwei nodded his head, Dardanelle replied, "Mr. Commander, have you heard of the Golden Eye Python?"

Heinrich was shocked and said, "Golden Eye Python? That's a strong creature. When I was young, I saw some magicians had caught them. But we haven't caught that thing before...and..."

He hesitated and said, "This is only the outer layer of the Frozen Forest. For such a high level magic beast like the Golden Eye Python, you have to go further in, to the inner part. The strong magic beasts are only active in the inner part, you cannot find this thing in the outer part. But if you go further to the inner part, it will be more dangerous."

"Inner part?" Duwei laughed, "Please forgive my liberty. This is my first time to come to the Frozen Forest, you see, I am a young magician and I am not familiar with this place. You said the inner part...We have been here for two days already...Still within the outer part?"

"Of course." Heinrich shook his head, "Frozen Forest is so large...we can even say that, no one knows how large the Frozen Forest really is. I heard that twenty years ago, there was a great magician bringing some knights from the temple along, who stayed in this forest for a month, and still could not arrive the other side of the forest. No one knows what the other side of the forest looks like. Perhaps, it may be the end of the world. Also, we only have that record. That time, a great magician of the Magician Party and a few Senior Holy Knights from

the temple entered into the forest together. But people said that...only the magician could stay alive. In the inner part of the Frozen Forest, people said that there were many high-level magic beasts; even the great magician couldn't handle the multiple attacks from the high-level magic beasts. The mercenaries, like us, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group, are mainly active in the outer part. Our longest travel was only nine days...and that happened a few years ago."

Duwei was a bit shocked...

A magician and few holy knights travelled for a month but still could not reach the end?

This forest was so big?

Dardanelle felt troubled...if this was the truth, how could they find the Golden Eye Python?

"Let me give you some advice." Heinich looked serious, "We, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group have been hunting the magic beasts for many years already. I also met some magicians who were going to find that magic beast. But they don't dare to go further than "Big Circle Lake". That was the furthest they went, no one dared to go further. The two of you...I know you are a magician and I respect the talent of magician. But I really advise you, if not necessary, please give up your plan..."

Dardanelle felt bad, he thought a bit and suddenly said, "Mr. Commander. Thanks for your kindness. But I really need to find the Golden Eye Python. Hm...also..."He suddenly had a weird expression, "I know your group is doing the beast hunt business, if possible, I would like to hire you to help me to find..."

"Sorry, we can't." Heinrich rejected immediately, "Although we are doing this kind of business, we understand that the higher the risk is, the more the profit we can have. But if we know that we will die if we do that, that is not risk, that is lunacy. Our Snow Wolf Mercenary Group is not strong enough to enter to the inner part of the forest. So no matter how high you pay, I am afraid we cannot do that."

Dardanelle sighed. He knew that Heinrich was telling the truth. He kept silent and sipped some wine.

Heinrich came back to Duwei and thought for a while and said, “”Mr Magician, I am very curious about you. In my impression, there are only few people can get the magician qualification at your age. I lived for 40 years already and half of these years I was having my adventure. I met quite a lot magicians before, but didn’t meet any genius like you.”

Duwei forcedly laughed a bit...

Genius? That you never met.

Duwei was like a level-three magician now. Compared to the normal people, he could be regarded as genius...but if compared with the two girls he met, there was nothing for him to be proud of.

To get the level-eight magician qualification at 15 or 16! That was real genius! Duwei even met two at once.

Duwei kept silence and Heinrich too. Heinrich took out a paper roll.

“Dear Magician, I may have a deal for you, but I need to know if you have interest?”

Duwei was blinking, “What deal?”

“As I know, Magicians are very rich, so if I give you any jewelry, you won’t care about that...so...” Heinrich smiled, my men and I would head to the north for 4 to 5 days and we will go to the Big Circle Lake, then head back. I am thinking, if you and your company also need to head to the North, in the following days, you can join us. My men and I can be your guide, bring you two to the Big Circle Lake. In this forest, it’s easy to get lost without a guide. What do you think?”

Heinrich then spread out the paper roll, “This is the map of the Frozen Forest! You cannot find this map in any market! Even if you want to pay much money to buy it, you still cannot buy it! It is because this is made by me based on my 20-years experience with more than 40 times to come to this place. I can guarantee you cannot find another map as detailed as this one within the whole empire.

Duwei was quite interested in it!

He took the map and expanded it...

On the map...there were many symbols. In the southern part was the entrance

to the forest. On the map, there were the marks of the few towns near the south of the Frozen Forest, as well as the checkpoints set by the Northern Storm Troop Patrol team.

Duwei glanced a bit, and he found the route that he and the old magician came from.

On the map, you could not determine the area of the whole forest, but after the explanation of Heinrich, Duwei had some concept about it.

“Here, this place is our current location.” Heinrich pointed at the map with his finger.

On the map, this location was close to the entrance of the southern boundary. Duwei was a bit frustrated...he had struggled through what felt like hell in these two days, but just a little bit on the map.

Heinrich laughed and then pointed at another place on the map, “Here, this is the place we are going to, the Big Circle Lake.”

On the map, it just used a circle symbol to represent to lake.

Heinrich briefly introduced the lake, which was that it was in the forest, making it a forest lake. But the area was quite big.

“The width of the lake is about 5-6 miles...at least. I have been there several times, but I didn’t measure it. In fact, I didn’t even reach the opposite side of the lake. Big Circle lake, is probably the boundary for the adventurers in this Frozen Forest.”

“Why is this?” Duwei was curious about anything related to this Frozen Forest.

“The boundary of strength.” Heinrich laughed, “basically, in the south of the lake, it is not too dangerous. People like us can move around here. But...in the northern part of the lake; not many people dare to go there. Of the people who are brave enough to pass this lake, according to what I know, all are among the most famous and strongest in the continent...At least myself, Bein Heinrich, is not this type of person. I’ve brought my men here many times, but we never go further to the north.”

After a while, he had a creepy smile, “By the way, in the summertime, I won’t

bring my men to the Big Circle Lake. As you know, any place with water can attract many dangerous beasts...same for the magic beasts. Magic beasts also need to drink water and bath. In the summer time, although it is still very cold, it's not as cold as now. Now is the beginning of the spring, and the water in the lake has not yet melted. The lake surface is still icy. Magic beasts won't go to the lakeside. But it's a different situation in the summer time. In the summer, that's a gathering place for the magic beasts! What the hell...I heard that there were some mercenary groups with hundreds and hundreds of people there being attacked by the magic beasts! All of them died there! So, because of the season now, I dare to go there. If it is in summer, I will stay far, far away from the lake."

Heinrich finished his words and then looked at Duwei, "How is it, Mr. Magician? My deal is very simple: My men and I will bring you to the lake and I will give you this map...although I didn't go to the northern part before, but I did my research in these years. This is all the information from the strong people who have gone to the north before. I spent lots of money to gather this information! The icons on the map are enough to describe the landscape for 2-3 days after you pass the Big Circle Lake."

Duwei looked at Heinrich and asked, "Dear Mr. Commander...I am curious. As long as you don't plan to go to the north, why do you gather information about the north?"

Heinrich seemed a bit regret but he looked sincere and said seriously, "Mr. Magician, please remember, I am an adventurer!"

When he said that, his expression was really sincere.

"I am an adventurer! Although...I am doing this mercenary thing, I get the benefit from adventuring in the Frozen Forest! I am not a greedy merchant! Inside my body is the blood of an adventurer!" Heinrich spoke quietly, "I have been in this place for half of my life. When I was young, I always wanted to go to the northern part of the lake in the Frozen Forest because of those rumors. I was always thinking that despite how it looks...but I know that my strength is not as strong as those at the peak. Also...now I have many people following me and I am responsible for taking care of them! But I have my dream too! My dream is...in the future, when I am getting old and at my retirement without any responsibility, I will pass through this lake and go to the North and have a look!"

My whole life is here! In the future, if I cannot see how the northern part looks like before I die, I will be so regretful! I collected this information for preparing my future! I believe that after I finish my preparation, I will go there alone. I even believe that I will die in the north of the lake! Even if I die, at least I can have a look at the legendary north shore...To die in that place, it is like a completion of my adventurer fate!"

PR/N: -Manly Tears Shine-GENERAL ARMSTRONG SALUTES YOU!

At that moment, Heinrich suddenly said something that got a lot of respect from Duwei:

"As an adventurer, to die in bed, it's a huge shame! Being a real adventurer, we should choose to die in the most excited journey!"

Duwei took a deep breath, he respected him immensely, and said, "Dear Commander, you agreed to be our guide and give us the map...so what do you want me to do for you?"

"Simple." Heinrich laughed, "I only want two things. The first one is during our journey, if we have any trouble, like being attacked by someone else or the magic beasts, you, Mr. Magician, please stand on our side and at the right moment, we may need your help."

"No problem." Duwei replied immediately, "As long as we are on the way together, we are allies, that's reasonable."

"Thanks. My second thing is...if you finish the adventure and still can go back...touchwood. But I would have you heed my final warning, the north is very dangerous!" saying this, the commander knew that Duwei would not take his advice, so he sighed, "So...if you can go back, I think, you will be the strongest magician I have ever met...yet you are so young! Talented is the only word I can think about. I believe in the future, you will be a well-known strong person in the continent. If there is a day, I hope that you can remember our name Snow Wolf Mercenary Group...I hope that you can remember we did help you when you were in the Frozen Forest. For this favor, at the right moment, and if you are comfortable with it, please help us and that's enough."

This was a smart commander!

Duwei began to respect this commander very much!



If only referring to the speech of “The fate of adventurer”, he looked like a ideologist...But after knowing the trading condition, it's obvious that this commander had a long term vision!

In this event, they actually didn't have any cost...they originally planned to go to the Big Circle Lake, as with a team of hundred people, just two members more, didn't cost much. Now, they had a magician company.

Apart from that, for the map...since the commander made it, although he gave it to Duwei, he could easily draw another one. He didn't have anything lost.

But, he could get a favor from the magician!

In Roland Continent, Magicians were more precious than gold! Especially a strong magician. This commander was very smart. Duwei was so young to be a magician, he might have a bright future...as long as he could stay alive. That meant the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group should establish a friendship with this great magician at any cost!

Someday in the future, they could get the help of a great magician!...An ideologist but with a realistic greed.

This was the comment from Duwei about Commander Heinrich.

They didn't talk at the night then.

In the second morning, when Duwei got out of the tent, Snow Wolf Mercenary Group was ready to go. The warriors weren't scared of the cold; they used the snow to wash themselves, and some were using their dagger to shave their beard. These guys were used to having an adventure. They were very strong and muscular, they even yelled and called their companies to get ready.

Dardanelle was a little bit down.

Last night, after the Commander introduced the situation about the Frozen forest, Dardanelle understood well that the possibility of catching the golden eye python was very low, almost zero. Even with the Magician Harry Potter, it was still not enough.

Duwei comforted this loyal warrior from the Lister Family and then followed the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group to continue the journey.

There were many people in the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group; and they were divided into two teams and searched around. In the afternoon, Duwei learned how they caught the magic beast.

The searching team found a cave of the magic beast. A towering tree had been removed, and there was a giant white bear hibernating inside.

This was a “Roaring snow bear”, which was much larger than the normal bear. It looked like a polar bear in Duwei’s previous life, but this roaring snow bear could use magic to attack others. Its roar could make a mini tornado.

The Snow Wolf Mercenary Group seemed to have an idea of how to handle this magic beast. Ten of them tied together a rope, then threw a burning pine branch into the bear cave in order to force the bear to come out. Then they used bow and arrow to attack it.

The roar of the giant bear made a mini tornado, and blew two guys into the sky! Luckily they were tied with their companies, and though it was a great pain to fall down, since the snow was thick, they didn’t get serious injury.

The mercenaries used a giant web to catch the bear, and divided into four directions. Each had more than 10 guys pulling.

Finally, the commander carried a giant axe and moved near the bear, around 15 steps distance, then threw the axes towards the bear quickly!

The bear head was cut into two after the attack!

Duwei was shocked.

The martial art of the commander was really impressive! With the title of one of the three heroes among the north mercenaries, his skill was just as was said!

Duwei was comparing him with the greatest martial artists he had ever met, including Knight Robert and Swordsmen Alpha; Heinrich was much stronger than them.

If there was anyone who was comparable, that would be Joanna.

Among the cheer of the mercenaries, they collected the corpse of the giant bear. A leader skillfully cut the bear’s tummy by his dagger. They first got the bear bile, then cut the magic nuclei from its head and stored it.

The remaining, three soldiers cut the bear leather off. The meat was cut into several pieces and carried by several people, and afterwards they continued their journey.

That day, Duwei saw this kind of scene several times. The Snow Wolf Mercenary Group hunted two Snow Magic Wolves again. But it was so sorry that when they were catching the second magic wolf, one of the mercenaries killed horribly...he was scratched by the claws of the wolves and even his intestines spilled out!

“This is the life style of an adventurer. Adventure every day, sometimes, someone may sacrifice their life.” Dardanelle whispered, “I was living like that before, but I chose to leave.”

.....

Those mercenaries expressed their mourn about the dead company, then buried the corpse and continued their journey...

At dinner, when they were eating the magic wolf meat and drinking wine, Duwei thought of some details.

There were some mercenaries sitting around the fire who never touched the wine bag.

“Those are the people who are responsible for the safety tonight.” Commander noticed the suspicion of Duwei, and said, “The night watchmen should stay awake with 100% alertness at night! Because if there is any error, the whole team will die! So, the night watchmen should not drink any wine! But as a reward, for those night watchmen, after they shifted duty the other night, they were allowed to get a double shot of wine as a reward. Also, they get double the spoils.”

Commander also said slightly, “Of course, in case they are still alive when they return.”

After hearing this, Duwei began to look at those night watchmen with a bit more respect.

## Chapter 60 - Big Circle Lake

Duwei had been staying with the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group for five days.

During this time, Duwei realized he had begun to like these rough mercenaries. He enjoyed the uninhibited rudeness of these wild men and had started to find himself fond of the alcohol. He even loved talking in a foul manner about who was the best hooker while eating monster meat.

In the time he spent with them, he even met a mercenary such as Old Eyed Jacks; a man who was blind in one eye but was responsible for the cooking. He was an old mercenary, but people said that when he was young he was a man of great fortitude. However, he lost one of his eyes as well as his left hand in one of the adventures he undertook. He saved Bein's life in doing so, but rejected the money offered to him for retirement. In his words, he had missed this exciting life. He would rather stay with the mercenary group and do something for them instead of wither away somewhere.

Although he only had one eye and one hand, he was not a detriment to the group in any way. Even with this, he was still able to cook any type of good food for them...Old Eyed Jacks had great skill. He could find food anywhere, and recognize if a mushroom was poisonous with just a glance! He could even forecast the weather by just looking at the sky. He would be able to know if it was snowing miles ahead by listening to the sound of the wind.

These skills of his came from a lifetime of experience.

Among the group, besides the commander, Old Eyed Jacks was the most favourable person among the them.

There was an archer named Chester, who only had eight fingers. His left little finger and ring finger were bitten off by a monster in an adventure. But no one dared to tease him, because his archery skill was so great that even with only eight fingers, he was still the no.1 archer among the group.

Within these five days, Duwei and Dardanelle were also recognized by the

group.

In the last two days, the further they walked towards the forest, the more risk they faced. There was one time in particular when they were catching the Disillusion Magic Leopard. (This leopard moved very fast, and it could use magic to make illusions to annoy the enemy such as making illusory copies of itself. While the enemy would still be trying to determine the real one, the leopard would probably be next to him about to bite off his neck!)

When they were catching that leopard, Duwei really did the job of the magician. He used the Slow magic to slow down the speed of the leopard. The leopard immediately moved slower than a tortoise. Dardanelle then attacked it with a knife.

In the past, when the group met this kind of leopard, they usually lost some people. But this time, with the help of the magician, the hunt went so smoothly that there were no casualties.

The strong spiritual and sensitivity power of Duwei were useful for many situations. When they were walking, Duwei would suddenly stop the others. Then the group would be able to know the monster's track far away according to the judge of the magician.

Within these five days, because of the joining of the magician, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group gained double their normal harvest.

Even Commander Heinrich could not stop to think that, if they could recruit a magician to join their group...wouldn't it be perfect?

Surely, after this idea flashed, Bein Heinrich teased himself immediately.

Recruiting a magician? That's not even something to joke about. Even the nobles or some famous families in the Empire couldn't recruit a magician. Most of the magicians loved freedom and didn't want to work for others...

His mercenary group was so small, the group didn't have even close to the money needed for recruiting a magician!

Duwei also felt happy.

He was bored in the Rollins Family Castle for a long time. But now, he could use

magic freely.

This was the most important thing. Although mentally, Duwei was not a kid, he had been studying magic all these past few years. In these few months, after learning magic, his ability improved a lot.

But in the castle, in order to keep a low profile, he never told others about the fact that he knew magic. Only Solskjaer knew the actual ability of Master Duwei.

Apart from Solskjaer, all people including Matt were not allowed to enter the Magic Laboratory. This Magic laboratory was given to Solskjaer nominally.

For most of the people in the Rollins Family, Duwei was just a noble teenage who was curious about magic...perhaps he knew some magic pharmaceuticals. But people didn't think that Magic pharmaceuticals was the same as real magic.

It's just like the kid who had a new toy and always wanted to show it off. Duwei was not so naïve, and so he could not show what he knew.....now he could use magic. With the admiration from the surroundings, he felt rather awesome.

His skill which, until now, could not be exposed, was being used just like a ninja.

After five days, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group finally arrived at their destination: Big Circle Lake.

After passing through the forest, the scenery became rather pleasant.

By standing next to the tree on the boundary of the forest, looking at the open area towards the front, Duwei could not stop to sigh.

So gorgeous!

It was a flat land of soft snow, where you couldn't help but to stop and roll on the snow. About three hundred steps forward, it was the Big Circle Lake!

Just like what Bein Heinrich said, it was a very large lake. Duwei looked at the two sides, the boundary of the lake was so long, you could not see the end of the line. Further away, there was thick ice on the lake!

In such freezing weather, you could not see the lake water. But the ice on the lake was just like a big mirror reflecting the light. It was so glamorous...

“If it was summer, the lake water would be blue in color. That scenery would be pretty.” Commandar Bein Heinrich walked near Duwei, and looked at the lake while whispering, “This is my fifth time to come here, but did you know...it is the first time for most of my brothers in the group to come to this place. In the adventuring life of a mercenary, the death rate is high. There are only a few brothers that have followed me for more than a few years, but still it’s the first time to come to this place.” Bein seemed a little bit down, “Unfortunately, there were quite a number of my brothers who were buried here by me last time.”

Duwei was going to say some words of comfort, but Bein had cheered up already. He shouldered Duwei and laughed, “OK! No need to comfort me, Mr. Magician. It is because that’s us! That’s a mercenary! That’s the adventuring life! There are newcomers, and also death! Someone died, and someone stayed alive!”

After saying that, Bein had a big step and started shouting and commanding the mercenaries to start working.

“Encamp! Chester! You bring some people to walk around, be careful of the surroundings! We will stay here overnight! You! All of you, don’t walk next to the lake! Shit! Do you know what’s inside the lake! Get away from the lake!” Bein was yelling.

“Commander!” There were two men walking along the lakeside that laughed, “Commander! We haven’t seen water for many days.....and, I was planning to break the ice and see if we could catch some fish! We’ve eaten the wolf meat everyday, I am sick of it! Ha haha...”

“Fish? You will probably be eaten by the fish!” Bein yelled at them and asked them to come back. But when he was counting the number of people, he frowned, “One is missing...Shit! Where’s Bayer?!”

Bein looked around and he saw someone far away. That boy was already in the lakeside area and going to break the ice on the lake.

“Shit! Bayer! What are you doing! Bastard!” Commander was so afraid, he rushed towards that guy and kept yelling, “Stay away from the lake! God Damn it!”

Because of the wind, that guy couldn’t hear the voice of the commander. He

looked back but couldn't hear what the commander yelled, and it seemed that he yelled or said something too.

Duwei found that that guy was smiling.

Finally, he dug a hole in the ice, and he shouted happily, "Yeah! There is fish! There is a fish!"

Duwei finally could hear his voice! But...it was too late!

That guy was a fishing expert. After he dug a hole on the lake, many fish went up and breathed under this freezing winter. He was so speedy that he caught a big fish from the hole and lifted it up.

"Commander! Look at what I caught! The Old Cyclops could make a fish soup tonight, ha ha ha!"

It was windy again and his voice came off. Bein was trying to rush towards that guy. He was yelling at him while running, and also waiving his hands...

Suddenly, the fish on that mercenary's hand struggled and opened its mouth. A silver flash emitted out of the mouth and it hit the eyebrow of the mercenary!

Far away, Duwei saw the mercenary fall down and the fish was dropped on the ground. It jumped a bit and made it into the hole to escape.

Duwei then immediately ran towards that side!



## Chapter 61 - Semel's Presage

Bayer died quickly. His body was already turning black. His eyes were enlarged but blanked when he died. His fingers were still in the position of scratching hardly.

His death was very miserable. His forehead got a big hole. Duwei thought that the hole was formed by very strong acid erosion! The skin on his forehead, including the skull were eroded into a hole! The brain was lost too...

The soil here was too hard and could not bury the dead body. They had no alternative but to throw the dead body into the lake.

"This reckless boy..." Bein Heinrich savagely broke a twig and threw it to the fire with sadness, "He was recruited by me in Fick City. He was a good archer with excellent archery skill, I even taught him martial arts...He just wanted to catch some fish for us..."

Duwei kept silent.

Bein Heinrich shook his head, "He forgot that this is the Frozen Forest! There are no normal beasts! All of them are magic monsters! Even the fish in the lake are dangerous too! This stupid boy! Dumb! Dumb! Dumb! This...this is my fault! I should have reminded him earlier. This was the first time for him to come here!"

Duwei didn't know how to comfort this self-blaming Commander. He thought for a while, shouldered the Commander, then repeated what Commander said in the daytime,

"This is the adventuring life! There are newcomers, and also death! Someone died, and someone stayed alive!"

Bein recovered quickly. He was the commander, and there were a hundred people looking at him!

He threw away the twig, then stood up and patrolled madly, and kept yelling, "All stay away from the lake! Bastard! If someone dares to walk to close to the

lake, I will break their leg!”

This interlude didn't pressure them much ...The old mercenaries were used to it, for them, they could only say, “Oh, that boy was unlucky.”

During dinner, Chester, the archer with eight fingers, was leading the Patrol Team and came back. He looked uncomfortable, as it seemed he discovered something. But the cautious guy that he was, he didn't frighten the others, he just went next to Bein silently.

“Commander, I discovered something.”

The archer took out some charred branches out and gave them to the commandeer.

The branches obviously were cut by people and were used as firewood. They were charred, but not completely. The notches on the branches were noticeable.

“Seems there is company nearby.” Chester whispered, “I found a place, where there was some ashes from a fire being covered by the branches. But they did not dig deeply. I had a look, and there are around 4-5 ashe piles. By estimation, they should have more than 30 people.”

Bein was rapidly blinking, “More than 30? Are you sure?”

“Maximum is 30 something, not exceeding 40. I am sure!” Chester replied firmly, “From the color of the ashes, they just left and shouldn't be too far away from us. And...”

Chester stopped for a while and grinned, then whispered, “Based off the track on the camp, these guys brought lots of things, and the things are heavy!”

Hein trusted him a lot, because although he only had eight fingers, his archery skill was nigh perfect. He had careful thought, good observation and not many mistakes had been made.

Bein smiled strangely...and a little gloomily, “Oh, so, should we ‘communicate’ with these counterparts?”

Duwei didn't understand his words. But Dardanelle's expression was not natural.

At night, in the tent, Dardanelle explained everything to Duwei.

“In the Adventure World, to put it simply, it’s the law of the Jungle! Especially in these kind of places, if they meet a counterpart, normally there are three situations.” Dardanelle talked slowly, “First situation, one is strong and one is weak. If the weak side doesn’t have anything expensive, then both of them will be safe.

Second situation, both are equally strong, then both of them will be safe too.

Third situation, one is strong and one is weak. If the weak side have had many harvests...then probably there is only one result...”

Dardanelle laughed and whispered, “Stealing from Thieves,”

Duwei didn’t say anything as he knew that every industry had their own game rules.

The next morning, Duwei found that Chester and some old mercenaries were missing.

He didn’t ask Bein where they went and Bein also didn’t mention.

The mercenaries took a rest for a night, revitalized their spirit, and started working. They took out a big net with many sharp hanging hooks on it along with some clamps for trapping the monster, and some turpentine torches for burning. Several teams were sent out for searching out the traces of the magic monsters.

In the morning, Chester and other people came back. Chester was disappointed and told commander, “Can’t find them, they may have gone far away already.”

Bein shrugged and laughed, “That’s their luck, and also ours. Friends, ok, as long as we cannot find the counterpart, we have to do our own work. Bring your men to have a rest first.”

Theoretically, Duwei and Dardanelle planned to help these mercenaries for one more day, help them to catch 2 more magic monsters, then say goodbye and continue their journey to the north.

Duwei sat under a tree, whilst looking at Dardanelle who was helping the mercenaries with setting the animal traps. He saw that Chester was back and

talked with Commander for a while, before going back to rest.

Duwei relaxed a bit. He didn't plan to intervene in the game rule among the mercenaries, but he was willing to help the mercenaries catch the magic monsters. He didn't want them to 'steal from thieves' and was not willing to involve himself. Since it seemed Chester didn't find his target, Duwei was satisfied with this result.

With a slight sigh, he looked at this beautiful mirror-like lake...no one could imagine there was risk in the lake.

"Very pretty, but full of danger." Duwei soliloquized.

"You are right."

This voice from the back shocked Duwei! Then after a moment, he noticed that the voice was from Semel! This ghost lady suddenly popped up!

He looked back. Semel was still wearing in a red gown and standing behind Duwei slightly. Her bare legs were on the soft snow land...luckily she was just a shadow. Shadow didn't get scared of cold.

Duwei shrugged, "Oh, you finally show up?"

"A few days ago, the magician next to you was so powerful." Semel said, "I could sense the horror of his spiritual power, I even felt like I was in danger! That magician has the ability to search other's spiritual power. Based on his ability, he could even notice me, so I hid."

"Oh." Duwei frowned, "Not only I can see you?"

"It's true for normal people." Semel whispered, "I am linked with your spiritual power. But if other can search your spiritual power, then he will be able to see me...There are very few strong men with this ability. But later...you were staying with that Dardanelle in that tent. Although he cannot see me, if he always sees that you are talking with the air, he might think that you are crazy."

"Oh? That means I should appreciate your kindness?" Duei hummed.

Semel smiled and sat next to Duwei. She didn't care how Duwei felt, She just sat down quietly and looked at this beautiful Big Circle Lake.

Duwei looked at Semel and found that her expression was weird...

Her expression looked weird. She was blinking, the eyebrows were twisted, seems she was thinking something.

“I...I feel rather strange.” Semel looked far away. She glanced at the surface of the lake, then the forest to the side... “This place is pretty...but, why...”

“What?”

Semel had a deep breath and looked blankly, “I don’t know...but I think that I have been to this place before...I feel familiar with this place. At least the view, it seems I have seen it before.”

“You? Have come here before?” Duwei wanted to laugh, but he could not.

No joking... she, Semel, was the memory from the real Semel, who was sealed inside the oil paint for two hundreds year and didn’t leave the castle before she came to this world! How come she had been here before?

If she were the real Semel, then it wasn’t weird...but the woman in front of him...

Semel looked at the place far away. After a long period, she shook her head and smiled. Her voice seemed disappointed, “You should be thinking ‘bullshit’, right? It’s impossible for me to have come here before, but...I don’t how to describe my feelings...anyways, it’s weird.”

She looked down and thought for a while, then looked up to changed the topic, and laughed, “Right, in these days, your magic improved a lot. I saw that you had used the Slow magic, seems the practical experience improved your ability a lot.

Dardanelle walked towards them and Semel sighed, “Ok, I have to go. Be careful...I , I feel the weirdness of this lake.”

After that, she disappeared in front of Duwi.

“Hey, Harry.” Dardanelle sweated a bit, he seemed very happy, “Do you know? Bein knows that we are going to leave tomorrow and there will be a farewell party tonight. Old Cyclops will make some special food tonight...What do you want? My friend?”

Duwei stood up and patted the snow off, then laughed, “Nothing...ok, we have

to start working. Tomorrow we will leave. Today, we should work harder to help our mercenary friends.”

At night, Old Cyclops made a pot of mushroom soup! Old Cyclops picked these mushrooms on the way.

Having this yummy mushroom soup under this cold weather was so nice, especially after they had been eating the nasty meat of the magic wolves for the past couple of days.

Bein treated Duwei and Dardanelle very well. he took out his last alcohol for serving them. Finally, Duwei drank more than two mugs and felt sleepy and dizzy.

In the morning, Duwei was woken up by Dardanelle. Dardanelle looked worried and serious, “Harry! Something went wrong! Wake up!”

Commander Bein’s eyes were red! He was very mad! All the mercenaries had stopped working and all were armed! Seems that there would be a horrible monster coming soon!

Duwei looked around and found that there were some people missing!

Eleven! Eleven people in total! Missing!

The eleven mercenaries who were responsible for patrolling last night! All were missing!

It was not explainable. They seemed to not be attacked by a magic monster... even if there was a magic monster, it was impossible to make 11 people disappear in silence! Even a bit of sound was not make!

There was not a footprint of the magic monster around the campsite, not even a human footprint! They didn’t leave a corpse, much less a footprint on the snow!

Eleven people were suddenly evaporated collectively and suddenly in a night!

Bein sent half of the people to search for half a day, but still didn’t have any news! They didn’t find anything!

“Even if they were attacked, they should’ve made some sound!” Bein was very angry and was yelling, “They all are experienced mercenaries! It’s impossible for

them to be killed in silence! It's also impossible for them to leave further away! Shit! We haven't lost many people on our way! But in just one night, I lost eleven!!"

The Mad Commander ordered, "We have to stay here for one more day! Shit! I will patrol tonight and everybody has to be cautious at night, don't fall asleep! I have to see what kind of thing evaporated my bros!"

Duwei went back to the tent and package his stuff, he was ready to stay one more day. No matter how, now that the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group was in trouble, he could not leave them.

"Just as I said, there is definitely something weird in this lake." Semel suddenly stood behind Duwei.

## Chapter 62 - Big Circle Lake Murder

The night on the lakeside was extremely cold. There were trees blocking the cold wind in the forest, but in this open Big Circle Lake, nothing here could block the freezing wind.

Duwei felt quite cold. The freezing wind, and the cold ground, didn't help Duwei in the least.

But Bein had helped Duwei in these days. When Duwei knew his friend was in trouble, he was willing to stay and help; even when it was freezing, he still stayed with them,

“Actually, you can stay inside the tent.” Bein whispered with gratitude. Everybody knew that magicians were normally weak, and Duwei was such a weak and thin teenager, who still insisted to stay with this strong warrior overnight.

Although Bein was very mad that he lost eleven of his bro, he didn't lose his mind. The experienced commander understood that the enemy was not easy to handle with as it could make 11 experienced warriors disappear silently.

So, he picked the strongest people as vigils.

The hypothesis of Hein was very reasonable. If that was done by a magic monster, then it should be very strong and powerful! Since it dared to attack a campsite with a hundred people at midnight and killed 11 people, that meant it was not a coward and it probably would attack again!

“Because, in this freezing winter, magic monsters also need food.”

When Bein said that, his eyes were cruel. He knew that why he stayed here was not because he wanted to find the missing eleven people! Under this critical place, these eleven living people had already been missing for a day and a night; they probably died already.

Bein insisted to stay solely because he felt shameful! If after losing the eleven people, he still didn't know who attacked them and brought all the people



away...it would be a great discouragement for the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group! They might have this fear for their entire lives!

As the commander of the group, he could not let this happen. Even if it was very dangerous, he still needed to try and do something.

Duwei didn't say anything, he was probably the only one who understood the mind of Bein. He just moved his frozen legs a bit, then laughed, "We are friends. Commander Bein. It's not a big deal to get cold because of friends."

The campsite of the mercenary group was in silence. Most of the people were holding their weapons tightly. No one was hiding inside their tent. They fully utilized their skills. They dug some holes in the ground for an ambush. Some of them even wore thick coats and hid themselves under the snow.

Chester brought some archers and hid under the big trees nearby.

The Old Cyclops voluntarily acted as the Bait.

The old guy set the fire and sat next to it. He was drinking alcohol, and cooking a large pot of meat on the fire.

Although the smell of alcohol and meat was very nice, no one felt jealous of Old Cyclops as everybody knew that, he was using his life as bait.

This night went on and on as everybody was looking forward to finding something.

The night was too short, as after time passed, they got nothing and they hadn't notice that the sun had started to shine.

"Obviously, our opponent is smarter than us." Duwei shook his head, "It didn't come. Perhaps, it knows that we have prepared...perhaps, it got enough harvest and doesn't need to attack us anymore."

Bein grabbed some snow and cleaned the face. He rubbed his face till it was red, the warmth melting the snow. The water was dripping from his beard. But Bein didn't care about that. He looked serious, "Perhaps you are right, but it's just perhaps. But we cannot leave like this. Otherwise, our guys will feel defeated with this setback...we aren't scared of death. As long as we all dare to have this life, no one in the group is scared of death. But we cannot lose our courage, this

is the key.”

In the daytime, mercenaries were shifting for having rest inside the tent, and Bein Henrich decided to stay here.

Tonight, there was no harvest too. The well-prepared ambush didn't have any guests.

Three days passed.

Even the determined commander's determination was shaken.

He was tired. He hadn't slept for 3 nights and only depended on the rest from the daytime shifting. Also, since they had been adventuring in this forest for many days, they were all tired.

Even though he was not reconciled to, he understood that if they kept on spending the day there, their hope would be replaced by uncertainties.

“This is the last day. If we cannot find anything tonight, we will leave this place tomorrow.”

Bein didn't have the choice.

But the last night, it was finally not in vain!

The mercenaries were so tired after working days and nights in these days. Tonight, although most of the people had tried their best to insist, at the late hour of midnight, they obviously were weary.

Bein's eyes were very red...in these three days, other mercenaries could rest in daytime, but this commander could not. In these three days, he only slept for an hour in the midday.

In the late hours of midnight, some mercenaries could not help to have a small nap, even the old Cyclops also closed his eyes.

Duwei, as a magician, had much stronger spiritual power compared to normal people. Lack of sleep could only affect his physical strength, but not make him feel tired.

He was the most awake one among the hundred people.

He took a deep breath. He felt hurt by inhaling the cold air, but this could

awaken him! He looked at Bein next to him, and he felt that the spiritual power of the commander had reached the maximum limit. His eyes although red, were not dispirited. Dardanelle next to him could not help to close his eyes, his chin was also little bit...

Duwei was going to talk to Commander quietly. Suddenly...there was something in his mind.

A special feeling! Just like he felt something!

This feeling was very amazing! Duwei with the strong sensitivity power felt that there was a breeze behind him!

He immediately noticed that there was something coming!!

He immediately opened his eyes and looked around!

At night, the snow on the ground was still reflecting the light. On the lake surface far away, the ice sometimes cracked and made some sound, also the windy sound...

At that time, Duwei suddenly felt scared!

He saw it!

Far away, just on the surface of the Big Circle lake. There was a sound of ice cracking! Then, in the dark far away, Duwei saw a blurred shadow coming up from the lake!

The acute sensitivity power made it so that Duwei could hear the friction of it... even the cracking ice with the water dropping sound...

“What...is that...” Duwei couldn’t stop to murmur, he was going to remind Bein Heinrich and Dardanelle. But at that moment, there was a weird sound!

A moan, which also seemed like a sigh.

Right. The sound was like someone was moaning...It sounded sad, but abnormally soft and nice. Duwei suddenly felt the sound was alive, entering his ears and invading his mind!

The sound was long and relaxing with an unexplainable mystery! After the sound invaded the mind, the body and the mind started to relax out of control...

The body became softer and softer, the mind was getting blurrier...

That sound kept on and on, just like a nice music. It was like the soft and cool moonlight; it was like the breeze at night. It was irresistible; it was like a dancing lady, it was so attractive...

Then, the sound changed to be mellowed, it's like a invisible hand hooking someone and people couldn't help turning their heads...It was like their ears were going to follow the sound...then the mind...then the body!

Since Duwei was a magician and his spiritual power was the strongest, after a short losing moment, he immediately woke up by instinct!

Then he surprisingly found that his body had stepped away a bit uncontrollably and he really forgot when it was that it happened!

It also shocked him! It was just a few second ago, that he was still sitting there!

Then, he looked around. There was something creepy happening!

The mercenaries inside the tent, the mercenaries hiding inside the forest, the mercenaries hiding under the snow...these people were walking out one by one, then wandering on the snow, like they were having sleepwalk. Everybody's eyes were very large but blank. They only had a dull expression on their face with blankly eyes, wandering towards the lake...one step, two steps...they walked towards the lake slowly!

No exception!

Even Bein Heinrich and Dardanelle were the same!

The calm commander with non-focus eyes, his weapon on hand had been left on the snow. He was a little bit clumsy and loose. He was moving further... Dardanelle seemed like he was drunk. His hands were like grabbing something at the front with a dull-witted appearance. Half of his eyes were halfly opened...

Duwei was trying to stop Dardanelle, but he was pushed by him!

He was looking at the mercenaries at the front arriving to the lakeside, and one step was already on the ice layer of the lake. Duwei shouted loudly!

He tried his best to shout, but didn't get any response from them!

Duwei ran towards there and tried to pull one mercenary. Duwei even kicked him on the floor. But that man was trying to climb up, and seemed like a zombie, which Duwei saw in a the movie from his previous life. Their steps were steady and walking towards to the lake!

“Shit! Oh my god! What’s going on! Wake up! Wake up!” Duwei was yelling and jumping, but they seemed deaf and everybody seemed like they were crazy!

Duwei could not wake them up, so he immediately ran towards the lake and cast a spell. Then a fireball was thrown toward the shadow on the lake!

Boom!

The fireball passes through the darkness and lighted up the scenery! With the fire light, Duwei could see how that thing on the lake looked like...Although it was blur, Duwei was sure that it was a human!

Right! It looked like a human!

Also...that appearance of that human: It was wearing a wet mercenary coat with wet hair sticking on the forehead...its forehead was with a hole! He smiled miserably and mysteriously...

Half of his body was under the ice, and half was above the ice...Duwei was frightened. The look of that man was the mercenary that had died on the first day of their arrival!!

Duwei saw his corpse thrown into the lake by others in person!

.....Was it a ghost?

Duwei also thought that his thought was too ridiculous.

But, what he saw really frightened him!

The tragic death of that mercenary with a miserable face, his face was swelling from soaking in the water. The terrible green colour with a sad grin, was staring at Duwei!

The weird, nice and erotic sounds were coming from him! All the mercenaries under this sound lost their minds and became puppets walking towards the lake!

The fireball shot by Duwei could not reach the target. After falling on the ice,

the fireball scattered. The ghost on the ice...just calling him that, was staring at Duwei with his vicious eyes!

Duwei saw that the eyes of that guy were brimming with a vicious teasing, teasing Duwei 's overconfidence!

No matter how much Duwei tried, he still could not stopped the mercenaries from walking onto the ice layer of the lake. Then, a big hole appeared on the lake! The mercenaries at the front fell into the lake and sank into the lake!

## Chapter 63 - Semel's Appearance

“!!” Duwei yelled and pushed down the mercenary next to him. He then took out his dagger and stabbed into the thigh of that mercenary without hesitation! He hoped that the pain could wake him up...but Duwei was disappointed!

That guy had been stabbed, but he didn't feel anything. He struggled and climbed up, ignoring Duwei while climbing towards the lake. His thigh was still bleeding. The blood stained the the ground...

Duwei felt hopeless. He used some magic, but a fireball could not be shot too far ...the distance between that ghost and the shore was around five to six hundred steps!

Duwei was still unable to master the flying magic of the wind element. Otherwise, he would fly into the sky and throw a fireball!

Spiritual magic! This was \*\*\* spiritual magic!!

Duwei hurriedly struggled to remember what he had read about spiritual magic. But he felt helpless because the magic he knew was not related to spiritual magic. A spiritual magician was at the intermediate level. Based on the current strength of Duwei, he still could not reach that level.

What he could do! The second mercenary had already jumped into the ice hole. Duwei slapped himself. He ran to the front with his utmost speed. There he knocked down a different mercenary, and used rope to tie his legs. Then he used the same rope to tie down another mercenary.....

Although Duwei tried his best, he was only one person. After tying up three people, two more mercenaries had dropped down the ice hole!

Duwei wheezed and shouted loudly, “What the hell is that thing!!!!”

“It's an attack from the ‘Magic Lake Monster’.”Semel said from the back.

Duwei looked back and saw Semel in a red gown standing behind him. This lady looked overwhelmed with fear and surprise. Duwei saw that even her red gown

was shaking; you could tell that she was not calm!

“Semel! Shit! Why you are so late!” Duwei shouted loudly, “You know that thing? What is that! How to crack that?! Oh man! The mercenaries are going to die!”

Semel seemed confused. She was stressed and clutching her head tightly. “I...I should know that...I’ve heard that before. What I am doing! What’s going on? I know what this thing is called! Why...there are so many things in my mind...

“There is no time for you to figure out these things!” If Semel were a real person, Duwei probably would have grabbed her and yelled at her. Unfortunately, Semel was just a shadow; he could only stare at her, “Tell me! How do I defeat this thing!”

While Duwei was yelling, at the same time, he was busy tying up Bein Heinrich and Dardanelle. To lessen their speed, he even took out his knife and tried his best to stab the thighs of each mercenary in order to slow them down! Even wounding their legs to stop them was better than letting them drop into that ice hole!

“Think quickly! Semel! Think of the \*\*\* way quickly!!” Duwei pushed another mercenary down, then fell to the ground. Duwei was panting. He used the dagger to stab the leg of the mercenary. His hands were bloody and he rubbed his face a bit.

Semel looked at Duwei confusedly. But when she saw the bloody Duwei, she saw that Duwei was ferociously staring at her. When his anxious voice began to call out...

Inside the beautiful eyes of Semel, there was a sudden flash! Then the panic and pain felt by this lady suddenly disappeared. She stood up and her eyes were blank!

Then, this beautiful lady walked towards the lake slowly with her bare feet. The red gown was fluttering slightly. She lifted up her hands behind Duwei...

A sharp melodic voice came from Semel!

The sound was similar to an array; it pierced straight into Duwei’s mind! This sound was so beautiful...but it made people feel a headache, just like something



was stabbing into your forehead!

This almost stabbed into the bone marrow... No, it's as painful as stabbing into the soul! Duwei felt fear and was freaking frightened!

Semel kept singing. It seemed that there were many difficult and strange words and symbols within the sound! Duwei was very sure that the sound was a magic spell!

Semel's voice overrode the voice of that ghost! The mercenaries stopped at the same time and felt shocked! Then everyone fell down!

It was like they had woken up from a nightmare. After everybody fell down, they shouted loudly! Semel's voice shadowed everybody's ears and minds, even their souls! Everybody was trying their best to cover their ears instinctively! But the terrible pain could still not be suppressed!

But because of that pain, everybody regained their mind and their bodies were no longer numb and stiff!

Semel's voice was getting louder and louder! The song was becoming sharper suddenly! That pitch was fluctuating and became sharper and higher... it felt like it was pushed toward the point of the wave, and went down repeatedly!

Duwei already felt that the sound vibration would split his brain! He protected his head tightly. He shouted, "Semel! Stop it! Stop!"

Semel seemingly could not hear him. She was serious and walking on the ice step by step! Her body was light and she kept making the sound. The sound wave kept going...

The ghost on the ice suddenly screamed creepily. It made an erotic sound and escaped beneath the ice quickly!

"Huh, want to escape!" Semel sneered, and that horrible sound wave finally stopped!

Duwei was startled! When Semel sneered, the voice was still Semel's voice... but the tone was...!

It was indifferent with pride, even a bit cold, disgusting and despising! It was not the same as the clone magical creature that had always followed Duwei!

Semel floated on the air! She lifted her slim fingers up and her silver long hair cascaded like a waterfall. Within the freezing windy, the red gown was floating around. Then several currents started to swirl!

Semel's fingertip quickly formed a kind light spot. That light spot then became a small light ball. The sparkle of the light ball was flashing!

"Humble and ugly magic monster..." Semel who was floating in the sky with arrogance and indifference spoke, "How dare you show your poor spiritual magic in front of me, Semel."

Semel laughed even colder than before. She just pointed her finger slightly; there was a flash coming out from that light ball.....

Snip!

There was a creepy sound coming out from the ice layer; then a huge crack extended! Far away from Duwei, a faint roar immediately came out from the ice, and it separated towards both sides!

Underneath the ice, the lake water was churning...Soon, there were several mercenaries coming out from the lake!

That distant ghost screamed miserably. Semel then moved her finger a bit; there was an aura enveloping that ghost!

It was like an invisible hand, grabbing the ghost. The body was torn away from the ice surface!

That ghost was struggling in the air, but it could not make any complete sound. The miserable scream continuously came. It appeared to be begging for something.

"Oh...Beg for mercy?" Semel sneered. She looked down on her opponent and whispered, "You use your dirty voice to take away other's soul with such a dirty method? Oh...let me see what your dirty face looks like...your camouflage is too ugly!"

Her slim hands pulled slightly on the air!

Duwei was shocked to see that the body of the ghost was split in two by an invisible force!

The body was split into two and dropped into the water, disappearing very quickly. There was a small thing left in the air!

That thing looked like meat covered with sticky mucus. The beige body was just like an octopus without tentacles. There was a little crack; it seems that was its mouth. The bottom part was like the tail fin of the fish. It kept struggling.....

“Oh, that’s really a ‘Magic Lake Monster’, you’re such an ugly creature. Still not dead yet?” Semel was smiling callously. Then she stretched out a fingertip, the sharp nail scratched in the air slightly.....

Suddenly, that monster got one more wound! There was some green mucus coming out from the wound. Then it screeched, its upper body and bottom body were dissolved! Semel hummed and continued to scratch with her fingers. The monster was disintegrated and fell into the water. After that, she grabbed something; a green gem flew towards her palm.

“Huh, an adult lake monster.” Semel said, “The magic nucleus is quite big.”

Semel waved her sleeves. There were many bubbles on the lake. The wave pulled the mercenaries who had just fallen into the hole, towards the shore!

Duwei was shocked!

His mind was confused...But the one point he was sure of was: This lady in front was not Semel! He hadn’t known this lady before; she must not be the magical creature who liked swinging her pretty legs in front of him!

She...her tone...and...Shit, she knew magic! She could use magic!

The magic creature, who was an illusion, could use magic?!

She.....

Suddenly, an unbelievable idea popped into Duwei’s mind:

She.....perhaps, based on the tone she spoke with and the attitude.....how she looked when she was teasing the opponent. She was similar to...the real great female astrology teacher! Semel Kira!

While Duwei was still thinking, Semel had walked back to the ground and approached Duwei.

This lady was looking at Duwei who was lying on the ground. There was still some blood on his face.....

Semel was standing there and looking at Duwei. There were many stars above her head, but her eyes glistened brighter than the stars!

She kept looking at Duwei for a long time; there was something in her eyes which was indescribably.....soft!

“ Dear...the trouble is solved.” Semel’s voice was so soft, like the spring breeze. The callous feeling had disappeared. “Right...Sorry, I promise you I won’t use magic again. But when I know that you are in danger, I am so worried...Zach, you know how much I love you!”

After that, the lady closed her eyes and fell down in front of Duwei!

The first thing came up in Duwei’s mind was: Who was the lady?

The second thing was: Who was the mentioned “Zach”?!

Wait.....wait!

Duwei jumped up suddenly!

Zach.....Zach?!!

Shit! I remembered this name! This name was on the Family Genealogy!

Zach Rollin!! The Patriarch of the Rollin Family History! That was...the husband of the real female astrology teacher! Duwei’s ancestor?!

Ok! Now, he knew who Zach was.....so that lady was.....

She.....Duwei moaned, “Oh my god...she is the real Semel...she is not the clone?”

ED notes:

Duwei’s so awesome he can speak using only exclamation marks!!

‘Freaking frightened’ is the worst state of being frightened.

Semel is totally a diva, she won’t stop singing even if it’s painful.

Zach ... seems familiar... where did I hear that name before... *wink wink*

## Chapter 64 - Charnel on the Snow

“Okay, first is the ‘Magic Lake Monster’. It used magic to make all the mercenaries incoherent and uncontrollably walk towards the middle of the ice to commit suicide. I couldn’t do anything to break that magic, but you, my dear Semel, just show up and break that magic! You showed me your stronger side! Your magic power from then amazed me! Just from moving your finger, you could crack the ice. Then when you move it again, not only do you kill that monster, you even obtained it’s magic nuclei! Finally...you seemingly knew me as another person named ‘Zach”, and while standing in front of me, said you loved me.”

Duwei sat next to the fire talking casually, while breaking tree branches into pieces and throwing them into the fire.

No one sat next to him. All the mercenaries were busy; some of them were bandaging, some were lighting fires, and some were helping the wounded. The unfortunate mercenaries who had dropped into the lake were being healed by Semel. Since they had fallen into the lake in the freezing weather, they had nearly died.

“What?” Semel stood next to Duwei. Her beautiful face looked confused, “I did such an act? How come I don’t remember anything?”

Duwei laughed and looked at Semel complicatedly, “Look...You killed a very strong magic monster and saved a lot of people. Then, after you stood in front of me and fainted...you woke up and told me ‘I didn’t do anything’. So, Semel, don’t look at me this way. If you really don’t know, then we have a problem! We need to figure out what’s happening with you!”

“.....What?”

“Magic!” Duwei suddenly jumped up and took a deep breath. He looked at Semel carefully, “You can use magic! And, from my point of view...your magic is very strong! Extremely strong! But isn’t that a bit strange? You don’t even have a

real body...you are only a shadow, an illusion! An illusion that can use magic! How is this possible?"

'And you also called me "Zach" ...' — — Duwei said in his mind.

Only the real Semel, the real female astrology teacher, would use that tone when speaking!

"Do you feel anything, perhaps some strange feeling? Or in your memory, is there anything that can explain this? Even a little bit?" Duwei looked at Semel seriously.

"No." Semel answered quickly and firmly. She shook her head, "I am the cloned memory of Semel. I am a magic creature who was sealed in the oil painting and I am just a visual illusion. I only have part of the memories related to Semel.....and I don't know magic. I really don't know any at all."

Her pretty eyes looked innocent and confused, even a bit helpless.

With those eyes, Duwei could not believe she was lying. She seemed to be telling the truth.....otherwise, she must be frighteningly good at telling lies.

Duwei decided he would rather believe the former.

"Puff."

A purple crystal-like object was thrown by Duwei into the snow. "That's the magic nuclei of the magic lake monster. It shouldn't be fake. I don't have the ability to kill an adult magic lake monster, and yet you killed it in front of me and got the monster nuclei from it."

Semel was confused and she tried her best to remember what happened, "I....I don't know. I really can't remember....."

At that moment, Dardanelle and Heinrich were approaching them.

Semel looked at Duwei and sighed, then became invisible.

"Mr. Magician." Heinrich looked serious. He stood in front of Duwei, then he saluted, "Thank you so much for saving me and my people!"

Duwei sighed but didn't say anything. Although this wasn't done by him, he couldn't think of anything to say, and he couldn't tell them the truth...so, he just

admitted to it.

Heinrich took out a leather pocket, and gave it to Duwei: “Mr. Magician. I know this is not enough for a reward, but please accept it. At least it can show our appreciation! From now on, if you ever need anything, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group will always stand beside you!”

Then Heinrich opened the pouch, and inside were many colourful stones...and all of them were magic nuclei!

These were the magic nuclei of many different kinds of magic monsters...these were all of the harvests the Snow Wolf Mercenary group made during this trip! Although the leather of a magic monster could be sold at a nice price, the most valuable part of them were their magic nuclei! There were about thirty magic nuclei in the pocket, and the quality was very good too. Heinrich almost gave out every single one they had obtained.

This was the result of the hard work put in by the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group in this journey. They worked hard for the magic nuclei, and some even lost their lives in the process.

“No, commander.” Duwei surely couldn’t accept these things. First, these people were not saved by him. Even if they were saved by him, he still wouldn’t accept this expensive gift. In his heart, Heinrich was his friend and thus: “I cannot such an expensive gift.”

“But you saved our lives!” Heinrich insisted, “Without you, at this moment, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group would not even exist in this world!”

Duwei thought for a bit and changed his tone, “Ok, if I’m a magician, even if I think your things are expensive, it’s still not enough to buy a magician, right?”

“.....” Heinrich felt weird. “That’s true. Although these were the harvests from this journey, for buying a magician, it’s not enough obviously... Everyone knows that magicians have unique identities. If one wanted to hire a magician, this small mercenary group is not able to pay for it!”

“Don’t misunderstand.” Duwei laughed immediately, “I am not saying it’s too few. But...Mr. Commander, I mean, out here I am not just a magician! You are not only a mercenary either. Do you know what I mean? Do you remember what

we talked last night behind the snow? I treat you as my friend! Friends must help friends! When one sees his friend in danger, he must help him. This is logical, right? Please, keep your things, otherwise, it will be rude of me to my friend!”

Heinrich was shocked. This Commander with a beard looked at Duwei. He spread his arms and hugged Duwei tightly. Then he suppressed his passion and whispered, “My friend! Thank you! You are right, my friend! Sorry! My behaviour offended you! I take my words back!”

But this commander was a bit smart. He grabbed some magic nuclei from the pocket, around seven to eight magic nuclei and gave them to Duwei. He tried to stop Duwei and said, “Ok! This is not a reward! I am giving you this not because you saved our lives, but because my best friend is going to leave! This is a farewell present, a gift, not a reward. So you have to keep it!”

Duwei laughed and loosened his hands, then he hugged Heinrich tightly. They laughed loudly on the snow.

“Anytime, anywhere, the Snow Wolf Mercenary group is willing to do anythings for friends!”

This was the promise from Heinrich at their farewell. Duwei believed that this man who loved adventure would abide by his commitment.

As they left the Snow Wolf Mercenary group, the mercenaries gave their best weapon in appreciation.

The old Cyclops made some fried meat for Duwei. And Commander Bein gave the last bottle of wine, which was made from the magic nuclei of a frame rhino, to them. The mercenaries gave their best two sword to Duwei. Chester, the archer with eight fingers, gave his bow to Dardanelle.

If they were not worrying about the load, the Snow Wolf Mercenary Group would’ve given them even more things.

Walking along the lakeside of the Big Circle Lake, there were two series of footprint left upon the snow. Dardanelle carried most of the luggage, and still walked in front of Duwei.

According to what Heinrich said, by bypassing the Big Circle Lake and heading to the north, he had heard that there was someone who caught the golden eye



python when he was young.

“Dardanelle.” Duwei suddenly asked, “You seem very calm...I am talking about last night.”

Dardanelle laughed. He said seriously, “Harry, you have saved my life twice including last night! This cannot be settled by simply saying ‘thank you’! If I can stay alive this time after helping mistress, I will leave the Lister family. I, Dardanelle, would like to become the squire of Mr. Harry the Magician.”

“What are you talking about?” Duwei was shocked.

“I would like to be your squire.” Dardanelle replied calmly, “I owe you two lives now, maybe even more...you are such a good person, Harry. I like you, and want to be your friend. Also, I think that since you are so great, I am afraid I cannot repay you for the grace. So, why don’t I become your assistant for life? You are a magician. Magicians should always have someone helping them. You need a servant...But unfortunately, I am not a magic student, so I could not be your servant... But I am a warrior! I can be your squire! I think I can do it well.”

In the Roland Continent, many magicians also hired warriors as their squires.

It was because although magicians had great power, their weakness was the close quarters combat! It was the truth that magicians were weak at close battle. So there were many magicians that hired warriors as their squires. When they were in battle, if the opponent stayed close to them, then the warrior could protect them. This was a sort of way of offsetting the weakness of the magicians.

Of course, only the famously strong people in the continent had the qualification to do that. This was because hiring great warriors was costly! Also, if they were hired, they won’t hire junior warriors, because if they did, it was useless. But those great warriors were always arrogant! If not working for the famously strong people in the continent, they were not willing to work for them.

So, when Dardanelle asked to become the squire of Duwei, Duwei was shocked.

Firstly, Duwei thought that he didn’t have the qualification to hire squire. Many magicians, who were above level eight, still didn’t have this qualification!

Secondly, he thought that Dardanelle was too kind and he could not accept

this kindness.

When he looked at Dardanelle's resolute eyes, Duwei sighed.....nevermind, when they returned, he could leave alone. As long as he didn't know his real name, even Dardenelle wanted to repay him, he wouldn't be able to find him.

They had been walking along the lake for two days. This lake was unexpectedly large. They still could not bypass this lake completely after a full two days of walking.

In the afternoon on that day, Dardanelle suddenly pulled Duwei.

"Wait, Harry!" Dardanelle pulled Duwei carefully aside and pointed at the snowdrift aside.

Duwei was shocked. Dardanelle had already approached there, and then pulled out his knife and slightly stirred the snowdrift.

After stirring the snowdrift, there was a frozen hand!

Dardanelle looked serious, he kept on digging the snow aside, then he the found someone...or to be more accurate, he found a corpse!

The corpse was a knight. The badge on his chest had shown his identity. He was a level four knight! He had died miserably. His body was cut in half by some sharp weapon! His face was distorted showing how painfully he had died. The body was frozen, even harder than the ice. The whole body had turned grey, and it was quite creepy.

# Chapter 65 - Gift from the Holy Knight

Dardanelle didn't even seem to care about that; he just crouched down and carefully checked the corpse, even reaching out to pinch it's wrist.

"He died less than 2 days ago." Dardanelle stood up and frowned, "Look at his wound...what kind of thing can cut a Level Four knight in half?

"Along with this!" Duwei frowned and pointed at the thing next to the corpse.

It was a long sword which obviously was the weapon of the knight. But this sword was also cut into two pieces!

"Perhaps, he was battling with another, and his enemy cut him in half. Could it be like this?" Duwei frowned.

"Possibly..." Dardanelle looked at Duwei, "He was buried by the other. Look, this snow pit was his graveyard. If it was a magic monster, it wouldn't bury his corpse, it would just eat his body. Only humans do that."

Duwei thought for a while and looked at Dardanelle, "Dardanelle, which warrior level are you at?"

"My warrior title is level three. Although my warrior level is not high, I am quite confident in my archery skill." Dardanelle answered.

"I know." Duwei said, "Friend, then you should be experienced, have a look at this broken sword...it's incision is so neat. It's not that strange that the warrior's sword was split by a strong magic monster. But the incision is so neat. Obviously, this was cut by a sharp weapon! I don't think that it was done by a magic monster...obviously, this warrior was not killed by a magic monster, but a human!

Dardanelle listened to what Duwei said, then he immediately became more serious and looked at the incision on the sword carefully.

Then, he looked up, "Right, you are right, I was too careless. In this place, I was just focused on the magic monsters."

“Going back to that question.....Dardanelle. You are a level three warrior. What kind of person can cut a Level Four warrior and his weapon in half in one swing?”

Dardaneel looked serious,

“Level Four warriors have mastered the breathing skill. A warrior who masters the breathing skill is very strong. If cut in one swing...” Dardanelle thought carefully, and looked at the sword at the same time...suddenly, he blinked!

“Look! Harry! Look at the chest of the Warrior’s Corset ...look here!”

Dardanelle seemed to have discovered something. He lifted the corpse, then pointed at the little mark on the chest of the warrior’s corset, “Look, here, see it?”

Duwei looked at it, “Oh, there should be something hanging on there before, seems like a badge...but it was taken away.”

“Right.” Dardanelle agreed, “This is the place where the warrior always wears his badge. But, see, he already has one on his chest. This is the Level Four Warrior badge awarded by the Knight Organization...in the continent, which kind of warrior would wear two badges?”

They looked at each other and shouted practically at the same time, “The Holy knight from the Bright Pantheon!”

The Religious power in the Roland Continent was very strong, especially the Bright Pantheon, its power even threatened the rule of the royalty in the empire. The Pantheon had their own tax, and also some military power. This military power was the Holy Knights from the Bright Pantheon.

The Bright Pantheon always trained an amount of people since they were young until they grew up, and they would differentiate them by their talents. The people talented at Martial arts would be sent to have martial art training. After adulthood, baptism, and examination, the one who mastered the Martial Arts with the most devout faith would be selected and would join the Holy Knights of the Bright Pantheon. Their duties were to use their lives to protect the honor and the dignity of the Pantheon, and to contribute their whole lives to the Pantheon and to their God.

There was only one Holy Knight from the Bright Pantheon throughout the whole continent with two Knight Badges on their chest. One was the Knight level badge awarded by the Knight Association, another one was the honour badge of Holy Knights, because it was the feature and the identity of the Holy Knight.

Also, when the Holy Knight died in a battle, his company would take off the Holy Knight Badge and bring it back to the Pantheon. There was a place called “Tampler” to commemorate the sacrifice of the Knight.

Dardanelle blinked, he quickly rolled up the sleeves of the dead knight. His clothes was very stiff because of the cold weather, so it was hard to roll them up. But when the sleeves were rolled up to the elbow, Dardanelle sighed, “My judgment is correct, look at this scar, it was burned by the holy oil. This is the baptism for the Holy Knight in the Bright Pantheon. Every arm of the Holy Knight would have this scar made by the Holy Oil.”

Duwei approached it, he saw the marks on the arm of the corpse. That mark was very unique, like a dancing flame.

Dardanelle explained with annotation, “When the young Holy Knight is undergoing the baptism, there is usually hot holy oil in the pot next to them, then, the pope of the Pantheon hosts the ceremony with a special iron sword. At the point of this sword, there is a seal...Sword and the seal represent the mission of the Holy Knight, which is to protect the dignity of the God in the world by using ‘Force and Power’. In the ceremony, the Pope will put the sword with the seal into the boiling Holy oil, then burns the mark on the arm of the Knight who is undergoing the Baptism! This mark is the glory of the Holy Knight and also their honor...But, if they do something that betrays their God, that’s a kind of rebellion and revolt against their religion. The Holy Knight who offended will have to be punished by the Pantheon...Even before execution, the Pantheon will remove the mark on the arm by scratching it off with a knife! This means that even if you die, your soul still cannot get the forgiveness from god!”

Actually, Duwei knew what Dardanelle was saying. He bowed his head, “Hm, so, although generally, the Holy Knights have two badges, but it feels like they have three badges. The third badge is the scar on their arms.”

“So you already knew that, Harry.” Dardanelle sighed.

They silently buried the dead knight again, and the expressions of the two looked dignified!

The one murdered was not only a Holy Knight! But also a Level Four knight with great martial art skill!

It was not a simple thing!

The status of the Holy Knight in the Empire was unique. They were responsible for protecting the God's authority in the world, they were a special group. They learnt painstakingly from childhood. Powerful, deeply religious, also... one had to say, most of them were of noble character.

The most important thing was.....no one dared to murder a Holy Knight!

Even if the Holy Knight breached the law, or rebelled against their religion, only the Pantheon could make the judgment and punish them.

And not to mention the sinner...even a normal Holy Knight, if he murdered one of them, that means someone wanted to challenge the authority of the Bright Pantheon! Challenge the authority of the agent of the god in the world!

This meant being the enemy of the entire Bright Pantheon!

Becoming the enemy of the Bright Pantheon.....even the Emperor or the Magician Union would not dare to do so!

Those who dared to be the enemy of the Holy Knights, who dared to even kill the knights, were all the most notorious and powerful, evil guys.

For example, more than a decade ago, there was a powerful and notorious magician. He had killed many thousands of people because of his Undead Magic research, even made a small town turn into a ghost town overnight. This offended the Pantheon and they sent out the Holy Knights. Paying a heavy price to kill the magician.

There were many similar events that happened in the history and those were all resolved by the Holy Knights.

But only those! Apart from that, the Holy Knight never did any meaningless things!

They won't even come to the Frozen Forest for hunting the magic monsters!

Holy Knights were not mercenaries.

In this deadly place, if there was Holy Knight, the only explanation was that they were having a task! They were going to kill some strong evil person! They were going to use their sword to protect the honor of the Pantheon!

“I think, our journey will not be very safe at all.” Duwei and Dardanelle looked at each other with their complicated eyes.

After resting, they buried the dead Holy Knight and continued their journey.

Then, one day later, they found a grave again!

There were three in total! The Holy Knights were buried in these three graves! This time, Dardanelle felt a shock after looking at one of the corpses!

“Elder brother.... elder brother Mr. Feite! This is Mr. Feite!!” [EN: Should be Mr. Fitter]

By looking at the man lying on the snow with silver armor...under such a terrible weather, he didn't wear a corset, but a metallic armor. Normal people would think that he was crazy! Metallic things under this freezing weather, it's easy for people to die in the coldness. Leather corset would be much more useful!

But this dead man was wearing a metallic armor...if he was not crazy, then he might be very strong, he was strong enough to adapt to this cold weather!

He looked clean, with his face without any blood. It was different from the last time Duwei and Dardanelle found a corpse. Obviously, the people who buried him were giving him extra prestige. Even when the corpse was buried, someone shaved his beard and even the hair was neat and tidy.

He was just silently lying in the snow pit, his hands on his chest. There was a long shiny silver sword in his hand and was lying on his chest. He looked handsome. The man looked very handsome, although he was frozen black and blue, but Duwei could still imagined how he looked like when he was still alive.

“Elder brother Mr. Feite...the Senior Holy Knight of the Pantheon.” Dardanelle was surprised at the very beginning, then looked serious, “He was also a .....Level Eight Knight! Harry, do you know, the knights with Level Eight or higher are

called Great Knights! Murdering a Great Knight...it's already out of my imagination. Who has this kind of power, and even dares to be the enemy of the Pantheon?!"

Dardanelle stood up and bowed in front of corpse of the Knight 'Feite' sincerely, "Elder Brother Mr. Feite, never thought that I could see you here..... Last time when I saw you, I was still next to Marquise. Thank you for the day you kicked the guy who cursed our mistress out.

Dardanelle's eyes showed his sadness.

Duwei still remembered when he had just met Dardanelle, he told him this name...when Marquise Lister was travelling outside that time, she met an evil magician, and that it was lucky that there was a Holy Knight next to her that protected her. That Holy Knight was the dead elder brother Feite. Elder brother Feite was representing the Pantheon to meet Marquise Lister for appreciating her huge donation.

Duwei looked further away...it was entirely silent except for the sound of the wind.

The lake was covered in ice, there was not even a ghost of shadow on the snow.

"Can kill a Level Eight Holy Knight, also there were quite a number of his comrades ....." Dardanelle whispered, "The one who has this power must be one of the strongest people in this continent! How come there is such a powerful guy in the Roland Empire and he even dared to challenge the Pantheon?!"

Duwei thought a lot and didn't respond to what Dardanelle said. But he quickly thought of something. He suddenly crouched down, and moved the corpse of elder brother Feite, then made an effort to dig him up!

"Harry! What are you doing?" Dardanelle didn't like it, "Please don't disturb elder brother Mr. Feite!"

"Dardanelle, don't you know that.....when the Holy Knights bury their companions, they will also bury them with their relics!" Duwei replied and kept digging at the same time, "I heard that the devout Holy Knights had the habit of writing a diary because they needed to pray everyday. When they are outside,



they cannot pray in the Pantheon, so they will choose to write their words in a diary.”

Soon, after digging a hole underneath the corpse, Duwei sighed and dug up a cloth bag from the bottom. When he opened it, there was a small silver pendant, which was a small statue of the Bright Goddess, a dagger, and a small book!

“Look, this is the diary of elder brother Knight Feite.” Dawei looked at Dardanelle, “I think the answer is inside this book.”

Dardanelle couldn’t keep silent and frowned, “I don’t think this is a good idea. Elder Brother Mr. Feite would not like someone touching his things...Harry, put it back.”

Duwei didn’t listen to him, he opened the diary. After a while, Duwei shouted, “Look!”

.....

EN - Ge Feite was changed to elder brother Feite for better flow.

# Chapter 66

“Look..... This diary refers to the Marquise of Lister.”

From Du-Wei's sentence, any psychological resistance Dadaneier had about reading Gefeite's diary was immediately dismissed. This loyal warrior of the Lister was also very concerned about any news regarding his mistress.

Leaving the dead holy knight behind, he came and stood beside Du-Wei as they read the diary.

“January 6. Today I saw the Marquise of Lister; she was an elegant and charming Lady. As thanks to the noble Lady for the donation she made for her strong belief in god, I hope the Gods will bless her. Today I held no kindness in teaching a lesson to a ruffian showing disrespect towards the Lady. It is hard to believe that there's such a magician with such vile characteristics, I will report today's incident to the Magic union. Mrs. Lister is a believer with status and should be under the House of god's protection, even if it is a magician; one cannot so casually insult the followers of the temple. And for such an elegant and beautiful woman, no knight can tolerate such actions.”

Du-Wei immediately figured out, the recorded information should be when Gefeite first met the Marquise of Lister, and coincidentally helped her chase away the evil magician that was trying to entangle the beautiful marquise that fateful day.

But clearly, Gefeite did not know the Marquise was inflicted with a magic curse from this incident because he left too quickly.

“January 11. Blessed day. Praise the Almighty God. Praise the goddess gave the world light.

Today I got an emergency call from the temple, I was ordered to the North, where my brother Knights of the temple are meeting. This task came directly from the white bishop of the Temple himself. I know there must be another great evil appearing – Those whom violate the honor and teachings of the Temple. It is only when dealing with these people would we the Holy Knights be given such missions. This task does not seem to be easy. The bishop has mobilized three eighth level riders and I will be one of these individuals leading

the group. In the name of the almighty god, my faith will never waiver or be shaken, regardless of how many of the enemy I may face, I Gefeite is willing to sacrifice my life in order to defend the glory and honor of the temple. With this sacred sword of the holy knights, I will relentlessly cut down any evil that would challenge the honor and beliefs of the temple.”

Du-Wei sighed. From these lines, he can see the Holy Knight was extremely devoted to his faith.

“January 14. Judgment day. I’m willing to shed my blood to shatter the darkness and let the light shine upon humanity once again.

The search teams have been formed and I’ll be leading ten Knights into the frozen forest of the north. Even now, I still do not know what the purpose of the mission is or who the target is. The commander of this operation is actually the presiding judging lord Murray himself from the temple! I know very well this mission is of great importance. To be able to disturb the presiding judging lord and make him personally command the operation while calling in three level eight riders out of the total 40 Holy Knight in the temple, this matter must be of grave importance. The presiding judge’s attitude was exceptionally serious, he told me that all of this is under the direct order of his majesty the Pope himself and the enemy that we have to face is a traitor to the temple with a evil soul. This person is a former Temple priest that ran away from his own faith. Due to this reason, his majesty the Pope was exceptionally angry and the warrant from the pope indicated execution is to be carried out immediately without trial.

In any case, as my eyes laid upon the name indicated on his Majesty warrant, I couldn’t believe my eyes ..... may the gods forgive me; I dare not have any hint of doubt regarding the meaning of his majesty the Pope’s order. I believe his Majesty the Pope is the voice of the gods in this world..... However, the content of this warrant causes my mind to be unable to rest at night.

Hussein, the pride of the Holy Knights order! One of the most sacred and powerful Knight of the temple, why must you betraying your faith!”

Du-Wei and Dadaneier eyed each other.

“Hussein ..... Who is that?” Du-Wei looked at Dadaneier: I don’t know much about Holy Knights.

Dadaneier seemed to have trouble swallowing a spit. His face was written in shock. “Hussein..... He betrayed the temple! My God, this is terrible!”

“Scary?” Du-Wei seemed somewhat puzzled by this revelation.

Dadaneier closed his eyes as he shook his head while taking in deep breathes a few times, and then uttered a moan of sigh “..... Harry, you really haven’t heard of the name Hussein?

Du-Wei shook his head. After coming to this world, he was withdrawn since he was small. Then after his fall from grace, he spent all his energy to the read books and study. As for events outside, he did not pay much attention.

Saddam Hussein is that famous?

“Out of all the knights on the continent, Holy Knights of the Temple of light are recognized as the group with the highest overall quality because their belief is the purest and their skills are mercilessly honed from an early age. Now within the regiment of Holy knights in the temple of light, only three knights are ever recognized at one time to be given the position of leadership and Saddam Hussein is one of these individuals.” Dadaneier whispered, “It would not be a exaggeration for some to say that Saddam Hussein is the idol of almost every young knight in the continent. Maybe it would not be overemphasized if they are actually pursuing such a target.”

“Why is that?” Du-Wei asked.

“Because for nearly 100 years, he is the only one to ever reach level eight level knighthood before 25 years old, achieving the title of genius! You need to know, only eighth level or higher knights can have the qualification to be one of the leaders of the holy knights, and Hussein was only 25 years old when he reached this state. In 100 years, he was the only one! By 30 years old, he became one of the three strongest holy knights in the order! He is recognized as a genius, no..... He should be called a genius among genius!” Dadaneier voice is very serious now “Leaders of the holy knight’s order will only pass on their positions to the three

strongest within the order and among the current three strongest, only Hussein was able to obtain the qualifications when he was 30 years old. While the other two strongest holy knights are already 40 years old and up when they reached the same conditions, not to mention, the first knight called Luke was already over 40 when he broke through to the ninth level and the second person was also of the same situation.”

Dadaneier whispered, “Ninth level Knights are only a step away from the level of a Saint Paladin but for the past 100 years, the continent hasn’t seen another Saint Paladin level knight. For past generations, the three strongest holy knights were only able to reach ninth level before passing on.”

Du-Wei asked, “So, Saddam Hussein is also ninth level Knight?”

“Yes, that’s right.” Dadaneier face becomes even weirder, “A moment ago I said he was an eighth level knight at 25 years, are you able to guess how old he was when he reached a ninth level?”

“The age of 30?” Du-Wei tried guessing. “You can’t mean he became one of the three strongest holy knights when he was 30 years old?”

“No.” Dadaneier bitterly shook his head “it was much earlier when he reached ninth level! But because he was too young, the temple cannot allow such a young person to dominate so many holy knights. So it wasn’t until he was 30 years of age that he was ‘officially’ qualified to become one of the three leaders of the Holy Knight order. The time when he actually achieved the title of ninth level Knight is.....” At this point, Dadaneier took a deep breath as he lowered his voice, even his face showed a touch of reverence.

“26 years old!”

Du-Wei raised an eyebrow “so after he achieved the title of eighth level knight, he broke through to the ninth level within a year?”

“It was more than that.” Dadaneier reply causes Du-Wei to become even more surprised. “There were even rumors that Hussein’s strength has long surpassed a ninth level holy knight and was only a fraction away from reaching the tenth level and obtaining the Saint Paladin title. Now with no other Saint Paladin on the

continent, a ninth level Knight is already considered currently the strongest level on the continent. Some even considered Saddam Hussein as the most powerful of all the ninth level knights! Even the Holy Knights order recognizes Hussein's powers are beyond his two counterparts within the order and when he reached this point in life, he was only 26 years old! 26 years of age!!

Du-Wei can't help but become moved by this knowledge.

The continent's strongest holy knight and he is only 26 years old?!

"Despite the fact that Hussein still wasn't able to break through to the level of a Saint Paladin in the past years, everyone surely believed he will eventually become a Saint Paladin. The inner circle of the temple believes he is the pride of the holy knight's order and because Saint Paladins have become extinct on the continent for the past 100 years. Even one person reaching the level of a Saint Paladin will have a great impact on the reputation and prestige of the Holy Knights order. Therefore, the Temple was willing to appoint the just turned 30 years old Hussein as one of the three leading holy knights. In history, any knight that has managed to become one of the three leading holy knights before 30 years of age has always ended up reaching the level of a Saint Paladin."

Both men already guessed the deployment of the Holy Knights were because of a great and devastating event but they absolutely did not expect the reason to be so shocking!

Accepted as the number one Knight on the continent, appointed as one of the three leading Knight in the Holy Knights order, would actually betray the temple and now the temples of light have actually given the order to the holy knight's to hunt and kill him!

This matter seems to have been done in secrecy, news did not spread to others; otherwise, the scandal would definitely be a sensation across the continent!

Du-Wei and Dadaneier looked at each other for a long time. Both of them could see it in each other's eyes of how shocked they were, of course, there are more puzzling matters in their minds.

Hussein, a genius praised by everyone. At 30 years old, he achieved the position of being one of the three leaders in the Holy Knights order! Thought highly by the temple of light and admired by the world. His intellect and ability was unmatched by his peers and accepted as a future Saint Paladin..... It can be said his future was bright beyond measure!

Why would such a person suddenly betray the temple? Then suddenly become a traitor sought by the church and to be killed immediately upon sight?

## Chapter 67

Turning to the next page in the diary, one can see the pages were stained with blood. Apparently, Gefeite had carried the diary on himself when fighting.

Ignoring the blood on the paper, Du-Wei continued to read the words left by the now dead Gefeite.

“February 13, day of light.

We have been searching in the woods for a month. I feel like the target is in close proximity. During the first scheduled meeting of our four teams of men, everyone concluded none of the teams were able to find any clues. The presiding judgment Lord said the mission was to take Hussein’s dead body back with us; otherwise, we will never step out of the frozen forest. The past few days, I’ve always had an aching feeling that I’m very close to the target. Maybe in a couple of days I will finally find him! Everyone is already very tired, but I believe Hussein is having a much more difficult time surviving in this weather and environment alone. Our people have the advantage of taking turns resting, keeping watch at night, and taking turns scavenging for food. Also according to the gathered information by the presiding judge, Hussein was already seriously injured to begin with. He will definitely not escape us! ”

“February 19, day of overcast.

As you go farther north, the weather becomes even colder than before and currently, we are still walking in circles as we searched the forest. Luckily the other day, our team found some trail left behind in the snow, indicating there are traces of people around. The traces show that the cause of it was made by a lone person. I’m certain the trail was made by Saddam Hussein, except him, no one would travel to this place alone and in this kind of weather. Yesterday, we once again find traces left behind by him. According to the clues, he was heading north to the Great Lakes in order to escape.

I’ve already sent a message to the three other teams but due to the vastness



of the forest, they did not respond to my message. A hint of worry was sprouting inside of me from the possibility of an accident happening. It has already been a few days but I still didn't get any reply from the other three teams.

No, I don't believe that is the case here! The other fellow teams were also being led by an eighth level holy knight. Not to mention the third team was being personally led by the presiding judgment Lord himself. Even if the opponent is Saddam Hussein – the strongest knight on the continent, his body is currently injured and in such treacherous environment, he wouldn't be able to singlehandedly take on the acting presiding judge, whom is also one of the top magicians in the temple.

But this situation is still causing my heart to be in conflict..... Is my belief not strong enough? Even if the target used to be the pride of the holy knights, my heart shouldn't be wavering like this.

No, I must kill this traitor! Otherwise his name will forever be etched into the pillar of shame inside the temple! By using their life as sacrifice, the other two holy knight leaders were able to inflict serious injuries to the traitor, if he were to somehow escape the order of holy knights once again, how could the order ever raise their heads again!"

Du-Wei and Dadaneier suddenly stopped breathing as the text came to an end! Dadaneier's hands were shaking, his eyes wide with surprise as he stared at the diary in Du-Wei's hand. After a long time and with much difficulty, he finally managed to squeeze out a sentence in a strangled voice, "said.... this said..... It says here....."

Du-Wei was calmer in this situation than Dadaneier but just as shaky. "The sentence 'the price of life' could it be....."

At the same time, both of their eyes become very heavy!

This is just too terrible!

If the betrayal of the strongest knight on the continent can only be described as an unfortunate event....

Then this sentence was like a disaster!

But then Du-Wei thought.... He is afraid such a reality was most likely the

case!The three most powerful leading holy knights acted as guardians of the temple of light and led the order of holy knights. But Hussein mutinied, while the other two knight leaders have already passed away according to the text!

It would seem, the traitor Hussein and the two other knight leaders had a battle between them. While the two Knight leaders died in the fighting, Hussein survived but was badly injured?!

Otherwise, with the reputation Hussein had of being a top and powerful master and a one of the three holy knight's leader. If the church truly wanted to hunt down such a person, why didn't they send the other two holy knight leaders here instead? It's true a level eight holy knight was also a rare master but still paled in comparison when faced with Hussein. Wouldn't it be of greater assurance if they sent the two holy knights leader instead?

It all makes sense now! The other two knight leaders have already passed away, that is why the temple sent holy knights of a lower level!

"This ... .. This is a disaster!" Dadaneier's finger and voice couldn't stop shaking and trembling!

"Out of the three holy knight leaders, one mutinied, while the other two died of battle! The pillar's that has defended the dignity of the temples has been toppled! My God, this is a disaster in the making! The events would no doubt cause a big storm!" Dadaneier suddenly loudly urged, "Fast! Quickly turn to the next page!"

Du-Wei's was doing some internal calculation in his heart. Hussein with only his own personal power, he managed to kill the other two holy knight leaders that were also of the ninth level like him. Then afterwards still managed to survive! Is Hussein really only at the ninth level? I'm afraid he has already reached the Saint Paladin level right?

Opening to the next page, the top was still stained with blood, but at this time when he looked at the traces of blood marks on the paper. He felt a sense of bitterness in himself

"February 28th

Another ten days have passed since we lost contact with the other three

teams! This is a danger signal. The magical stone that the presiding judgment Lord gave me could not reach anyone or get any response back. My heart is growing uneasy! Could it be, even the powerful presiding judgment Lord was also felled by the traitor's poisonous hand? Universal goddesses of light, please bless your true believers!

Today, I have finally found something that was left behind by Hussein. It was a bloody bandage, his wound must be still very heavy, and the discovery has clearly inspired everyone. According to the bloodstains on the bandage, we can be sure we are very close to him! Even at the cost of our lives, we will complete the mission given to us by his majesty the pope!"

"March 1!

Oh God! Are you really going to abandon your children? Why! Why would you give the hateful traitor so much favor!! Why!!! Why even after the death of the two holy Knight Leaders and now even the presiding judge was cut down by the traitor's poisonous hand!!

Today we have finally found the team belonging to the presiding judge's group! But what I saw was ten bodies! A total of ten corpses! The body of the presiding judge was buried personally by me! The terrible and evil traitor! He actually sliced off the presiding judge's head, I'll kill him! I must kill him!!

Du-Wei spat out his tongue!

Holy crap! Even the presiding judgment Lord of the temple of light died too!

This Hussein sure is ruthless when doing business! This event is getting bigger and bigger! The figure of the presiding judgment Lord was part of the core power group in the system watching over the temple of light. For such a man of great power to also die, this Hussein.....

While Dadaneier was still staring blankly in a dazed state, Du-Wei was already quickly digging through the snow for something.

"What are you looking for? "Dadaneier was surprised to see Du-Wei's action.

"The Pope's warrant!" Du-Wei's hands continued moving quickly as he replied. "Didn't you see what was written in the diary? Gefeite was supposed to have a copy of the warrant sent out by his majesty the Pope! This warrant is certainly

kept only by the leader of the group; others probably didn't even know such a secret warrant actually existed. Gefeite is already dead; maybe, just maybe when the others buried him, they also buried the warrant with him." Du-Wei refused to even use the knife to help; he quickly used his hands to dig through the snow. "Exactly what and why did Saddam Hussein commit such savage crimes, forcing the temple to make such a fuss and ordering to kill such a master?! Maybe the warrant has the answers to his questions!"

Dadaneier's reaction was a little slow, probably due to reading the diary up till now; his mind has already short circuited due to the barrage of events one after another.

Now Dadaneier's mind was filled with a one shock after another! The Church will have a difficult time recovering after they finish going through this ordeal!

Out of the three leading holy knights, two are dead and one mutinied against the church. Now even the presiding judge of the church has also passed away! This situation will definitely cause a earth shattering event in the continent of Roland!

Du-Wei's inner shock was different from Dadaneier. His heart was in shock but was overshadowed by excitement. He held an unfavorable attitude towards all religions, especially to the religious organizations that tended to intervene in state affairs. That is why he is now more excited and curious at hearing the news. As for whether the Church will face an earth shattering disaster was something he didn't worry about....

But what did disappoint Du-Wei was after digging for a good while; he did not manage to locate any items belonging to the knight Gefeite. As for the warrant from the Pope, he was also unable to find it.

"Maybe, he could find some kind of clue from the other two bodies nearby?" Du-Wei can't help himself but focus his attention to the other two Holy Knights corpses.

As Du-Wei prepared his hands to search the bodies, suddenly, one of the lying bodies rolled over, revealing a snow pit!

Then, below the snow pit where the body was, a hand stretched out into the surface! The hand shattered the ice and snow that had covered it, then grabbed

onto the edge of the snow pit! Rustling sounds of shattering ice could be heard as a man slowly sat straight up from below!

Du-Wei and Dadaneier got a surprised scare! Out of instinct, Dadaneier immediately pulled out his sword. Taking a step up front in order to shield Du-Wei, he shouted: “what are you!”

Despite being pale from the cold, the hand that was at the snow pits edge apparently belonged to a human. With the body standing up from the snow pit and revealing the features of the upper torso, Du-Wei could see the face was covered in chips of snow and ice. The face looked very young, white skinned, and he can even say he was very handsome.

But the only issues were the eyes pupil; it was exuding a faint light!

Instinctively, Du-Wei felt a chill! It was his due to his keen senses to perceive danger!

The man sat and took a deep breath, eyes focusing only on both Du-Wei and Dadaneier’s body, then turning slightly as it looked up toward the sky and said to himself, “A day came and passed so quickly.”

Then he gave Du-Wei a glance, masking a mocking smile on his face as he spoke, “You, young man, I heard what you said, what was it that you wanted? Are you looking for this?”

With that said, his hands shook a bit then a roll of sheep skin parchment rolled down! Even though Du-Wei could only quickly catch a glimpse of the content, he could see the following signatures and seals!

The warrant of his Majesty the Pope!!

Looking at the sitting guy that used to be in the snow pit..... Just a moment ago, he was hiding under the body of a Holy Knight! The man sitting on the snow looked pale and frail, but those pair of eyes still exuded a faint chill! And the clothing he is currently wearing.....

Du-Wei, suddenly noticed his arm ... .. There’s a scar! As if scarred with a knife scraping away at the piece of skin on his arm!

The place where the scars are located is exactly the site where Holy Knights leave their “third Medal” baptism mark!

Du-Wei immediately guessed the identity of this man!

“You ... .. You are ... .. Hussein? The person that is being hunted! ”

The man with a pair of cold lake eyes nodded, his voice was calm, as if he doesn't mind the fact that Du-Wei figured out his identity. “You are very clever. Yes, I am Saddam Hussein. My injuries are very heavy and probably couldn't run away, and two eighth-level knights are already onto my whereabouts, I cannot run far so I can only find a place to hide. They will search everywhere in this vicinity, the only exception to this is that they won't dig the tomb of their fallen comrades. Unfortunately, you almost ruined my plans.”

With that, his mouth broke into a slight sneer.

Dadaneier have already straightened his arms, pointing his weapon towards this person!

Hussein! This guy is Hussein! The strongest knight on the continent!

He looked extremely weak with a pale complexion, his upper-body was thickly laced and bandaged, although the tone of his voice was calm, it was difficult to disguise his current weakened state.

Watching Dadaneier's blade, Hussein smiled. “Well, so you think that a knife will be able to deal with me just because of my injury? I'm sorry, you coincidentally happened to stumble upon my whereabouts, so both of you are going to die.”

His voice was already scratchy to the extreme, but his tone of voice still wielded absolute power, confidence and certainty of being in control! As for the blade in Dadaneier's hand, he doesn't even seem to have a need to even look at it!

## Chapter 68 - Battle Between Magic and Sword

This guy ignored Dadaneier and suddenly used his three fingers like a blade and slashed!

Whew!

Right before he accurately hit the tip of Dadaneier's sword, Du Wei could see a golden light coming from Hussein's palm! Dadaneier was shocked by what he saw so he jumped backwards to dodge. When he landed, his sword was already broken in two and the pieces were shattered across the snow. Spitting out a mouthful of blood, he dropped to the floor in agony!

A third level Warrior like Dadaneier is surely no match for someone like Hussein... Even if Hussein is suffering from heavy injury, he is after all the knight that stands at the peak of all warriors on the continent!

Despite having mixed feelings of anger and fear, Du Wei still managed to cry out, "Dadaneier!" Without hesitation, he made some hand gestures and shot out two wind blades towards the hated Hussein. Du Wei knew his weak attempt at saving his friend is futile, but he still had to try. On top of his offensive wind spell, he also conjured up a confusion spell to boost his chances of success.

Seeing the pace Du Wei was able to conjure up so many spells

against him, even Hussein was surprised. But as the strongest knight on the continent, he did not lose his composure for long despite his injuries. Moving a finger, this all powerful enemy was easily able to deflect all of the assaults sent out by Du Wei. As for that that confusion magic, all he had to do was wave his hand and the low level magic was dispersed and sent back to the caster!

After exhausting all of his energy, Du Wei could not muster anymore energy to repel his own spell and fell under the effect of his own efforts!

As he fell down to ground, he was inwardly scolding himself: “Must I be the first magician to get attacked by my own magic on this continent? Dadaneier... Oh god, how is he? Will he be killed by that guy?”

The old magician.... The old man, why didn't he show any response to all of this? Is he not nearby?

Where is Semel? Even Semel is hiding?!

“Little kid, are you a magician?” Hussein is already off the snow and standing upright. Although he is wrapped in countless bandages, the expression on this guy seems to show no pain.

Du Wei was still lying on the floor, unable to get up to face his foe due to his own confusion magic.

Luckily, his spiritual powers were strong and he just needed to bite his lips to break out of his own spell.

Further away, Dadaneier was already awake and sitting upright on the ground. Despite puking blood out of his mouth still, this third level warrior still managed to pull out his bow for one last



attempt. Using the arrow given to him by the snow wolf mercenary group, he mustered up every ounce of his remaining strength and poured it all into the arrow before firing it off towards Hussein.....

Buzz!

Although Hussein knew the arrow is aiming for his head, but the knight didn't bother to dodge and only sneered in contempt. Using two of his fingers, he caught the arrow in midflight and clipped it in two!

"Great shot, but your speed is too slow." Hussein carelessly threw the arrow back towards the owner. Buzz! The returning arrow pierced straight through Dadaneier's shoulder! Under the terrifying power of the arrow, the third level warrior was sent flying 5 to 6 meters away, nailing him against a hulking tree further behind him! Due to the shockwave of having someone slam into its trunk, the snow on top of the tree all fell down, thus, muffling some of the screaming cries of the fallen Dadaneier!

Normally, an arrow wouldn't cause so much pain, but the arrows from the Snow Wolf Mercenary all had hooks on the tips! It's terribly painful when one's body is pierced by such a weapon due to the flesh ripping effect of the hooks!

Hussein sneered as walked towards Du Wei. His face changing from contempt to a form of anger: "Sorry, although there is no grudge among us, but I have to kill both of you... And in my life, I hate magicians the most!"

Seeing how the knight is ready to slash down at him with his

sword like hands, Du Wei had no doubt in his mind that he would meet his end if he succeeds.

Struggling to push Hussein's leg away, Du Wei felt despair in his attempt because the guy was just like a mountain, impossible to move!

Hussein watched with mocking eyes as he casually swung down...

At that moment, there was some mysterious dark air coming out from Du Wei! Then in a blink of an eye, Du Wei suddenly disappeared in front of Hussein! From where he originally was, his voice could be heard from 3 meters away! Slightly stunned, Hussein could feel the surrounding air currents beginning to wrap itself around his body.

Hussein forcefully waived his hands through the air currents as a golden lights flashed across his body. Then in a single breath of bursting energy, the constricting air currents were scattered about. Unfortunately for Hussein, there is an unlimited supply of air in the world. Once he lowered his energy output, the air currents immediately reformed and began to tie around his body again.....

"Oh, binding magic?" Hussein had a hint of surprise in his expression before his face turned into a mocking smile: "You really think that such magic can stop me?"

Amongst his laughs, the knight suddenly spread his arms apart and made a expanding gesture.....

Within Du Wei's limited line of sight, he could see a golden light

expanding in the motion of a burning flame! Even the air under the burning golden flames looked like it was dyed in a golden light! Under this expanding flame, the air currents binding the knight began to spread outward uncontrollably!

Hussein looked at the currently sitting Du Wei before reaching out his hand like he was trying to grasp onto something. Then in mere moments, a sword appeared in the grasp of his hand!

Obviously, this sword is not a real physical sword, but a sword made out of pure light! In a single swing of his hand, the knight threw the light sword towards Du Wei!

As fast as lightning, this sword was already in front of Du Wei. Already prepared to die under such an attack, Du Wei closed his eyes and waited for his imminent death. Luckily for him, it was at this moment a silvery light appeared around his body.

From this mysterious light, a mirror like barrier formed to stand in-between the light sword and Du Wei.

As if the two opposing forces were able to cancel each other out, the silvery mirror and the light sword collided together and disappeared from existence.

“Oh! Magic shield.” Hussein frowned, “I guess I have misjudged a little kid like you. Your magic level is not bad!”

Du Wei’s face lightened up as he shouted, “Semel, is that you?”

Semel had already shown up behind Hussein. Her silvery hair flapping in the wind made her look ever so majestic, “No matter who you are, you cannot hurt Zack!”

With that, a silvery light appeared around her body as she clapped her hands together. Propelling herself towards Hussein, the light around her body turned into numerous light meteors and shot towards the knight!

Hussein yelled and turned around, facing the meteors. This top knight suddenly expanded with the golden flame. This time, he grabbed a bit, and the long sword of Gefeite was already in his hand! Compared with the meteors, his speed was a bit slow. He slowly used his sword and drew a circle...

Suddenly, there was a weird twist! Although the meteors were much faster than the speed of Hussein, the meteors still could not attack Hussein before he finished the drawing. The circle suddenly turned into a light orb around him and acted as a shield, protecting him from the meteors attack...

Semel was shocked too. Obviously, the power of Hussein was out of her expectation. The female astrology teacher felt gloomy, and she jumped suddenly. Her white pretty legs left the snow too, she spread out her arms like she was going to cuddle the sky. Her fingers moved smoothly and started spelling!

At the moment, everything started to change!

The sunny sky changed into cloudy! The breeze started roaring, the clouds gathered! The clouds in the sky were getting thicker and darker! The sun was shaded by the cloud, even...

Shit! There was lightening among the cloud!

Looking like a goddess as she floated in the air, Semel pointed a

finger at Hussein, “Come on! The strongest knight of the continent, show me your strength!”

With a serious face, Hussein shouted towards the clouds in the sky, “Who are you! For such a powerful mage, why are you doing so many shady attacks! Are you afraid of coming before me?!”

## Chapter 69 - Chrono Trigger

In no way is this battle fair. As much as Hussein tried to figure out the location of his new found enemy, he could not do so because Semel is a magic creature and can only be seen by Du Wei.

As if in response to Hussein's cry, the pressuring cloud got lower and lower. Then with terrifying boom, a thunderous lightning strike came crashing down towards where Hussein was located.

Without any fear, Hussein lifted his sword and pointed towards the clouded sky. Without hesitation, his entire body was cloaked in a bright golden light as he slashed down against the incoming attack.... Du Wei rubbed his eyes in disbelief because he thought he was seeing things!

This Hussein actually chopped the lightning in two!

In a loud BOOM, half of the lightning landed on the ground and the thick icy snow had long been melted due to the residual electric currents! From powerful air currents created by the impact, Du Wei was sent rolling through the ground. Looking over at the culprit for all of this, Du Wei could see the impact had left a huge crater in where Hussein stood. Although the guy was covered in wounds and his sword was still pointing up at the sky, but his stature looked so mighty that one might mistake him for a war god!

"Ha ha ha ha! You really think that I cannot see you!" Hussein sneered as he suddenly used his finger to prick at his other arm.

Then using his blood, he rubbed it across his eyes before chanting some weird spell.....

Very soon, Hussein's eyes turned red like it was possessed. The next moment he looked up at the sky again, his gaze focused onto where the hidden Semel was located: "Ah! I can see you now!"

After that, Hussein bent a bit before propelling himself off the ground. Like an arrow, he shot himself into the air and directly headed to where Semel was flying in the sky!

Seeing the danger coming her way, Semel gently raised her hands to ready her defenses. From her simple gesture, wave like ripples fluctuated in the air to create countless barriers in front of her. Unfortunately, Hussein's sword was just like a burning knife cutting through a snow pile. Barrier after barrier, her defense shattered upon impact. In the end, the knight's sword stabbed right into Semel's left arm!

Seeing this, Du Wei instinctively cries out for the knight to stop, but Semel show any signs of distress. Instead of pain, this magic creature only lets out a cold mocking laugh: "You are strong... But I don't have a physical body for you to hurt me!"

With that, Semel's hand reached out and touched the knight in the chest..... From her simple action, a red searing flame exploded from her palm, causing the knight to let out a painful cry! Dropping his sword, the knight was sent flying through the air for at least 10 meters before falling to the ground!

After crashing into a mound of snow, Hussein struggled to stand up. With his chest burnt black from the explosion, the bandages

he so painstakingly wrapped around his body started to come undone, thus, revealing all the hideous wounds on his body. Instead of showing pain, the knight had a joyous smile on his face: “Oh, you don’t have a body? Does that mean you are using an illusion to fight with me?”

Semel’s smile suddenly solidified! She was shocked to find that the knight’s sword was still stabbed into her arm!

From the edges of this sword, a black smoke quickly began to seep out from the weapon. This smoke seems to be able to hurt her by slowly eroding her body like a corrosive acid!

“When you were able to hide your presence in front of me, I already knew that you might be using some kind of magic clone to fight with me!” Hussein gasped desperately because of his heavy injuries. Unable to stand up, he finally fell down to the ground: “This new set of magic I know has never been used before, you are the first!”

Semel looked to be in a lot of pain before showing a decisive look in her eyes. Then raising her right arm, she chopped down at her other arm! After her decisive move, the severed arm didn’t even reach the ground before disappearing completely!

Just like the knight, her body shuttered in pain before falling down to the ground. With a missing arm, she struggled to crawl up to Du Wei: “Zack! I’m sorry.... He is very powerful... So I couldn’t defeat him without my real body....”

With that, a silvery light flashed across her body to reform her missing limb. Although her body looked to be restored, but the



light of her image seems to have faded by quite a bit.

“Ha ha....” Hussein barely manages to laugh: “Miss Mage, I don’t know who you are, but you are strong! Fortunately for me, you decided to use an illusion copy to fight with me; therefore, you are limited to only half your strength! By doing this, you are just asking to be shamed! On this continent, there are no magician alive capable of defeating me by only using half their strength!”

He could not even stand properly as he said this, but he somehow managed to wave his hand through the air!

From his gesture, a golden Dou Qi came shooting out from his palm like a flying knife. Flying across the snow, this single attack managed to fell at least 10 trees in its wake! Then as if being possessed, the Dou Qi Hussein sent out began to wrap itself around the fallen trees. Letting out a sneer, Hussein directed the 10 flying hulking masses towards Du Wei at amazing speed!

With decisive eyes, Semel grabbed onto Du Wei and threw him far into the distance! After landing, Du Wei took a glance back at where he was before and saw that all the trees had been stopped in midflight due to Semel’s magic.

Seeing this, Hussein didn’t seem disappointed lets out a cold laugh: “But how long can your magic last, Miss Mage?! There are many more trees around us!”

Without delay, he continued to send even more trees against Semel!

Unable to hold it any longer, Semel lets out a final yell: “Let’s die together!”

With that, her red gown began to blaze with searing red flames!

Like a burning ball of flame, her body melded into the very core of her magic as she flew towards her enemy. Seeing this, Hussein lets out a cry of distress. Mustering up his last bit of strength, he stood up and used the last of his power to form a shield in front of his body to fend off the oncoming magic attack. Upon impact, the only sensation Hussein could feel is the burning pain of his Dou Qi being incinerated by the dark flames against his body.

This bodily flame of Semel is truly terrifying! Even Du Wei that was watching from afar could feel the searing heat from where he sat. It's no imagination because the icy layer on top of the nearby lake was completely melted in this frigid temperature and even steams were coming off the surface! Struggling to stand upright, Du Wei yells out in pain: "Semel!"

When he called out, his mind suddenly recalled the six magic spell little Vivian had taught him.

In his current state, Du Wei is incapable of using any of the spells because he will be sucked dry like a mummy by the spells!

But at this moment, Du Wei didn't have a choice.

For him, Semel is not only a magic creature, but also a friend that likes to prank him with her unclothed swinging legs!

Doing his best to support himself upright, Du Wei raised his hands into the air and took a deep breath before starting his incantation.....

When he said the first word in the incantation, he could already feel something akin to a dark hole sucking up his magic reserve!

Nearly collapsing due to the sudden shock, he was only able to keep himself standing due to sheer mental perseverance! Pushing his senses to the limit, he focused everything on supporting casting his spell!

After Du Wei finished his first spell... Around a hundred meters from Du Wei, the dimensional space began to distort like everything was beginning to slow down!

From the evaporation of the water, the burning flame created by Semel, and the melting snow on the ground. Everything slowed to a halt....

Despite this, Du Wei continued to use his weak voice to keep up the spell incantation. As he does this, he could clearly feel his life leaving his body when his body began to age uncontrollably.

Although he was suffering, but he still kept going!

As though an invisible hand stopped the dial in time, everything around him slowed to a halt. He knew his effort was successful, but his magic reserve was almost completely depleted!

No, it's not enough!

Du Wei was yelling inside his heart because his power really couldn't support such a high class magic spell! Not only was his clothes starting to rip itself to shreds, but he could also feel his spirit being squeezed due to the spell wanting more energy!

At this point, Du Wei felt like he could not even say the spell words anymore. Using all of his strength, only a weak murmur could be heard from his voice.....

The space and time have stopped!

It was an amazing moment.

Hussein still kept standing where he was and the flames of Semel was still pushing against Hussein's body!

Du Wei tried his best to step forward and shouted, "Ch.....ro....Chro....no Trig...ger"

Before he could finish his words, his consciousness had already fainted.

Luckily, the god was still blessing our little noble.

Someone from the side helped him finish the spell!

"Chrono Trigger! Return!"

After the old yet calm voice said this, a white shadowy figure came flying out from the forest. Opening both of his hand, this mysterious figure winded back time like he was driving a time dial!

The old magician, Vivian's teacher, finally showed up.

His face looked serious as he chanted the spell in a very fast manner..... His spell was exactly the same as Du Wei's earlier!

Then the dimension twisted again!

The flames turned backward and disappeared. Finally, the Semel turned fireball reverted back to her previous form and a faintly looking Semel showed up on the floor.....

All the flames were gone and even the ashes from the burnt branches turned back into their original form...

This scene was just like a rewinding tape from his previous life!

The old magician looked serious the entire time. As soon as the time was reverted back to when Semel was surrounded by the sharp branches, the old Mage stopped in relief.

Then with a wave of his hand, the branches floating in the air was thrown away by a strong wind.

When the time recovered and began to move smoothly again, the old magician immediately ran towards Hussein. Pulling out a bottle of strange liquid from his gown, the old guy hastily poured the liquid into the knight's mouth.

The feeble looking Hussein did not say anything as he looked at the old magician. From his eyes, the hostility from before suddenly disappeared and the knight even tried to smile.

Next, the old magician hastily flew towards Semel. With a serious and complicated expression, his eyes seem to be filled with regret as he looked down at the red robed lady. Then with a sigh, the old guy pulled out a white bottle from his gown and poured a single drop of silvery liquid onto his finger. Pausing a moment in thought, he then poured another two drops of the liquid and fed it into Semel's mouth.

After in taking the liquid, Semel's nearly transparent body finally regained some light.

The old magician finally relaxed before running over to Du Wei. He gave a total of three bottles of magic medicine to Du Wei; these were the supplements which many high level magician used for recovery.

Du Wei's skin was moisturized again, and he woke up from his coma and coughed. Because of the coma, his lung lacked oxygen, so he needed to cough a bit in order to breathe normally!

The old magician was so angry, he stood up and scolded Hussein like father would scold a son.

He pointed at Hussein who was lying on the ground, "You! Stupid kid! When can you get rid of your arrogant and bad temper?"

Then he looked at Du Wei and scolded, "You! You are even more stupid! Do you think that your magic power is enough for using Chrono Trigger? If I was not here, you probably would've died already!"

Finally, he looked at Semel, and there was some complicated feelings...like....love?

"Semel...Oh My god, I knew that you were still alive!" The magician was shaking, "Semel...are you really Semel....I know it's you!"

# Chapter 70

The old man's voice trembled with emotion, even his white beard was gently shaking.

Du-Wei had a sudden recollection of what Courtenay Semel said to him the other day. It is true he can see Courtenay Semel!

This situation is becoming much more complicated. This old magician actually knows Courtenay Semel, while also an acquaintance of Hussein – the traitor who rebelled against the church and is the strongest knight on the continent.

Courtenay Semel have awaken. Even though she still looked very weak, there seems to be no apparent problem. Du-Wei did not know what was in the two silver drops of liquid that the old Mage just poured out, but the effects are surprisingly obvious.

Light once again returned to Courtenay Semel's pair of eyes. Shaking her head a bit, she once again stood up in the snow with a face feeling lost. "Hey..... Du-Wei, what really happened..... and why do I feel so weak? You..... Are you okay?"

With this one word, Du-Wei soon realized Courtenay Semel has once again "woke up".

To begin with, Du-Wei already had a fuzzy feeling this magical creature 'Courtenay Semel' seemed to... maybe... it has a dual personality.

One personality is a magical copy of Courtenay Semel's body, a lonely 200 years old person and likes to pull pranks by dangling a pair of beautiful legs while jumping back and forth in front of Du-Wei.

While the other Courtenay Semel's personality..... Du-Wei suspected it may well be the real soul of the female Astrology teacher in history, capable of casting and wielding powerful magic. And also likes to call him "Zach"..... God damn it!

At the present, Courtenay Semel is calling him 'Du-Wei' instead of calling him 'Zach', so obviously, the magical creature is back and the female Astrology

teacher went away again.

Du-Wei looked at Saddam Hussein, and then at the old magician. He suddenly felt the matter was far too complicated and it gave him a headache.

“I’m fine.” Du-Wei gave her a wry smile as he spoke, “Do you feel very weak? It’s because you had a difficult duel against the strongest knight on the continent and almost died..... You did it to protect me.”

Courtenay Semel still seemed bewildered. “Me..... Duel? But I am.....” Her face showed a slightly headache like expression. Both hands on her troubled face, “How come I can’t remember anything?”

At this time, the old sorcerer have already excitedly walked to the front of Courtenay Semel, his robe was clearly shaking..... Of course the shaking was not because of the cold weather. The old sorcerer even let out a hand, as if wanting to touch Courtenay Semel. But as soon as his hands came up, it soon slowly dropped down again.

A complex expression suddenly appeared on her face. After carefully examining the old magician, she pondered. “I..... I do not know you, but why do I feel like I dislike you..... I do not want to get close to you!” Courtenay Semel looked warily at the old magician in front of her and then took two steps back. “Who are you?!”

With that, her body flew to Du-Wei’s side in a flash and then hid behind him. In a low voice, she murmured, “Hey Du-Wei, I don’t like this old man, he makes me feel very uneasy and very uncomfortable.”

Du-Wei whispered, “Do you know him?”

“No!” Courtenay Semel suddenly let out a loud abrupt shout, “I don’t know this man! I just hate him!”

With that said, she once again disappeared. Du-Wei knew, Courtenay Semel was currently hiding somewhere on his body without his knowledge.

When Courtenay Semel wanted to hide and not see any other people, Du-Wei was incapable of asking her to come out again.

The old magician showed a weird facial expression as he stupidly looked at the



last place Courtenay Semel disappeared from. Then suddenly with a wry smile, he whispered. “She..... She still hates me. Even though she doesn’t remember me, she still hates me..... Haha! ”

Then the old mage’s eyes flashed a bit, slowly focusing his sight to the front of Du-Wei, grinding his teeth as he spoke. “Boy, tell me why would Courtenay Semel stay by your side! Why would she be protecting you? Why is that? Why did she become like this?!”

“Maybe after this is over.” Du-Wei spoke as lifted Dadaneier into a laying position, and then pulled out a knife to cut the spiked arrow in Dadaneier. Fortunately the arrow ended up shooting through his body. By just cutting off the exposed section of the arrow, one can pull the shaft out easily. He then took out some medicine for Dadaneier and applied it to his wound. Catching a glimpse of the old magician, he asked, “Hey, you should know some magic treatment spell right? Don’t just stand there, help my friend.”

Moments ago, Du-Wei kept handling Dadaneier’s wound while at the same time, he explained the things he knew about Courtenay Semel.

From the secret tunnel in the study room, to when he found the secret magic message that Courtenay Semel left behind. Then about how he released the magic creature sealed inside a painting.....

“So..... She is just a biological magic creature, a copy of Courtenay Semel’s memory in a biological body.....” The disappointed expression of the old magician was apparent. He let out a sigh as the light in his eye dimmed down. Seemingly frustrated, he gave Du-Wei a glimpse, then tossed him a bottle of liquid. “Pour that on his wound and he will recover in half a day..... So hold back a little

Du-Wei took the bottle and poured a few drops on Dadaneier’s wound, then conveniently put the bottle away without any hint of rebelling against the old magician.

The old sorcerer seemed not to care anymore. With a dispirited mind, he slowly sat down and muttered in a low voice. “Courtenay... Semei... Ah... Courtenay Semel..... I really thought you weren’t dead yet.”

“Hey, when can he wake up?” Du-Wei pointed to the closed eye Dadaneier but

the old magician acted as if he couldn't hear what he said.

"Maybe one night." Saddam Hussein answered instead.

The strongest knight of the continent continued in a cold manner, "It was done by my hand, I know it the best. This little low-level warrior actually dared to challenge me, My Dou Qi (energy) have already destroyed his muscles around the wound and broke his bones plus blood vessels. Even if you have holy water, it should at the minimum take one night to wake up.

Of course, towards a guy that he just fought, Du-Wei wouldn't show a good face. He grunted then didn't pay any more attention to the knight.

Du-Wei was rather more concerned about his current situation.

The old magician kidnapped him from his home, and then left him alone in the frozen forest for so many days.

Du-Wei is certain this old magician came to the frozen forests to do something important. But.... Why must he take him?

The old man also knew Hussein, could it be, he knew Hussein was being hunted by the church? Then came here to save Saddam Hussein? But what does this situation have to do with him?

Each person sat for a while as they contemplated their internal problems. Then the old magician suddenly stood up frowning as he listened to the wind, then whispered. "Someone's coming..... likely the men of the temple."

With a flicker of his eyebrow, Hussein stood and ground his teeth. "They are just like ghosts, refusing to disappear !" He then glanced at Du-Wei, "It's because of this guy. If it weren't for him, we would not have made such a big commotion and be discovered by the temple!"

Du-Wei immediately retorted, "If It wasn't because you wanted to get rid of us, we would not have fought back. Do you expect us to sit down and die like lambs?! Humph.

"Enough! Just shut up." The old magician stood up and sighed, "Hussein, you need to control your murderous intent! Your internal magic is growing more and more, this is not a good sign. Now, I will go and distract the pursuing troops....."

Old mage turned his head to the side and listened for a moment, then whispered. “Heck, Hussein, the trouble you got yourself into is not small. One..... Two..... Three..... Well, there are more than 20 more Knights and two are eighth-level as well..... hold on..... Looks like there are a few more mages.....”

Hussein reacted coldly, “A few days ago I killed the presiding judgment lord of the temple. These mages must have been sent as reinforcements.”

“Ridiculous, too Ridiculous! “The old Wizard kept shaking his head as he repeatedly rebuked him.” You dare to kill the presiding judgement Lord of the Temple of light? Don’t you know, the temple is like a hornet’s nest and you actually dared to poke the hornet’s nest? You better be prepared to face a lifetime of pursuit.”

He waved his hand to stop Hussein from speaking and whispered, “I’m going to distract them, and you get out of here immediately.”

Hussein frowned, “With both of us here, why do we also need to avoid these people? With both of us working together, even if his majesty the pope were to show up, we wouldn’t need to be afraid. Why must we run around like a mouse?!”

Old magician sneered, “Huh! Of course you need not be afraid because you have already become a enemy of the temple, but I’m different, I’m not their enemy! You’re right though, with me and you together; we can fight off any of these guys. But then I will become a enemy of the temple and be on the run for a long time! I don’t want my future to be filled with knights and mages of the temple trying to kill me.”

At this point, the old sorcerer glanced at Du-Wei then laughed in a low voice. “What about you? Boy, you don’t want to die right? So you also better leave, otherwise when they overtake you guys, they will kill you as Hussein’s associate. The temple does not require a trial to murder others!”

Du-Wei immediately answered, “Of course I do! I’m neither a strongest knight of the continent, or a powerful magician, I do not have the strength powerful enough to protect myself. So now, I’m going to leave!”

“No! You don’t actually want to go because you don’t actually expect to get away! I have already imprinted a magic mark on your body so your whereabouts

cannot escape my induction.” The old Mage continued speaking, “You must follow him, together with Hussein, he will take you to continue heading north.” The old magician kept pointing his finger at Hussein.

Du-Wei immediately felt like he swallowed a *coptis chinensis* (Chinese medicine plant), “Why! What use am I to you?”

The old mage didn’t answer; he was already up and quickly flew away.

Du-Wei wanted to say ‘what’ but by then, Hussein already had a sullen face. “Don’t incur my wrath, boy. Do you think I like being your babysitter? The old guy is only doing this out of your best interest! This place here is the ice-covered forest.....If he lets you go back alone, with your little strength, can you safely leave? I’m afraid that in less than a day, you would be swallowed by the magical beasts!”

Du-Wei really wanted to retort back with “I am not safe here!”

But even Du-Wei knew in his heart, he was only able to securely reach this place because he joined and tagged along with the snow wolf mercenaries. Also the old magician must have also secretly followed them, For example just now, in cases of danger; the old sorcerer would come out like just now....

“Stand up boy.” Hussein struggled to stand up so he grabbed a stick to be used as a walking stick. Then he gently kicked Du-Wei, “Time to move.”

## Chapter 71

No matter from any point of view, Hussein is definitely not a good companion to be traveling with.

Du-Wei has already stayed with Hussein for a day and have prepared for everything. After cutting up some branches, Du-Wei made a suggestion of putting the unconscious Dadaneier on a snow sled. It is an impossible event to expect Saddam Hussein pulling the snow sled when the knight himself also carried signs of injury all over his body. Even with a few looks, Du-Wei can't help but feel a desire to vomit!

In many places, the fleshs are opened and revealing the inner bones! One wound is even giving off a stinky smell as a layer of tightly wrapped cloth binds around it. Those cuts are just too horrible!

The worst spot was actually Hussein's stomach where a darker wound the size of a fist showed. I don't know what he used to soothe the pain but probably things like magic. Upon closer inspection, a ring of muscle around the wound has completely turned black. Even as the black muscles slowly heal..... the muscles continuously give out a bursting crackling sound!

If the wound kept healing, then repeatedly bursting open again, one can't image the degree of pain he must be going through.

As Hussein bandages his wound, he explained the reasoning for this injury was due to the presiding judgment Lord of the temple. It is corrosion magic and even holy water cannot cure it. In order to cure this, one would need to find a high class Mage to expend a considerable amount of power to treat it.

The strength of the presiding judgment Lord is not to be taken lightly if he was able to inflict such a wound and almost take Hussein's life. If it wasn't because

Hussein's power was so close to a Saint Paladin, he would have probably to a certain degree used his inner energy to close the wound....

In this way, it has caused the knight greater suffering. In order to keep the wound under control from the corroding spell damage, he must always constantly use his energy to keep healing.

Thus, forming a delicate balance, but every moment Hussein suffers from the feeling of a "fresh pain".

For a single man with such terrible wounds to walk so long in this damn snow, while constantly enduring enough pain to collapse a normal person..... Other than the occasional flash of pain in his eyes, Hussein carried a cold expressionless face that couldn't even hum a snort. Yet he would still try to straighten his back and waist as he walks.

The temperament of this person is definitely not ordinary.

In this situation, his bad-temperament is even excusable.

Even in his own past life when Du-Wei experiences a toothache, he would also be in an irritable mood. Not to mention the knight's body is experiencing an enormous level of pain at all times, the fact that Hussein can endure it and not have a nervous breakdown is already considered very good.

Du-Wei tried his best not to annoy the guy whom is like a powder keg and quietly pulled the sled through the snow while following behind the knight.

They headed in the north direction while walking along the Great Lakes. But the winds became more violent the farther north you go. Du-Wei has already covered most of his face with a leather hood and a fur coat, leaving only his pair of eyes unshielded. Even so, he could barely open his eyes while facing the wind.

Other than his eyes, he also couldn't speak because every time he opened his mouth, a gust of wind and snow would stop him.

Almost entirely out of instinct, Du-Wei intentionally walked behind Hussein because his tall body would help shield a bit of the oncoming wind.

The walk through the snow is very exhausting and in-between the journey, the two ended up resting twice. Every time, Du-Wei would run off with a knife to cut

down some trees in order to make a fire just to keep warm. During the entire time, Hussein didn't even say a single word. He just sat in silence with his eyes closed and occasionally, some Dou Qi (energy) would appear.

Du-Wei knew that the knight is currently using his Dou Qi (energy) to suppress his injury while also keeping himself warm.

This action is like drinking poison to quench a thirst. Du-Wei is not a doctor, but he is after all an educated magic pharmacist. He can see the knight's injury is very bad and his body's health was almost close to collapsing. Using Dou Qi (energy) to forcibly suppress the pain can only last for a while, while his injury will continue to deteriorate.

But what else could be done?

"The old man left behind some holy water; I still have a little bit." Du-Wei sighed, "Why don't you use the holy water?"

In a cold manner, Hussein closed his eyes as he held onto the walking stick. "I cannot touch holy water. I'm a traitor to the church and also under a curse cast by them. Holy water is indeed good for healing injuries, but due to the curse, instead of healing my injuries, it would instead corrode my body. This method of punishment is common practice for the church."

Du-Wei thought for a moment as he identified a number of drugs from his bag. Some of these items were left by the old magician, while others were collected on the way when Du-Wei followed along with the Snow Wolf mercenary's in the frozen forest. Many of these items were crudely processed into medical items.

Even though Du-Wei hates this person, they are still considered partners at this point. And in such a dangerous place where danger may appear at random, Du-Wei may need to rely on this person to protect himself. Du-Wei decided it's for the best to take out the box of medicine.

Hussein's facial expression may look kinder, but his voice was still very cold. "Thanks, but no thanks."

He gave the medicine back to Du-Wei and continued to meditate with his eyes closed.

"Why?" Du-Wei frowned as he spoke, "This is something that I made. It is

healing cream with coating powder and added with 'Chiker synthetic grass juice', capable of healing wounds. Where else would someone find such medicines in this forest?"

Hussein opened his eyes as he spoke, "I said no, so thank you, but I won't use it."

After pausing for a second, the knight finally added a sentence. "My injury was caused by the Dou Qi (Energy) of a ninth level knight; such injuries would continue to carry the Dou Qi (Energy) of the person that inflicted the injury. Ordinary pharmacy cannot heal such wounds. Unless a mighty and powerful sorcerer cast a spell to lift the foreign Dou Qi (energy) inside me, otherwise normal drugs would only increase my pain.

Du-Wei was silenced.

One can only imagine the knight's experience. He killed two of the holy knight leaders, known as two of the strongest knights within the church. On top of that, he also killed the presiding judgment Lord of the temple and an eighth-level holy knight grouped with a number of senior holy knights!

This is a scary yet brilliant victorious record. But it's not hard to imagine what he went through after so much bitter fighting. How serious is his bodily injury?

"Maybe this is useful for you then." Du-Wei suddenly reached into his clothing's for a moment, pulling out something like a white fruit.

From a point of view, this thing seemed to be a lump of ice, but the top is covered with thin lines. Holding it in his hand, a cool feeling can be felt through the skin. In addition, there is a faint fragrance..... Like an authentic mint leaves in Du-Wei's past.

But this thing is not something of good. For many people, this item is more frightening than the devil itself!

The name of this thing is called "Ice Berries."

It is this item that could be used to make a drug like ecstasy. (Before this, Gunnar solskjaer (the fake mage) also considered if they could use this stuff as raw materials to stimulate the mental minds of a human, but the idea was later dropped.)



“Ice berries?” Knight leaked out a surprised facial expression.

“Yes, it is an ice Berry.” Du-Wei spoke with a smile, “This stuff is hard to find. I only inadvertently found this on the road while traveling. You should know this stuff can cause hallucination..... However, if one is taking only a little bit at a time, you can reduce the pain even by a bit.”

Mentally, Du-Wei added another sentence. “Similar to opium....” Even in his past life from the other world, opium and morphine were considered drugs, but has also been used as medicine to relieve pain.

This item is not good or bad by nature, the key is how one uses it.

Saddam Hussein knew his stuff because he didn’t refuse to use it. Perhaps he couldn’t stand it anymore due to the pain from these past few days and nights. He took the ice berry then gently picked a bit with his nail and put it into his mouth.....

This miraculous item really is useful. Not even a moment has passed and the constantly frowning knight already looked a bit more relieved. His eyes opened, showing a touch of comfort and his breathing sounded a lot better. “It really is more comfortable.... Thank you. This damn pain has tortured me enough to keep me awake for the past few days.”

After a pause, Hussein glanced at Du-Wei. “Have you been studying magic potions? Now, very few magicians would take the time to study magic potions. Most magicians will only focus on magical experiments, while only those that cannot learn magic will go research magic pharmacy.”

Du-Wei smiled, “You said it right. I’m a magic pharmacist. In fact, I don’t even have the qualification to be a magician.”

Hussein did not think it was strange as he spoke in a light tone, “Oh? And what’s your relationship with that undying old fool?”

Undying old fool? Du-Wei thought it was quite amusing.

Due Wei did not answer, instead, he replied with a question. “What about you, what’s your relationship with him?”

Hussein was silent, spending a moment in thought. Then he spoke in a light

tone, “Nothing much, just that he could be considered my senior. Our powers came from the same teacher.”

Seniors?

Du-Wei could not help but let out a chuckle, “I hear you are only 30 years old, right? While the old fool is probably a few hundred years old..... You?”

“No, I’m 31 years old. As for that that old fool..... only heaven knows how old he is! Hmm.....” It seems Saddam Hussein did not really want to talk about this. “In name, we are brothers due to having the same teacher, but in reality, I don’t really like him.” After a pause, he no longer continues the subject. “What about you? You look like you are probably not even 15 years old, who are you? Why come here?”

“Actually, I’m not even 15 years old and even under the age of 14.” Du-Wei shrugged, “I’m from the Rowling household. As to why I came here, you would need to ask that old fool that question. I was captured by him....”

“Rowling household.....” Hussein thought for a moment then suddenly laughed. He really laughed.... While looking at Du-Wei, the once murderous intent on this guy’s face now carried eyes of pleasure. “Ah! I seemed to have heard of you. Even in the Imperial capital, you are very famous. Rowling household’s idiot son, a few years ago, the imperial capital’s circle of aristocratic kept talking about you.”

“You may have heard,” Du-Wei spoke without care of the ‘idiot’ statement.

“Yes,” as if Hussein was immersed in his memory. “Holy knight leader Uncle Luke was also a noble. In the past, I was invited to a banquet of his uncle. At the time, Luke told me that recently the biggest news is the idiot son of Earl Raymond (Du-Wei father), and Luke’s uncle was originally going to arrange a marriage between the families. But when he heard of the news, he was so scared that he didn’t dare mention it again. I remember Luke.....”

At this point, Hussein suddenly closed his mouth and his eyes slightly flashed.

Du-Wei also didn’t dare say anything and just kept looking at the knight.

“Luke..... I killed him.”

After a long time of silence, Hussein suddenly whispered a sentence.

His icy cold voice held a trace of untold sadness and a deep pain flashed across the knight's eyes. He shakes his head as he speaks, "Yes, Luke was killed by me and the other knight leader was also killed by me. They all died under my sword."

Du-Wei said nothing. Hussein had already turned his gaze into the distance, his voice seemed to be talking to himself. "Oh..... Lord Luke and the other knight leader..... There is also Gefeite, oh poor Gefeite. Like me, we were together in the training house and passed the examination to enter the Holy Knights. It was as if he was like my brother..... But I personally had to pierce through his heart. Let me think, who else..... Oh, there is Stella, the warmed hearted southerner. Whenever he prayed, he always carried a heavy southern accent and we used to always laugh at him. With one strike, he was sliced into two segments by me...."

Du-Wei was suddenly surprised to see a tear slowly roll down from Hussein's cheek.

"They are all my friends, my brother, my comrades. We all trained together, learned martial arts together, and rode together..... Now they died by my sword....." Hussein's eyes started to get frantic and he suddenly shouted, "Why! Why!! You know why?!"

He suddenly stood up with bloodshot eyes, staring at Du-Wei and in a low growl. "Do you know why!! Do you know!! "

"..... I do not know." Du-Wei frowned as he realized that some of the knight's mental state was unstable. He cautiously took a few steps back.

"Because..... Hahahahahaha....." Hussein suddenly unconsciously began laughing. His laughter carried a taste of madness, "Because! Because his Majesty the Pope said, 'Oh, it is the will of the gods!' Then we must bleed and we must die!! All because of this damn Word! That damn 'the will of God'!!!"

"Knight Hussein." Du-Wei speaks in a low voice, "You are too excited, sit down first."

Hussein's deeply looked at Du-Wei; his eyes still carried a look of weirdness, as if with a touch of disorder.

But he still sat down; this action slightly relieved Du-Wei a bit.

“Hey, young man. You know why I am being pursued by the temple? Why I became a traitor to the temple? Me, Hussein! Since I was 13 years old, everyone considered me the pride of the temple knights! Everyone thought I was the greatest Knight in 100 years! They even think that I am sure to become the head commander of the holy knight’s order! Only a Saint Paladin can become the head commander of the holy knight’s order. The holy knight’s order hasn’t seen a Saint Paladin for over 100 years! But I would definitely become a Saint Paladin! I will be the leader of the Holy Knights of the temple! HA HA! But now, I’m being hunted down like a mouse!”

Listening to the rising rage of Saddam Hussein and how disorderly his eyes looked. Du-Wei started to feel disturbed in his heart!

Suddenly, his heart skipped a beat!

This is bad!

Seeing the ice berry in the knight’s hand, a bite was taken out of it!

Du-Wei understood where the problem is laid!

Iced berries!! He must have taken too much. The magic plant must be interfering with the knight’s mental state. As if taking drugs, the person’s mind would fall into a confused state!

POW!!!

A clear and crisp sound, Du-Wei found the walking stick in the knight’s hand has crumbled into pieces!

“Did you know.....? If I can start over, I would never choose to go into that damn sanctuary! Damn..... Sanctuary!!” Hussein grinded his teeth.

Sanctuary?

Du-Wei knew the name. The sanctuary is the house where they placed and store the badges of the already deceased holy knights.

All of the deceased holy knights would have their badges stored in this hall, receiving the god’s blessing.

“Just two years ago, before I became the third Knight leader..... According to tradition, his Majesty the Pope asked me to be a guardian of the Sanctuary for

one year.” Hussein’s voice becomes even deeper and his mental state drifts entirely into memory.

“Holy Guardian of the Sanctuary. Every member of the Holy Knights order must go through this before taking on the position of one of the three leaders. When I was awarded the duty of guarding the sanctuary, everyone knew I would soon become one of the leaders of the holy knights..... However, I didn’t think it was the beginning of a nightmare!! Saddam Hussein suddenly burst into laughter, his smile matched with the ice and snow echoing through the wind, sounding like a ghost.....

“Boy, do you know who is it in the history of the temple is the most powerful and greatest of the Holy Paladins. Do you know?”

“..... Well..... Is that you?” Du-Wei was careful in his answer, he felt that the Knight has gone insane and his mental state is somewhat unusual. Better not offend him.

“Me? When compared to that person, I am but an ant!” The tone in Hussein suddenly became that of reverence.

“Countless number of years....No,even in 1000 of years to come! Countless numbers of powerful people appeared on the continent, number one warrior, number one knight, number one magician and so on and so on. Over hundreds of years, many of these people appeared over and over again. But in a thousand years, only one person manages to obtain this title.

“What title?”

Hussein took a deep breath with his cheeks appearing with a touch of morbid red, “The strongest under the stars!”

The strongest under the stars?

This title is indeed more prestigious than those strongest of the continent titles.

“This man is actually a holy Knight and his Holy Knight’s badge is deposited into the sanctuary.” Hussein shook his head, “Unfortunately, he has become a nightmare for me.”

Du-Wei has already been hooked with curiosity. He carefully guided Hussein with soft words in order to make him speak, “This man is.....”

“The founding emperor of the Great Roland Empire..... For thousands of years, Aragon Roland is the only single person eligible to become the strongest under the stars! His strength cannot be copied because he is not only the strongest number one magician; he is also the strongest Knight.....” Pausing for a bit, Hussein added.

“Holy Knight! His Majesty the Emperor had once joined the order of holy knights! The holy knight’s badge that he once held is deposited into the sanctuary. That badge has become my nightmare!”

## Chapter 72

Aragon?

This matter once again involved his Majesty the emperor?

Others may not know, but Du-Wei knew!

Holy Knights? What a joke! Holy Knights are the defender of the temple of light and defender of god's authority on humanity. God damn it! The so-called strongest under the sky Aragon, Du-Wei understood it the most clearly where his strength came from. It was from making an exchange deal with old Chris, the Devil's servant.

The power came from the Devil's power, but this power allowed him to become a Holy Knight, defender of God?

However, Du-Wei also remembered that the great founding emperor did indeed seem to have a close relationship to the Temple. While he was unifying the continent, he did receive support from the temple. Perhaps he really did join the Holy Knights?

It is not difficult to understand when talking about a founding emperor to draw on all forces available to him. One method of gaining their support is to join the organization and in this case, the holy temple itself.

However, his power came from the devil, but hung it on behalf of god's name. It is truly ironic.

Hussein facial expression acted in an elusive way, the Knight's mental state began floating away..... Fortunately, he was not mad. While under the effect of the ice Berry, the already weakened mental powers of the injured will of course be influenced in certain ways.

Du-Wei really wanted to continue inquiring. He wanted to know while the knight was in the sanctuary, what it is that he found within the badge of Aragon.

What exactly did Hussein mean when he said “nightmare”? Could it be whatever was left by Aragon actually came from the Devil?

Hussein’s eyes unfocused and his voice grew fainter and vague.

Originally, a little bit of the ice berry would not be able to put the knight’s tough nerves into disorder. But when faced with so many days of misfortune and torturous events, the knight’s mental state was already unstable.

Like a depressed person drinking, it is particularly easy to get drunk.

Hussein sat and lay sprawled down in the snow while still muttering, “Nightmare..... Nightmare..... I. Nightmare.....”

With that said, he closed his eyes and slept with a loud snore.

Plagued with unbearable pain, Hussein has gone many days without sleep and tired himself out. Although when one reaches his limit, he can raise his Dou Qi (energy) to reduce his exhaustion. However, this method was like squeezing the life out of one’s potential, after all, this is not a righteous method.

After a long time without sleep, Hussein finally relaxed his nerves under the effect of the ice berries. That night, he went to bed feeling unusually sweet, not haunted by the pain. With his body fully relaxed, he didn’t even dream and just slept all the way to the next day.

“Good morning.” Du-Wei used one hand to push Hussein awake. After awaking from his deep sleep, the knight felt his whole body become loose and lazy. In a confused state, he opened his eyes to see Du-Wei’s face up close.

Suddenly startled, Hussein sharply stood up. The knight showed a remorseful face while speaking in a heavy tone, “how long have I been asleep?”

“Not very long, only one night.” Du-Wei curled his mouth, seeing the knight’s body has been stretched to the limit. “If you didn’t sleep, then I’m afraid you wouldn’t have lasted for long.”

Too careless! The Knight rebuked himself inside his heart. In such a place, how could he sleep like a dead pig and completely lose his senses of the surroundings.



To even have someone push him awake, how could he be so relaxed? In this situation, it is absolutely not allowed.

“Well, don’t blame yourself.” Looking at Hussein’s expression, Du-Wei understood the other person’s thought. He smiled and said, “You are a man, not a God. Even a God can get tired and besides, you are seriously injured. You also need a good sleep to replenish your strength. You see? Your spirit and body looked much better than yesterday.”

Hussein took a deep breath and did feel his energy recovered a lot. He clenched his fist and a crunching sound could be heard from his actions, then he stood up to do a few stretching movements.

He opened the tent’s curtain and strode out.

Once out of the tent, Hussein saw Dadaneier was currently using a stone to sharpen a curved blade. The rubbing was making a rustling friction sound and Dadaneier’s face was reflected on the blade’s surface.

Dadaneier gave an unfriendly look towards the knight. No matter what, this guy did seriously injure Dadaneier the other day.

Earlier that morning when Dadaneier awoke, he still seemed somewhat weak, but his injury has already healed. Then Du-Wei immediately explained what happened yesterday to Dadaneier.

Once he was informed that the powerful knight from yesterday; has now turned into their companion. Dadaneier was somewhat shocked and his emotion was having trouble adapting.

After all, this is normal for regarding a man that only yesterday has caused you to vomit blood and nearly killed you. Then the next day you wake up, you are to hug him and become good friends with him. How can that happen!

The two glanced at each other, making eye contact. After adequate rest and sleep, the knight’s bad temper has gotten a lot better. After all, a person will be in a grumpy mood when they are extremely tired and at this moment, Hussein looked a lot better. He gave Dadaneier a look and hesitated, then gave the other a smile: “Oh, you’re awake..... Well, that’s a good knife.”

Dadaneier didn’t speak, but nodded as he continued sharpening his curved

blade. This was actually Du-Wei's blade; his own blade already shattered into pieces by Hussein. Thinking back on it, he wasn't even able to take on one simple strike by a wounded opponent. This reality has hurt Dadaneier's pride, that's the reason why his attitude was so cold.

But Dadaneier is after all a candid and good man. After a little bit of embarrassment, he then pointed to the wok (A Chinese pan/pot) on the fire. "There's soup in the wok, you should drink a little."

"Fortunately, the pot wasn't broken yesterday or we wouldn't even have access to water." Du-Wei laughed from the side and then he went to the snow field, stretching his body. Facing the wind; he performed the outlandish set of routine actions according to what the old magician taught him.

Du-Wei repeated this routine three times, until his body naturally gives off a sense of warmth and the cold wind no longer felt as cold when blew against his body. Du-Wei took a deep breath, ending his movement.

Next to him, Hussein was carrying a smile as he looked at Du-Wei's action. His eyes acted as if Du-Wei didn't understand something.

Waiting until Du-Wei was done. Hussein suddenly picked up his eyebrow. "Undying old fool taught you this? I mean this set of routine."

Du-Wei did not shy away from the question. "Yes, using this to fend off the cold is very effective and seems to have good effects on one's health."

"Your practice was good, why not continue?" Hussein smiled.

"Continue? But he already finished." Du-Wei looked at Saddam Hussein. Then his heart ached at the sudden thought of something.

"I just knew it....." Hussein seemed to whisper a sentence and then with a smile, "Well, listen kid, this set of action you are doing is actually the most basic. I think you practiced pretty well, do you want to learn a new higher level set of actions? The old fool would only teach you the first level of the basic routines and won't teach you the rest, but I can teach you."

With that said the Knight crossed his arms and looked at Du-Wei with a smile.

Du-Wei immediately nodded. Du-Wei is increasingly experiencing the benefits

of this action, in addition to keeping out the cold; Du-Wei could feel his body getting stronger day by day. Originally with his weak body, he could never have supported himself through so many days in this snow and wind. He probably would have already become ill, but now, Du-Wei's body seemed to be even slightly better than his peers.

The Knight immediately went to Du-Wei's side and asked him to sit down. Then the Knight reached out his hand to slowly touch several bones in Du-Wei's body, carefully pinching each spot, then closed his eyes in thought for a moment. When he opened his eyes again, he sighed softly. "How unfortunate, you looked pretty smart, but the potential of your body is too poor. I'm afraid you are not born with the potential to be a good martial artist inside you. Even if you learn this set of actions, I'm afraid you won't achieve the expected results. You probably won't have a chance to become a top fighter. A waste.... Such a waste.

With that said the knight shook his head and showed a look of pity.

Du-Wei did not think it was unfortunate. In fact, he did not have much interest in becoming a powerful Warrior. But if it can make his body slightly stronger, he was still very willing to do so. Du-Wei just laughed, "I don't feel it was a pity, I had no intention of becoming a powerful Warrior."

"What do you know?" Saddam Hussein gave Du-Wei a cold glance. "You simply don't know what you are practicing! On this whole continent, for thousands of years, only three people have had the opportunity to learn this set of action. Humph..... If a qualified person learned it and practiced hard, he would definitely have the potential to become one of the strongest on the continent! Sigh..... Unfortunately, your physical condition is far too poor, even though you have the chance to learn it."

Du-Wei was interested, "This set of action..... What the hell is it?"

Hussein did not immediately reply. He eyed Dadaneier, whom is currently adding fuel to the fire and politely said, "This person is...."

"I am called Dadaneier, I know what you mean. I was just going into the woods to find something."

With that said Dadaneier put down the things from his hand and walked away in big strides.

“Thank you.” Hussein spoke while looking at the fading silhouette of Dadaneier.

All fighters on the continent are aware of this rule. When others are teaching martial art skills, it is very impolite for others to watch on the sideline. Unless those observers wanted to secretly learn it, at the time of transferring their skills, many masters will not let anyone peek at their martial arts.

“Boy, I’m going to first perform a segment and see how much you can remember.” The Knight stretched and moved to a snow covered ground, then performed the first move.

When Hussein moved to the snow covered ground, Du-Wei opened his eyes, carefully observing Hussein’s actions. His set of action compared to what the old magician taught him is similar..... Only similar.

But much, much more difficult!

There are several actions; Du-Wei watched on, almost unable to hold in a sigh..... Unless the person’s joints are able to freely rotate 360 degrees, those movements simply cannot be humanly possible,

And those ligaments.... Du-Wei suspected, even with the gymnasts from his previous world, they would not achieve that level of flexibility!

Watching the continent’s number one Knight standing there, capable of freely distorting his body like a noodle, the scene can’t help but give off a creepy feeling.

After a set of action is finished, a lot of sweat was apparent on Saddam Hussein’s forehead and of course, this is not due to exhaustion but due to overheating.

“These basic exercises are meant to train your body, letting your body increase its flexibility exponentially. In future battles, your strength, agility, speed, and the most importantly is the ability to fight, all will increase exponentially!” Hussein explained.

Ability to fight..... This point caused Du-Wei to feel very touched.

If he can really train himself to become like Saddam Hussein, soft and flexible

like spaghetti..... Then other people's joint breaking punches will have no effect because his joints are free to bend at will..... This is of course a big advantage.

But..... This can't be so simple. Otherwise, wouldn't every acrobats and gymnasts from Du-Wei's past life be a peerless master?

"Of course, it's not so easy to improve." Hussain added. "These are just the basic. When you have mastered the basic sets of actions and your body's ability have reached a limit, at that time, your body is ready to train in the advanced level contents of Dou Qi.

"Dou Qi?" Du-Wei smiled: "You mean this set of basic action is in fact the basis of the training method?"

"Not normal Dou Qi." Hussein spoke in a low voice, "You don't need to know now, wait till you reached the level I think is passable, and then I'll consider teaching you. Now, do it again so I can see how much you know."

Du-Wei immediately took a few steps forward. While standing in the snow, he recalled the actions Hussein made and started moving his body.

Du-Wei remembered this set of movement very quickly. Thanks to what the old magician taught him and the basis he had from days of practice, he was able to perform this new set of action without much difficulty. But Du-Wei wasn't able to perform a lot of actions with higher requirement; after all, he didn't have the ability to rotate his joints 360 degrees like twisted noodles.

"Very good, you learned very quickly." Although Hussein praised him, his expression grew regretful. Shaking his head as he spoke, "Unfortunate, how unfortunate..... "

Hussein could see Du-Wei was able to learn quickly and is very clever, but at the thought of his natural physique, he felt it was unfortunate that Du-Wei is unable to develop into a top expert.

Du-Wei learned extremely fast, after all, his spiritual power, memory and the ability to imitate are beyond ordinary.

Moreover, once one set is finished, Du-Wei would suddenly feel his body having a reaction!

Hot!

This point was what Du-Wei felt is the strongest at the moment!

When he completed the set taught by the old magician, his body emitted a faint warm feeling, but this time, it was different..... When he finished the set of action taught to him by Hussein, Du-Wei felt like a fire is burning inside his body. The flame seemed to be very powerful, as if he was actually inside the fire itself!

He was constantly sweating and his tight-fitting clothes were soon soaked with sweat. He even felt thirsty and couldn't help but want to drink water.

With a very serious face, Hussein pulled onto Du-Wei and then quickly whispered in his ear a bunch of formulas. "Keep in mind, the cultivation of this set of action must coincide with the formula in order to have any real effect! The old fool didn't know this formula because he studied only magic, so he hasn't learned any of this. I personally don't really understand the meaning of these formulas, but you just have to follow the lines.

This formula is very strange. Under the guidance of Hussein, Du-Wei sat in the snow, closing his eyes to feel the fire in his body. The heat conversed inside his body, like running a high fever. With the guidance of the formula, he used his spiritual power to guide the heat inside him.

Something strange happened!

A stream of hot air seemed endless inside his body, waves after waves of heat hit Du-Wei, almost causing him to pass out. However, while in pain, he also felt a strange sense of comfort.

"I'm afraid in this world, not many people liked to be grilled." Du-Wei laughed at himself.

With his eyes closed, Du-Wei did not know his sweat has drenched his clothes. Even the snow where his butt sat has melted away.

The heat roasted his body, bones, and muscles, while invisibly fixing some of his weaknesses and changing his body. Of course, the naked eye cannot see these changes.

After a long time has passed, Du-Wei opened his eyes to see the sun is already

on top of his head. In one sitting, he actually sat all the way till noon.

Hussein sat beside him, with a faint smile as he looked at him. “Well, the first time is usually the longest. Next time when practicing, you won’t be sitting for such lengths as long as you perform the set of action while chanting the formula to guide the heat.

Du-Wei stretched out his hands while his body felt warm and comfy. When the cold wind blew against his body, he couldn’t feel the slightest chill and broke out in a sweat.

“This..... Is Dou Qi?”

“It is still too early to think that!” Saddam Hussein mocked him. “It’s just the most basic method of exercise; the distance from practicing Dou Qi is still far, far away! This current training will only improve your fitness a lot, but won’t let you become a master.”

Then Hussein whispered, “The person whom created this kind of cultivation method left behind these words. (No matter how strong the person is in nature, whether his Dou Qi is good, or whatever is good, it is all just energy. Our body is also energy, but in order to live in this world, we need to breathe the air, drink the water, and eat to supplement the body’s lost energy. However, each body is different as some can only absorb 30 to 40 percent of what they take in, while some can absorb a bit more than others. This method of cultivation makes the person’s body even stronger and purer, lowering the energy consumption and waste. From then on, when you absorb energy from eating, drinking, and even the process of breathing, your body will naturally absorb the energy. If you are a man of cultivation, whether you practice magic or martial skills, your cultivation will be faster than others because your body has been slowly improving. You will also have an easier time producing energy while reducing energy consumption.)”

I see..... In his heart, Du-Wei gives his own definition of this cultivation method. “It’s like a “single-cylinder engine” turning into a more powerful “twin-cylinder engine”!

“Good, now go take a bath. Your whole body stinks!” Saddam Hussein pushed Du-Wei away.

In this weather, Du-Wei just took off his clothes, and picked up a handful of

snow to physically rub onto his skin. Without any cold sensation, it was like taking a pleasant cold bath in the summer. Du-Wei was very happy and enjoying the change in himself..... In his view, this can also satisfy his own hearts vanity (excessive pride).

Caught in this snow covered land using snow to brush one's own body and not feel even a little bit cold..... This feeling is like a very "tough guy", isn't it? HA HA.

Seeing the happy Du-Wei bathing in the snow, Hussein sat next to the tent contemplating, and then he sighed softly.

That's still good..... He cannot say when he might die. If he did die, then no one would be able to pass this on into the future.

No matter how..... Aragon, I have spread out your set of "Stars Dou Qi" method. Although you are my nightmares, but being a warrior, I cannot just look at this amazing martial skill being lost. This absolutely cannot happen.

Well..... Stars Dou Qi, we'll see if this guy can satisfy me with his progress, maybe I can really pass on the real Stars Dou Qi to him.

Du-Wei did not know, the set of actions he is currently cultivating at this moment, was in fact the martial art skills of Aragon Roland. Nearly a thousand years ago, the founding emperor of the Roland Empire swept through the continent as the strongest and reached the pinnacle among experts by using the Stars Dou Qi.....

The stars... .. A word related to the gods.

Of course, our little noble is only practicing the most basic of the physical method, if he progresses quickly enough, perhaps...

"Well then, we should hit the road."

After stopping slightly, Hussein stood up and waved his hand. A strong wind from his hand immediately puts out the fire and at the same time, covered it with snow.

Dadaneier has already come back and began drawing the tent. All the while, Hussein shouted loudly at Du-Wei. "Boy, put on your clothes, I don't want to see you naked butt!"



# Chapter 73

Continuing along the road near the Great Lakes, the three headed North towards the forest.

In front of their eyes, the vastness of the forest seemed endless as they walked along the Lake. Finally, after two days of tough slogging, they have reached the northern shore.

Du-Wei took out the gift (map) given to him by Chairman Beinlich of the snow Wolf mercenary. Looking at the fragmented map, the Southern banks of the Great Lake is very detailed. Area's where it is safe, and locations where more monster is infested is marked down in great lengths.

As for the northern lake shores, the marks were simple in comparison. Big chunks of white space on the map simply read "forest", and the only forward direction mark was left behind by Chairman Beinlich. This was only possible after checking with a lot of previous records from other adventurer's.

"Well, if we continue to head north, then I'd rather go along this road on the map." Du-Wei opened up the map for the two of them to see. "Look, this is probably the only place in 200 years that someone has traveled along..... In this direction is the position we are now to the left..... And to the North, we will cross a secured safe zone. The map says this place has a relatively small amount of magical beasts. Then two days later, we will come to a Canyon, Oh, and the Canyon has no name, but it says very clearly that there is danger with high possibility of advanced magical beasts appearing. Further north of this area is completely unknown."

Dadaneier looked at the map carefully; while Hussein's face acted like it does not matter.

"My companions, where should we go from here?" Du-Wei said with a smile. "Based on the map markings, should we take the canyon route or should we just aimless head north?"

At the time of saying this, Du-Wei kept part of his attention on Hussein. He felt that the old magician must have a purpose traveling through the forest, and this holy night, the traitor of the holy temple must know their destination. Until now,

they wouldn't say where, but at this point, they should tell him.

But Du-Wei was disappointed by Hussein's indifferent facial expression. Speaking lightly, "Whatever, just head North, as to which way to go, you deciding is fine."

"Go to the Canyon." Dadaneier pondered the question for a moment, then put forward his own proposal: "No one has been to the other places, who know what those places have. Only the Canyon was traveled through before, though the information left behind is not much, but at least we can prepare for it."

"All right then, it's decided." Du-Wei picked up and put away the map. Laughing as he spoke, "We set off towards the Canyon!"

Du-Wei had a very indifferent look just like the knight, after all, being accompanied by the continent's strongest knight, as well as the super sorcerer following behind. Even if he encounters any danger, there shouldn't be any problem. That thought kept his feelings at ease.

Across the Great Lakes to the North, the weather's been so cold that a normal person can no longer withstand it. It can be said, if Du-Wei still had his previous constitution, he would have already frozen to death on the road. But luckily every day, Hussein would teach him a new set of action and this is just enough to withstand the cold.

As for Hussein, he had no fear of the cold because he just had to increase his Dou Qi.

Instead, it was Dadaneier that seemed to be unable to support himself. Although he was a strong warrior, his strength was only at a third level warrior.

As they headed into the forest, the weather was very strange with no wind in the area and only silence welcomed them. The thick snow under their feet is enough to cause their mind to go numb in this situation.

Sometimes, if they take a misstep into a snow pit, the depth of the snow is enough to bury a person up to the waist!

Also, the snow is not only very thick, but also very hard! These past two days, when they dig into the ground to set up a tent, it was so thick that they couldn't see soil. And several times, what they found instead was a layer of thick ice.

“Damn it man..... I suspect there is no soil in the ground, but actually a giant piece of ice! Then how do the trees around here grow? Can trees grow on ice?” Dadaneier sighed.

Du-Wei frowned, then he whispered, “Did you feel it? Ever since we left the Lake and traveled into the Woods, I always felt a strange illusion. It’s too quiet, almost without sound, but I seem to feel like we’re being spied upon at all times..... Do you have this feeling?”

Dadaneier shook his head, implying no. Hussein only smiled for a second before glancing at Du-Wei, “Oh, really, you also feel that?”

Du-Wei had relied on his huge mental powers and keen senses. As for the Knight, it was because of his transcendent powers. But Dadaneier was only a mid-level warrior; his strength was relatively low and his telepathic abilities aren’t strong either.

“Could it be that we are being targeted by a magical beast?” Du-Wei frowned.

“Maybe not a, but rather a group of.” Hussein spoke in a light tone, “What the heck! They better not appear, if they do appear, then we would have a few more dinners.” (No comment....)

Du-Wei has no doubt in the knight’s word.

In fact, along the process of traveling through this road that ran along the big Lake, they have already more than once encountered magical beasts.

In this snow covered land, where food is scarce, high level magical beasts and bloodthirsty monsters would desperately try to prey upon them. Even at night, Du-Wei would sprinkle dragon droppings around the camp, but it showed little effect as a deterrent.

The magical beasts here seemed to have higher intelligence because dragon feces are not enough to scare them away. Even though they do not dare to directly attack, some would still attempt to try.

On a previous night, three earth dragons dug out from under the tent to attack them. The earth dragons are not really dragons, but rather looked like pangolins from Du-Wei’s past life. Even these kind of problems can cause quite a headache for them!

The beasts could freely dig through the frozen ground that was as hard as iron, and their speed is fast! These things are draped in a hard layer of scale and as to how hard is it really? You can ask Dadaneier this question. In the night attack, the third level warrior Dadaneier used his blade to hack against the back of the earth dragon, the resulting impact force only caused the body of the earth dragon to shake a bit. As for the blade Dadaneier was holding, it broke and shattered into two pieces.

The earth dragon has an unusual defense and their claws and teeth are even worse, easily able to bite apart hard metals! They relied heavily on their claws and teeth to tunnel under the frozen soil.

Even though they are small creatures, they are capable of astonishing speed and are almost bullet proof. If somehow they are able to catch or bite you, then you might lose your life.

If the team didn't have such a strong person like Hussein, Du-Wei wouldn't doubt that he and Dadaneier would have been finished.

During that event when Dadaneier used his blade to hack against the body of the earth dragon, his sword broke while the earth dragon just shrugged it off. Then it latched onto Dadaneier's body and used its claws to pierce right through the leather armor and even into the shoulder bones.

It was at that moment. Hussein, the continents strongest knight made his move. Using a broken sword, his one strike was enshrouded in a subtle Golden flame. The Dou Qi of this pale golden light was extremely bright in the night. In such a light, the three earth dragon had their heads severed and dismembered into six pieces!

That night, the three enjoyed an earth dragon barbecue.

After breaking apart the hard scales of the earth dragon, their meat was also tough and impossible to chew, but their guts were very tasty and delicious.

Hussein even stripped down the body scales of the three earth dragons and stored them into a heavy bag. Turning to Du-Wei as he spoke, "Take these things to make armor, they are very light in weight and is better than metal as a material. It should be very good."

The Knight even ripped out the tendons of three earth dragon. The tendons are extremely tough and elastic, by replacing Dadaneier's bow string with the tendon, it would be several times better than a bow with an iron string.

Dadaneier no longer held any hate towards Hussein. Although Hussein almost killed him, the Knight not only saved his life, but also got him a good bow. No matter how you look at it, he owed the knight.

Hussein still carried a cold look and didn't talk too much. When nothing is happening, he would cross his arms and closed his eyes to meditate.

Dadaneier was embarrassed and didn't have the nerve to talk with Hussein. But Du-Wei didn't care because he was full of questions and only the knight can give him the answers.

"Hey," Du-Wei went over to sit beside Hussein. "How's your wound? I still have a little bit of ice berry."

Hussain raised his head to look at Du-Wei. "Thanks, but no thanks. Eating too much of that stuff will get me addicted. Also, the last time I had the ice berries, I said something I shouldn't have. I can endure it now so I don't need these things."

Du-Wei smiled as he whispered, "I noticed your Dou Qi was a golden color. I heard that only the Saint Paladin's Dou Qi were golden color. You are the strongest knight in a century and the closest to being a Saint Paladin. Now looking at the color of your Dou Qi..... Could you now be a Saint Paladin?"

Hussein raised an eyebrow and with a faint smile, "Saint Paladin..... If I am already a Saint Paladin, then I wouldn't have so many injuries."

"You're not a Saint Paladin?" Du-Wei was surprised. Relying on one's own power, he killed two of his own peers that were also ninth level knights. On top of that, he also killed a presiding judgment lord of the temple, whom is also a top magician. Though Du-Wei didn't know what level the presiding judge was at, but thinking about, it has to be at least eighth level and higher. Lastly, there was also the eighth level holy knight and a bunch of intermediate knights....

Hussein has such terrifying strength, yet he still couldn't reach the level of a Saint Paladin?

“At this moment, I am still at the ninth level.” Hussein sighed, “I feel that I’m about to have a critical break through, but always a step short..... This step is clearly in front of me, but even I don’t know how to exceed this barrier. Maybe it will be today; maybe never in this lifetime, only god knows when.”

Du-Wei took a deep breath before speaking, “Then what is a Saint Paladin?”

“I don’t know.” Hussein shakes his head with confusion in his eyes. “But what I do know is that before reaching Saint Class, there is a great divide between the ordinary levels. Between ordinary knights of eighth and ninth level, even if the strength varies, it is possible to win against a higher level knight by challenging a ninth level knight with a few other eighth level knights. According to legend, once you get to the Saint Class level, even if you gather a lot of ninth level knights, the group would never be able to overcome the Saint Paladin. The difference is only one level, but this last level represents a divide so great that most are unable to cross!”

“.....” Du-Wei did not say what he was thinking.

“Sometimes, I feel I’m already very strong.” Hussein showed a wry smile, “When battling Lord Luke and the other holy knight leader, my strength was stronger than they were but I can only handle their joint attacks before reaching my limit. If I was a Saint Paladin....” Hussein shakes his head before closing his mouth.

Seeing Hussein didn’t want to continue the conversation. Du-Wei can only sigh and shake his head before going over to help tend the fire with Dadaneier.

The next afternoon, they finally closed in on to the last marked location on the map, “Canyon”.

In fact, the topography of the place is very simple. Crossing in front is two slopes; the top revealed a yellowish granite rock covered with ice and snow. Between the two slopes is a fracture indicating to what the map called the “Canyon”.

The three men went to the entrance of the Canyon, but kept their silence because on both sides, as if deliberately left there, stood two stone sculptures!

On the left is a human Knight, approximately the size of an ordinary person.

This stone sculpture was finely carved at the grand master level of engraving! The Knight's sword was still waving with an angry facial expression, almost lifelike! The body armor looked somewhat broken, but even the broken gaps were carved with a high degree of detail.

Gently wiping away a layer of snow, exposed the Knight's armor. Even the patterns are exquisite and clear!!

Du-Wei's face suddenly changed as he observed the overly life like statue.

"These..... stone statues are not carved! They are real people, only petrified!"

Very quickly, Du-Wei and Dadaneier looked at each other before uttering a word at the same time!

"Golden eye Python!"

Hussein masked a somber face, then suddenly pulled out a sword. Frowning, he whispered. "Hey! I feel that hateful feeling again! There is something secretly peeking at us! Like..... Right here!"

## Chapter 74

Once Hussein finished speaking, he lightly waved his sword through the air in self defense. While in the knight's hand, a muffled ringing sound could be heard even though the sword was broken. The sound carried a murderous chilling atmosphere and while standing next to Hussein, Du Wei can clearly feel a hair raising chill through his side.

Dadaneier was also nervously looking around. "What did you find? Could it be the golden eye Python?"

"No," Hussein spoke coldly. "Golden eye Pythons are solitary magical beasts, while there are a lot of these things around."

In the air, there was a faint voice like that of rustling leaves and branches. Then from a distance, a buckling sound was oscillating around the area, causing the snow on top of the trees and rocks to flutter down to the ground.

In addition, Du Wei also heard a strange voice like that of a conversation. The buzzes were not like that of a human's voice, nor a howl like that of magical beast. Among the shaking sounds of rustling leaves, the sounds of swarming bees could be heard....

Then all of a sudden, snapping sounds could be heard from numerous places, like those of wood breaking.

What happened after was a real eye opener for Du Wei.

About 20 paces from them, a cedar tree suddenly shook as it pulled its roots out from the snow! Shaking a few times to remove the soil and ice clinging to it, the huge roots split into two sections like a person's leg. Then in a clumsy way, it took two steps forward!



Du Wei suddenly breaks out of his shock!

That buzzing rustling sound was like some sort of wakeup signal. Soon, in the surrounding forest, countless number of trees started to shake as if awaking from slumber! Pulling out their roots from the snow, the trees started to walk awkwardly towards them.

Du Wei and Dadaneier were already frozen in place as they watched. As for Hussein, his face had a thoughtful look as he peered at the living trees.

The “Treants” increased in numbers as they gathered. With more than 10 to a couple of dozen of these huge bulking bodies packed towards them from the Canyon entrance, all the while keeping a certain distance from them. These trees didn’t have eyes or mouths, but they did have a lot of arms! Curling their branches up, many of these “Treants” picked up something to be used as “weapons”.

In the mix, there were huge stones, while some were frosted soil from the ground, and some simply grabbed chunks of ice with their vines.

“They are..... Ready to attack us?!” Du Wei shouted, “We need to move back! Head into the Canyon!”

“Wait a minute, just wait a while!” Hussein spoke in a steady voice, “These are Treants, I know they are creatures..... However, Treants are docile magical creatures. They never take the initiative to attack something, so don’t move! If they are provoked, they can wake up more trees! Don’t forget, we are in the frozen forest, there are trees everywhere!

Suddenly, several Treants standing in the front row let out a strange ROAR as if stirred by the dialogue between the two. (Du Wei could not understand how these things without a mouth, could let out a roaring sound). While roaring, a few Treants used their “hands” to roll up rocks and ice to throw towards the three men!

With a cry, Du Wei quickly chanted a spell and shot forth two wind blades at the huge mass of ice in the air, shattering it.

Facing a dense barrage of rocks falling down upon them, Saddam Hussein suddenly grabbed Du Wei’s collar with one hand, then with his other hand

holding a sword handle, he shoved it against Dadaneier's chest to push him out of the way. Afterwards, Hussein also jumped away with Du Wei in tow.

The collision of dense raining rocks echoed in the Canyon. The large open area where the three men stood before have been cratered with countless large holes. Gripped with horror from the scene, Du Wei stared at Hussein as he spoke. "Dude, what did you just say? Mild temper? Never take the initiative to attack? They clearly wanted and almost mashed us into mud!"

From a distance, a Treant came towards them in big strides and crushed one of the stone statues, then uttered a roar.

Behind it, hundreds of large Treants have subsequently issued a flurry of tsunami-like cries.

"Hey! They are not very friendly! It's like they are about to strike at us! Are we going to stand here?" Du Wei wore a bitter and wry smile.

"Your words are nonsense! There are trees everywhere in this place, unless you can immediately run out of the frozen forest! Otherwise, all the trees throughout the forest can be awakened to be their allies! So don't provoke them!"

"Damn it, I didn't provoke them." Du Wei scolded with a smile.

One Treant suddenly bent down and swept at the three men with its huge branches. Also somewhat annoyed, a pale golden light flashed across Hussein's body. With one swing of his broken sword, a golden light flashed across the tree's "hand" and sliced it apart.

Once the Knight made his move, he didn't hold back and went all the way! After setting Du Wei down, the knight leaped towards the front of the enemy. In one move, he bypassed a Treant's large awl like feet, then with his backhand, he cut the leg in a cross motion. In a snap, the leg of the treant was severed, causing the unstable tree to fall down immediately.

The weakness of this huge creature is its slow movement. When a tree falls, it would definitely crush three to four companions with it. Like that of a domino, when one falls, the rest goes with it.

The Knight simply rushed into the crowd of trees. Physically small, he kept jumping and running to and fro between the trees. While the treants simply

couldn't hit him, his sword has already cut down seven or eight trees. And many of the counter attacks by the Treants ended up hitting their mate's body, causing a rolling queue.... (Note I didn't really understand this meaning in Chinese, so I had no choice but to leave it be from the translator -一時間樹人的隊列里人仰馬翻.....)

Just when Du Wei felt reassured, he could hear a distant whirring and buzzing sound picking up pace. It was as if the Treants were being commanded, suddenly, all the Treants sent out a roar. No longer acting clumsily as they try to land a hit on Hussein, instead, the Treants shed off their leaves and swept towards Hussein in a razor sharp sound!

This attack was much more horrifying than the previous, even comparable to countless magicians simultaneously shooting forth numerous wind blades! No matter how fast the knight is capable of, he is not immune to the attacks from all directions. After rolling around the ground to dodge, his Dou Qi dispersed and spread around his body. The entirety of the knight and the air around him became like that of a golden ball, blocking off the attacking leaves..... In mere moments, the masses of leaves bouncing off the light have piled up like a haystack and almost covered the knight's body.

It's not that Du Wei didn't want to help the knight, in fact, he wanted to help. But just when he peeked his head out from behind a the rock he was hiding behind, two leaves flew and nailed into the rock in front of them. The soft leaves were able to penetrate deeply into the rocks so they had no choice but be honest to themselves and hide.

At this point, the leaves have already covered Hussein entirely, even so, the Knight didn't give up. Spreading out his arms, the knight took in a deep breath. Suddenly, a vindictive surge of energy erupts from his body and blew the leaves away. Despite being protected by his Dou Qi, he did receive a barrage of attacks over a long period of time, so his body would still be strained. In appearance, Hussein's eyes now carried a golden glow and the sword he was carrying was shining with a golden light.

Hiding behind the rocks, Du Wei could only hear the sound of a loud explosion...

Boom!!

In one swing, the golden sword instantly cuts down a group of Treants in one area. Even the nearby Treants cracked and broke apart from the impact shock wave of the invincible golden sword Dou Qi (aura). The results were piles of crumbing woods littering the ground.

This one skill of Hussein's was alarmingly dangerous. After the golden light dims and dispersed, the surrounding 20 meters of land surrounding him was littered with broken pieces of wood. The Treants lucky enough to be further away still ended up lying on the ground. In one sword strike, half of the hundreds of Treants were killed by him!

But this one sword strike obviously consumed a lot of energy from the knight. He was already injured to begin with so his strength was far from recovered. After the use of this skill, his breathing became uneven and a whistling sound could be heard from his mouth. No longer able to withstand the strain on his body any longer, sweat could be seen on his forehead as he held his sword tip facing the ground.

Du Wei and Dadaneier gave each other one look before jumping out from behind the rocks, then quickly ran to Hussein's side. Immediately, Dadaneier quickly dragged Hussein with him as he ran back towards the rock they were hiding behind. As for Du Wei, ignoring the consumption of magical energy within himself, he shot forth as many fireballs as he could within one breath and lit the heaps of woods on fire. Turning around as fast as he could, Du Wei followed closely behind the other two.

"Run into the Canyon!" Du Wei cried.

"How are we supposed to run?! The entrance leading into the Canyon was blocked!" Dadaneier exclaimed.

The stone throw from the first attack earlier had already blocked off the narrow entrance in the Canyon.

"Then let's first hide behind the rocks!" Du Wei cried.

The group retreated back to where the two men hid themselves earlier. But behind them, the vibrating rustling and buzzing sound could be heard again from

the forest. This time, the sound was traveling even further than before.

“They are summoning more companions.” Hussain sighed, “Let me go, I merely over exhausted myself a bit from that one sword strike.... If it was the normal me, I would take them all down in one strike.

“If it was the normal you, still a Holy Knight, then you wouldn’t have even been chased to this place.” Du Wei showed a wry smile, “You are injured and your strength is only at thirty to forty percent, you can’t cope with the endless amount of monsters. Maybe you can call the old fool out? I think against these things, physical force will be useless against them and the best solution is to use large scale proximity magic.”

“Wait a moment, something seems wrong.....” Dadaneier peaks his eyes out on top of the rock to see, then suddenly looked down, “They are not attacking, instead, they are retreating to the back as if waiting for something!”

“What?” Du Wei also sticks his head out.

# Chapter 75

Sure enough, the Treants did not attack. Instead, they slowly retreated backwards by taking heavy individual steps. Instead of relief, something much more terrifying was happening further behind them. The oscillating sound in the air was awakening even more trees, turning the gigantic bodies into living creatures....

Du-Wei could only shivers from looking at the large tracts of forest in front of him. Within his eyes could see, all the trees are pulling out their roots from the ground and shaking off any clinging snow and ice on them. Like puppets, the dull looking Treants were coming over to surround them.....

“My God..... How many do they have?” Dadaneier sighed.

“God knows..... This is a forest, how big is the frozen forest? How many trees are there? 100,000 trees? 200,000? Hell.....” Du-Wei cursed, “But why didn’t they attack instead of standing there? What are they waiting for.....”

Indeed, these Treants are waiting for something.

Soon, a heavy tremor like foot step sound was coming closer from further away. Du-Wei could even feel a heavy oscillation on the ground. Suddenly, the large group of Treants separated apart and formed an opening like a road. A gigantic being was walking in a low speed towards them within the crowd of trees.

Du-Wei’s first impression was “This thing is so fucking BIG!”

If the other Treants were considered giants..... Then this guy is a giant among giants.

From Du-Wei’s visual assessment, this thing is at least seven to eight-stories-high. The whole body torso was dark and hard, covered in dry and old bark, it was like rusty metal. As it walked, the branches produced a rustling sound due to the lush foliage on its body.

Du-Wei noticed, this biggest tree in appearance was very close to a “human”

because its roots has been clearly divided into two branch forks like that of a person's leg. As for its body's trunk, it was clearly like that of the English letter "Y" shape and the side branches were forked out like a human's finger.

Du-Wei saw the Treants "hand", on the finger hung a large round vine shape thing..... As if it was a horn?

The most surprising thing was actually on the trunk of the tree; there is a "face"!

There's a sharp bump like that of a nose, below it was an opening curving sideways. The bark around that area was very thick, like that of a lip....

All other Treants acted as if they are afraid of this big guy, putting themselves up behind it. "Seems like this guy is the leader of the Treants." Du-Wei thought.

"Y-o-u...." This chief of the Treants sent out a rich and deep voice, although very jerky, Du-Wei still managed to make out the words of the human language.....

Heck, it could actually speak the common language of the Roland continent?

"What... Is... Your... Reason... To... Kill... My... Companions..." The sound of each word echoed in the forest while the deep and rich voice still carried the taste of anger.

Du-Wei steeled his nerve and ventured out of the rock cover. Watching the big guy, he shouted. "It was you who attacked us first!"

"You ... .. Did ... .. Not... .. Follow ... .. The ... .. Agreement!" The Treant leader was very angry, even the tree Crown was shaking. Evil ... .. Eye ... .. Tyrant ... .. Promised ... .. Each ... .. Ten years ... .. Will ... .. Allow ... .. Us ... .. To ... .. Enter ... .. The ... .. Valley ... .. One time ... .. !"

It sounds as if they are interrogating him. "Today is ... The ... Ten years ... .. Agreement date, why ... Do ... You want to ... .. Massacre ... .. My ... .. Tribal men ... .. At ... The Canyon ... .. Entrance? Can it be ... .. Evil Eye Tyrant ... .. Again ... Want... To ... Stir up ... .. War ... .. With ... .. The ... .. Treants!"

Ten years? Agreement date? Evil Eye Tyrant? War?

Du-Wei immediately understood... .. This is probably a misunderstanding.

Seeing the leader of the Treants about to start raging, Du-Wei immediately stood up straight and shouted. “Wait, can I ask a question?”

The Treant Leader looked at Du-Wei.

Du-Wei took a deep breath and then laughed in the mildest tone. “Excuse me, you said the Evil Eye Tyrant, what is it? I’m not familiar with such a thing.”

Once said, the Treants and the three men were silent. Luckily the Treants had no eyes, or else it would have been a wonderful “wide eyes staring scene.

“You ... Are ... Not ... Men’s ... Of ... The ... Evil Eye Tyrant?”

“No, I’ve never heard of this name.” Du-Wei replied.

“That ... .. You ... .. Is ... .. I’m sorry?”

Du-Wei jumped out from behind the rock with open arms. Then, with a smile, he tidied his body before speaking. “You have to ask? We’re humans; you’ve never seen a human?”

The Treant leader was silent for a while before taking a few steps forward with its sturdy and thick legs, then bending its body slightly down to carefully inspect Du-Wei. After a moment, the Treant leader once again stood up straight and spoke with a hint of joy in its voice. “Oh, you ... .. Are ... .. Human! I ... .. Remember ... .. Humans ... .. From a long time ... .. Ago ... .. A ... .. Human ... .. Friend ... .. Taught ... .. Me ... .. Speech.....”

The Treant leader may be slow, but from the tone of its voice, Du-Wei could tell it was not stupid. In a quick turnaround, the Treant leader’s voice changed from joy, back to anger as it spoke. “But ... .. You ... .. Hurt ... .. My ... .. Companion!”

“It was your companions who attacked us first.” Du-Wei seemed to believe the Treants could be easily bullied, “We were just standing here. Then your allies appeared and started throwing stones at us.”

“Hmmm ... ..” The Treant leader muttered some low sounding words, seemingly in thought. Afterwards, it cried out in a loud voice, “Very well ... .. It ... .. was ... My ... Companions ... .. First ... ..”

His slow speaking style caused Du-Wei to feel impatient and annoyed. “In that



case, can we go now?”

“No ... ..” The Treant leader was inadequate in his word, but soon found the most suitable words to express his meaning. “Compensation!!”

Compensation? Du-Wei thought and thought... .. Compensation for the seventy to eighty Treants that were blown into pieces by Hussein? How or what can he compensate with? With gold coins? But what would a Treant need gold for?

Do we have to pay life with life? Chop down a few trees and we get sentenced to death? Where in the world is there such logic?

Anyways, no matter how Du-Wei thought about it, he felt his side was in the right. After all, their group was just standing here before the Treants appeared. Without provocation, the Treants first started throwing huge stones capable of mashing a person to death. They only retaliated in self-defense..... How can they just stand here and let the group of Treants kill them?

However, it is clear, the slow and stubborn Treant leader was not speaking logical and fair. Du-Wei spent a moment in thought and recalled the topic from before. Immediately, Du-Wei had an idea. “Dear Treant Sir. Excuse me, did you say Evil Eye Tyrant, could you explain what is going on? I heard you mention war?”

.....

The Treant is not an eligible and qualified speaker. Its slow and deep voice was like the old fashioned folks from Du-Wei’s past life. These kinds of folks could cause a simple and short subject to take so long that the sun would go down before making things clear.

Du-Wei speculated.

From the Treant leader’s word, this land and the whole frozen forest territory belonged to the Treant tribe. This knowledge made him think the Treant leader was only bragging because they have already been in the forest for a few days and he has never seen a tree able to survive in this place.

Oh, by the way, the heavy guy introduced himself and it had a name that is commensurate with its status, “Greenwood.”

In Greenwood's words, it was born in this land, living in this land; it is a standard and pure Treant.

Du-Wei did not care whether there is any so-called "pedigree" in the Treants lineage, but what Greenwood (Treant Leader) said did intrigue him.

First of all, the large groups of Treants standing in front of them are not real Treants. The only real Treant is Greenwood and he claimed the only real Treant left on this land was him. As for the companions around him, they were all awakened by the horn wrapped around his tree vine hand.

Du-Wei speculated that the so-called companions actually mean subordinates.

The horn's name "natural horn", gave Du-Wei a magical sense of feeling. The heirloom of the Treants, passed on from generation to generation. Once blown, the horns sound will awaken all the surrounding trees and make them into "Companions" that will wait for commands.

And the Treants tribal heritage surprised Du-Wei. They had no gender distinctions, and their heritage was through the "natural horn."

The probable case is using the "natural Horn" to awaken the "Companions" at the beginning with no intelligence or self-awareness. At this stage, they would only act by the orders of the real Treant and perform only simple actions.

"But why did they attack us?" Du-Wei questioned.

Old Greenwood's answer to Du-Wei's question made him regret asking. The Evil Eye Tyrant has been destroying the forest, so the trees all hated this guy, and they all thought the three of you stationed at the valley entrance were subordinates of the Evil Eye Tyrant. They are not able to distinguish what is a human..... So forgive these non-consciousness Treants?

When first awakened, a Treant wouldn't have any self-consciousness. In a small chance, with years of growth, they will slowly develop self-consciousness. Such occurrences are very rare and only a small number of "Companions" would truly become a real "Treant".

According to what he said, there was originally a few real Treant in this forest. The numbers of this tribal race wasn't much, only around 3 to 5. The saying that Treants are a sparsely populated race, made Du-Wei feel helpless and annoyed.

There are clearly trees everywhere, but the numbers that could truly become real Treants are simply too little. Most of these will forever remain in the stage of lacking self-awareness.

Originally out of the 3 to 5 Treants, Greenwood was the oldest. According to his words, they have been happily living in this forest because they had no natural enemies. Whether it was magical beasts, or simply something else entirely, they were no threat to them.

Until one day.....

A power and evil existence came to this “beautiful, harmonious” place. (Old Greenwood’s words) That guy is called “evil eye tyrant”, he robbed the most valuable asset belonging to the Treants and that is this Canyon!

Although this forest has an infinite expanse of land, this small Canyon is indispensable to the Treant race!

Because... .. In this Canyon, there is an heirloom treasure related to the Treant family, passed on from one generation to the next. It is a pity that this treasure has been confiscated by the Evil Eye Tyrant.

What’s more maddening is that when the angry Treants came with their “Companions” to find the evil guy and argue with him, the Evil Eye Tyrant used his strong magical powers to kill Old Greenwood’s peers. Out of the original 3 to 5 real Treants, only one was left and the rest was killed by the Evil Eye tyrant. What’s even worse was that this guy used the body remains to erect his own palace inside this very Canyon.

Angry Old Greenwood blew the “natural Horn” and gathered a large number of his “Companions” together in an attack on the Canyon, but the Treants weren’t able to win against the powerful Evil Eye Tyrant. The strong presence of this evil used his magic to drive around the magical beasts in the Canyon! Even undead ghouls and spirits would crawl out from the ground! Faced with such monsters, Old Greenwood lost many of his “Companions”.

Fortunately, this is the forest, and Old Greenwood can call forth an endless number of “Companions”. No matter what, the Evil Eye Tyrant still had a doubt of hesitation. Finally, under a stalemate, the two sides managed to reach a truce agreement.

Old Greenwood requested the return of the Canyon, but the Evil Eye Tyrant refused. Finally, under the agreement by both sides, the Treants will be allowed to enter the Canyon once each ten years.

“What is there at the end of the Canyon?” Du-Wei was even more interested in this after listening to the story.

“The Fountain of.... Life” Old Greenwood replied, “Source..... of the Treant race’s continuation!”

## Chapter 76 - Him!

To the Treant tribe, “the fountain of life” also has another ancient name, “the fountain of youth”.

This spring is said to be the Treants everlasting foundation. From a long time ago, ancient legends of the Treants told a tale of when there were still no Treants in this world. Beside this spring, a gigantic tree grew next to it, over time, its roots absorbed the magical waters and came alive. This being became the first ever Treant and the ancestor of every living Treant in this world.

Later on, the only ancestor of the Treants felt very lonely in this world without any peers. With heaven’s mercy, they gave the ancestor the “natural trumpet” as a solution. With the sound of the horn, the ancestor was able to awaken other trees.

From then on, the Treant specie came into the world.

As for the Fountain of youth, the biggest use of it is to extend the life span of the Treant race. You need to understand, the process of awakening a tree into a Treant is a very long time. From the initial awakening call from the horn, each “Companion” still had no sense of self awareness. At this point, they are no different then a bunch of walking and moving woods without a will. In order to form self awareness, a long time is required..... Not just years or decades, but hundreds of years or even more.

The problem is that most life span of trees generally only lasts a century or so, from a small seedling, growing into a tree, takes a few decades, what’s left of its life span after being awakened into a “Companion” is only a few decades.

From “Companion” classes, to becoming a real “Treant”, would at a minimum

require at least hundreds of years. Most trees would never have this kind of long lifespan. Wouldn't they be dead from age before forming self consciousness?

Therefore, the fountain of youth, is especially important to the Treants. All the Treants tribesman would only need to use their roots to absorb a little bit of the spring water, then they can live forever. Living a life span of 2000 afterwards would not be a problem.

Hearing this, Du-Wei can't help but once again raise some questions. "If you only need to absorb a little bit of the spring's water in order to live a very long time..... Then why did the Treants only have 3 to 5 members left before the Evil Eye Tyrant appeared? In theory, all the "Companion" class Treants could have a long life span by absorbing the spring water, then they just need to await the slow formation of its self awareness.

The last Treant in this world "Greenwood" let out a long sigh as he spoke in a low and helpless tone. "Because..... Spring... Water... Very..... Scarce....."

After some explanation, Du-Wei finally got it.

This fountain is just very small when compared to the large body of the Treants. Such a spring is simply not enough water for the Treants to enjoy.

According Greenwood's words, this spring is only as big as a tree branch. No one knows where the spring water flows from and during the spring season, it would sometimes dry up. Once dried, it would be a few years before it started flowing again.

Sometimes full, sometimes dry, such an unstable state..... And adding on to that, a single drink for a Treant requires a large amount water. Such a state has effected the Treant species' ability to produce the next generation and kept the population of this race really low.

According to Greenwood's depiction, Du-Wei stumbled a little on one point..... Maybe they are simply too kind hearted, or too simple mind. Before the Evil Eye Tyrant appeared, the Canyon was completely under the control of the Treants, but they never once thought of hogging the fountain all to themselves.

They naively thought it was the gift of the Gods, so they happily shared the already scarce spring water with the magical beasts of the forest, making the

scarce spring water to become even scarcer!

But it is a pity, the longevity granted by this fountain of youth seems to only effect the Treants. As for the magical beasts that drank the spring water, there doesn't seem to be any significant effects on its life..... Yet, there is another miraculous effect.

First of all, no matter how many injuries, even if it is in the dying state, as long as it is able to drink the spring water, then they would immediately be revived! This fact was enough to cause Du-Wei's eye to sparkle with delight!

Secondly, this spring water seemed to be able to increase the magical level in the magical beasts. Once a magical beast takes even a sip, it would go through some sort of change. Simply put, it will go through "advancement". This concept was somewhat vague so Du-Wei pressed on with his inquiries. Unfortunately, Old Greenwood's words were not clear, but he did refer to an example that raised Du-Wei's interest.

When Old Greenwood was younger (God knows how old he was when referring to the word "young"), the kind and gentle Treants had no problems with the surrounding magical beasts at all. It used to have a friend that was a fully grown adult magical ice wolf. After drinking the spring water, this demon wolf immediately went through a advancement event. From a lower middle class demon wolf, the creature incredibly advanced into a higher "Storm King of wolves".

According to the current knowledge of the magician's trade union and their rough grading of magical beasts, the "Storm King of wolves" is one of the ultimate advanced state of the ice demon wolf. This creature is a truly high class magical creature, not only does it have all the powers of the ordinary ice demon wolf, it is stronger, more intellectual, and its wisdom is even higher..... At the same time, it also has another ability called "Summoning".

A summoning call from the Storm King wolf can be strong or weak based according to the amount of magic it used and the geographical area covered. From that, it could call forth all the creatures within this area..... Noting "everything within it", without any distinction of its kind or race. As long as the creature is of lower rank than the Storm King wolf, the creature would become

its subordinate and obey any commands given! In other words, this is an “ultimate summon spell”. In the case of an adult Storm King Wolf using the summoning spell, all lower ranked creatures within the scope of its influence would become its subordinate.

“This is practically an army regiment of magical beasts.....” Du-Wei sighed.

However, this example did show the miraculous effect of the fountain of youth. Du-Wei’s eye was sparkling even brighter than before!

What’s even more surprising to Du-Wei, there is also a case that the spring has a miraculous effect on humans. In his explanation of why he was able to speak the human language of the Roland empire, Old Greenwood said something very shocking.

When Old Greenwood was born, he was not naturally capable of speaking the human language. Du-Wei did not ask whether the Treants have their own language, but at least a one thing is clear, a new born tree is not capable of speech at birth. Even humans need to start from an infant age when learning a language.

It was a human that taught Old Greenwood the human language.

A Long time ago..... Du-Wei is completely perplexed at Old Greenwood’s age, but anyways, what it said of being a long time ago should be at least a few hundred years ago. At that time, a strong and powerful human must have stayed in the forest for a long period of time and made the gentle and kind Treants into his friends. Old Greenwood’s ability to speak the human language should have been from this human. As a token of their friendship, Old Greenwood must have taken this person to the fountain of youth and let him have a taste of the springs magic.

Du-Wei believed that a human capable of coming this deep into the frozen forest has to be an expert found only one in a million. Without sufficient strength, one will definitely not be able to get here. “Then what?” Du-Wei’s heart was moving, “This human, is a friend of yours? Who is he and do you know his name?”

“..... Let me..... Think.....” Old Greenwood thought about it for a long time, and then answered with a sense regret in his reply, “Time... Is... Too long..... I.....



Already..... Forgot..... His..... Name..... But..... I..... Know..... He..... Is..... A..... Emperor of mankind, Hmmm..... That's right... He... Is..... 'The Emperor', this..... Word..... I..... Remember.....”

Don't even bother mentioning the joy that Old Greenwood felt for not forgetting the term because words cannot be used to describe the inner shock Du-Wei felt at this moment.

Once upon a time, an Emperor of mankind with the ability to go this deep into the frozen forests.

During the thousand years of history of the Roland continent, the only one that can be considered extremely powerful, and has the identity of the Emperor, thinking it over and over..... The only person that comes up was Aragon Roland!

Du-Wei couldn't help but sigh. Why..... It seems whatever quirky or legendary event that he encountered has a relationship with this expert of his generation? Deliberating for a second, whatever news that he could get is already out..... At this thought, Du-Wei's heart felt guilty.

The Treant tribe was truly gentle and kind. Old Greenwood was simple-minded and his temperament was also docile. Du-Wei didn't even need to lead him on much and the Treant already spilled out everything he wanted to know. A part of Du-Wei wanted to sigh at the extremely simple minded nature of the Treants. The existence of the fountain of youth will definitely cause anyone that knows of such a thing to get involved, but at the same time, Du-Wei couldn't help but have a peculiar and pure emotion towards Old Greenwood.

“Dear Greenwood..... Treant friend,” Du-Wei bowed his body slightly, then smiled.” I'm sorry for hurting your “Companions”, of course, we are also willing to make compensation. Well then, me and my partners also have some nice skills and abilities. I'm sympathetic towards the Treants misfortune, I'd like to help you fight against the Evil Eye Tyrant inside the Canyon. In such a way, we can make amends for the conflict from earlier, how do you like my proposal?”

Now it was Old Greenwood that was not assured and the thing that he said afterwards made Du-Wei feel worried....

## Chapter 77 - Evil Eye Tyrant

“You are not the first human beings to come here!”

Just more than 20 years ago, there was a group of humans that came to this place and didn't have any conflicts with the Treant tribe. Just like now, they met Old Greenwood and decided to enter the Canyon in order to kill the Evil Eye Tyrant. The results.....

Old Greenwood very kindly pointed towards the stone sculpture located at the Canyon entrance..... Unfortunately, a Treant “Companion has already stepped on it earlier and caused it to shatter into pieces.

Du-Wei immediately recalled what Bienlich (the head of the snow wolf mercenary) said to him. According to records, the deepest place in the frozen forest that humanity has reached is this Canyon. About 20 years ago, a Grand Magician accompanied by a group of advanced level knights came to this place and was completely wiped out except the Grand Magician that escaped alone.

Du-Wei even suspected the gift given to him by Bienlich was in fact a map left behind by this wizard.

The way the Treants expressed themselves was awkward, but their meaning was very obvious. I have seen how powerful the humans that came to this place before, but they were all defeated by the Evil Eye Tyrant. So we don't believe you could defeat the Evil Eye Tyrant.....

“Thank you for this reminder, but the Treants have nothing to lose in this, right?” Du-Wei smiled, “We will go and kill the evil being. If we lose this battle, it has nothing to do with the Treants, and if we succeed, then we can think of it as compensation for earlier.”

Du-Wei's remark gave no room for Old Greenwood to critique, but the Treant once again demonstrated its incredibly naïve and gentle nature. Old Greenwood slowly bent down its body, then plucked off a leaf after searching through its branches..... Du-Wei noticed, the leaf was golden colored.

"If..... You are in danger..... Put it..... In the..... Ground, then maybe..... It will protect....You for a little while."

Du-Wei was shocked, you need to understand, they are currently still at odds against the Treants. Du-Wei could only sigh at the kindness and innocent nature of the Treants, as well as the speed they forget their hatred..... Even if they manage to increase the population of their race, the likelihood of them surviving is difficult.

With a sigh, Du-Wei returned to the back of the rock and looked at his two companions. "Hey, you clearly heard right? I think we have something to do..... Who knows what kind of freak this Evil Eye Tyrant is."

Hussein spoke in a light tone. "Whatever it is, I don't believe this place has anything that could be of an opponent for me. I'm only interested in the spring."

"Oh, Yes." Du-Wei spoke with a smile, "The spring water should be able to cure you of your wounds."

"No!" Hussein sneered, "I don't care about my injury..... But I must go and see this place that Aragon went before!"

"What about you?" Du-Wei gave Dadaneier a look, "What do you have in mind, my friend?"

With a straight face, he pulled his bow string a little to make a point, then sternly spoke. "Maybe the Canyon has the golden eye Python. Apparently that stone statue was caused by petrification magic, chances are the golden eye Python is in there."

"Well then," Du-Wei spoke these words to himself then laughed. "Then let us go in and have a look!"

Old Greenwood directed his "Companions" to move the stones blocking the entrance mouth into the Canyon. These mighty Treant "Companions" were able to easily remove the stones, revealing the entrance space. Afterwards, Du-Wei

and his companions waved goodbye to Old Greenwood and headed off into the Canyon.

.....

Du-Wei and his companions did not know how big this Canyon was. Although from the introduction of Old Greenwood, the Canyon was supposed to be “not much in size”. But when measured against the height and volume of a Treant, Du-Wei felt this place was not small at all.

From entering the entrance to the Canyon, there was a turn about ten meters away that was covered in a thick fog, causing the three men to frown.

This is a real “thick” fog, Du-Wei can clearly feel the moisture in the air. Even by just freely walking through the fog, the water moisture would cling to the body.

Du-Wei has never seen such a thick fog. The visibility was pretty bad and the range is only about five-steps away.

This Canyon was inhabited by a powerful evil being and coupled with bad visibility in this area, there is no doubt this place was very dangerous, so Du-Wei tried a number of different approaches. At first, he tried to magically attract a small gust of wind to blow away the fog, but after the wind passed, the expanse of land was still foggy and white. Du-Wei was able to confirm one thing and it was that this fog was created by magic.....

Barely lighting up a torch, (This branch was torn off from a Treant by Du-Wei before they went into the Canyon) Hussein, the most powerful of the group led the way in the front. As for Dadaneier, he was in the back and Du-Wei was kept in the middle due to having the worst melee capabilities.

Walking for a while in this thick fog, Du-Wei always maintained a high level of alert as he carefully sensed the surrounding movements. But whether it was Du-Wei, or the quick to react Hussein, they were not able to sense any suspicious movements or things around.

Rather, it was the experienced adventurer Dadaneier, that raised a question. “Did you notice the ground here has less and less snow as we continue walking?”

Once said, it reminded both Du-Wei and Hussein of this fact. The two men

suddenly noticed there was less snow on their feet. Sniffing the air, Du-Wei frowned as he spoke. "It's not just the snow getting less, but rather, the Canyon seemed to be warmer than the outside." Du-Wei pointed to the ground and slowed squatted down to dig his hand into the soft and wet earth. "If it was in the frozen forest, even a knife would have a difficult time cutting into the frozen earth."

Continuing to walk for a while, almost all of the snow on the ground disappeared. Once the snow on the ground melted away, the soil became very muddy and cause the three men to feel very uncomfortable from the slippery mud. Fortunately, further in they went, the terrain becomes higher and drier.

In a quick flash of his eyes, Du-Wei once again stopped. "You guys noticed?"

Hussein and Dadaneier also stopped and nodded.

Du-Wei touched the ground with his hand, then smiled. "The ground is hot, damn, could this Canyon be a giant geothermal area?"

Dadaneier laughed, "So this is why the snow melted."

Du-Wei thought for a moment, then suddenly figured out one thing about the thick fog!

This fog is due to the cold air outside and the warm air in the Canyon colliding together, then amassing in the Canyon's mouth. As the snow melts, the water vaporizes into the air and forms the fog.... It also seems to be that the other party is determined to use magic to solidify the mist, creating a special zone that doesn't allow the wind to evaporate the fog.

Walking into the Canyon, the ground becomes even drier and the temperature in the air also rises.

From the beginning till now, since coming into the Canyon, Du-Wei has been feeling helpless. The group of three has been traveling on a small pathway filled with different turns and curves, similar to that of a maze. This situation continued until the fog started to gradually clear up. Now they could feel the ground below their feet was dry and from observation, they could see some weeds and green mosses on both sides of the mountain rocks!

Compared to the outside filled with ice, snow and cold wind, the temperature

in the Canyon was much more comfortable.

“It seems that the Evil Eye Tyrant robbed a good place.” Dadaneier couldn’t help but laughed, “For there to be such a place in this hellish forest, I would definitely be reluctant to return this place to others. It is freezing out there!”

Sensing the warmth in this area, Du-Wei already unbuttoned the upper area of his fur coat so that he could stick his neck out for some air. Despite his effort, Du-Wei could feel sweat forming on his body. In the end, he even took off his fur hat and held it in his arms while he carefully surveyed the area.

Feeling somewhat better now, Du-Wei could almost ignore the fog entirely because of how thin it was now compared to before. Earlier, the fog not only affected the eyes visibility, it was also thick with humidity, causing Du-Wei to have coughing fit. There was no doubt in his mind that many terrible moistures were forcibly contained in the misty fog for a long period of time. If a person were to breath this into their very lungs, they would receive pulmonary edema. (Excess water accumulates in the lungs).

At this moment, there was no fog to hinder their sight, thus allowing the three men to have a good look at this place.

From observation, the road leading into the deeper part of the Canyon was gradually getting wider and the mountain on the side was still exposing a rocky surface. Occasionally on the blueish and grayish rock crevices, there would sometimes be clusters of unknown little plants. At the same time, Du-Wei could also see on both sides of the Canyon valley, there were countless numbers of rotting woods and the ones with corrupted roots, Du-Wei could not guess how many years it has been since they were like that.

“Hey look, there is something interesting.” Hussein, the person in the lead suddenly uttered a strange cry after he spoke.

Du-Wei and Dadaneier at once ran up to him and saw Hussein standing beside a “stone tablet”.

Calling it a “stone tablet” was somewhat pushing it. From its look, it was clearly a big rock by the roadside, only a part of it was cut off to show a neat section. On the surface was a few words carved into it and the text was clearly that of the Empire!

“Kingdom of the Evil Eyes notice: Please note that you have already set foot on the territory of the Kingdom of the Evil Eye. This piece of land is under the rule of the great king of the Kingdom of the Evil Eye. According to the decree promulgated by the great evil eye king himself, any organism, whether magical beast, human, Treant, or anything else, must dedicate and pay taxes to his majesty if they are passing or crossing the territory of the Kingdom. Every living creature in transit is to offer one of their eyes! This notice is the supreme law of the kingdom, if any outsider do not abide by this royal decree, they are to be killed on sight!”

## Chapter 78 - The Animal Kingdom?

Evil Eye kingdom....

EvilEyeKing?

Du-Wei had a wry smile as he spoke, "Could it be that this guy has already built a nation here and proclaimed himself king? A animal kingdom? Monster Kingdom?"

Seeing this notice piqued the curiosity Du-Wei had about this "Evil Eye Tyrant".

"Offer up an eye...." Hussein made a sneering sound, then suddenly took a step backwards. Before Du-Wei and Dadaneier could react, the knight has already cut down with his sword against the giant stone. As the stone split into two halves, a clicking sound could be heard just before the pieces fell down to the ground. Afterwards, there was a trace of golden light in Hussein's eye as he takes a step forward again. With his feet on the surface of the stone, Hussein easily crushed it into rubble. "I'd like to see this king."

At this time, the sound of a couple of crows singing could be heard. From afar, the group could see inside the Canyon was a withered tree and on top of the dead branches were a few crows. These crows kept cracking at at the trio and one of the crows could even speak the human tongue as it cried out. "Outside! Outsider!"

Once it finished talking, the crow flapped its wings and let out a cry of "go and inform". Like a signal, the other few crows flew into the air and headed into the Canyon valley.

Hussein coldly sneered before casually kicking a few rocks near its foot. Then two shoop shoop sounds could be heard as the stones shot down two crows



from afar. Suddenly, two sets of feathers could be seen from afar because the birds were pulverized from impact. Despite this, one crow was intentionally left alive to bring the news along.

“Oh, you should have put them all down.” Du-Wei sighed, “It’s not good to let the person get ready.”

“I deliberately left it.” After saying that, Hussein went ahead with big strides as he headed inside the Canyon.

Dadaneier pulled against Du-Wei a bit to get his attention, then with a normal face, he pulled out a small bag from his body. Once he finished removing the multiple layers of covering, many blackish items were revealed. “These items are what I personally carried with me to deal with the golden eye python. The most powerful characteristic of the python is its eyes and if you so much as glance at it, you will fall victim to its petrification magic. These several items were created by the Lister family only after spending a huge price and reading through many ancient books.

Du-Wei only gave the items a glimpse, yet he couldn’t help himself but say, “Sunglasses?”

“What?” Dadaneier asked instead.

“Oh, nothing.” Du-Wei shook his head at once. From appearance alone, the items that Dadaneier took out was similar to an item in Du-Wei’s past life known as “sunglasses”.

Every piece of the item was very small. The two slices of black crystal were polished till it was almost translucent and was fastened to a golden frame to secure it in place. Then on the sides were two leather holsters to keep it fastened to the ears.

“These black Crystals are very rare and only after putting in a lot of effort, were we able to buy them.” Dadaneier smiled, “Do not underestimate these things. Just these things alone cost us 80,000 gold pieces to purchase. We came into these woods with eight people and each person carried with them a piece. Now that I have eight of these in my possession to use among the three of us, it should be more than enough for each of us to wear a piece when dealing with the gold eye python. We won’t have to be afraid of the python and also I think

that person called the “Evil Eye Tyrant” has something strange going on with its eyes. Maybe these items will be useful when the times come.”

“Don’t thank me, I should be thanking you.” Dadaneier looked strange as he whispered, “I know it very well, with the power of my party alone, it wouldn’t have even been enough to protect ourselves. Without your help, it would have been virtually impossible to get here..... Regardless of what kind of people you are, I owe you guys a big favor.” “Thank you.” Du-Wei didn’t refuse and reached out to take a pair of “sunglasses” to wear.

Once these words “Regardless of what kind of people you are” is out, Du-Wei can’t help but feel somewhat embarrassed. He originally gave Dadaneier a false name, but later on with Hussein joining the team, he could no longer hide it because the knight knew his real identity. It was inevitable that Hussein would call out his real name, even if he doesn’t call out his name, the occasional shouting of “Boy of the Rowling House” is enough to reveal his true identity.

Even though Dadaneier also heard this, he didn’t say anything.

Today, his little facade was shattered like a glass window. Du-Wei can’t help but feel awkward from this situation. Dadaneier has always been very open and honest towards him, but he has been deceiving his fellow companion for so many days. (And during the first meeting with Hussein, Dadaneier tried to protect Du-Wei despite knowing defeat was inevitable) Du-Wei really cherished this relationship.

With a look of shame, Du-Wei whispered, “OK, Dadaneier... I’m not intentionally trying to fool you..... Well then, my real name is Du-Wei and I’m from the Rowling family. My father is Earl Raymond..... I request your understanding because I don’t want the fact that I’m learning magic to be spread among a lot of people.”

Dadaneier laughed, then embraced Du-Wei with open arms. “Whoever you are, you are my friend and benefactor. It doesn’t matter if you are a magician, you are you. I swear that I will help you to keep it a secret.”

The three men kept moving forward until a loud sound of rocks colliding, shouting, and crying reached them from the front.

The trio looked at each other before picking up speed. Du-Wei’s hand-shrank

into his sleeve, and Dadaneier readied his bow and arrow, while Hussein strode forward in the front of the group ready to face whatever was awaiting them.

Turning the final corner, the land in front of them opened up, but Du-Wei couldn't help but feel a little surprised at the scene before them.

Before them was a field about the size of a football stadium or maybe even bigger.

Right here was a city wall currently being built!

Yes, no lie's, it is a city wall!!

Some tall giant thing was walking back and forth, carrying big slabs of squared stones and piling it up together.....

Next to it was a group of diminutive gray beings full of body fur, looking something like that of a Groundhog. Whips in hand while running around, it looked like they are acting like overseers!

These overseers are slightly shorter than the average human... it seems as though a mouse had evolved into a human being. These things looked like a mouse, but walked upright with each step they took. And on their bodies hung barks or animal skins like that of "clothing's".

With a vine whip in hand, these things would from time to time whip the stone carrying giants, then scold them in a sharp voice.

And those giants carrying the stones..... Du-Wei was clearly surprised by this.

Those poor "slaves" were actually all Treants!

No, to be more precise, it was a group of Treant "companions"! But soon, Du-Wei detected something strange.

The Treant "Companion" class beings no longer had a body of wood! Instead, their body has been turned into stone! As if caused by some petrification magic, they were moving awkwardly back and forth like mechanical machines, laboriously working without stop.

Moreover, those mice supervisors were very short, but these petrified Treant companions acted as if they were afraid of those supervisors. Or rather, they were afraid the whip in their hands!

These whips in the mouse's hand seemed to have some kind of magic. Although their heights would only allow their whips to reach the torso of the Treant companions, but the Treant companions howled in pain every time they were hit.

Du-Wei and his companions went closer, but was soon noticed by the supervisors. Immediately, there was screaming and crying in the air, "Outsider! Outsider!....."

Unfortunately, before he could finish another word, Hussein snorted and with a golden flash, the mouse's head was beaten to a pulp.

This one action caused the other supervisors to be terrified. As they cried out while fleeing in all directions, the petrified Treant companions dropped their stones in hand and stood there motionless. In their state of panic, some of the supervisors ended up bumping into the legs of the Treant companions, knocking themselves out.

"Hey, you acted too fast." Du-Wei sighed.

"We have to cause a ruckus anyways." Hussein didn't care.

Then suddenly the sound of a horn could be heard behind the half completed city wall. From the city gate, a team of soldiers rushed out.

Du-Wei felt this trip was truly an eye-opener. The supervising mice could actually walk upright and spit out criticism from its mouth. This was enough to pique the curiosity in Du-Wei regarding this animal kingdom, but the best part was the team of soldiers that came out of the city walls. The scene that followed caused him to laugh so hard that his stomach almost broke.

This is a team of cavalry?

Approximately more than 10 soldiers were coming towards them while riding on their "mounts". They looked a lot stronger than the supervising mouse's from earlier. Every soldier donned a uniform style armor, but the armor was made from animal skins. In the back, there was even someone holding a linen woven flag and a giant eyeball pattern was clearly drawn on it.

And the mount ridden by the cavalry team was of course not a horse..... Instead, the whole team was riding on a team of giant trees.

Although they were not horses, these giant trees looked complete and not lacking in anyway. From afar, it looked like a mouse was riding a silent tree.

But these guys were clearly full of killing intent as they flew out of the gate and quickly surrounded the trio. From the group, a large mouse pointed a sharp spear like stick at the trio, then shouted in a sharp and unpleasant voice. "Outsider, why have you come to the territory belonging to the great evil eye king! State your purpose and pay your taxes!"

Du-Wei slightly smiled, "evil eye King..... I've never heard of such a King..... Excuse me, what is it that you want?"

"We are the cavalry under his Majesty the King!" The mouse captain pressed out his chest with pride, "Under the command of the kingdoms Prime Minister, we are here to rebuild the wall and is also responsible for the checkpoint here! Outsiders, quickly pay your taxes and dig out one of your eyes. Then we will allow you to get out of here safely!"

The Prime Minister? Du-Wei didn't know whether to laugh or stare..... The evil eye tyrant seemed to be very addicted at playing the game of building a nation..... For there to be a Prime Minister?

However, in any case, having more than 10 mouse's pointing a stick at three highly strengthened human is hardly a threat.... Even though the mouse's head was very large.

"We are here to seek an audience with the evil eye King." Du-Wei couldn't help but laugh out in a HAHAHA manner.

The Cavalry Captain paused for a bit..... In fact, the kingdom in this Canyon valley had very few visitors. As a captain of the Royal Cavalry, there was very little opportunity to show off his power and prestige to outsiders..... Everyday ordering the Treants to carry those stones was getting pointless. To see the trio of outsiders, the captain was actually very excited in his heart at wanting to show off. With a loud shout, "Nonsense! Do you think you can see the king just because you say so? Quickly dig your eyes out and then get out!"

Du-Wei sighed, no longer speaking.

Hussein started to make his move. The sword in the knight's hand made a

circle, then with a golden ray, the stick in the mouse's hand was torn apart. The head of the cavalry captain rolled under and beneath the trees, then everyone jumped and scattered away.

Looking at the dead rat, Du-Wei was somewhat nauseated. "Can't you make this a bit cleaner?" Kicking his shoes to remove some of the mouse hair, Du-Wei shook his head and moved on.

He shouted a few words towards the petrified trees, but these Treant companions had little intelligence and couldn't speak. So Du-Wei gave up his intentions and continued walking with his two companions through the half built city wall, heading further into the Canyon.

Through the city walls, the scene in the Canyon was immediately different.

Neatly lined with trees on both sides... .. All were once lively trees but has now been felled and petrified. Now both sides of the road revealed a kind of eerily deathly scent.

The flooring below their feet was made of wood, but it seems that all the buildings here were made of rocks.

There were actually buildings made out of stones on both sides. All the doors and windows of the buildings were dug out, giving it a clear shape. Du-Wei could see there was something vague looking over their shoulders.

Just like this, the trio blatantly walked into this strange land of a "kingdom".

## Chapter 79 - The Magician That Turned Into A Rat

At the end of the stone street came the sounds of hurried steps and murmurs of armor clanking. Then they saw countless mice's running towards them wearing body armor and armed with a real iron weapon compared to the sticks from earlier.

Hussein and Dadaneier was about to make their moves but Du-Wei held them back and said, "Wait, don't you think this is fun?"

The mice soldiers have already surrounded them but didn't attack at once. Instead, the group neatly organized into a battle formation in the street square, blocking the roads in from them the trio.

Before long, the singing of trumpets could be heard from somewhere. Like a signal, the troop formation separated in the middle, revealing seven to eight strong looking mice's from behind. The group came forward carrying a single large slate of stone and a not so healthy looking fat rat was sitting on top of the rock.

This being had a fat body like a meatball and full of gray hair. The head had a long pointed mouth with double whiskers on the side and the pair of eyes hinted higher intellect despite the face that the eyeball randomly rolled around. But what was really comical was the fact it was wearing a white robe and a tall pointy hat like that of a magician!

This kind of dressing was very similar to that of a magician from the human world..... Could this rat also be a magician?

"O human! You are a human!" This rat creature that was carried out jumped

up from his chair, then stared down at the trio before shouting. Its voice was like that of surprise and excitement.

“You are correct, we are human” Du-Wei cried out, “Excuse me, what are you? A mouse wizard, or a mouse General?”

This meat ball like rat lifted up his stomach as he looked around, then shouted. “I’m the prime minister of this kingdom! You should be bowing to me!”

Du-Wei sighed, “I’m sorry, the three of us don’t have the habit of saluting a mouse.”

With that said, the mice soldiers were about to rush forward but was halted by the Prime Minister. With his eyeball randomly looking around, the Prime Minister broke out into a “HAHAHAHA” laughter. “Human’s capable of coming here are all powerful experts and you are no exception.... But you can’t be too self confident!”

With that said, the mouse Prime Minister stood up straight with two claws open and it started to spell chant....

Yes, it’s a spell! A magic spell!

Du-Wei’s jaw dropped as he watched the mouse chant out a spell from its mouth. This mouse Prime Minister is actually a magician... No, or rather “only” a magician!

Du-Wei immediately sensed the genuine swinging of magic, then suddenly, a flame flared up on the surface of the stone slab in front of the trio. With a roaring sound, the flame spread out on both sides and immediately formed a ring of fire, trapping the trio inside.

The mouse Prime Minister kept chanting a spell from its mouth, then a halo of light ejected from its claw. The light instantly enveloped the trio, causing Du-Wei’s body to feel very tight. “This is binding? Ah, fire magic and binding magic.....

“Attack!”

In one command from the mouse Prime Minister, a field of mice brigades appeared from both sides of the street and stone houses. These soldiers carried



in their hand sticks and bows made of wood. With the sound of shoop shoop, numerous wooden arrows were shot towards their location.

Du-Wei was really tied up and restrained, but how can it be possible that this magic is able to stop Hussein? The knight grunted as he shook his arms, then with a swing of his sword in a circle, a golden Dou Qi immediately caused all the arrows to fall downward.

The knight easily shook off the magic shackles. From the look in the mouse Prime Minister eyes, one can tell the Prime Minister was surprised by this as he loudly screamed. "Quick, Kill them!"

With that said, he applied pressure from his hand, causing the circle of fire to shrink around them. Du-Wei gave out a HAHAAHA laughter before chanting a spell from his mouth, then two gusts of icy cold wind roared toward the flames, blocking the flames from all sides.

Hussein lets out a call as he casually patted the shoulder of Du-Wei and Dadaneier. The two immediately felt their body was lighter and capable of movement once again. Free from his bindings, Du-Wei let out both of his hands and chanted a spell from his mouth. Afterwards, multiple fireballs flew out from his fingertips and aimed toward the mouse Prime Minister.

The magic power of the Prime Minister was evidently far above that of Du-Wei's. Seeing the fireball spell commonly used by magicians of the lowest rank, the Prime Minister clearly showed a hint of disdain on his face. In a quick spell chant, he waved his sleeves, letting loose several wind blades to deflect the oncoming fireballs. At the same time, Du-Wei continued to chant the dazing spells that he knew from his mouth.

Lifting his hands up, Du-Wei threw out the dazing spell that was capable of enshrouding the mass of soldiers in a halo of dizzying light. As a result, the columns of soldiers became tipsy and dazed from where they stood, the only exception was the Prime Minister. With a sharp and loud shout, the sound of beating drums suddenly rose up, then he started to chant a few spells causing the strongest mice under his command to let out a sharp squeal the moment they heard the chant.

Then the body's of the mice started to swell up and even the muscles bulked up

like lumps, causing the fur and skin to burst open, yet, they themselves acted like the idea of pain did not exist. Then their heads doubled in size while its mouth expanded, exposing the awe inspiring white fanged teethes. With a roar, the group exposed their red eyes and white fangs as they rushed towards Du-Wei...

Seeing this, Dadaneier has already let loose an arrow from his bow, revealing his excellent archery. Infused with Dou Qi, the arrow easily shot through three to four mice, just like a skewered fruit candy stick. (If you don't know tong wue low then just think of kebabs)

Watching the transformed mice's rushing over, Dadaneier stood beside Du-Wei to block their path. Firstly, he sent a kick at one of the mice and a bone breaking sound could clearly be heard by Du-Wei. Despite flying back and rolling on the ground, the mice immediately got up like nothing happened and continued to rush over.

Du-Wei had a sudden enlightenment. "Blood lust spell?"

As the group came drew closer, Dadaneier pulled out his curved blade and beheaded a mouse, then shouted. "Hussein! What are you doing! Kill these guys!"

Hussein snorted and ignored the oncoming group. Instead, his eyes were fixed upon the mouse Prime Minister. Giving out a loud laugh, he ran forward in one step.....

Even though there were more than 20 paces in distance, the knight was able to reach the front of the mouse Prime Minister in one step. Despite being so close, the surround mouse soldiers were still unaware of Hussein's presence. At this moment, Hussein was covered in the flesh and blood of the mice. While giving off an abnormal and nauseating feeling, he reached out his hand towards the Mouse Prime Minister.

Out of panic, the Mouse Prime Minister lets out a screeching scream before rolling off the stone slate, then he quickly summoned forth a lightning strike. The lightning aimed straight at Hussein but with the knight's strength, a swing of his sword was enough to easily deflect the bolt. Instead of landing on the intended target, the lightning ended up striking on the surrounding mice, burning them into charcoal.

In one palm strike, Hussein easily blew a hole through the slate of stone and picked up the mouse Prime Minister.

Those mice's around wanted to come over and help but with one sword strike from Hussein, a sudden explosion of flesh and meat rained through the air.

Due to the acceleration spell cast by Du-Wei earlier, Dadaneier and him have almost annihilated the mice's near them. Even though Du-Wei is a magician, he is forced to face the reality of melee combat. Fortunately, he exercised earlier and his body was much stronger than in the past. Du-Wei never practiced martial arts in his childhood but he did tutor under Knight Robert back in the castle. Compared to the human like mice, he did learn the basics of swordsmanship and on top of that, Dadaneier was covering for him.

Just that these few enraged mice's were very troubling. When Dadaneier hacked down two of them to death, his body was clawed a few times and even Du-Wei's leg was bitten once.

Mustn't get infected with a mouse plague!

Du-Wei inwardly scolded himself with these words as Hussein caught onto the mouse Prime Minister. Uttering a loud cry, the mouse Prime Minister fainted.

No longer under the control of magic, those enraged mice suddenly dropped down due to fatigue. The soldiers apparently didn't understand the meaning of "courage". Seeing their leader caught, everyone scattered and fled away after hearing a loud shout.

Du-Wei knocked down a few more like cutting a melon, then threw away the knife covered in blood and flesh of the mice. "Disgusting, will I be infected with the mouse plague?"

"First kill the mouse leader....." Du-Wei complained, "Is this not the Evil Eye Kingdom? Why does it feel's like a rat's nest? Could the Evil Eye also be a mouse?"

Hussein lifted the mouse Prime Minister up and was about to chop down with his sword, but the fainted guy suddenly woke up and saw the shining sword. Scared out of his wits, the mouse cried out. "Mercy! Mercy! Hero, please have mercy!"

Du-Wei smiled, "The reason? Give me a reason. I'll count to three and if you can't say it, then we'll kill you."

"I have a 80 year old mother, a under three years old son....." The mouse Prime Minister shouted.

"One," Du-Wei remained unmoved.

"I surrender, I will follow you!!!"

"We don't need a pet mice, two!"

"This ... .. I can work for you, I work hard, eat less than a chicken, work more than cow!"

"I have plenty of servants already, three!"

Seeing the sword the coming down, the mouse Prime Minister shouted. "I'm also a human!"

"Wait a minute!" Du-Wei stopped Hussien's sword. Staring at the mouse Prime Minister, "What did you just say?"

"I am also a human ... .. Or used to be." The mouse Prime Minister started to shake, "I used to be a human mage!"

## Chapter 80 - Queen Medusa

From close inspection of its mouse head with the randomly shifting eyeballs, two mouse whiskers, long pointed mouth, and two fangs sticking out. The phrase “Mouse thief” is indeed appropriate when applied to this fellow.

“Human being?” Du-Wei looked skeptical, “You said that you are human?”

“I.. I... I... I... I... am in fact a human.” The mouse Prime Minister shook so hard that he had to fight to keep his teeth from chattering. With a glance, he swallowed his saliva and fixed his eyes on the sharp edged sword. “I... I.... I am really a human. Not... Not... Not... fooling you..... I can’t fool you.”

“Enough!” Du-Wei shouted while staring, “You will just stutter if you keep going.”

Putting his bow away, Dadaneier had a look of confusion on his face. “You really are a human? Then why do you look like a rat?”

“Once upon a time.... I was truly a human and used to be a magician. I came to this frozen forest more than 20 years ago with others....” The mouse Prime Minister had a pathetic look at Hussein’s sword then showed a disgusting subservient like smile on his face. “This knight sir, can you please remove your sword? Even my neck has been cut.”

Hussein snorted as he put down the sword. With his ability, there is no need to be afraid of this guy playing any tricks.

Seeing his neck was no longer under any threat, the mouse Prime Minister let out a long sigh of relief. While straightening his clothes, he once again caught a glimpse of Hussein’s murderous eyes, causing him to shrink his neck away from fear as he whispered. “I have been called Gargamel in the past....”

Before he could even finish his words, Du-Wei’s eye was already wide in disbelief. “Gargamel?”

“Holy crap! I fucking called Smurfs!” (it’s a slang incase you’re wondering)

“Gargamel? You are really called Gargamel?” The knight asked with a frown. To think that Hussein actually recognized the name.

The mouse Prime Minister shrank his head back like he was very afraid of Hussein. “Correct, that is my former name. I used to be a magician, a human magician, and was even a Grand magician!”

At first, Du-Wei didn’t believe his words. “Grand magician? Then you should at least be 8thlevel.”

But in the fight just now, the magic demonstrated by this guy was at best a little higher than Du-Wei’s and didn’t hold any great strength. Eighth-level magician, but it is the same level as the small stuttering women (Vivian) and the violent Joanna. From a strength’s point of view, the ability of the mouse Prime Minister is far too low in comparison.

Hussein showed a contemplative expression. “You are really the Grand magician Gargamel? I seem to have heard of your name before. You used to be a council member of the magic union, correct?”

“Yes! Yes!” The mouse Prime Minister’s had a glow in his eye as he recalled the past. “I was indeed a governing council member of the magic union! You know my name?”

Du-Wei pulled at Hussein’s side. “Do you really know him?”

“I do not know him but I have heard of his name. If he isn’t lying, then I’m afraid he is really Gargamel, an eighth level magician and a governing council member of the magic union. At the same time, he is also one of the world’s few high leveled magician’s skilled in transformation magic. Over 20 years ago, this person was actually quite famous in the capital.

“Is he?” Du-Wei and Dadaneierdu couldn’t help but take a look at this person with the characteristics of a mouse thief.

Hussein also revealed a bemused smile, “This guy’s fame had a special reason behind it. Back then, he somehow achieved his eighth level qualification by opportunistic means due to the fact that fewer and fewer people are training in transformation magic. In order to protect and encourage others to practice this rare magic so that it could be passed down to future generations, the magic

union gave him the title of grand magician. In the past, he had two resounding nicknames, do you know what they are?”

“Just say it Hussein, I’m very curious.” Du-Wei spoke with a smile.

Hussein rubbed his chin, “The first nickname is ‘The most undeserving grand magician in history’ because it was recognized that if you compared his true power, he is the weakest one among all the eighth level magicians. I even suspect that a sixth-level Magician can defeat this guy but his accomplishment in transformation magic is very high.

“Transformation magic.....” Du-Wei’s eye flashed with an odd look, then asked. “What about the other nickname?”

Hussein openly spoke out loud. “The most cowardly magician.” Fortunately, the mouse’s face was hidden or else his facial expression would be flushed red if seen.

“He is considered to be the most cowardly magician and never fight with others. Even when he offends other people, he would be the first to apologize.... Oh, but he is actually very skilled at flattering. Even his governing member title was because he had done a good job at serving the vice president of the magic union. Out of all the grand magicians in the imperial capital, he is the most likely to indulge himself in wealth. He was known to have the best relationship with the nobles and also being the most greedy.... Oh, I heard he was also very lustful, allegedly changing his clothes often to hang out in the red light district.... And as to where he got his nickname as the “most cowardly magician”. Hussein laughed in a HAHAAH manner. “It’s said that once in the streets of the red light district, he got into an argument over some jealousy matter, then a sixth level warrior got so drunk that he fell over his face on a wine jug had pulled out his sword and asked for a duel in front of everyone. But this eighth level magician had dismally ran away and didn’t even dare to roam the streets of the red light district for a month.”

Gargaemel refuted with a whining sentence. “That’s because I’m generous and didn’t hold any grudges against these kind of people.”

“But then why have you always fled whenever you meet the Warrior? For that matter, the reputation of the magic union was disgraced and the warrior also

became the first ever in decades to challenge a grand magician alone. It was also for that matter, the governing board of the magic union had unanimously voted to remove you?

Gargamel's retorting voice grew smaller "That's because..... I am a resolute pacifist.....".

"Pacifist....." Du-Wei held in his laughter. "You are really Gargamel, the magician? How come a pacifist like you became the prime minister of this animal kingdom and..... Also become a rat?"

Gargamel grinds his teeth, revealing a trace of hatred in his eyes. "This is all to be blamed on that hateful bastard. Azrael, let him suffer through a thousand knives!!

Du-Wei laughed in his heart. First is Gargamel, now Azrael. (The River cats from the Smurfs if you don't know)

Hussein sighed, "Mr. Azrael? Azrael the grand magician?

Gargamel curses out. "If it's not him, who else can it be?! This deceitful, greedy, sly, and cowardly man!"

"Deceitful, greed, sly, and cowardly....." Du-Wei smiled while looking at Gargamel, "These descriptions are a better fit to describe yourself."

"Oh with respect gentlemen." Gargamel gave a humble smile, "I admit it..... However, that Azrael is absolutely many more times deceitful, greedy, sly, and cowardly than me.... Even a Hundred times more so!"

Subsequently, Gargamel complains about his tragic history.

The Azrael from his words was a grand magician, a very famous mage. It goes without saying that twenty years ago, this person created a sensation by leading a group of senior knights into the frozen forest. By crossing the frozen lake and heading into the north shore of the great lake, he went deeper into the frozen forest than any other man before him! The hero of this event is of course his excellency Azrael the grand magician!

Then finally at the ending of the tale, his Excellency Azrael the grand magician, faced danger in the Canyon and the accompanying senior knights all died, leaving



him deeply wounded to flee back alone.

But he has had such a legendary experience that he earned the respect of many people because before that, no one would ever travel this deep into the frozen forest! He also left behind some valuable information regarding the road map in northern region.

“It was Azrael, that bastard scammed me into the frozen forest.” Gargamel sighed.

“But why is there no mention of you? And the expedition roster didn’t have your name on the list when they left the capital.” Hussein squinted coldly at the big mouse.

“That’s because... First of all, in the face of the danger, Azrael dishonorably abandoned me, so he didn’t dare speak my name!... Second, I did not set out together with them in the capital. I came across them while I was in a small town, south of the frozen forest.” Gargamel’s eye shifted around randomly, “I... I was about to enter the frozen forest.”

“With your capability?” Hussein’s smile was filled with such disdain that it pierced through Gargamel’s thick hide of lies. “You, who would flee in panic from a duel with a sixth level warrior, would dare enter the frozen forest which is filled with magical beasts? I warn you, I do not like people lying to me, so if you speak one more false word, I will guarantee your neck will kiss my sword!”

Gargamel immediately surrendered. “Fine, I’ll tell you the truth... I didn’t dare to come... Ah... I really regret it; I shouldn’t have met Azrael and those people. With a few gold coins, I came to the town located at the southern edge of the forest. If I could encounter a team of adventurers coming back from hunting, I might be able to buy some magical beast cores.”

Dardaneier frowned, “The magic shops in the capital already have them, why would you go so far north?”

Gargamel answered honestly, “Because buying these things in the capital is too expensive. From when the adventurers hunt the magical beasts, to selling them to the smugglers and transporting them to the south, then the smugglers selling to a middleman, the cost would increase 4 to 5 folds by the time it reaches the market.

“But magicians shouldn’t lack money,” Du-Wei spoke with a smile.

“Of course there’s no shortage.” Gargamel told the truth, “But I’m still short on money. I had a fixed salary from the magic union and I could also get bribes from the group of nobility that I knew. But after the conflict with the warrior, my reputation got worse and the nobility no longer respected me, also the bribes got less and less. And... I also like women and gambling.... Hey! Don’t look at me like that! Although I’m a coward but I got good gambling habits! I have never skipped out on my debts! If you don’t believe me, go find out from the casino’s in the capital. Who doesn’t know of old Gargamel’s gambling habits!” This mouse actually looked proud, as if he were speaking of some glorious deeds.

“All right.....” Du-Wei had a wry smile.

I have never seen such a mage... I’m afraid he’s the most unusual magician in hundreds of years.

“I owed a lot of gambling debts. As the nobles offered less and less in bribes, my salary from the magic union is not enough to pay off my debts.... Unfortunately, I didn’t study gold refining alchemy. My other colleagues all saw gold refining alchemy as lofty magic and didn’t want to deal with someone like me that had a bad reputation. No other way left, I was forced to find another way to bring in some money. Although a magician can receive respect and reap benefits wherever he goes, but my reputation was too terrible at the time. All the wealthy and powerful nobles ignored me, so I had no choice but to leave the capital and head north. Gargamel’s eyes suddenly shined, “That’s when I thought of a way to get rich. I just had to wait on the edge of the frozen forest, then when the adventurer teams return, I would be able to directly purchase the magic stones at the lowest price. After returning to the empire’s capital, I would make 4 to 5 times the profit by selling to other magicians.

Du-Wei sighed while looking at Gargamel, he couldn’t help but reveal a hint of curiosity in his eyes.

What a freak... But he was able to understand the business concept of controlling the supply chain of a product and using his own methods to obtain it for the lowest price. In this world, it can be considered somewhat economically mindful.

“And that event became my misfortune.” Gargamel grimaced, “I met Azrael and he told me they were preparing to enter the frozen forest, that was when he convinced me to join them.”

Hussein grunted with cold eyes.

“Okay, okay!” In the face of Hussein’s imposing eyes, Gargamel once again surrendered. “I’ll tell the truth.... Azrael simply didn’t put me in his eyes, but seeing these people with superior strength: a grand magician coupled with a group of senior knights; with such a powerful group in the frozen forest, I thought if I could join them, I would be very safe. So why not join them and along the way when they killed a magical beast, I could collect the cores without spending single a gold coin. If I could take this opportunity and make enough, then I could go back to the capital and clear my debts. Being a magician, no matter how little, I could still help him, so after much persistence, I was able to convince Azrael to let me join the team.”

“So you temporarily joined them and entered the frozen forest?” Du-Wei stopped smiling, “But to go past the southern end of the lake... You should have known that it was dangerous, why did you continue following?”

Gargamel seemed to swallow a piece of *Rhizoma Coptidis* (bitter plant name) and raised his paws to either side of himself, shrugging, and smiled: “They had to continue north, what could I do? Asking me to leave the team and go back alone? Going through the vast forest and go back to town? I was worried that being by myself, I would be eaten by a magical beast. I could only keep going with them, but I did not expect the results which came about from that decision; we came to the entrance of this Canyon valley and met a group of Treants... When we heard about the fountain of youth, Azrael’s smile was so huge that he couldn’t close his mouth and said that we must go in to search for the damn spring! Ugh.”

“The result? Did you find it?” Du-Wei was interested in this issue.

“We found it, but who would have ever thought, the evil eye that was guarding the spring is a terrible monster!” Speaking of the Evil Eye, Gargamel’s whole body shook and his teeth started to chatter. With a trembling voice, he said. “In a big battle, all of those senior knights lost their lives and Azrael lost an eye when

he was almost beaten to death. That was when we had to run away..... But that damn Azrael actually left me behind!”

Seeing Gargamel ruthlessly grinding his teeth, Du-Wei couldn't help but say. “When a person don't have much of a relationship with you, of course the other party wouldn't care and escape on their own.”

“It wasn't that simple.” Gargamel smiled bitterly, “That bastard, deserving to suffer through a thousand knives, actually lied to me that separating would be safer. And at the time I was thinking, I'll transform into a mouse and dig myself out a safe spot and he was bigger as a target, so he was more likely to attract the monster.... So I agreed but the result was that the bastard pulled a fast one on me. He took advantage of me not paying attention and threw a bottle of glitter powder at me! That bastard! In the middle of the night, my body was covered in glitter powder so I stood out like a beacon! Naturally, the Evil Eye would chase after me! Azrael, that bastard ran away!”

Du-Wei and Dardaneier both tried to stop themselves from laughing, “And then?”

Gargamel showed an unluckylooking face, “I cast transformation magic on myself and turned into a mouse. While scurrying around in the darkness, I accidentally fell into the spring and drank some of the water.”

The color on Du-Wei's face slightly changed, “You..... Fell into a spring, was it the fountain of youth?”

Gargamel stared and snapped, “It wasn't that damn thing!” But upon seeing Hussein's cold stare at his neck, he softened his tone. “Ah, well... Yeah, that's right, it is the fountain of youth.”

Du-Wei couldn't help but give Gargamel another perplexed look.

Gargamel failed to notice this and said, “Then, before I could react, the Evil Eye had grabbed me by my neck and pulled me up. I thought I was definitely dead when the few knights that were left looked at her and turned into stone! Azrael, that son of a bitch poked an eye out only to escape! I kept running with my eyes closed until I fell into that damn spring, the Evil Eye, she...”

“Waita minute!!”

Du-Wei and Dadaneier both interrupted Gargamel at the same time.”

Dadaneier had a look of excitement: “You mean... Whatever the Evil Eye looked at will turn into stone? Could it be, this Evil Eye is the golden eye python?”

Du-Wei had an odd but curious look on his face. “What did you say? You said she? Is the Evil Eye python a woman?”

Posed with 2 question the same time by two people, Gargamel paused for a moment before replying. “Well, the Evil Eye is not a golden eye python, but she could have been a golden eye python in the past before evolving into her final advanced form... Queen Medusa!” Then he glanced at Du-Wei and gave a wry smile, “You heard me right and I didn’t say it wrong. I did say ‘she’, the Evil Eye is the title she used for herself. Her majesty is not merely a simple women, but a terrible and beautiful snake!”

# Chapter 81 - The Side Effects Of The Fountain Of Youth

Medusa Queen?

Hearing the name, even Hussein became pale.

Originally, Du-Wei didn't understand the system by which the magical beasts evolved from, but during his conversations with Dadaneier along the way, he gradually learned many of the theories about the magical beasts. After all, when Dadaneier was young, he worked as a mercenary, but this time around, he collected a lot of information about the Golden Eye Python prior to setting out.

Queen Medusa is basically the advanced final form in the evolution of the gold eye python. While it could already be considered a high level magical beast, when it evolves into a Medusa, it is regarded as one of the most powerful magical beasts.

There are literally thousands of magical beasts that will evolve into their final forms, but the only one capable of transforming its body to that of a human is Medusa!

The trio has not actually seen what a Medusa looks like, but legends say this top level magical beast is capable of transforming into a human body and take on the form of a beautiful woman with golden hair and striking eyes... But within her eyes remained the same terrible power of the Golden-Eye Python, capable of petrifying her enemies but only stronger than before. As for her hair... It can be turned into thousands of Golden-Eye Pythons!

What is this? Facing a Medusa is equivalent to facing a legion of Golden-Eye Pythons!

When Queen Medusa becomes angry, she can revert back to a snake's body...

And will transform into a gigantic Boa Constrictor snake! Its enormous body is capable of crushing a city! An immeasurably huge body capable of causing a disaster in the human world!

The most frightening thing is that among all the magical beasts in the world, Queen Medusa is the most intelligent!. Queen Medusa does not only have terrifying abilities, but more importantly, a clever mind! When faced with a powerful magical beast, humans can always rely on their intelligence to outwit the beast, but when facing a Medusa, that's no longer an option!

The most terrible thing about Queen Medusa is that besides having intelligence comparable to that of humanity, it can use its intelligence to learn! Learning the achievements of human civilization and even learning other kinds of magic!

Great and powerful strength, coupled with high intellect, causes this magical beast to be recognized as one of the most dreadful and powerful.

Even some magicians thought it was fortunate that Queen Medusa is a rare occurrence because the fertility rate of magical beasts are already low to begin with. On top of that, it requires an untold number of years of cultivation to evolve, so it is exceptionally rare to evolve into a Medusa! Because of this reason, there are rarely any records of Medusa in history.... At least 300 years have passed since the last one was sighted. Every time Queen Medusa appears in history, it would bring disaster to humanity!

Magicians believed if... Just if the numbers of Medusa's were to slightly increase, then this top level magical beast would even threaten the position of the dragons, known as the strongest.

Seeing that these three humans couldn't help but reveal a tense and nervous look, Gargamel was very satisfied in his heart. The chips he had to save his own life had once again increased, but the satisfaction he had was quickly dispelled by Hussein. With a cold voice, "Go on, don't think that a single Medusa can scare me."

Indeed, the most horrifying thing about a Medusa is not its ability to petrify others, nor it's hair turning into countless Golden-Eye Pythons..... Or even its ability to turn into a gigantic python...

The most horrifying thing is their ability to learn! Think about it, all magical beasts inherently have magical abilities and senses, but she also has the ability to learn other magics! Let's say she learns other magic, fire, wind, water, etc...

They have a long life span, coupled with high intelligence, if we did let her learn.... Then she would become a Queen Medusa and also a horrifying super magician! What is this concept?

"Fortunately, this is a small Canyon valley with little contact with the outside world." Du-Wei suddenly frowned while glancing at Gargamel, "She didn't kill you because she wanted to learn magic from you, right?"

Gargamel immediately winced and hesitated before speaking: "This... I..."

Du-Wei sighed, "I know, alas, I do not blame you. In order to save your own life, you were forced to make difficult decisions, I do not blame you."

Du-Wei was surprisingly understanding so Gargamel quickly explained. "Although over the years, I've taught her some magic, but I have limited magical abilities to begin with.... Also, she couldn't learn the transformation magic that I specialized in. So..."

Gargamel paused for a bit, then the cowardly mouse sighed. "On that day... I remember that she used her hand to grab the scruff of my neck, pinching me with two fingers and pulling me up from the spring. My body was not so large, only the size of a small mouse. I thought I was going to die at that moment, but then she raised me up and stared at me for a long time before asking me. "Did you drink from this spring just now?"

Du-Wei's eyes lit up, looking at Gargamel's mouse body, as if in thought about something. "You answered?"

"Of course! At the time I was completely stupefied, only able to admit it. That damn eternal youth water, that damn thing really ruined me!"

"And then what? She spared you?" Du-Wei said.

There was an odd look in Gargamel's eyes, "She said, you are also one of the victims, so I'm not going to kill you because now, there is someone in the same boat as me."



Gargamel, he smiled. "Poor you. Over the years, you worked as a mouse."

"You guessed what?" Hussein looked at Du-Wei.

"Might as well let the Prime Minister explain," Du-Wei narrowed his eyes and laughed. "There is nothing wrong with the fountain of youth, correct?"

Gargamel immediately let out his grievance. "It is not only wrong, it's simply an evil thing! Years ago, when we came, the Treants said it was a fountain of longevity, even I thought it was a good thing. It gave the tree's longevity, it allows magical beasts to evolve, maybe it would be good for a human too! But after I drank from it, there was so much suffering!"

According to Gargamel's interpretation, this fountain of youth was very useful for trees and magical beasts.... But for humans.... It's useless!

The spring allows a Treant to live a long life..... In fact, according to Gargamel's personal experience, this is simply a thing that slows down the metabolism of the body several times over to where it's almost frozen.

The unfortunate thing is that the people who drink this stuff would receive no benefits regarding their life expectancy or growth, but what does get frozen is their outer appearance. For example, Gargamel, a grand magician specializing in transformation magic, was unlucky that night when he was busy running for his life in the body of a small and agile mouse!

The results, after falling into the spring and drinking the water.... He will always be frozen in the mouse state! Unable to change back into his human form or any other form.... In this life, he can only be a mouse!

"This is a frozen state," Gargamel sighed. "For humans, it's more like being in the same eternal state... I think this spring is of course beneficial to magical beasts and Treants, but will only bring harm to humans! Oh wait... perhaps, there are only two benefits to humans!"

"What is it?"

"The first is healing, heavy injuries can be healed instantly and automatically close the wound. But this capability isn't much use because holy water and healing magic are capable of doing the same thing. However, the other advantage is... Protection against corrosion!" Gargamel smiled, "Although after

drinking the water, their life span will not change but after the person passes away, their body will never decompose after being transformed from the water. The physical body will forever remain in a good state, it is that simple.

That truly is the case.

Du-Wei let out a bitter laugh smile. For a human, it would only have two benefits. It was originally thought to be a very precious thing, but it seems there isn't much use for it.

Treatment of injuries..... One can find many alternatives, no reason to challenge a Queen Medusa.

Protection against corrosion... After his death, why would Du-Wei care if his body rots or not? If that is the case, wouldn't I be a mummy?

But suddenly... An idea flashed in Du-Wei's mind.

With this said, wouldn't the already dead body of Aragon also be forever preserved? Haha....

This idea only flashed in Du-Wei's mind for a bit and he didn't think much of it.

"It seems that is that case." Du-Wei frowned: "But I don't understand why Queen Medusa would say 'we are both victims'? Since she was originally a magical beast, shouldn't she have been subject to great benefits?"

"Of course, she was originally a Golden Eye Python. It's just that from drinking the spring water, she evolved... But the spring has also caused her to lose a precious ability. When she drank the water, she was already in human form, as a result, she can never change back to the body of a snake."

Dadaneier frowned, "Is the human form not good? If it can't turn into a snake, what's the loss?"

Du-Wei sighed deeply, then gave a deep look at Dadaneier before murmuring. "Dadaneier, this way of thinking is typical for a human. Of course we would think the human form is the best because we are 'human'. However, if I made a comparison with the most powerful dragon race against the human race, would you still want to be forever a dragon? You can't eat human food, never able to make human friends, no longer able to sleep in a soft bed, drink wine, and even

bed a woman..... But when the urges require you, would you be willing to mate with a beautiful female dragon while keeping a human conscious, are you willing? Even losing the human style of living, are you willing?

An imaginary scene of two dragons mating crept into Dadaneier's mind and he immediately went pale, repeatedly shaking his head. "Of course not! I don't want to!"

"That's right," Du-Wei smiled and said. "You and I think being a human is the most comfortable, the same applies to Queen Medusa. Although she turned into a human, her preceding lifetime as a snake must naturally make her feel uncomfortable."

Although Gargamel didn't say anything, his eyes emitted a sad appreciative feeling and couldn't help but sigh deeply.

"Gargamel, tell me, since you turned into a mouse, how did your body become so big? Your body volume couldn't have been that different from a normal sized mouse." Du-Wei said it with a smile and his tone was softer. In his heart, a sense of sympathy was growing towards this mouse with a human consciousness.

"Yes, but it took me many years to acquire this look." Gargamel sighed, "I certainly don't want to be a mouse forever. Unfortunately, I drank the water while I was in the form of a mouse, losing the ability to turn back into a human. I experimented a lot, and finally I found out that the most I could do for myself was becoming a little larger. This size of my head is already at its limit and I could freely change to any smaller sized variations, but I'm unable to completely change my look. Queen Medusa originally wanted to learn transformation magic from me, but since she was frozen in her human form, she couldn't learn it."

"So what this Kingdom, what happened?" Du-Wei smiled.

"This... Gargamel thought for a while before giving a surprising response to Du-Wei, "This was my idea.... I was really bored anyways. Queen Medusa spared me and doesn't control my actions because she understood that I can't leave... If I escaped to the human world, me, a human shaped giant mouse would be burned as an evil creation and be treated as a monster. This world is so wide but I could only find shelter in this place. " The tone of Gargamel was so sorrowful, "Even if she let me go, I would have nowhere to go, so I was extremely bored and

decided to found a kingdom. Queen Medusa also thought this was interesting, so...”

“But why... all the mice?” Du-Wei said it with a smile, “Since I entered this valley, what I’ve seen the most is mice! It can’t be because you’re also mouse, so you are turning this country into a mouse kingdom?”

“Gargamel rolled his eyes and sighed with exasperation, “Do you think I wanted to? Getting a bunch of magical beasts here? So many magical beasts... maybe one day when I’m not paying attention, I’ll be eaten! Queen Medusa cannot always protect me at every moment! My favorite transformation ability is gone so I’m not brave enough to live among a group of magical beasts with whatever power I have left. After much deliberation, I realized the best way was to not look for magical beasts, but to find ordinary animals! But this is the frozen forest! There are no ordinary animals, even going back a thousand years ago, magical beasts roamed this land! With this in mind, common animals without the ability to protect themselves would have gone extinct a long time ago. However, the mouse is different!”

Du-Wei immediately nodded, “Yes! Even with the harsher environment of this world, any group of any age, of any species that I have heard of can go extinct, but I have never heard of the mice going extinct! So, in the forest, the only remaining ordinary animal is the very, very weak, but fertile mouse! Right?”

“Yes, this practice was also approved by Medusa. Then I call together a group of mice and each mouse is fed a small drop of water from the fountain of youth. The spring helps the magical beasts evolve but it’s useless to humans... But the mice that drink a drop of the water would eventually evolve into a strong and intelligent being.... Just like that of a human.... Just that it’s a pity that after they evolve, they would lose their reproductive capabilities.”

Du-Wei’s face went dark as he looked at Gargamel, “Fortunately so! Otherwise, you would be the greatest sinner of all of mankind!”

Gargamel paused in thought for a moment and couldn’t help but cringe.

Why is that?

They are mice! Although they’re small, weak, and dumb animals, they’re famous for their ability to survive and reproduce!

Imagine, if the mice can become about the same size as a human and almost to the same level of intelligence! Coupled with their horrifying reproductive capabilities... This way... the “Mouse Men” would jeopardize the survival of the human race!

Gargamel’s mouth hung open, “You’re right! I almost caused a terrible disaster!”

Du-Wei patted Gargamel’s shoulder, but then retracted his hand in disgust and reluctantly smiled. “But your country is looking decent, I can imagine your days as Prime Minister was very good, right?”

“Do you think I like being a prime minister?” Gargamel looked like he wanted to jump up, “Do you think spending more than a decade teaching a bunch of mice to talk, teaching them the rules, teaching them about civilization is very interesting? Moreover, in this damn country, I was simply bored and got a group of mice, then now I’m suddenly the mouse head! That Queen Medusa never cares about anything, she just sleeps all day, regardless of what goes on! Hundreds of mice in this valley, all of them eating and sleeping, I have to manage it all! Do you know how much time I spent potty training them?”

“Wait,” Du-Wei just heard something important in his words. “You’re saying... that Queen Medusa is always sleeping?”

Gargamel immediately came to his senses, and whispered. “Yes, she’s been sleeping. Her palace was built on top of the fountain of youth, the spring is in her bedroom. She has been sleeping and only wakes up once every ten years.

Will wake up once in ten years.

Du-Wei and the three looked at each other... It seems that there is still a chance!

## Chapter 82 - Strange Palace

According to the words of the mouse Prime Minister, when Queen Medusa is sleeping, he is the highest leader in the so called “Kingdom of the Evil Eye” .....

Having this hostage with them, or it’s better to say coerced companion. The group of three along with the ratlike person headed towards the Queen’s Palace.

Along the way, all the mice that saw the group turned and ran away, deeply proving the famous “scurrying” aphorism used commonly on these animals. During the chaos that just occurred, their Prime Minister was captured, yet the groups of mice showed no signs of courage to rescue their leader.... From ancient times till now, it is very accurate to use the phrase “courage of a mouse” to describe cowards.

Of course, the Animal Kingdom does not only have mice here, there are also some crows. These birds scouts were originally created with magic by Gargamel. The flat feathered animals would only hover in mid air croaking “Outsider! Outsider!”. Annoyed by this, Hussein let’s loose one Dou Qi (energy) sword strike up into the air, killing seven to eight of these fleeing birds.

Seeing this, Gargamel couldn’t help but let out a painful sigh. “Oh lord knight, do you know how much efforts and experiments I did before the crows learned to speak and keep watch?

Du-Wei couldn’t help but wonder, “How do you teach these crows to speak?”

Gargamel smiled, “I’m skilled in transformation magic, so I naturally have a profound understanding of animal biology. Half of my research was on animals... Let alone a crow, even a horse...

“I remember I told you if I ever hear you lie again, I’ll cut off your mouse head.” Hussein coldly interrupted the self boasting prime minister, then said. “Do you

think I cannot see through it? Those crows cannot talk, just that you used magic to transform their voices. Crows don't have intelligence, but they do have animal instincts, capable of distinguishing between those that belong in the city or not. Whenever they encountered 'foreigners', they will call out with their voice. These crows fundamentally cannot speak the human tongue... It's just that the pronunciation of their calls was changed into 'Outsider'. Du-Wei, if you don't believe me, you can ask this mouse to command the crows to say something else. If they cannot say it, I'll immediately cut down his mouse head!"

Once this was said, Gargamel obediently closed his mouth. Du-Wei inwardly stole a laugh, but he was also quite interested in the wonderful ideas that Gargamel thought up. His method was to modify the crows vocal cords with magic, this was very similar to how the parrot trainers did it in his past life. In order to teach a parrot how to talk, the trainer would use special tools to flatten the parrot's tongue. Even though the practice is different, the principle behind it is the same.

(I personally never heard of this method)

Du-Wei contemplated, then laughed. "Gargamel, I understand your thoughts. You were originally a human, but now that you have been turned into an animal, you are worried that others would only think of you as an animal monster that could speak the human tongue. Although you live in this place uninhabited by humans, you would involuntarily want to make the other animals around you speak the human tongue. This is to ease the lonely feeling inside you, right?"

Although Gargamel didn't say anything after hearing these words, his eyes did reveal a feeling of gratitude when he made eye contact with Du-Wei.

The passage leading further into the Canyon still had two completed city walls. Looking up, these walls looked impressive to the eyes! Albeit they were just big rocks piled up together and looked somewhat crude, but their volume and height was definitely big!

"We have a lot of strong slaves. A lot of the Treants in the Canyon was fossilized by Queen Medusa.

Not only could she turn you into stone... If Queen Medusa is willing, she could even turn you into a stone slave without consciousness, a walking dead only

there to obey her commands.” After what he said, Gargamel couldn’t help but break out in cold chills. “The most terrifying thing about this was that even after death, one cannot rest in peace.”

Du-Wei let out a sigh, “This should also be one of the many terrifying magics belonging to Queen Medusa, right? If she wants to, she could create an army of living stones just by taking a look at a person or magical beast.”

Gargamel sigh, “I never questioned this point. If she is willing, she could change the magical beasts of the whole frozen forest into stone slaves.”

Du-Wei suddenly asked, “Why would an all powerful Queen Medusa stay hidden in this Canyon? The frozen forest is such a big place, why would she only stay in this small canyon?”

Du-Wei started thinking about the possible reasons, but after going up a ramp and turning a corner, they could finally see Queen Medusa’s Palace!

This palace was fully aligned in height with the surrounding two slopes beside it. The building was not made of stones, but rather wood! Du-Wei immediately recalls what Old Greenwood said, this palace was built with the physical bodies of the real Treant tribesman. Du-Wei couldn’t help but sigh from just thinking of how the gentle Old Greenwood would gnash his teeth with anger on the topic.

Gargamel stopped walking, then hesitated a second before speaking. “You guys really have to go in?” The mouse Prime Minister shifted his eyes around randomly, as if ready to escape if given the chance.

“Yes,” Hussein grimly gave him a glance. “You too.”

Gargamel moaned and cried while begging “If you are going to find the Queen of madness, then go, the palace is not big anyways. Why must you also bring me along? If Queen Medusa gets angry, I will also be punished! In the past, I have annoyed her once before and for that, she turned me into stone for a month!”

“Do you think she will have the opportunity to punish you again?” Du-Wei frowned, “Did you already assume that once we go inside, she will kill us?”

Although Gargamel didn’t say it, but it was clear from his facial expression. However, he quickly saw the anger on the knight’s face, causing him to speak quickly. “I have not seen a human for many years, so I don’t want you to die in



vain. Why not just leave now? She never leaves the palace anyways. I'm in charge of all the outside matters so if I don't say anything and pretend you've never come here, then wouldn't that be better? If you are here for the fountain of youth, then I can tell you that stupid thing is useless. Look at me, I drank many mouthfuls of that water and what benefits did I get?

"We are not here for the spring." Du-Wei spoke in a light tone, "We want Medusa's eye..... In the past, she used to be a gold eye Python, right?"

"My God....." Gargamel lets out a moaning sound again, but this time when he looked into the eyes of Du-Wei and his companions, he acted as if he was looking at three psychopaths and three already dead people. (This line isn't as funny in English, but it was so funny when I listened to it in Chinese <(^0^)> ahahahah)

No matter how much the mouse Prime Minister refused, Hussein picked him up anyways and forced him into it. Du-Wei and Dadaneier have both put on their "sunglasses". As for the normally proud Hussein, his face was still as calm and cold as ever, but he was still wise enough to put on a pair of "sunglasses". Against the strength of Medusa, even he would still have a hint of fear in him no matter how he acts.

Pushing open the tall palace gates before them, an immediate blast of cold air blew out and pressed against them. The group walked into the hall against the pressing cold, then from the surrounding walls of the hall, a row of crystals lit up and brighten up the entire hall.

In the spacious Hall, the most striking thing before them was a giant statue. The subject of the statue was a beautiful woman with curling hair. Although it is just stone, the facial features of the woman looked very clear. With a charming look and a pointy chin, it had a seductive charm to it. Just that the expression was too cold and indifferent while having a hint of cold killing intent. Her body was nearly nude with only a few large snakes on her body, covering certain key parts of the body. The serpents themselves also looked lifelike with their fangs exposed.

Beauty coupled with snakes. The statue apparently carried with it a dangerous, mysterious and seductive feeling. Du-Wei took one look, then turned towards the mouse Prime Minister with a smile. "It must be your masterpiece? Medusa

couldn't have carved this, right? Who would have known that you had such great carving skills."

Gargamel put on a wry smile, "I've been in this Canyon Valley looking at rocks for 20 years. Even if I knew nothing from the beginning, 20 years is enough to learn a lot of things."

Walking around the stone statue in the hall, there was a door in the back. After opening the door, there was a straight descending passageway. Du-Wei stood at the entrance as he looked but what he saw caused him to frown. "Hmm, this is a magic array. You taught her this, right?"

Looking at it from the door entrance, the passageway was so deep that it was almost bottomless, as if it was seemingly endless in length..... But how can it be this deep for single Palace? It's obviously under the effect of the owners magic, turning it into a useful defense facility if entered. If a person not skilled in magic had entered, they would never be able to reach the end of the passageway.

"This is actually using magic to cheat the senses of your eyes and sight. If you were to go in like that, you would think that you had traveled very far, but in reality, you would be just where you started. In order to counter this confusion spell, you just need to close your eyes....." Talking up to this point, Du-Wei suddenly had a revelation and revealed a thoughtful expression. ""And..... Queen Medusa's most terrifying weapon is the gaze from her eyes, but if she sets up this magic array, wouldn't that cause everyone to close their eyes? This is like giving up her most powerful weapon."

Or maybe, she just didn't want to accidentally hurt her own people?

Du-Wei thought up this explanation for himself.

Subsequently, the three men and the mouse closed their eyes and headed into the passageway. Du-Wei's senses were very high and Hussein's power level was very close to that of a Saint Paladin, so it was not much different if he closed his eyes or not with his keen perceptions. As for Dadaneier, there would be no problem if he followed behind the two and Gargamel was already used to this.

After entering the channel, this magic array indeed lost its usefulness. Not long after, Hussein could already feel the handle on the second door, but after opening the door, the three men were stunned by what they saw.....

After the second door..... It was actually all black! Not even a ray of light!!

“There is no light even in the place behind this.” Gargamel whispered, “That is, unless you bring your own torch.”

“Is it always like this?” Du-Wei asked the mouse Prime Minister.

After getting an affirmative answer from Gargamel, Du-Wei suddenly smiled and laughed meaningfully.

“This Medusa Queen is strange..... You can still say It was just a coincidence that the magic array is to shut the eyes of others, but this setup is completely dark, as if she was afraid of someone being mistakenly petrified by her! Could it be that she is not worried about hostile intruders breaking into this place?

## Chapter 83 - Test Of Medusa

Being a magician, especially a magically talented magician, Du-Wei's magical powers weren't very high at this time but it was because of the amount of spells he learned was too little. Despite this, his magic level is doing very well relatively speaking.

Despite being in the darkness, Du-Wei expanded his spiritual mental senses like countless antennas. Even if his eyes cannot see, an intangible feeling instantly lit up inside Du-Wei's mind, allowing him to have a full grasp of the surroundings like it was in the palm of his hand.

Even in this environment, Du-Wei still had a keener sense of the surrounding than Hussein.

"Now, hold on." Du-Wei smiled in the darkness, "First, we need to ask the Prime Minister how we should continue proceeding downwards."

"What's wrong?" Hussein cut in and asked.

"This place has a total of three doors." Du-Wei spoke lightly, "The front, left, and right, each direction has a door."

Hussein kept silent. Even though his strength was great, but he didn't have the same ability to use his spiritual powers to sense the surrounding environments. If he was in a fight where heavy movements was required, he would have no problems knowing where the foe is located. But if the enemy were standing still, then he would not be able to figure out where their location is.

"Three doors?" Dadaneier whispered, "Three of us and three doors, don't you think it's too much of a coincidence?"

"Then we will have to ask the Prime Minister here." Even in the darkness, Du-

Wei still turned his head towards Gargamel and reached out his hand to tap the mouse's shoulder. "Our lord prime minister, you came to this place before, was there so many doors in the past?"

Gargamel originally didn't want to speak the truth, but Hussein suddenly pinched his neck in the darkness and spoke in a somber voice. "Before you answer, first think clearly. My sword is very close to your neck. If you lie, I can recognize it immediately from your heartbeats and pulse!"

This level of threat was enough, so Gargamel immediately chose to tell the truth.

"This room is also a magic array, In the past when I came here, there was only a one door but the exit could be changed at the owners will. Only one door would lead to Queen Medusa, while the other fake doors are filled with illusions. This will depend entirely on the mood of Queen Medusa, if she is willing, creating 10 doors here won't be a problem." Gargamel gave a wry smile, "I think Queen Medusa already knows you are here and what she meant is that only one of you can see her."

"She's trying to keep us apart?" Dadaneier spoke in a somber voice, "This is obviously a trap. Does she really expect us to fall for it?"

"It's hard to say." Du-Wei's tone was light, "Among the three of us, whoever can see Queen Medusa will depend entirely on her intentions. We can move together and try each door one by one.... But since this is a magic array, she won't see us even if we walk through every door."

"Then lets destroy this magic array, or simply tear down the Palace!" Hussein believes in his own strength.

Out of everyone's expectation, Du-Wei raised an objection by saying. "I think splitting up into three groups may be more useful."

"Are you crazy?" Hussein was somewhat surprised, "Apart from me, I suspect neither of you would have the ability to protect yourselves if one of you were to encounter Medusa alone."

This assumption not incorrect. Among the group of three, the one with the strongest fighting strength is of course Hussein, the one with powers nearing a

Saint Paladin. The only reason the trio was daring enough to enter the Canyon Valley in order to provoke Medusa was because of such a strong presence in their mix. If it was only Du-Wei and Dadaneier, the two would never have the ability nor courage to provoke Queen Medusa, one of the worlds strongest magical beasts!

“We are after all on her plate.” Du-Wei’s voice carried a hint of enjoyment as he spoke, “Since we are guests, it’s natural for us not to be rude. I believe it would be for the better to respect the wishes of the host.”

With that said, Du-Wei silently called forth a fire magic spell from his palm and gently lifted the fireball from his hand. From the fire’s light, Dadaneier and Hussein could see Du-Wei’s facial expression.

This juvenile with a smiling face and a scheming pair of eyes looked like he had no worries. If they didn’t understand him better from the long travel time, Dadaneier would also think this child was crazy to propose the idea of splitting up to meet the terrifying monster known as Medusa. But due to the cautious and bright ideas proposed by Du-Wei so far, Dadaneier knew that this person must have some kind of idea up his sleeves.

“I mean it.” Du-Wei spoke with a smile, “Dadaneier, you and Hussein will take one path and I’ll take a path on my own. As for Gargamel..... You may take one path on your own.”

“Me?” The mouse Prime Minister froze from the shock.

“Yes, you.” Du-Wei looked at him with a calm face, then spoke gently. “You were Medusa’s subordinate so she won’t hurt you. I also think she’s not trying to make things difficult for you by putting this magic array down here. As for Dadaneier, if you were to go with Hussein, I believe there won’t even any problems.”

“What about you, boy? If you face Medusa alone, do you have the ability to protect yourself?” Hussein frowned.

Du-Wei didn’t reply, instead, he asked Gargamel one sentence. “Queen Medusa is a woman, right?”

While not understanding the meaning behind Du-Wei’s question, Gargamel

decided to answer truthfully. “..... Right.”

“It’ll be OK.” Du-Wei curled his lips and put on an indifferent smile as if talking to himself: “Since it is a woman, we wouldn’t know who is really in danger until we meet.”

Medusa’s petrifying stare.,,,

Humph, against the “Charming seductive eyes” granted by the demon. It is not guaranteed which is stronger!

This time, Du-Wei was very adamant and has made up his decision. “I’ll walk in the middle. As for the left and right sides, you can take your pick.”

With that said, Du-Wei walked forward without turning. After a few steps, he looked back at Hussein and spoke. “Don’t follow me and just do as I say... Believe in me!”

Under the brightness of the small fire, Du-Wei had a calm look full of confidence despite his childish and young face. This kind of attitude and composure left Hussein speechless.

“All right! If you must go off to meet your death, then so be it.” Hussein sneered.

Leaving his comrades behind in the back, Du-Wei walked up to the middle door in the dark room by himself. His hands already resting on the cold stone doorknob, he let out a sigh then twisted the handles with ease. With a snap, he opened the door.

Upon entering the doorway and into the unknown darkness, he could hear the door gently closing behind him. Du-Wei laughed in a low voice.... Then laughed to himself, “Did you not want to see me Queen Medusa? I have come.”

After watching Du-Wei slowly walk through the doorway and seeing the door automatically closed by itself, the light from Du-Wei’s fireball was also cut off from them. With the light gone, Hussein immediately called forth his Dou Qi and a golden aura enshrouded his body, lightning up everything.... But at the moment, Dadaneier and Hussein were both surprised to see the door that Du-Wei had entered has.... Disappeared!

Only a wall was left in the area where the door used to be!

“What are we going to do?” Dadaneier was acting a little nervous.

“Do as he says.” Hussein spoke coldly, “It was his own choice. You might as well follow me”

Then the Knight once again gave the mouse Prime Minister a glimpse, “You go ahead and choose a door! Don’t expect us to leave you here.”

Under the cold gaze of the knight, the Mouse Prime Minister lamented and helplessly picked the left door. All the while saying, “O great Queen, not that Gargamel is not loyal to you, it is just that these mobsters are too strong....”

With the disappearance of the door that the mouse Prime Minister had entered, the Knight pulled Dadaneier with him and the two also entered the final door.

“Queen Medusa, aren’t you going to see me? I have come.” At the moment, Du-Wei was in a strange land.

There was still no trace of light, just pure darkness, causing others to lose the functions of their eyes. Du-Wei was even more surprised to find that the other party has apparently used some sort of magic in the surroundings to disrupt his spiritual mental senses.

Because a strange thing occurred when he released his spiritual powers, the direction of his aim was changed every time. As if flowing through a boundless ocean, his spiritual powers would expand without end, unable to return to him. Then there was also another powerful unit of spirit force that would block him at random, sending back his spiritual mental force at every encounter.

It was obvious, the other party was preventing him from using spiritual force to explore this place.

“Dear Queen Medusa, since you called me here, why are you hiding?” Du-Wei smiled, then retracted his spiritual powers.

In the darkness, a hoarse but muffled voice came from all sides.

“You hear my call?”

Du-Wei was smiling, acting like he was not even a little nervous. “That’s



correct. In that dark room, I heard someone using sensory magic to speak to me, instructing me to select the Middle door. I sounded out my comrades and found out that they couldn't hear the voice. Only I could hear the voice, so I understood that you only wanted to see me, right?"

The hoarse and muffled voice was silent for a while, but after a pause, it spoke.

"Because you are a magician. Gargamel taught me a lot, but now, I need to learn new things, I hope you can give me this. However, before I meet you, you have to go through my test and your companions will also encounter the test. Only those that pass the test could see me."

The sound ended, but then Du-Wei felt a blur in front of him..... Then suddenly, a strong light struck down, warping the space around as if everything was disappearing.....

## Chapter 84 - I'm Lonely

Du-Wei found himself standing in the middle of a street.

Specifically speaking, he was standing in a bustling city street!

On the street corner, there is a Bookstore he used to frequent, opposite to it was a cinema along with a game store that he also frequented. Then behind it was a 24-hour KFC that he often ran to at midnight in order to get a late night snack..... (For anyone that knows, its Siu Yea. English don't have a direct translated word for this late night snack phrase)

Looking in front of him, cars were moving to and fro, then he looked at the flickering Red and Green lights, and then also the neon lights of the shops on either side of the streets....

Du-Wei froze for a moment, then he couldn't help but sigh. "Still playing this hand. This is a fantasy right?"

The passing pedestrians looked as if they were in a hurry with an indifferent look. There was even a stumbling child with a balloon in hand at the street corner....

As for himself, his Mage robe was gone. Now he was dressed in a jacket that he often wore in his past life and a pair of NIKE sneakers.

All of this was extremely like the "world" from his previous life.

Of course, it is only "like".

At this moment, the hoarse and muffled voice rang out from Du-Wei's heart. "Your heart hides a very strange world....."

Du-Wei grunted as he watched the sky, then coldly said. "Even though you

used to be a snake, but you are a person now. You should at least know how to respect other people's privacy, right?"

The hoarse voice spoke without any anger, "I'm very curious. Your inner spirit world is very different from your two companions..... Where is this strange place? Those moving subways and the no horse drawn carriages..... Also, there are those tall buildings....."

Du-Wei was fundamentally unable to listen to the noisy voice inside him. His face suddenly showed a trace of happiness as he lifted his leg to cross the road in front of him. Even when he was crossing the road, he carefully looked left and right at the oncoming cars, then he watched the red light turning to green before calmly walking on the crossing lines to reach the 24 hours KFC. Once there, he actually pulled out his wallet to buy a spicy chicken burger and a cone of ice cream.

The familiar feeling at the entrance almost caused his heart to be emotionally moved. Under the extremely realistic sweet taste of the ice cream flavor, Du-Wei closed his eyes to savor the moment, then laughed.

He sighed, "Thank you. Although you peeked into my inner thoughts, but still need to thank you for giving me the chance to look back on all of this..... Originally, I thought I had forgotten all of this, but I did not expect that my heart still remembered all of this so deeply."

Neon lights sparkled among the long streets and young teenagers naturally smiled as they walked.....

While Du-Wei was savoring the ice cream cone in his inner world, Dadaneier and Hussein have both encountered trouble on their side.

The two men stood in the middle of a circle like that of competitive arena and the surrounding venues were high and empty.

Hussein was wearing a bright silver suit of armor and on his chest was a flashy badge of the Holy Knights.

However, murderous killing intents were coming from all sides!

Nearby, holy knights have already surrounded the two in the inner circle of the arena, each of their faces carried wounds with a frosty chill. Holding their sword

up, they pointed their sword at Hussein and a murderous killing aura could be seen from the swords in their hands!

“Hussein! You betrayed the Temple. From the will of his Majesty, you still won’t surrender? Accept gods trial and perhaps by the trial, god will let you stay alive!”

A tall middle aged Knights shouted in a loud voice, his facial beard was so big that you could no longer make out his original face. But Dadaneier was surprised to find that on the chest of the middle-aged knight, other than the badge of the Holy Knights, he was also wearing a ninth level badge issued only by the cities association of knights!

Ninth level Knight? Then wouldn’t it be.....

As expected, Hussein’s face looked like he was dropped into the ocean. Staring around, he then suddenly let out a good laugh, “HA HA HA HA! What a good Medusa! You are actually capable of using this illusion trick as a weapon! Humph! Did you think that you have found my biggest weakness in my heart? Humph!” He looked at the ninth level Knight before him and sneered, “Knight leader “Hoilik”, I have killed you once before, now in this is fantasy world, I will kill you a second time!” (Hoilik is the third holy knight leader that Hussein killed)

These holy knights acted like they didn’t care what Hussein said and this huge bearded middle aged knight was indeed the already dead ninth level Holy knight leader.

Then, almost as if they can’t hear what Hussein said, Hoilik raised his hand and the 10 knights behind him held up their sword at the same time. With a flash of brightness, Dou Qi was wrapped around their swords and without pause, they struck down vertically and horizontally aiming at Hussein. At that moment, they couldn’t tell how many Sword Qi was actually coming towards where the two were standing.....

“Ice cream cone..... The latest Evangelion book..... Let me have a look. Now Medusa, from my memories, what else did you find out.....”

Du-Wei hummed a tune with his hand in his pocket and walked through the streets, all the while watching the surrounding pedestrians, vehicles and buildings.....

Really, very realistic.....

With a smile on his face, his eyes suddenly lit up as he saw a small roadside shop. Walking over, he bought of a packet of cigarettes and an emotional expression could be seen on his face. With trembling fingers, he opened the packaging and lit one for himself and took a deep puff.....

At this moment, Du-Wei was almost brought to tears by this familiar flavor.

God has mercy, I have finally got another whiff of this cigarette smell.

That familiar hint of spicy flavor as it turns inside your lung, then slowly coming out from the nose, Du-Wei could only sigh as he immersed himself in this pleasure. Then the hoarse and muffled voice rang out from his heart, "This kind of thing is harmful to the body, right? Why do you enjoy something harmful to you?"

"Oh, it looks like you learned a lot." Du-Wei smiled, "Things that are bad for you, but yet a lot of people can't refuse such things. In this world, there are too many examples like power, beauty, wine, and wealth..... Could all of those things be completely harmless to people? However, most people are drawn to it even though it is harmful to them, but most people still couldn't give up the pleasure of enjoying them... This is human nature. Medusa, that's human nature."

"Humanity....." the hoarse voice sighed, "Human nature seems to be very complicated."

"At least the thought pattern is much more complex than snakes." Du-Wei curled his mouth, "Well, thank you, at least you've let me have another taste of this cigarette smell..... Next, let us see what else you will help me remember."

With that said, Du-Wei readily threw away the cigarettes in his hands onto the ground and stamped it out with his feet.

"You don't enjoy it? Why not enjoy it little longer? You know... Once you leave this is a fantasy, you're never going to experience it again."

Du-Wei smiled with sunken eyes but there was no indecision, "Because I know that these are only fantasies. It took me a long time to let myself to forget these things, so I'm not going to allow myself to indulge in these things."

“This is human nature?” Medusa questioned.

“No, just a kind of self defense.” Du-Wei reached out and flicked his fingers and created a ball of flame.

Standing at the corner of the main street, Du-Wei freely unleashes his magic..... A roaring flame came forth from his hands and created a giant hole in the middle of the road. The raging flames immediately ignited the trees in the surroundings and even the glass windows from the nearby stores were shattered from the explosion.....

“I have to say, your illusion really is like the real thing” Du-Wei coldly laughed, “Okay, now that I’ve had enough fun, it’s time to go back.”

“Why, you’re not enjoying this? As long as you want it, you can stay here for a while longer.”

A deep grudging atmosphere was starting to cover Du-Wei’s face, then he quickly shot forth multiple fireballs from his hand. Soon, half the street was engulfed in the shadows of the raging flames! Without hesitation, he destroyed all the surrounding buildings and spoke in a cold voice, “Because I know all of this is not real! The past is in the past, reality is still reality. If I just indulged myself in this and never leave, don’t you think that is really stupid? This saying does not only apply to humans, this is also applicable to you..... Queen Medusa.”

The current scene in front of Du-Wei was like a war zone. The sky was stained with the color of flames and a fire hydrant on the side of the street reacted to the flames and exploded. Columns of water gushed out and mixed with the flames, causing burning smoke to fill the air. Squeals of cars slamming on their brakes could be heard as vehicles collided into each other, causing pedestrians to scream and scream as they fled for their lives.....

“OK, enough, if that is your test then I’m telling you now, human nature is much more complex than you think, Medusa.” Du-Wei’s eye was cold and a flaming light could be seen on his fingertips. Without hesitation, he shot it towards the fountain located at the street square, where crowds of onlookers were located.....

“Understood, then leave.” Medusa finally said, “However, your friends are not as strong as you are..... Their current situation is much more dangerous than

you.”

A whistling sound could be heard as Hussein gasp for a breath. Inside the arena, his body was covered in his golden Dou Qi and even his hair turned into a golden yellow color!

The badge and a piece of his chest armor has already been cut apart, revealing his bare chest and a bloody wound. His face was covered in blood, making his face look absolutely hideous!

Holy knight leader Hoilik was currently standing in front of him, but his condition looked a lot better than Hussein’s.

“Hussein! Could this be all your strength?” A look of anger could be seen on Hoilik’s face as he looked down at Hussein and on his own sword dripping with blood!

Why.....

Hussein questioned himself! Why I am not his opponent?

Funny! It really is funny! My strength is far better than him! Even while facing two Knight leaders, I, Hussein, could still come out victorious!

But why do I feel.....

Maybe it is because I’m still remorseful in my heart about killing them?

Watching the knight leader in front of him, Hussein felt his inner courage and battle intent slowly fade away....

In addition, there is a part of him in his heart that wanted to condemn himself!

Kill him?

I can’t!

How can I point my sword at this respectful master that taught me so much? How can I point my sword at my brothers and companions that has lived by my side?

The tearing pain in his chest has already caused Hussein to lose his focus. From the combined attacks of the knight leader and the 10 senior knights, Hussein could no longer fend off the group, even with his tyrannical powers.

But why can't I lift up the killing intent inside my heart?

It cannot be..... It cannot be! I can't kill my brothers! How can I lift my sword against my senior elders?

But..... I must survive. I want to live on and bring forth the truth to the public! The Temple lies and all the hypocrisy of the so called gods! I'll tell the world everything!! I cannot die here until I finished my quest!

So I will have to kill the people before me.....

Oh, but they're already dead! This is all but a fantasy.....

But facing them, how can I raise my sword and butcher them a second time? Facing all these familiar faces.....

Dadaneier has already collapsed on the ground. In a weak breath, he suddenly shouted. "Hussein! What are you waiting for! They are phantoms! All fake! Fake!! Why don't you fight back!!"

"Shut up!" Hussein lets out a thundering shout. Without waiting, knight leader Hoilik once again raised his sword and slashed down with his Sword Qi against Hussein. With a snort, Hussein blocked off the attack but was pushed back a series of steps by the repeated burst of attacks by the other knights. Looking at the ground, you could see cracks appearing on the ground from each of the steps he took.

Maybe I'll die in here.

I shouldn't be alive today! In order to live, I had to kill so many of my brothers and companions..... Am I so noble?

HA HA!

HA HA HA!!!

Du-Wei opened his eyes and found himself lying on top of a table.

This place was a big room, exactly like a meeting hall. In the air, there was a faint aroma. This type of scent smelled very comfortable, as if there was a warmth in one's stomach.

Du-Wei rolled over and sat up. Stretching his body, he looked out into the



empty Hall and smiled. "Thank you, I had a very good dream."

In the empty room, the sound produced by Du-Wei was gently echoing back towards him. With a sigh, Du-Wei looked around and saw that there was only a stone bed in the middle.... Or to be more accurate, it was just a large stone table.

Cold and lifeless.

"You should at least get some lights on." Du-Wei laughed, then spoke as if he was talking to himself. "On the bright side, this is at least warm.... So it won't be so lonely."

"Lonely..... What the hell is that?"

While still in the hoarse and muffled voice.... Medusa finally asked another question.

What is loneliness?

Du-Wei lowered in his head in thought for a moment, then smiled.

"Loneliness is when your heart feels empty and no one can share your feelings with you, whether it is anger, happiness, sadness, or joy..... Everything in this world doesn't have a relationship with you and no one cares about you.... You don't know why you are living in this world, you don't know what to do and you don't know what to think..... When you have these kind of feelings, this is known as loneliness!"

Medusa sighed, her voice carried a trace of weariness and a hint of weakness.

"If you say these things are what makes up 'loneliness'....." Then the color of the world must be painted in horror, the quiet voice sighed.

"I am lonely."

## Chapter 85 - Hussein's Metamorphosis

Hussein felt his strength continue to leave him as the blood drained from his body. Now, he could no longer distinguish exactly how many injuries he was carrying. The heaviest wound on his left leg was dripping fresh droplets of blood, staining his pants.

In an attempt to lean his forehead against his sword, Hussein nearly sliced off half his head. Luckily he was able to quickly dodge the weapon in time. Above his left eye, a deep wound, revealing the skull bone could be seen. Blood was seeping out and dyeing the knight's vision in a blood red coloration.

With an unbalanced body, Hussein could only hold onto the wooden crutch (walking stick) that he made before to support himself.

"Hussein, how long will you continue to struggle?" Hussein reluctantly opened his eyes as the sound of Hoilik's voice ached against his ear, but the only thing he saw was slash of Sword Qi flying towards him. Lifting his sword with his numbed arms, Hussein managed to block the attack but what followed was the crisp sound of shattering fragments. No longer able to bear the strain, the broken sword in Hussein's hand finally shattered into multiple pieces and he was also sent flying from this one strike. Unable to stop, Hussein landed across the arena and laid on the floor.

"Give it up Hussein." Knight leader Hoilik came up to where Hussein was and looked down at the already near death traitor. His voice was just like how Hussein remembered in his memory, "Hussein, God's will must not be defied. It may not be too late to repent now!"

Hussein started laughing as he lay on the floor.

His face was already buried in the fine chips of stone covering the ground so it sounded like a muffled laughter.

Subsequently, the Knight looked up and gently blew away the blood soaked hair on his forehead. With eyes like someone that has given up, he spoke. "Knight leader Hoilik..... I really want to give up. I'm tired of this lifestyle where I have to point my sword against my companions.... I'm tired of it! Even though I know you are only a phantom of my heart.... But I'm really tired. I want to be free, I really want to escape all of this. Perhaps, I wasn't meant to shoulder this heavy burden."

With that said, the knight lifted himself up in a crawl. Without a sword in his hand, he could barely keep his upper body upright and his breathing was so heavy that it was like a hole was pierced into his throat. Afterwards, the knight pointed to his throat with a finger and smiled: "It is here, here..... Stab at this point. I remembered master taught me if a sword was to pierce through this point, it would be a fatal blow, and then..... I would no longer be burdened with anything." The smile on the knight was very odd and his eyes were getting more and more sullen as he stared at knight leader Hoilik. From his eyes, you can see that Hussein has already given up as he looked up to towards the oncoming sword on top of his head.

But yet at this time, the prideful Knight once again had a hint of struggle in his eyes.... This hint of struggle was almost instinctive and no one knew where this last remnant of struggle came from.

"I..... Can I ask one last question?" Hussein gasped and his eyes showed good faith without any doubt in them. In a soft and sincere voice, "Lord Hoilik, you have taught me a lot in the past, so before I die, can you please answer my last question?"

The sword in Hoilik's hand slowed down, "Hussein, go ahead and ask."

"Tell me..... What exactly is God?"

Facing the moment of death, as if unable to give up the faith in his own heart, the Knight puts forth his own life. Until now, this was the biggest doubt in him..... Or perhaps, this question is not a problem for the Knight because in his mind, he already knew the answer.... The reason he proposed this was because

of an unyielding and unwilling cry in his heart!

What is God?

Humph! What is God!!!

What exactly is God!!!

The pious and faithful Holy Knight replied, "God is everything." Hoilik puts on a reverence expression, "Everything! All things, life, sky, Sun and moon, stars, and all the creatures. The will of everything in this world is determined by God! Each of us are living according to the will of God! So..... God is everything!"

"Oh..... All..... HA HA HA HA....." There was disappointment in Hussein's eyes, but there was also something more and that was disdain! His head was shaking and his laugh grew from small to a loud roar. His voice was also somewhat crazy and provocative, a little unruly, a little haughty, and a little rebellious!

"Oh..... Haha..... HA HA HA HA!! Everything! All!! You say?" Hussein suddenly raised his head with an unyielding anger on his face and then in a near shouting voice, he shouted out his inner thoughts.

"Why!!!"

Seemingly, a breath of life infused into the knight's heart and cracked apart the yoke of despair inside him. Light once again returned to his eyes and an indomitable fighting spirit was burning in him!

"Why!" He grunted with a painful expression on his face. Struggling to stand up, he no longer allowed Hoilik to continue looking down at him in a condescending way..... Instead, with pride, dignity, and equal to the person in front of him, he spoke: "Why! Why must God be so high and mighty! Why must all things live according to its will in order to survive? Why can it represent the will of all things? Is it the Sun? Even the sun would have a time where it would set! Is it the stars? But even the stars would have a time when it would fall! Is it time itself? But time marches on!! Why must it alone be perpetual and without change!"

Hussein's entire body was already covered in bloodied wounds but then at this moment, the wounds suddenly healed! The wounds squirmed and frantically bumped up as it tries to close up the wounds with each ticking moment.

Suddenly, a deep golden light burst forth from his eyes and chest! Then... a rumbling sound could be heard!

A brilliant golden light suddenly erupted from Hussein's already dying body!

Not the pale golden light from before! But instead, real deep gold like that of the sun! Bright and brilliant!

Bathed in the burning energy, Hussein closed his eyes and clenched his fist. A glimmer of peace could be seen on his face as the roaring golden flames engulfed his body, cleansing his soul, bones, and muscles in his body....

This feeling is very..... Comfortable.

As if reverting back into a fetus inside a womb and soaking in the amniotic fluid. His whole body had a warm feeling coursing through him as if the liquid was moistening his withered soul and reincarnating his entire being!

As Hoilik's sword made contact with the golden Dou Qi, the sword immediately melted away!

Hoilik looked at Hussein, then shouted in a roar. "Obstinate traitor, die!"

With a howling sound, the sword struck down like a falling meteor as it aimed at Hussein's head!

But.....

Gently opening his eyes, Hussein casually reached out his hand and gripped the oncoming blade.....

Easily gripping the blade with his powerful hand, no matter how much Hoilik struggled, the ninth level knight was unable to budge the sword even an inch.

Drops of blood were dripping down the palm of his hand holding the blade. Each droplet of blood seemed to turn into a golden color as it touched the ground! Enshrouded inside the golden Dou Qi, the wound on the palm immediately healed and the sword was slowly melting away as it burned under the light!

At that moment, the rebellion Hussein finally changed!

Opening his eyes, the pupil has completely turned into a golden color. With an

indifferent face, he looked at Hoilik and spoke in a gentle but understating tone, as if pledging, he said:

“Even if you say God represents the will of everything in this world..... However, I’m an exception! My will is free and will not be enslaved by anything! Even if the other person is the so called God!”

Gently lifting one hand, then gently falling down like leaves in the wind. Hoilik was easily beheaded and blood sprayed out into the air!

Hussein slowly puts down his hand and quietly looked at it. His eyes were almost motionless as he spoke, “This.... Is the power of a Saint Paladin?”

“You see, my friends can solve it by themselves.” Du-Wei smiled confidently, calmly sitting down on the floor. In front of him was a stone wall and on the wall was a surface like rippling waters. Appearing on this surface was a picture: Hussein was enshrouded in a golden Dou Qi, then with a wave of a single hand, the powerful knight leader was easily beheaded by Hussein.

“Thank you, this thing is like a movie..... Well, even if you don’t know what movies are.” Du-Wei said it with a smile.

Medusa’s hoarse and deep voice sounded puzzled: “Didn’t he give up already earlier? Why all of a sudden he would...”

“This is the human faith.” Du-Wei replied in a solemn tone, “Remember, this is the human ‘faith’. This power may be present in every person’s heart. You can’t really see it when it’s weak, but you will see it when it explodes.... You saw it, this faith..... Is a part of human nature.”

## Chapter 86 - The Second Spring!

“Faith.....” Medusa whispered in a low voice, and then she asked again: “However, didn’t the Knight forsake his faith already? He should’ve been a man without faith.”

“This is different.” Du-Wei calmly spoke: “There is faith in every person’s heart. Hussein may have forsaken his previous faith and beliefs, but that doesn’t mean he had lost faith! However, when he abandoned one kind of faith, he has already adopted a new kind of faith! This is common among everyone. Whether this belief is just, or evil, every living person must have their own belief and faith. A person could only gain strength and courage when he has faith in his heart. The stronger the faith, the more powerful the person becomes!”

Talking up to this point, Du-Wei smiled and asked: “With all that said, how much do you understand?”

“I don’t know.” Medusa’s voice was low: “Greed..... Nostalgia..... Weak..... Coldness..... Loneliness..... Also, faith..... These are what you call ‘human nature’. This human nature stuff is too complicated.”

“It’s always complicated.” Du-Wei quickly spoke: “Humanity is the most complex creature in this world. Among all the living creatures, humanity has the most abundant emotions. We know how to love, show affection, create friendship, but at the same time, we can be the most cruel. Specialized in killing, infighting, and killing of our own kind! Throughout human history, it has always been humanity fighting against each other. You kill me, I kill you. This has always been the cycle..... Medusa, if you think seeing inside the three of us is enough for you so to understand and grasp human nature, then you are wrong.”

Talking up to this point, Du-Wei asked her, “Now tell me, did I pass the test?”

After a long moment of silence, “Yes, you have passed. ”

In moments, Du-Wei could finally see the legendary Medusa.

From the wall in front him, a rustling sound could be heard as a humanlike figure slowly stepped forth.... Her whole body seemingly made of stone, or accurately speaking, her entire being seemed like to be merged into the stone itself.

Of course, Queen Medusa is a woman.

The moment her body stepped forth from the wall, the stone like texture of her body started to fade away. Changing from the cold and grayish color, her delicate looking body transformed into a marvelous shade of white with smooth and soft skins. From the head, her strands of hair started to soften and smooth out, revealing a glossy shine.

The contour of her face was also becoming clear.... And it was extremely beautiful.

Even Du-Wei had to admit it. Whether it was this life or the previous, the Queen Medusa in front of him was the most beautiful woman he had ever seen! Every skin, every curve, it was like a piece of art work carefully and rigorously calculated by the creator. Her legs, her hips, her arms, her chest, all of their ratios seemed to have reached a perfect state. On top of all this, snakes are inherently charming. Without any effort, every movement she makes are seductively charming.

However, all of this didn't matter..... What really stunned Du-Wei was her face!

It can be said that this face would drive any man crazy! Du-Wei could not even find the right words to describe such a beautiful face.....

Du-Wei knew he had been frozen in shock, as if a blind person had just regained his sight and was awestruck by what appeared in front of him!

Du-Wei was willing to bet that such a beauty absolutely cannot exist in the world of humanity! If word of this were to spread, it would no doubt cause a disaster in the making!

Oh heaven..... Just by looking at those pairs of red, delicate lips, he couldn't help but sigh.



Du-Wei has seen many beautiful women, but to be so beautiful that it reaches a disastrous level, then, Queen Medusa is definitely the first one!

And..... Her eyes were still closed!

Du-Wei can guarantee that if she opened her eyes and if it was even one-third of the word 'glorious'.... Oh heavens, what would Queen Medusa's eye be like? With an absolutely beautiful face, if you could also embellish a pair of star like gems into her eyes..... Then her face alone is enough to murder the hearts of almost every man in this world!

This Medusa Queen is really beautiful..... Too beautiful.....

An inhumane beauty! And a terrifyingly beauty!!

After a good while, Du-Wei finally regained his composure. The first thing he did was to take in a deep and long breath, letting oxygen into his deprived lungs from being awestruck earlier.

"It was fortunate that you have always lived here and not let others meet you." Du-Wei made an assessment, "Otherwise, with your beauty, there will be people going crazy over you even if you are the horrible Medusa. In some cases, they may even wage war against each other to control you!"

Medusa asked gently, "This is human nature?"

Standing in front of Du-Wei, Medusa's voice was no longer the hoarse and deep voice like before. Apparently, her voice was issued forth by oscillating the sound off the wall..... Of course, her true voice was very nice to the ears.

Du-Wei was very pleased with this fact..... This way of thinking is of course very natural. If one were to meet a woman capable of murdering the hearts of men, but the voice coming out of her mouth is hard on the ears, then this is a sin!

Thank heavens, her voice sounded like the gently flowing water in a spring creek.

"Sort of....." Du-Wei smiles: "However you like it. If put into the world of humans, this will absolutely cause men to war against each other."

"I'm not human." Medusa replied with a trace of sadness.

Then she gently came close to Du-Wei: "Gargamel said that most humans

would be afraid of me. To humanity, Medusa is considered to be a terrible monster, frightening even..... Why are you not afraid of me? I can feel your strength..... Is not powerful.”

“I’m not ‘strong’ compared to you. It can even be said that I am very weak in front of you.” Du-Wei smiled, “But why would I be afraid of you?”

“I don’t know, but Gargamel said humans are very much afraid of Medusa.” Shaking her head with her eyes closed, she then flicked her slender fingers through the air. Slowly, the stone surface beside her rolled forth like dough and formed a stone chair. Calmly sitting down, Medusa turned her face towards Du-Wei and spoke: “You came to see me and now you could see.”

“Yes, I could see.” Du-Wei sighed: “What I see is not something that strikes fear into humanity. Nor a being that indiscriminately kills and turns others into stones..... What I see is a misfortunate woman living in seclusion, with a lonely heart, and currently seeking her own form of faith..... Oh, by the way, on top of that, a snake that don’t like to be turned into a human beauty.”

“You’re really funny and an interesting human.” Medusa thought for a moment and then smiled: “Although I didn’t have much exposure to humans, you are the second person to speak with me besides Gargamel. Originally, I was going to kill you and your companions. I may not be human and don’t fully grasp human nature, but at least I know I do not like to be disturbed.”

Du-Wei kept his silence, unable to speak.

Indeed, the other party used to be a golden eye python. No matter what, her nature resembles that of a ‘beast’ more than a human.

“I know, so that’s why I have the courage to come see you.” Du-Wei spoke frankly: “Because I know you are not simply an evil monster only capable of killing like they say in the legends.... You are just..... Please forgive me for using the word ‘ignorant’.”

Medusa doesn’t look like she cared in the slightest: “you’re right, I was ‘ignorant’. At the very least, my understanding of humans is close to nothing.”

Just as humans have always described a fierce animal as fierce, a cruel Wolf, a cunning Fox, and a terrifying magical beast..... In fact, all these sayings are based

upon human standards to measure other biological creatures.

No matter whether it is a wolf, a fox, or a terrifying magical beast..... Can they really be 'bad'? Really 'evil' and 'terrifying'? Of course not.... Because they are living their life based on their own species' standard.

A wolf was born to eat meat, Lions and tigers are born to kill, and this is the law of the world. It cannot be just because of this that we could label them as evil and murderous beings.

Medusa is the same.

One arm against her cheek as she sat on the stone chair, Medusa gently raises a question: "Well then, human, tell me your reason for coming."

"Originally, I was only here for the fountain of youth." Du-Wei said, "But now, it seems the fountain doesn't actually have much use. In addition to solidifying the outer appearance of the person, this thing doesn't seem to have much benefit for humans..... Oh, you wouldn't kill me because of this reason now would you? I heard from Gargamel that years ago, the group that came with him was completely wiped out by you."

Medusa truly smiled, with curving lips, her outer appearance had more of a human taste to it: "That was when..... I didn't understand. Back then, I was just a humanoid snake without anyone to teach me human nature. I simply knew that outsiders came into my territory, so I had to kill them. It was that simple.... You can thank Gargamel for teaching me at least some habits of humanity, or else, when you guys stepped into the Canyon valley the other day, I would have already killed you."

"My purpose for coming here is no longer important because after talking to Gargamel, I have already lost interest in this spring. But my two companions still had other purposes for coming." Standing in front of Medusa, Du-Wei felt it was better to be honest than to tell a lie. Maybe he might even gain some benefits from this.

"The lord and master of one of my companions is under the spell of a petrification curse, and must have the eyes of a golden eyed python to save her. The reason we came to the frozen forest is to search for this important item." Du-Wei discreetly glanced at Medusa to see her reaction.

“So originally you had set your eyes on me?” Medusa’s face remained unchanged, not revealing any hint of anger or joy.

“Used to be, but not anymore.” Du-Wei spoke with a smile: “I think, as the final evolution of the golden eyed Python, you should be able to cure this kind of petrification curse without the use of your eyes.”

“Why should I help you?” Medusa’s voice remained as calm as ever as she spoke: “Gargamel has taught me one point and that is often in human ‘deals’, there is always a price when making a request.”

“I’m a good teacher.” Du-Wei smiled: “You are a snake that doesn’t want to be human, but now you have no choice. So, I’d like to teach you a lot about human habits. Of course, the most important is human nature.”

“Everything?”

“Everything.” Du-Wei firmly replied, “But I can’t guarantee that you will feel very happy because human life has never been pure pleasure. Human nature is both sweet and painful. If you want to experience this, I can teach you even more. For example, right now, I can start teaching you the first lesson.”

Medusa was silent for a moment, “And what’s that?”

“Loneliness.” Du-Wei muttered: “You are lonely. Your face, your voice, your words, and you living in this place.... All of it points to this.”

“I am very lonely.” Medusa nodded, “If loneliness is what you said before, then what you said is correct.”

“Do you like that feeling?” Du-Wei smiles.

Medusa thought for a long time and shook her head slowly.

“It’s simple. I can let you get rid of loneliness.” Du-Wei spoke: “Humanity is a social animal, if you don’t want to be lonely, then you need to communicate with other humans. For example, find your friends or companions.

Then, Du-Wei raised a second question: “Do you have faith in your heart?”

“No.” Medusa answered this very quickly. For one that has only been sleeping, only to awaken once every ten years, she would of course not have any beliefs and faith.

“Humanity needs faith and purpose in life..... Even if it’s just a bit, the small, subtle things can cause you great interest.” Du-Wei laughed more pleasantly: “Trust me. When it comes to fun things, no one is more skilled than me in this world. ”

In the wake of the two issues, Du-Wei puts forward a third problem: “Do we have a deal?”

The answer..... Is self-evident.

•

When Hussein woke up, he was lying on the floor in the hall just like Du-Wei was. As for Dadaneier, he was also lying beside Hussein, slowly regaining consciousness.

Also, the poor mouse Prime Minister Gargamel was sitting next to him with a nervous expression. From his eye’s reflection, Hussein could see Du-Wei is walking towards them with a smirking smile.

And behind Du-Wei, stood a woman.

Hussein immediately jumped up from, but before the knight could make his move, Du-Wei called out to him: “Well then Hussein, come and meet our new partners.”

No introduction needed because Gargamel has already fallen over on the ground with his body trembling. Looking at the woman, his body twisted into something like that of a meat roll.

“This is our new partner, Queen Medusa.” Once Du-Wei finished talking, he pulled Dadaneier up and gave him something like a small stone bottle.

“Here, this is one strand of Queen Medusa’s hair. After taking this back, take it out from the bottle and it will become a sleeping golden eye python. Use it to save the Marquise of Lister.” Du-Wei said this while smiling.

While Dadaneier was still in shock as he received the bottle, Du-Wei has already walked over to where Hussein stood. Patting the knight’s shoulder, Du-Wei spoke: “My friends, don’t be so stunned. Right now, the Queen is going to take us to see the fountain of youth. Didn’t say you wanted to go see the place where Aragon has gone before? Now, come on.”

The strikingly beautiful Queen Medusa has also shaken Hussein's heart. His hand was on the hilt of his sword, but put down involuntarily as he looked upon the woman. What's more is that after hearing Du-Wei's words, his mind was somewhat at a loss on to do next.

"Okay, now is not the time to draw my sword." Du-Wei tapped Hussein's shoulder and laughed in a low voice: "I saw that in your dreams, you were able to advance to the level of Saint Paladin..... Speaking of this, I believe you to thank her Majesty the Queen."

Seeing Du-Wei drag Hussein with him as they walked towards the door behind them, Medusa wordlessly walked in front like a ghost.

Dadaneier broke out of his stupor state when Gargamel sighed.

The mouse Prime Minister moaned: "What..... Is this teen doing? Oh the gods..... He seemed to be getting along very well with the Queen, or am I dreaming? Could the legend be true?! Oh my god! He will not... He will not....."

"What are you muttering to yourself?" Dadaneier frowned.

"You never heard of the legend?" Gargamel stared at dadaneier, "Queen Medusa's legend."

Dadaneier shook his head.

"The Legend....." Gargamel sighed, eyes looking at Du-Wei's back as he whispered: "From the records of the oldest documents, other than the terrible powers that Medusa wielded, there is also a special point..... It is that if she cried for any being.... Whether it was a man, women, or even a monster. If they could make Medusa cry out the first tear of her life, then Medusa would forever love that person. Your teenage companion couldn't be playing at this idea, right?"

Dadaneier didn't bother listening to Gargamel's words. Rubbing his eyes, he muttered: "Strange, How come when I wake up again, this teenager has already solved the entire problem.

Touching the stone bottle that Du-Wei handed him..... There was a hair belonging to Medusa that can be turned into a sleeping golden eye python..... Dadaneier was finally completely awake!

There is hope for the Marquise of Lister!!

“The Spring is here,” Medusa points to the front.

Medusa casually chants a few words in a spell. Then in a corner of the hall, the stone slab in front of them quietly opens up. Immediately from below, an exquisite fountain carved out of stone revealed itself.

“This is the fountain of youth that you are looking for.” Once Medusa finished her introduction, Du-Wei was somewhat disappointed.

It seems..... There is nothing special.

But then one word from Medusa surprised Du-Wei!

“This is the first spring; do you also want to look at the other spring in this Canyon?”

“This Canyon has another spring? What the hell is it?” Du-Wei looked at Medusa in surprise.

“I don’t know what it is.” Medusa answered coldly: “However, this fountain is the exact opposite of the fountain of youth, so I gave it a name, called..... As time goes by.”

# Chapter 87 - Poison Of Time

As time goes by?

Whether it was Du Wei or Hussein, they could never have expected there would be the existence of another fountain near the fountain of youth.

Medusa still had a cold appearance as she led the two men's out of the hall and into the depths of the palace.

"This palace of yours, is it completely built out of the bodies of the Treants tribesman? Du Wei casually asked this question as they moved.

"It is." Medusa suddenly stopped and questioned Du Wei instead: "Is there a problem?"

This time to speak up was Hussein: "Don't you think it was a little bit too harsh? While you and the trees are both enemies to each other, but you should at least respect their corpses."

"Respect for the body....." Medusa spent a moment in thought as she carefully savored this word, and then asked Du Wei: "Is this also human nature?"

Du Wei smiled, "Sort of."

"But, I don't understand." The words from Medusa seemed sincere and truthful: "I don't understand this 'human nature'. I've heard many things about human from Gargamel. You humans would kill different beasts to eat their flesh, strip off their skins, and turn them into clothing or ornaments.... Why do you humans act this way, but still spout such words as to respect the corpses of others? I'm using the bodies of the Treant's tribesman to build my home, while you humans are killing animals to eat their meat and turn them into clothing. Essentially, there isn't any difference between the two scenarios, correct?"

Medusa probably doesn't understand human nature, and perhaps she doesn't even understand anything. But for such a simple question, her words have left both the scholarly Du Wei and the experienced knight in a stump for words.

Well..... Is there any difference?

Medusa carefully thought for a moment, and then gently smiled: "Looks like



I've summarized another characteristic of human nature, which is..... Hypocrisy. Are humans always saying one thing and doing another?"

Du Wei puts on a wry smile, unsure of how to respond to Medusa's question. Letting out a sigh, he responded: "sometimes..... It is."

"I don't like this characteristic of human nature, nor do I don't like humans." Medusa summarized this and ended the conversation, continuing to move forward with the two in tow.

Outside the Hall and through a corridor, Medusa opened a door leading into a black room. Upon entering, Du Wei could feel a sudden chill in the air.... This icy chill was different from the snow outside as if the air was wet, capable of penetrating through the clothing and into the human skin, bones, and gut!

Having this chill covering his body, Du Wei immediately felt numbingly cold as if his body was being pierced by numerous sharp needles. For a time, even his fingers felt like it was freezing into ice!

"It's here."

In the darkness, Medusa walked forward as usual as if she was born without eyes.

"This is my bedroom. I usually sleep here." Medusa points to a stone slab on the surface, "'As time goes by' is right there."

"Sleep here..... Aren't you cold....." Du Wei stopped speaking when he reached this point, suddenly realizing that snakes are cold blooded animals.

Lifting up the stone slate, Du Wei saw that below the ground was an opening hole for the spring. From the opening, the spring's water was flashing in the darkness, almost like it was glowing with light. After removing the slate of stone, Du Wei could feel the chill in the air increase 10 folds!

"What is this water.... Why is it so cold! Yet, it does not freeze?" Unable to stop himself, Du Wei started trembling from the cold and even his teeth's were making a chattering noise.

Worried he might freeze to death if he continued ignoring the cold, Du Wei quickly performed the Stars Dou Qi set of movements. Once finished, the heat

swelled up inside his body and drove out a bit of the cold air.

But Du Wei found that even for the knight, his face was covered in a thin layer of white frost! The moment the sweat on Hussein's face came into contact with the air, it would freeze instantly!

"This spring was only discovered by me after I came to this place, not even the Treants knew this spring existed." Medusa muttered.

"The Treant Tribesman doesn't know....." Du Wei sighed, "Just from looking, this spring is weird..... Is there anything special about it?"

Medusa didn't say anything, but then she smiled and spoke in a light tone: "The black object you brought along with you was meant to be used against my eyes, right? It would be better if you were to wear it now."

Du Wei smiled guiltily and pulled against Hussein's shirt so that he will also put on his sunglasses.

Medusa gently pulled out a strand of her hair and placed it into her palm. Muttering a few chanting words, the hair twisted twice on her raised and flat palm, then quickly turned into a snake roughly the size of her thumb!

The snake was completely gold in coloration as if each scale on its body was made out of pure gold. After twisting around a few times, the snake rapidly lifted its head up and made a hissing sound with its eyes closed.

"This is a golden eyed Python. In order for the golden eyed python to grow into the size of a human waist, it would require decade's worth of time to mature....." As Medusa says this, she slowly reached out to carefully scoop up a handful of the spring's water and fed it into the mouth of the golden eyed python.....

Then a miracle happened at this moment!

Medusa gently puts the snake down, then took a step back....

Under the careful observation of Du Wei and Hussein's naked eyes, the snake's body suddenly swelled up! Its scales constantly expanding and its body changed from the size of a thumb, into the size of a trunk! Not only was it getting bigger, the snake was also growing in length! Also, the previously closed eyes of the python were wide open.

Open!

Even under the protection of the black crystal sunglasses, Du Wei was still able to clearly see the snake's eyes emitting a strange golden light! Upon eye contact with the python's eye, Du Wei immediately felt a pain in his eyes, causing him to turn his head away!

Fortunately, they had the protection of the black crystal sunglasses, or else they would have most likely been turned into stone.

Next, the snake started rolling around on the floor as though it was in pain. It twisted around, then twisted a second time, and finally issued a subtle 'Chee Chee' sound.....

It was actually in the process of molting!!!!

On the surface of where it molted, a nearly complete flashing golden colored snakeskin was left behind near Du Wei's feet. As for the snake, it was still continuing to grow in size! Finally, the size of its body was so big that it could cover more than half the size of the black room, forcing Du Wei and his group to stand in a corner!

Later on, Du Wei silently computed in his mind that the snake has molted three more times in just a few minutes' worth of time!

And then..... It began to age!

The huge body of the snake started to become weak and frail. The normally elastic body was becoming dry and even the normally shiny scales were dimming down. Bit by bit, its strength faded away and eventually its head just lay there helplessly, unable to move.....

Under the snake's skin, its flesh-and-blood began withering away. Finally..... The snake died and its body rapidly dried up like a jerky! Then the snake's skin ruptured as if it was dried leather.....

"According to your human calculation, a golden eye python should have the life span of 40 years." Medusa's voice resounded inside the room: "From birth to death, the golden eyed python will molt four times during this period. After the fourth molt, its power and magic will reach its prime."

Du Wei felt his heart racing!

More than 40 years?

But just now, how long was that experience? At most only ten minutes? No, probably only five or six minutes!

Within five or six minutes, a young golden eye Python has gone through its early age to its adult form. Then molting four times to reach its old age..... And then to death..... Within five minutes, the snake has covered its 40-year life span!?

“So, this is why I said this spring is the exact ‘opposite of the fountain of youth.” Medusa smiled, “I named it ‘As time goes by.’”

After a pause, the beautiful snake woman laughed loudly: “Gargamel said that if this spring was used as a poison, then it will be the most terrifying poison in the world!”

Du Wei and Hussein both looked stunned and shocked in their eyes!

Indeed, this really is the most terrifying poison in this world!

Time!

What poison can be more terrifying than the passage of time?!

Du Wei was thinking more.....

Why is that? Why is this “As time goes by” not somewhere else, but instead, it is located near the fountain of youth?

Just like nature, everything vaguely reinforces each other in the natural order of the world! One will forever solidify a form; the other causes time to pass quickly!

So, if the two springs are mixed together, what kind of miraculous effect would come of it?

Or instead, if a person drank the water of the ‘fountain of youth’ ended up drinking the water of ‘As time goes by’ ..... What will happen then?

Of course, Du Wei hid these questions in his heart. He would never say these things in front of others.... Spending a moment in thought, he asked: “The

spring's water, can I take some with me?"

After getting the consent of the Medusa, Du Wei unceremoniously removed all the bottles on his body, and then dumped all the drugs inside to make room for the water..... All of these drugs could be found again once they leave this place, but once they leave, he would never be able to get his hand on the spring's water again, even if he searched the entire world!

Du Wei brought out all of the bottles on him and filled up a few of the bottles with the waters of 'As time goes by', then filled the last remaining bottle with the water from 'The fountain of Youth'.

"Why did you bring with you this terrifying 'As time goes by'? Hussein frowned as he spoke, "This kind of thing can only poison people and doesn't have any other use."

"You forget, I am a magic pharmacist, a poison pharmacist!" Du Wei vaguely muttered the last part.

His heart had another intention.

'As time goes by'..... What if it was cleverly used?

Feeding the golden eye python just a handful of water is enough to poison it to death in five minutes.

But..... What if you just drink less? Cleverly diluting the spring's water to a certain extent? Would it be possible to just let the person grow older and not die of old age?

So..... What if we let the Treant tribesman outside drink it? Maybe we could make a seedling grow into a towering tree within a short period of time?

If too much, then drink a drop! If a drop is too much..... Then add a drop of this spring's water into a bucket of water for dilution!

Du Wei was just far too curious regarding this thing!

Even after filling a few bottles, he still felt it was far too little and sheepishly looked at Medusa: "Do you still have other containers around here?"

Instead, it was Hussein that took out his personal belongings..... A leather bottle used to carry his wine, only after filling it up with the spring's water did Du

Wei finally felt satisfied.

Once I bring this back with me, I will have the opportunity to slowly study it!

“I was very surprised..... You are a golden eyed python that evolved by drinking the waters of the fountain of youth.” Du Wei spoke slowly, “But why did you not let other golden eyed Python drink the spring’s water?”

“Because I’m selfish.” Medusa answered without batting an eye: “There’s only one Medusa, my words are law! If there is more than one..... Then without a doubt, there will be a war. If there was a group of my kind, then maybe I will die.”

“Very good, you at least have a little bit of human nature.” Du Wei laughed: “Because generally speaking, humans are the most selfish creatures in this world.”

After a pause, Du Wei spoke with a smile: “Well then... Dear Majesty, what’s next?”

We have reached a deal. I’m willing to teach you everything about human nature.... So are you ready to join us and hit the road? Or stay here and wait till we finish our business and come back to get you?”

Medusa’s decision was quite surprising for everyone.

“I’m leaving with you,” The Queen did not hesitate to answer.

Du Wei was stunned, “You..... Are you saying that you will join our team?”

“No, not joining your team, just following you to leave.” Medusa spoke in a light tone: “I do not like human beings, nor do I believe humans. From Gargamel, I heard that the behavior of humans is to not keep their promises. So I’m going to follow you.”

Then... This indifferent and peerless beauty suddenly smiled while speaking: “And I have been here far too long! You should have seen it when you came in.... There are mice everywhere! And when I was a snake, I hated mouse’s the most!”

Du Wei smiled.

Yes, in the food chain, snakes are the natural enemies of mice!

Without a doubt, his companions have doubts and fears toward this Queen. Even Du Wei wasn't certain if this move wouldn't bring catastrophe to mankind.

This is not some random person! It is the most horrifying monsters known as Queen Medusa! As soon as she comes into contact with the human world, she could just open her eyes and look around.... Then there would be a bloodbath!

"Your majesty....." The mouse Prime Minister suddenly threw himself at her feet, "If you left, what am I supposed to do! Of those trees were to intrude, how can I possibly stop them!"

"Then just don't stop them." Medusa talked as if she held no lingering feelings towards this 'kingdom'. "This Canyon is their land, return it to them."

Old Greenwood has already been impatiently waiting outside the Canyon with his 'companions'. Each step that Old Greenwood took was enough to shake the ground from time to time.

Seeing Du Wei and his group coming out, Old Greenwood suddenly cheered and his 'companions' suddenly let out a whistling ROAR.

"Mr Old Greenwood." Du Wei pleasantly walked in front of the Treants: "We have persuaded the evil eye, starting today, she will return the Canyon to the Treants..... However, on one condition. I just need the Treant Tribesman to commit to one simple condition. I believe the good and gentle Treant's race would never break their promises."

What else could be said? Old Greenwood readily agreed at once.

"The Canyon is returned to you and the fountain of youth is inside..... But" Du Wei spoke slowly: "Inside the deepest part of the Palace, there is a black room; this place is banned to all parties. I request you to promise that the Treant's race will guard this place and not allow anyone to get in! Or allow any creature to get near, whether it is magical beasts, humans, or anything else! You must stop them with all your strength! Other than this request, I have nothing else to ask."

Before coming out, the powerful Knight had used his golden Dou Qi to split apart the palace with a few swings of his sword. With the palace gone, what was revealed is the original grounds and the 'fountain of youth', while the 'As time goes by' is quietly buried inside the intact black room.

The treant leader couldn't adequately express his gratitude. Despite the grievance of a century's worth of fighting, the kind and generous Treant's tribesman didn't hold any grudge against the evil eye. As long as they could take back the heritage of their race: The fountain of youth, they had no other requests.

Old Greenwood promised on the spot that they would kill any intruders that attempts to enter.

"Dear..... Guests..... Is the piece..... Of leaf.... I gave you.... Still here?"

Du Wei hesitated as he goes through his body in search of the gold leaf presented to him by Old Greenwood before they entered the Canyon. Originally, he thought after entering, they would be in a big battle with Medusa. The results were that it was useless. "Oh, I almost forgot, I'll return this to you." Du Wei said this with a smile.

"No! You..... Keep." Old Greenwood's honest voice trembled with an emotion of gratitude. Then he held out a branch and gently twisted up the leaf. Afterwards, several branches twisted and folded the golden leaf several times back and forth. Once finished, what became of the leaf was a golden colored horn!

Old Greenwood then told Du Wei an amazing secret!

This piece of gold leaf is produced by the Treant's treasure, the "natural horn"!!

Once you fold this pure gold leaf into a small horn and blow into it....

As long as you are surrounded by trees, you could awaken the trees into Treant 'Companions'.

(Even though Du Wei felt these things were just slaves to the real Treants.)

"You..... Can..... Drive..... Them to..... Do..... Anything..... For you." Old Greenwood explained, "But... There is..... A... Time..... Limit."

The so called time limit was that when the sun goes down, they would return to being normal trees.

"In other words, the limit of awakening is only one day." Du Wei smiled.



He was so happy!!!

If..... If I could dilute the water of 'As time goes by' to a certain extent..... Then what would it mean?

As long as I carried a seed!

I would be like carrying around a swarm of giant bodyguards with me no matter where I go!!!

## Chapter 88 - Close To The Answer

Clear skies like flowing waters.

Surprising Du Wei and his group, the weather was actually clearing up. In this land of ice and snow, the wind actually stopped blowing and snow stopped pouring down. Although the weather was still very cold, but at least it was a lot brighter with the sun hanging in the sky.

“Are we going to continue heading north?” Du Wei took a look at Hussein. From his heart, he really didn’t want to go because he was forcibly brought here by the old magician and ended up going through so much suffering. The most depressing thing was that he didn’t even know when these types of days will come to an end.

Hussein coldly replied, “Yes, to the North.”

“But, you should at least tell me where on earth are we heading to?” Du Wei suffocated for many days under these conditions and at this moment, his temper is finally about to explode, “I think I have a right to know where we are going! Otherwise, why should I continue traveling in this god forsaken place just to continue on a journey?”

Hussein was silent for a while, pondering for a moment and slowly said: “It’s not that I don’t want to tell you, but..... I don’t know either.”

“You don’t know?” If he wasn’t facing a Saint Paladin, Du Wei would ruthlessly walk over and give the other party a major kick with his foot!

What is this place? The ice-covered forest famed across the whole continent! If we were to continue heading north, we wouldn’t know what else lies beyond this place at all!

“Undying old fool only told me to go north. Specifically, he is the only person who knows the exact location of where we are going.” Hussein was telling the truth. Du Wei was upset over this fact, but he had no doubt regarding the knight’s words..... Because in the past several days, Du Wei already has a deep understanding of Hussein’s character.

The prideful person would absolutely disdain any form of lies.

“But what if he didn’t keep up with us? What if he can’t find us? Didn’t he go help you by distracting the soldiers following behind us? What if he was killed by the people from the temple?” Du Wei cursed, “Are we just going to keep heading all the way to the north? Further north, wouldn’t we end up in the Arctic Circle?”

“The Arctic Circle? What is the Arctic Circle?”

Du Wei doesn’t bother explaining, instead, he just rolled his eyes back.

Dadaneier has been standing on the sideline the entire time watching the dispute between the two. Then suddenly, in a whisper, he asked: “Excuse me you two, can I say a word?”

“What is it?” My friend, if you have something to say, then feels free to tell me.  
“Facing Dadaneier, Du Wei was acting very kindly.

A trace of shame could be seen on Dadaneier’s face, as if he was afraid to look Du Wei in the eyes: “I..... I’m so ashamed, but I have to say it..... My friends, I have to go back. I cannot go further north with everyone.”

Du Wei thought and thought, then he immediately got it!

Dadaneier’s purpose was to look for the Python’s eye so that he could save his mistress’s life, save the Marquise of Lister’s life! Moreover, the Marquise only has three months’ worth of time left. He has already spent quite a long period of time in his quest, now that he has achieved his goal, Dadaneier must hurry back before the time limit runs out.

Du Wei had no doubt that this friend isn’t a coward in front of death, nor does he believe that the friendship they had built between the two is false. But Dadaneier has no choice but to head back because he bears the burden of saving his mistress’s life!

“I feel so ashamed, my friend. I’m willing to accompany you on this adventure, even if I die, I would never regret it. “This warrior of the Lister family bowed his head:” But, I have no choice but to leave you because the life of the Marquise is on the line. Since I have found the item to save her life, I must return. My friends.... I feel really disgusted at myself. I.....”

Du Wei sighed as he held onto Dadaneier to stop him from bowing. Then, with his hand, he patted Dadaneier’s back a few times as he spoke in a loud voice: “No need to say anymore, my friend! I understand and can relate. I believe you are a brave and a person loyal to your friends!”

“However, to be able to find the golden eye python was because of you.... Now, I’m leaving you right after we found what I came for....” Dadaneier looked at Du Wei with a painful expression.

“No need to say anymore!” Du Wei shook his head: “Friends are in the heart! I know you’re a good man. At the very least, you almost died trying to save me the other day. I understand your difficulties.”

But then, Du Wei thought of another question: “But..... How will you get back?”

Not that Du Wei looked down on Dadaneier, it is just that with Dadaneier’s strength, it would too dangerous to let him travel alone through the frozen forest and return to the human world! Along the way, he was luckily able to meet Du Wei, and besides them was the invisible old magician secretly protecting them. Then later on, they were only able to reach the big round lakes by joining the snow Wolf mercenary group. If it weren’t for Du Wei and Hussein accompanying him..... Of course, it was mainly because the powerful presence of Hussein that Dadaneier was able to get here in the first place!

And now, you want to let Dadaneier go back alone..... Du Wei is worried that Dadaneier wouldn’t even be able to cope with an intermediate magical beast along the way!

So, find someone to send him out? There is no chance in expecting Hussein to help because he has already made up his mind to head north. Also, Du Wei can’t expect himself to help because he had no confidence he could escort Dadaneier out safely.

So..... Du Wei turned his gaze towards Medusa.

Queen Medusa still had her eyes closed as she lifted her head up towards the sun. As her hair flutter against the wind, her pale and white face revealed a strange expression. Under the lights of the sun, the contour of her face seemed to be shining and her expression looked like she was enjoying the warm feeling under the sunlight.

Well..... If it was Queen Medusa, then she would naturally have the ability to escort Dadaneier back..... However, the Queen is also a time bomb! What if she accidentally opened her eyes and took a look around her..... Then everything is finished!

So Du Wei immediately dismissed the idea.

As if aware of Du Wei's difficulty, Dadaneier immediately said: "Well, my friend, you don't have to worry about me, I believe I can get out of here by myself! You still have your own objective and I already owe you a lot! I cannot add to your problems!"

He patted the bow on his back, and then laughed loudly: "No matter what you say, I am still a third level warrior; I believe I should be able to make it out of here!"

"Dadaneier." Du Wei sighed with a sincere voice: "I never wanted to look down on you. I have no doubt of your courage and you will of being afraid of death..... However, I hope you understand that this place is the frozen forest! Also, I want you to understand that we only managed to reach this place due to sheer coincidence and a lot of special conditions. You are not afraid of death, but..... You have to understand that you are now carrying the burden of saving the Marquise of Lister's life. It's not the problem of whether you are afraid of death or not..... If somehow you were to be killed while returning, then the only hope of saving Mrs.Lister is gone!"

With a sullen face, Dadaneier whispered: "Yes! My death means nothing, but if it was because of me that causes the mistress's life, then....."

Just as the three struggled with this problem, Old Greenwood succeeded in solving the problem.

“I think..... I have an idea.....” Old Greenwood sounded very adamant: “My..... Friends..... You have... Already... Helped..... The Treants..... Do a lot..... Now give..... Us..... A..... Opportunity..... To repay..... You!! I will..... Safely..... Send your..... Friend out... Of... The.... Forest!”

“You?”

Du Wei was still somewhat unsure of this solution, but the next word from Old Greenwood managed to relieve him of any worries.

“This place is the forest!”

There are a lot of magical beasts in the forest, but what else is more here?

It is trees! As long as they are under the protection of Old Greenwood, then every tree in this place would become Treant ‘Companions’.

Having an endless supply of Treant ‘Companions’ to protect you, of course Dadaneier would have no problem leaving the frozen forest.

After resolving the problem, Dadaneier did not dare to delay any longer. He immediately bid his farewell to Du Wei and the group. After giving Du Wei a big hug, he spoke in a sincere tone, “My friend, I owe all of you way too much! I will await your visit to the Lister family household.... If I get a chance, I’ll also go to the Roland plains to see you!” (Note: Du Wei’s family name is Rawling, so as to why the author used Roland is something even I don’t get. I’ll try to make glossary in the future for all of this because even I’m getting a bit confused.)

After a pause, he spoke in a solemn tone: “I bid you all farewells!”

After his words, Dadaneier and Hussein looked at each other and nodded to each other: “And thank you! As for your situation, I will not reveal even a word about you once I return!”

With that said Dadaneier turned around and strode away in big steps, leaving behind only long strides of footprints in the snow.

Old Greenwood walked in a slow and heavy pace as he followed behind with a group of Treant ‘Companions’.

“Well then now, shall we talk about our business?” Du Wei looked at Hussein: “I hate being pushed around and have my life be manipulated by someone else.

I'm willing to continue on our journey, but at least I must know exactly what am I doing!"

Hussein hesitated before sighing, "Very well, I can tell you something."

The Knight picked out a rock and sat down. Looking directly up at the sun, he had very complex expression like he was indulging himself in his memories.

After a long pause, the knight whispered: "I told you, I had once served as the guardian of the sanctuary. All holy knights that are about to advance into the holy knight leader position must spend some time as the guardian of the sanctuary. I've told you this before, right?"

"Yes, you also told me that you inadvertently found the holy knight's badge of Aragon within the Sanctuary." Du Wei puts on a deadpan face.

"Unfortunately..... Things are not so simple. It's not a simple badge."

That is not a simple badge.

According to Hussein's words, there is a hidden magic array on the badge.

And the magic array has left behind a phantom message of Aragon!

All of this has been just like how Du Wei found out about the message left behind by Saimei the female astrologer.

It's just that the message in the magic array left behind by Aragon was much more shocking!

"Do you know how Aragon was killed?" At this point, Hussein lets out a somewhat psychotic laugh.....

## Chapter 89 - Saint-Roland

Aragon Roland, founder of the Roland Empire, the first emperor of the Empire.

He is considered to be the most powerful expert in a thousand years and the first legendary figure to be titled “Strongest under the stars”. Fluent in both magic and martial skills, his magic powers have reached extreme heights. (Du Wei knows that when Aragon left the Devil’s Island, he took with him half the strength of Chris’s magic) And on martial skills, he also achieved the level of Saint Paladin.

Moreover, he is different when compared to the estranged powerful experts in history. Aragon also had considerable intelligence and political savvy. By fully taking advantage of his personal powers, he had built a vast and sprawling empire that has lasted even to this present day!

He was the Emperor, the founding emperor!

Such a legendary person..... How did he die?

History records are quite blurred on this point.

Even in the official history records of the Roland Empire, the exploits of Aragon would of course be magnificently recorded, but everything about his majesty’s death can be easily described in a short sentence.

“XXX years, founding emperor Aragon-Roland passes away, XX King crowned as 2nd Emperor of the Empire.....”

Similar historical records for the past hundred years have all stated thus.

“The temple’s Sanctuary stores away the badges of every Holy knight.... Whether they are a devoted and faithful knight in their lifetime, or a traitorous



heretic that has fallen from grace.” Hussein’s voice sounded mysterious, “Do you understand when I say it like this?”

You understand? Of course I understand.

“Yes.” Hussein nods.

The Sanctuary is one of the several mysterious places in the Temple and outsiders are not allowed to enter this place. The only ones eligible to enter are his Majesty the Pope, a few of the elders and the temple’s presiding judgement lord. Adding all of these key figures together, the only other people allowed to go in are the holy knights that are about to advance into the three leadership positions..... At any time, there would be no more than five people that would be allowed to enter the Sanctuary.

Moreover, once the sanctuary guardian retires, he would not be allowed to re-enter this place.

The rules of the temple are heavily enforced.

“I originally thought the Sanctuary is where we pay homage to those that has specifically sacrificed themselves or swore allegiance to the temple their entire life. But then I found out I was wrong.” Hussein sneered: “It’s all a big cover. Outsiders only know that the Sanctuary is heavily protected by a powerful guardian, this way intruders could not disturb the souls of the dead..... But in fact, these are all acts to cover up the truth! The real secret is that the Sanctuary holds many unknown secrets..... Especially those like me that have betrayed the temple!”

The Sanctuary is divided into the outer sanctum and the inner sanctum. The outer section is where they store the badges of those that have served the temple all their lives.

And the inner sanctum is where the real important things are kept!

Any valuable things that had once belonged to the traitors of the temple are all stored in there.

“Thousands of badges are placed in the outer sanctum, enjoying generations of worship..... And within the inner sanctum, is in fact a dark room without light. The atmosphere inside is ghastly and the room is enshrouded in an imprisoning

spell. Placed inside are thirteen objects.” Hussein smiled: “Historically, there are thirteen saint Paladins that have betrayed the temple and their badges have been stored inside the inner sanctum. Not only that, the temple has forever placed a cursed onto these badges, locking them under an imprisonment spell! Is this the so called ‘mercy’ the temple has been spouting through the ages?!”

“Thirteen?” Du Wei was somewhat curious: “Thirteen badges? In a thousand years, the temple has only faced thirteen traitors among its ranks?”

“I don’t know.” Hussein shook his head: “Perhaps there are more than thirteen traitors in a thousand years, but not all traitors are entitled to ‘enjoy’ being forever cursed. Only those that has caused the temple to suffer a major loss or shamed to a certain extent can they be qualified to ‘enjoy’ such a curse.”

Du Wei nodded, feeling relieved. (He must have thought the temple would curse him too, lol)

That is accurate. Not just anybody would be able to cause the temple to hate them to such an extent.

“Maybe your badge will also be placed inside the inner sanctum.” Du Wei laughed: “With your level of strength, you are definitely qualified to ‘enjoy’ the curse, right?”

“Indeed.” Hussein put on a deadpan expression: “Once they killed me, they will put my badge within the inner sanctum because such a curse can only be cast by the Pope himself. Even if the person is dead, they will never rest in peace. Under the effect of such supreme magic, their souls will forever be tortured under the effects of the curse! Every holy knight must take on a blood oath with their badge before joining the temples rank. This method allows the temple to punish the souls of any traitors..... Otherwise, why do you think I would go to such lengths to evade the pursuers? Do you think I am afraid of death? I am not afraid of death, but even I do not wish for my soul to be subjected to such eternal torture!”

Listening to the bone chilling words of the knight, Du Wei suddenly felt a shudder through his spine.

Even death will not release one’s soul..... This kind of punishment is too terrifying.

“Originally, even the sanctuary guardian cannot enter the inner sanctum. Only his Majesty the Pope is able open the door that leads into the inner sanctuary. Hussein’s tone of voice had a mysterious feeling to it: “But that night, while I was meditating in the Sanctuary, I heard a sound coming from the inner sanctum.... The sound was like someone crying, almost like someone calling out for me. With my level of cultivation, I knew it wasn’t an illusion, so I immediately stood up and searched around. At first, I was worried an outsider was able to sneak inside the Sanctuary..... But then, what I found was something surprising.”

“The door leading into the inner sanctum?” Du Wei guessed.

“Yes, it is the inner sanctum door. The door that was supposed to be locked with magic and only his Majesty the Pope is able to open.” Hussein shook his head with a complex expression, unsure of whether to feel regret or gratitude.

Or... Maybe both.

“Did you go in?” Du Wei sighed and shook his head as he whispered, “No need to say anymore, you must have gone inside.”

Du Wei was speechless.

Wouldn’t you?

Of course! For a young Knight in his most glorious time of age, he will no doubt be full of curiosity towards life. Matched this with his superior strength and abilities.... It would be strange for him not to go see what has happened!

“Even now, I’m still wondering what would have happened if I didn’t go look that night. Then wouldn’t the outcome have been much better? If I didn’t figure out everything that was happening inside, then I would have become a holy knight leader, admired and respected by all the people.” Hussein Sighed.

“No.” Du Wei shook his head at Hussein with a face showing how level headed he was: “If that door really was covering all the temples dark secrets..... So even if you didn’t go inside and reported to the Pope on the spot,,, My guess is that in all likelihood, they would still come up with some reason and method to kill you!”

There is no doubt that Du Wei’s speculation made complete sense, so Hussein didn’t argue with this.

“Thirteen badges are placed inside the inner sanctum and not any random badge, but high leveled holy knight badges. From just one look, you can tell these badges were very ancient and old.” Squinting his eyes, Hussein thought back to that life changing night: “At the time, I was shocked and confused. Even though I am not a magician.... But I could still feel the magic in the atmosphere is not any sort of blessing! Just being in the presence of such magic would cause discomfort and despair!”

Then with a strange smile on his face, Hussein continued speaking: “Engraved onto the thirteen badges that was placed on top of a stone table is the names of the original owners.... A total of thirteen names. Can you guess who is the first name that I saw?”

Du Wei had already guessed. Feeling a bitter taste in his mouth, he muttered: “Aragon Roland?”

“Yes,it’s him.”

Aragon Roland.

Since encountering all these strange experiences, it seems all of the events somehow gets dragged into a relationship with this legendary name!

Strongest under the star!

Founder of the Empire!

The founding emperor!

History’s most powerful holy knight!

And an expert that has made a deal with the Devils.....

Wait,wait!

And now, to this name, we may once again add to it with a prestigious title:

The temple’s biggest traitor in the history! (Lol, I’ll definitely need to make a glossary for all his titles at this rate)

“It is not finished.” It seems today Hussein will share with Du Wei a very big ‘surprise’.

A trace of malice could be seen on the knight’s face: “You are a noble child of

the Rowling household, so you must have received a good education and learned about history, especially the history regarding the founding of the empire. I believe you must have learned from those history textbooks that Aragon Roland had an invincible platoon of knights under him. In some historical records, every member of this platoon is considered to be distinguished experts and showed absolute allegiance to Aragon himself!! This group of experts could be considered his own personal fighting force and every member are all fanatically loyal to Aragon.”

“I’ve heard of it, it’s called ‘Roland’s Saint Knight Platoon’. This platoon is the shadow of Aragon and his most effective fighting force. Powerful yet mysterious, all documents related to this knight platoon are non-existing. Nor is there any detailed information regarding the members of this platoon, not even their names were written down! We only know that there was an unbeatable platoon of knights under Aragon, but we do not know where they came from or who they were. It wasn’t until later on after their contributions in unifying the continent that others started adding the word ‘Saint’ to their title. In the history of Roland, there have been many powerful platoons emerging. This includes the Temples holy knights platoon, but only Roland’s Saint Knight Platoon was ever given the title ‘Saint’ in front of their name.”

Du Wei is indeed educated. When he was young, he has read all the history books and even those few precious rare documents, His answers did not show any delay, like it was common knowledge in his mind, readied to be spoken at a moment’s notice.

“Well then, I think I can tell you the details about this knight platoon.” Hussein laughs in a low voice, but his laughter was so disturbing that it was hair raising.

“In fact, that mysterious knight platoon did not have many members. Altogether, including Aragon, this team only has thirteen members! Thirteen!” In a muffled voice, Hussein cursed: “But.... Let me tell you, each of those thirteen members wielded enough strength to match me! Some of the members strength may not be at the Saint Paladin level, but they are most certainly close! Thirteen top level experts, thirteen fanatic loyalists to Aragon!”

Du Wei felt he could no longer say another word.

The inner sanctum of the Sanctuary uses evil curse and magic to suppress these thirteen souls, this included Aragon himself!

Taking in a deep breath, Du Wei felt his tone was a little stiff: “You mean.....”

“It is.” The Knight nodded quietly.

“The soul of his majesty the founding emperor is being suppressed....”

“It is.” The Knight nodded.

“Even the highly credited heroes of the ‘Roland Saint Knight Platoon’ is....”

“It is.” The Knight continues nodding his head.

Daring enough to take the soul of the founding emperor and put it in the Sanctuary so that it can be eternally damned!

Daring enough to put the souls of the thirteen founding heroes into the Sanctuary so that they could be eternally damned!

The Temple would dare to perform such an immense act?!

Fucking bastards! Those temple bastards would dare! Are they not afraid of the royal family of the Roland Empire taking them head on? Are they not afraid of the riots from the citizens once they find out about their founding hero?! Fucking! Goddamn! Goddamn!! Damn!!

Du Wei repeatedly took in deep breaths, but he could not come up with the right words to describe his current mood.

So he had to use the most direct and simple words to express his emotions at the moment.

Du Wei difficultly said, “Very good! Very powerful!”

## Chapter 90 - Rejected Transaction

“I understand now why the temple would send out such a powerful force to kill you.” Du Wei puts on a wry smile.

Two holy knight leaders, a large number of senior holy knights, as well as the presiding judgement lord..... Such a lineup hasn't been seen for at least a century.

And the reason is because the secret that Hussein discovered is just that amazing!

Who in the Roland Empire doesn't respect such a great Emperor? Who doesn't respect the founding hero in history? Even now, within the imperial palace's living room, there hung a portrait of his Majesty Aragon Roland and a giant portrait of his mysterious group of Saint Knights Platoon.

Even back in the age when the Rowling family was on the rise, the Roland Empire was currently facing a crisis and the Emperor himself had publicly issued these words: “If only I could have had the support of a fighting force like our ancestors ‘Saint Roland Knight Platoon’, then I would never have allowed the Empire to sink into such a state!”

If it was spread to the public that the Temple of light was doing such awful deeds of cursing his Majesty and the founding heroes of the empire! Then without a doubt, this event would wipe away any prestige the temple has gained over the centuries and rouse the anger of the royal family and the public citizens.

Under such circumstances, how can Hussein not to die? He must die! This is the so called dead man tells no tales.

“But now, I told you this secret.” Hussein sneered.

Du Wei was speechless.

He could only sigh at his own curiosity because at this rate, it would end up getting him killed.

Even for a holy knight that the temple has spent countless years cultivating can be easily discarded and killed.... Just so they could hide this secret? Then what about himself? Du Wei is only a small nobility, even if his family is heavily entrenched in the Empire's structure... The temple would without a doubt also try to kill him!

Knowing such a secret is like seeking one's own death.

"Now, do you want to continue listening?" Hussein's voice held a hint of mockery because he could see the facial color changing in Du Wei's face.

Du Wei laughed bitterly: "Do I even still have a chance to go back? Oh please, I've been with you in this forest for so many days already. If the temple were to find out about this, I would definitely be ranked among the top three in their hit list! Whether you tell me now or not is the same. Since you have already revealed the opening segment, you may as well continue on."

Hussein's face looked somewhat appreciative, albeit he still looked cold: "You love looking for trouble, so it's not me trying to harm you."

Subsequently, Hussein sighed and looked up at the sky: "Aragon's badge....."

Aragon is not only a powerful Knight, but a great magician as well.

His badge left behind a magic array, and this magic array left behind a residual message. That night when Hussein went inside, he not only saw the cursed badges, but also the personal message left behind by Aragon.

How did the first emperor of the Roland Empire meet his death? Hussein cannot answer this question because the message left behind by Aragon didn't mention this..... The reason is very simple: When Aragon left the message behind, he was still alive, so how could he possibly know when he would be dead?

But... The message left behind by Aragon had implied a very important message, that is, while the founding emperor was in power, the relationship



between Aragon and the Temple has already reached an unstable state.... Almost like fire and ice mixing together.

This is very easy to understand.

No doubt about it, Aragon is a broad minded hero. Such an amazing person is always very intelligent and has a strong ambition for power. He was able to start from a declining noble family and fight in the divided continent, the results of his efforts was the unification of all the kingdoms on the continent. In history, there has never been such a vast empire.... You can say such a person like Aragon appearing is unprecedented.

When such a powerful person has just unified the continent and brought peace to the lands, then from his back, he realized there was still the Temple of Light that could challenge his authority!

For a character like him, how could he allow such a thing to happen?!

The Temple is what? The Temple is a religion and the organization advocating the supreme deity in this world! It represents the god's will; it represents the god's intention! It is equivalent to another Emperor with its wide influence and authority!

Moreover, such influence and authority is not a fantasy, but reality! In the war to unify the continent, Aragon joined the Temple of Light in order to win over their support. By using the Temple to unify the continent, the temple also used Aragon to scatter their influence across the continent!

Finally, according to the first agreement between both parties: the temple not only has its own armed forces (Holy Knights) but also has the right to collect taxes!

Having armed forces, having the right to collect taxes, this is no different from having a state within the Roland Empire! Children's of the Empire would inevitably be torn between the two powers. On one hand, they are subjects of the Roland Empire, on the other; they are devotees of the Temple of Light.

With this backing, it is enough for the temple to challenge the Empires authority for control.

(On this point, Du Wei reminiscent the history of his past life. In order to unify

the empire, the Roman Emperor was forced to cooperate with the Christian church. The results were that the Emperor gained a firm grasp on power and the Church also fully developed and spread across the empire.

Aragon is a smart man and soon saw the danger in such a situation, or it's better to say that he had long foreseen such a situation. Maybe it was because he needed the support of the church in order to establish the Empire, so he kept his temper inside. But once the Empire was established, he could no longer turn a blind eye to a power capable of challenging his authority!

Thus, the contradictions between the Royal family and the Temple started to erupt!

“How can I let someone else sleep in my bed?!”

Du Wei thought for a moment and felt the first emperor must have also thought this was the case.

What's more, Du Wei knows that his Majesty Aragon is in fact a believer of the devil!

All those years of struggle must have been very bloody, very dark, and very intense..... But the process could no longer be known. What we could authenticate is that Aragon clearly failed because the Temple still exists today and still challenges imperial authority.

And as for Aragon himself, he's been secretly punished by the Temple. For nearly a thousand years, the Temple has been cursing his soul, unable to rest.

How did Aragon meet his death? Du Wei does not know, but he speculates that the way he died is not so glorious..... Or even somewhat shady.

In order for the Temple to kill such a powerful figure of the continent, it would definitely be an extremely difficult task.

Poison? Assassination? Murder?

Only heavens knows.

And killing such a highly skilled expert.....

Du Wei does not believe there is anyone in this world capable of completing such a task! 'The Strongest Under The Stars', who else can be more powerful

than him?

Unless.....

Du Wei got a chill!

Could it be that god himself? Aragon was killed by God?!

Nothing is impossible... For someone like Du Wei, who has been on the Devils Island. In fact, this kind of speculation is very likely.

“The person that left behind this magic array also left behind three important messages.” Hussein said: “First, he told me that only those with blood relations to the Saint Roland Knight Platoon can trigger this magic array. As for me, my bloodline is descended from a member of the Saint Roland Knight Platoon.”

This is surprising news indeed.

Hussein carries with him the Saint Roland Knight Platoon bloodline and is a direct descendant of one of the members.

“Even I never knew of this.” Hussein smiled bitterly: “I heard my ancestors are part of a declining nobility lineage. It was said that our family did have a brilliant past during the war to establish the Empire and our family did prosper for a while. But it’s been many generations since our family went into decline and upon my generation, our family tree has nearly dried up..... You should be aware that when the Temple selects the candidates for a Holy Knight, they would only select the poor and low statured members of society. This is to avoid the off chance of bringing in a person of high nobility and allowing imperial power to infiltrate the Temple’s control. As long as I can remember, my family has been poor. Never once have I ever thought.... My ancestors actually had such a brilliant achievement in the past..... Oh, Knights of the Saint Roland Platoon..... The most mysterious and powerful fighting force in the founding of the Empire. You can’t even begin to imagine how shocked my heart was that night when I found the magic array!”

“I can only imagine.” Du Wei smiled wryly, interrupting the knight as he recalled his memories. In a cautious voice, he asked: “Well then, this is the first message, what is the following two?”

“Now the second message also has something to do with you.” Hussein smiled

maliciously: “Do you remember the movement routine I taught you? As I said before, this is the basis for practicing some kind of amazing Dou Qi (Energy),, And this amazing Dou Qi is the second message left behind by Aragon..... When Aragon swept through the continent and became the strongest of the strong, he relied on this special skill known as ‘Stars Dou Qi’!”

Du Wei took in a hard swallow of saliva, “He taught you?”

“Yes.” Hussein blinked his eyes: “Now, you have learned the basic segment. After you have trained to a certain degree, I can consider teaching you the rest.”

Du Wei was silent for a moment in order to digest the news. After sighing, he asked: “And what is the last piece of the message he left behind?”

“The last one.... Is to lead me in my search for my companions.”

Speaking up to this point, Hussein suddenly showed a hateful expression: Finding the other descendants that have inherited Aragon’s will.”

Other descendants?

Du Wei can only imagine the reason behind Aragon leaving his dominating martial skills inside his badge just so he could pass it onto Hussein, a descendant of the Saint Roland Knight platoon.

Even so..... Don’t forget Aragon also wielded an unmatched level of magic powers!

Du Wei’s lip kept opening and closing: “Could it be.....”

It was at this moment, a sigh could be heard from the nearby woods.

From behind a giant tree, a figure leisurely walks out onto the snow, but left no trace of any footprints in his wake.

His beard was gray with a pointed hat on top of his head, and his white magician’s robe was full of stains. Upon closer inspection, you could even notice hints of burn and two gaping holes near the bottom of his robe. It was clear that this person has experienced a bitter battle.

Vivian’s teacher, the old magician that has kidnapped Du Wei up till now was slowly walking out of the woods. God knows how long he’s been there or how much he heard of their conversation. His face looked calm, but from his eyes,

you could see a hint of bitterness as he continued walking over with a bitter laugh.

“It is I that have inherited the magic portion of Aragon’s power.”

“Yes, it is that undying old fool.” Hussein glanced at the old magician, as if he wasn’t surprised in the least at the sudden appearance of the old magician. In a cold manner, Hussein said: “He was my companion. If it wasn’t for him, I wouldn’t be in such a sorry state!”

The old magician looked somewhat haggard. Silently walking over to the two and took a look at the currently sun bathing Medusa in the distance. Then shaking his head, he said: “You are going too far with the insults... Alas, Queen Medusa! It is as everything predicted!”

Du Wei immediately caught on to what the old magician said: “Prophecy?”

The old magician ignored Du Wei’s questioning; instead, he went over to Medusa’s side and carefully inspected the beautiful snake women. Then in a respectful manner, he said: “Dear Queen Medusa, hello to you.”

The calm expression on Medusa’s face showed no hint of breaking: “You’ve been here a long time and ease dropped for a long time... Do people like doing such things? Or could this also be a part of human nature?”

The old magician stumbled at the sudden question, but soon returned to normal: “Humanity is much more complex than your imagination.”

Du Wei frowned: “You don’t seem to be surprised at seeing Medusa, could it be that you’ve been spying on us this whole time?”

“My dear child, I’m not as evil as you say.” The old magician spoke bitterly: “If not for my own luck, I’m afraid I wouldn’t be alive right now to see you. Oh, and the things regarding you guys, I met your friend Dadaneier in the woods, so he was able to tell me everything that has happened.”

Hussein seemed to have little patience for such pleasantries. He glared at the old Magician and said: “Undying old fool, you’re late in coming here. What has happened to you these days? Could it be that several senior Knights and magicians were too much for you to cope with?”

The old magician didn't care at all about the Knights rude behavior; his tone was serious as he spoke: "Yes, I almost didn't manage to come back..... You should understand that the Temple intends to have you killed at all costs.... They have already dispatched their men's from their Platoon of Elders! Along the way, I met up with several senior knights and tried to lead them away from you guys. But very soon, we bumped into some very high class magicians from the Elder Platoon. If it wasn't because of how well hidden I was at the time, they would have found out about my location and identity."

"The Elder Platoon has also been dispatched..." Hussein was laughing coldly as he said this, but it was clear his laughter wasn't natural from the twitching in his eyes.

"Your life now is very valuable." The old magician said this with a smile: "I overheard their conversation that two days ago; the Temple has officially unveiled the traitor's identity. Your charges are attempted assignation of the Pope, and the killing of the two other holy knight leaders. The warrant has already been issued by the Pope himself. Now you are the number one most wanted criminal in the entire continent."

The Knight coldly snorted at this knowledge.

"Hussein. I know you are a prideful person and not afraid of becoming the most wanted criminal on the continent. But you must understand that the old fellows in the Elder Platoon are not to be taken lightly! "As he said this, the old magician gently shook his robe, "You see this? When I met those three elders, I was nearly killed by them when they joined hands."

"You're just unwilling to reveal your true identity to them." Hussein spoke coldly: "I don't believe it, just three guys from the Elder Platoon is enough to kill you. If you had gone at them fully from the start, even if you cannot win, escaping wouldn't be an issue for you."

"My identity is still useful to us. I cannot openly go against the temple, or else, I'll face endless pursuit by the Temple." The old magician shook his head, "You also need a companion hiding in the shadows to assist you."

Du Wei was unhappy.

He suddenly coughed a few times, arousing everyone's attention. Du Wei

looked unhappy, and eyed the two in front of him: “All right! The two of you are both supreme experts of the continent! One of you is the number one knight on the continent! Another is a top leveled almighty magician! Both of you are descendants of Aragon’s Saint Knight Platoon..... Both of you intend to make an enemy of the Temple! You guys intend to carry on Aragon’s legacy.... Both of you intend to do great thing! But....” With wide eyes, Du Wei shouted: “But what the fuck do I have to do with this!! Whatever it is that you wanted to do; you can go ahead and do it! I am neither a strong and powerful knight, nor an almighty powerful magician! I’m just a loafing noble that likes to pull pranks! Why did you drag me into this? Especially you, old.....”

Speaking up to this point, Du Wei suddenly remembered the spells used by the old magician to control what he says. From the original words of ‘old fool’, he changed it to only: “old Gramps... Why are you kidnapping me to this forsaken place? Now you want me to continue heading even further north..... What other use am I to you?!”

Silence.....

A moment later, Hussein coughed to break the silence. Calmly looking at the old magician, he asked: “This is something I wanted to ask you too. Why is it that you wanted me to take this little guy with me and bring him so far?!”

The old magician’s eye flashed with a thought, and then he gently took off his pointed hat, revealing a somewhat messy looking straightened white hair. After fixing up his hair, he sighed: “All right, I think it is time for some answers.”

As he said this, the old magician looked at Hussein, then at Du Wei: “Kid, even Hussein doesn’t know of this matter. It is regarding the origin of Aragon’s power. Others may not know this but you do, right? Because you’ve been on the Devils Island and met old Chris, right?”

With that said the old magician raised a hand and shot forth a wind blade. The speed of the wind blade was very fast. Before Du Wei could even react, the blade has already cut off the hat from Du Wei’s head and not only that; it has also cut apart the rope tying his hair!

With his hair disheveled, the devil’s horn that he was hiding was revealed to everyone’s eyes!

Hussein had a look and couldn't help but ask: "What is that thing..... Your head actually has such an incredibly long horn?! Could it be that you aren't human?"

Du Wei glowered at the old magician, and then snapped: "Of course I am human! As for this thing..... Hmm, it is nothing. It is only a thing to strengthen my sensory of magic. Only with this, can I use magic."

The old magician put on a smile, not caring about the angry eyes showing on Du Wei's face: "Well, my child, why don't let Hussein in on the things you heard about Aragon and the Devils Island. Regarding this matter, I have not said anything to him."

The events that happened on the Devils Island are nothing too complicated. Simply speaking, it is where a powerful servant of the Devil, old Chris is currently imprisoned and he loved making deals with those that find their way onto the island.

And Aragon is one of the traders. The powerful skills and powers belonging to Aragon can almost all be traced back to the deal he made with the devil's servant.

Du Wei was always a good speaker and since he experienced it first hand, so of course he would naturally make it a thrilling and moving story.

Hussein was almost gawking with awe as he listened! For the knight, this information would of course be absolutely shocking!

The old magician has long guessed the reaction Hussein would make. After Du Wei finished his story, he immediately said: "In fact, I have also gone to search out old Chris in the past...."

"Wait a minute!" Du Wei frowned, his eyes flashing with suspicion: "Old Gramps..... You're lying! When I met Chris, he told me that before I arrived, the last human to visit him was Aragorn!! Other than Aragon, no other person has made a deal with him!!"

"Yes, what he said is all correct." The old magician said this with a smile: "I did in fact go to the island and met up with that asshole old Chris.... He is indeed an asshole, but he is also an adorable asshole. I submitted a trade with him.... But he refused me."



“Why?” In a deep voice, Du Wei asked, “He was even willing to trade with the lowly me, why would he refuse a trade with an all-powerful magician?”

“Because.....” The old magician smiled: “He refused to give me the thing that I asked for.”

“What is it that you wanted?” Du Wei suddenly felt his heart racing! He already guessed what it was!

“I asked him.....” The old magician’s smile was very strange, almost unable to be described.....

“..... I asked him to return his Majesty Aragon’s heart! Return the ‘Kings heart’!”

## Chapter 91 - Enemies

What use is there for returning the 'King's heart'?

The old magician didn't answer this question and his story only reached up to this point before refusing to continue, this was very depressing for Du Wei. Whether it was his past life or present life, he has always been a person with a high level of curiosity. To only reveal half a story enshrouded in mystery and still not come up with an answer, this fact was causing his heart much discomfort.

However, the old magician at the very least gave him enough information to answer one question he had: "Our destination is all the way to the North.... And of course, will have a use for you by bringing you along."

All right!

Du Wei clenched his teeth in frustration, but since he has already boarded this dark ship, he may as well go all the way. Moreover, being in the presence of such two powerful experts, Du Wei had no other options.

Even though Queen Medusa is following behind him, Du Wei is not foolish enough to think that someone like her will listen to him and be at his disposal. The near disaster class beauty is only following him to 'observe human nature'.... So, he can't expect help from the other parties.

All the way to the North.... What is there in the North?

The old magician lets out a mysterious laugh, "Once we get there, you will know."

If he didn't take into account the huge difference between both group's strength, Du Wei would have really wanted to take off his boots and throw it at the old magician's nose. Maybe after smashing in his nose, the old magician

would think twice about laughing!

In this way, the team has now lost one Dadaneier, but gained an old magician.

“We should step upon our journey.” The old magician declares: “Right now, I’ve trapped the temple pursuers inside a magic array near the large lakes. According to my estimation, it would take those men’s two days to break free from the illusions. On top of that, I’ve disguised myself and escaped in the opposite direction before I came here. Let’s hope they will head in the other direction.”

Wellthen...Let’s be on our way!

Du Wei sighed.

From his sleeves, the old magician took out a pouch that never seems to run out of magical items. Moving his hand around inside the bag, he took out a whistle and blew into it..... Despite blowing into the whistle, Du Wei couldn’t hear any sounds, but Hussein and Medusa were both frowning from his action.

This is obviously a magic tool.

Not even for a moment, a running sound could be heard from a distance. Then with amazed eyes, Du Wei could see four strong looking wolves running towards the group from the woods.

IceDemonWolves!!

“Oh! No, no, don’t touch; don’t scare these little kids!” The old magician waved his hand to stop Du Wei and Hussein’s attempt at attacking. Slowly walking over to the wolves, the old magician murmured a set of unknown spell words into their ears. As if domesticating a dog, the four wolves obediently lay down onto the snow and made a ‘woo woo’ sound as the old magician rubbed his hand against their back furs.

Then, with a smile, the old sorcerer said: “Well then, with four people, we can have one wolf for each of us. This will be better than walking with our legs through this forsaken place.”

Ride... A... Wolf?

And an Ice Demon Wolf at that

Du Wei didn't know whether to sigh or feel appreciative of how this played out.

"Come here, little kid." The old magician said this with a very nice looking smile: "You're the smallest and the lightest here..... So, you ride it." With that said, one of the gray furred demon wolves suddenly stood up and eyed the oncoming Du Wei. As if sensing his fear, all of the animal's fur stood straight up as it lets out an intimidating growl.

"Are you sure I should ride it?" Seeing the demon wolf, Du Wei questioned himself that if he were to take another step closer, this beast would definitely open its jaw and swallow him whole.

"Come here! Do not be afraid!" The old magician beckoned Du Wei to come while clinging to the Wolf's head. Forcing it to lower its head down, he muttered a few words in a low voice besides its ears to get it to quiet down. Seeing this, Du Wei meekly walked over to the old magician's side.

Though ice demon wolves are only intermediate leveled magical beasts, their heights can't be considered very tall, but it is still double of that of an ordinary wolf. As the demon wolf meekly laid there in front of Du Wei, he reached out his hand to touch the back of the ice demon wolf under the guidance of the old magician. Instead of resisting Du Wei's advance, the wolf lowered its head and quietly lets out a 'hmmhmm' sound a few times.

"Good, it likes you." The old magician smiled, "Now, get on it. You don't need to panic; I'll control it as we go."

Before even entering the frozen forest with the old magician, Du Wei was already showing admiration towards the old magician's ability to communicate with animals. Looking back to the time of the snow hounds, the old magician was able to manipulate the dogs easily with his will. Even the well-educated Du Wei had no way of identifying what kind of magic the old Gramps used to communicate with the animals.

Both Hussein and Medusa didn't need the help of the old magician. With his huge Dou Qi (energy) pressure, Hussein easily suppressed the demonic wolf under him. Seeing the discontent his demon wolf had as it lets out a small cry; Hussein flicked one of his fingers on the wolf's forehead, causing it to frantically

jump up and down in pain.

As for Medusa, she was even more terrifying. High leveled magical beasts are inherently capable of calling forth lower leveled beasts. Acting as docile as it could be, her wolf lowered its head in silence as it sat in the snow awaiting Medusa to walk over and climb on top.

However, Medusa coincidentally took an extra glance at the old magician. Even though her eyes are still shut tight, it was clear from her face that she came across something unexpected.

“Your ability to communicate with other creatures is very good.” Medusa spoke in a gentle voice: “It’s been a long time since I’ve seen a pure bred Dru....”

Speaking up to here, Medusa suddenly smiled and kept her mouth shut.

The old magician nodded in gratitude at her, then coughed loudly: “All right, let’s be on our way!”

It was at this moment, a sharp cry came from behind the Canyon: “Your Majesty! My Queen! Wait for me!!”

Then a gray ball of flesh came rushing out from the Canyon entrance. This person was none other than the mouse prime minister, Gargamel.

No longer wearing the ridiculous looking robe of the prime minister, his grayish colored fur was now donning a leather jacket made out from some unknown animal. On top of his head, he wore a funny looking hat and burdened on his back, there was a small baggage. As he came up to everyone, he dashed up to Medusa and started crying: “Your majesty! You can’t just leave poor Gargamel behind! If you leave, how am I supposed to live here alone! You know, I’m a mouse; I can’t go back to the human world.... As for this place, it belongs to the Treant’s tribe.... I....”

Although Medusa is a magical beast and not a human, Gargamel did after all spend 20 years with her and taught her much knowledge regarding humans. Now hearing Gargamel begging, Medusa couldn’t help but give out a slight sigh as she thought for a moment: “Very well, you can follow us then.”

Gargamel was exalted at this news. Even before this, he already had the motive of clinging along with Medusa. His baggage was already stuffed with

everything he wanted to bring along for this journey. As for the mice people left behind in the Canyon, they will just have to fend for themselves!

Now that he has gained their agreement, Gargamel immediately wiped away the tears in his eyes. Even then, he still looked somewhat puzzled at the scene in front of him.

A total of four demon wolves.

His stature is very small and he doesn't weigh very much, so even if he were to ride along with someone else, it wouldn't be a problem..... But looking at the inhuman beauty of Queen Medusa, coupled with years of accumulated respect, how could Gargamel possibly dare to ride with her?

As for the cold faced knight that would randomly aim his sword at his neck, Gargamel feared that his own head would be a goner if he were to choose such a person!

As for the strange old magician..... You know what, forget it.

After a long time of picking, Du Wei still seemed to be the best choice. Gargamel masked the most sincere smile on his face and walked over to where Du Wei was located. Seeing the smiling Gargamel standing in front of him, Du Wei understood his meaning. Letting out a sigh, Du Wei said: "Very well, you can get on, but..... You should be able to shrink a bit more, right?"

Gargamel hurriedly nodded. Although he is stuck in the form of a mouse because of the fountain of youth, but changing his size and shape a bit is still within his capabilities despite losing 90% of his powers due to the water.

As Gargamel shook his body several times, he simultaneously chanted a few spells from his mouth. With this, his body immediately shrank to the size of a regular mouse. Despite shrinking his body size, his shape was still fat like a meatball. The only change is that Gargamel was much more pleasing to Du Wei's eyes. Thinking back on his previous life, Du Wei could somewhat compare this mouse to a famous anime movie featuring a character called 'Totoro'.

Du Wei scooped him up with his hand and put Gargamel's baggage behind him. Afterwards, Du Wei opened his chest pocket and slid the mouse into it. As he does this, he warned: "You better be careful not to move around, if you dare

to get into my clothes and move around my body, I'll roast you!"

With a loud shout from the old magician, the four demon wolves immediately dashed forward and ran furiously through the snow!

In the boundless snowy forests, the four powerful demon wolves left behind a clear trail in the snow. Despite their carelessness, the snowflakes falling from the sky quickly removed any trace of their presence.

Comparing the movement speed of these demon wolves to ordinary horses, their movement speed is several times faster! On top of this, demon wolves are naturally more agile, capable of jumping up and down through the woods and dodging any branches that blocks their path.

The only demerit for these wolves and their way of traveling is that they are several times more uncomfortable than horses. The speed of their travel may be faster, but their level of bumpiness is enough to shatter Du Wei's body.

Luckily during their rest at night, Du Wei is able to stretch his body and perform several sets of the movement routine. (Star Dou Qi routine) Only thanks to this, was he able to overcome this level of burden.

During Du Wei's practice session, the old magician was observing him. Then after he was done, the old magician sighed and asked: "This set of movement routines was taught to you by Hussein, right?"

Du Wei didn't bother making an excuse and directly admitted it. The old magician had a somewhat complicated looking expression as soon as he heard Du Wei's answer. After staring at Du Wei for a long time, he sighed and walked away while muttering something to himself.

"Destined..... Everything is destined. I taught him the first set, and then Hussein teaches him the second set..... All these coincidences are all predestined."

For four days, they continued to ride through the forest in this fashion. During the day, they would run without rest and during the night, they would rest. Naturally, these demon wolves are much stronger than ordinary wolves, but even so, there is a limit to their endurance. After four days of running without rest, the four demon wolves started showing signs of exhaustion. Seeing the

apathetic looks on them, the old magician decided to let them go on the fifth day. Without waiting, he took out the whistle again and blew into it.

After blowing into the whistle, what came to them were not demon wolves, but the sound of rustling movement. From the snowy ground in front of them, a giant spider the size of a bed came out of a big giant hole!

Seeing the giant spider standing in front of him, Du Wei could see it gently shaking its body to remove the ice and snow clinging to its yellowish colored fur on its eight limbs. As he looked closer, he could see rings of black striped patterns on the spider's belly. And for its face.... Du Wei could only force himself to have one look before turning away.

This giant spider actually had a face like that of a human, but just somewhat distorted! Some features on the face were dislocated and when the spider opened its mouth, what came out were two giant pincers instead of teeth.

The old magicians jumped on top of the spider like it was normal, and then closing his eyes, he pressed his hand against the spider's head.

A moment later, he gently wiped away his sweat and smiled at everyone: "Okay, get on.... Come on, get up."

Inside Du Wei's chest pocket, Gargamel was shivering so much from fear that his teeth were making a chattering noise: "Evil Faced Spider Queen! My god! This is an "Evil Faced Spider Queen!"

Evil Faced Spider Queen?

Du Wei frowned and couldn't stop his body from getting goose bumps!

Along his travels, Du Wei has already learned quite a lot regarding the different kinds of magical beasts. While traveling with the Snow Wolf mercenary group, Beinlich (leader) mentioned a few species of high leveled magical beasts. Among the list was the Evil Faced Spider Queen.

This thing is a horrible and sickening creature... Such words are an accurate description of this spider. Their species is naturally prone to live underground in the ice and snow. Whenever the male mates with the female, the female gender would feed on the male.... So, the ones that manage to grow into such sizes are always the female gender. This is where their name 'Evil Faced Spider Queen'



came from.

By living underground in the snow and ice, these magical creatures are capable of tearing through the ice that is as hard as metal. Their physical appearance is covered in a thick layer of hard shell! If you want to understand how hard it is.... Historic documents recorded an event where several fifth leveled warriors attacked this being in a barrage of slashes. The result of this endeavor was that the spider withstood their attempt and not even a scratch could be seen on its shell.

On top of this, they also have the natural ability of the spider race and that is spinning webs!

The spider silk of this magical beast is extra tough, even when constantly hacked away with a sword, it would not break apart. Stronger than steel chains, the silk also has another characteristic and that is the ability to dissolve away any material with its acidic properties! Once a prey is entangled in the web of the spider queen, the venom would immediately enter the body and the prey's innards would be quickly dissolved!

This isn't everything in the spider's arsenal. Their specie also has another weapon and that is to spread a venomous fog!

This ability is just like a charged up version of weakening magic. Once the spider faces an enemy, they can diffuse the venomous fog and causes the enemy to weaken several times. Whether they have strong magical abilities, or unparalleled martial skills, all will be weakened a lot by this venomous fog! Not only is the fog capable of weakening the enemy, it also has a strong invasive characteristic..... Even if you were to hold your breath, the venom would invade into your body through your skin and pores.

The most disgusting point of this creature is its eating habits. When a prey is captured, they would not immediately kill their food. Instead, they would paralyze the prey with its venom, keeping it alive during the spider's feasting..... It would neither bite nor eat the unlucky beast; instead, the spider queen would pierce into the prey's flesh with a straw like appendage from its mouth. By doing this, it would allow the spider to suck up the fluid inside the prey while it was still alive!

It does not only suck up the blood, but also the brain and bone marrow, or any

form of liquid within its prey! (Now I wonder does it suck up the piss and poop too?)

The more terrifying point was that through all of this, the prey is fully aware of what was happening. As the prey watches on from being paralyzed by the venom, it is still fully conscious and awake. Slowly watching its life being drained away by a monster is one excruciating experience!

Moreover, this monster spider is the kind of creature to 'store' away its prey. If they are unable to finish their prey in one sitting and only manages half.... Half! After draining a large portion of its prey's bodily fluid, it would keep it alive by wrapping it inside a cocoon of silk to store away for later consumption... Even if the prey is stored away for a period of time, the animal inside would still be alive! (This is a gross way to feed, but real life spiders does this anyways)

Unable to fathom where the old magician managed to get such a high leveled monster, but it was clear that this spider is not as easy to control as the demon wolves from before.

From Du Wei's somewhat dazed attitude, the old magician looked at him and smiled: "What's the matter kid? You're not afraid of it now are you? Don't worry, this guy is very compliant, so come on up."

Du Wei endured the nauseating feeling inside and climbed up the spider's back. As he sat on top of the spiders back, the prickling feeling of the yellowish hair on the spider's body was causing him to feel even more disgusted and nauseating. Unable to settle down, Du Wei puts on a wry smile and asked: "I say, next time could you not call forth such a disgusting being? Couldn't you just summon another four demon wolf?"

"Demon Wolf?" The old magician smiled: "Son, look around! This place is already the northern most part of the frozen forest! Anything capable of surviving around here is all monsters and to be able to find such a big guy like him is already considered very lucky."

Hussein said nothing and sat beside Du Wei, while Medusa hesitated a bit before sitting down..... It would seem snakes don't have a liking towards spiders either.

Gargamel was still shivering inside Du Wei's chest pocket and this action somehow caused him to break out into a shiver too: "What means did this old Gramps used to bend all these monsters to his will...."

Even before Du Wei could finish his thought, a familiar voice suddenly echoed in

his heart: “You don’t know? I can’t believe you can’t guess it.”

“Courtenay Semel?” Du Wei almost shouted these words!

After so many days of absence, there was finally a reaction!

Courtenay Semel relies on Du Wei’s spirit to survive. Even without voice dialogue, Semel’s meaning and words would echo inside Du Wei’s mind.

“Such a waste of all those books and you actually dare to claim to be the most knowledgeable and educated of the Rowling household. Why do you always assume it was magic, couldn’t you think outside the box? I’m telling you now; this is a biological manipulation skill, not magic at all, and this skill is famous across the lands... Could you guess what it is?”

Biological manipulation..... Manipulating creatures.....

Du Wei’s eyes suddenly lit up!

That’s right... This is not some sort of magic!

But rather.....

Du Wei stole a glance at the old magician, suddenly remembering the word that Medusa almost spilled out the other day!

Dru....

Dru what?

Druid!!

Only the amazing Druid race has the innate natural ability to communicate with all living creatures!

However, in the historical literatures read by Du Wei, the Druid name has long since faded into history. This amazing race has long since gone extinct a very long time ago.

But there are no absolutes in life.

Thinking up to this point, Du Wei suddenly laughed: “Hey, old Gramps... I suddenly thought of something. You are a Druid, right? I had no idea you are a Druid! Hasn’t the Druid race gone extinct already?”

There was no surprise on the old magician’s face as he listened to this. Instead,

his face was cold as he glanced back at Du Wei and whispered: “You guessed? Humph, it was Semel that told you right? Otherwise, how could a kid like you possibly guess it? I’m willing to bet that you don’t even know what a Druid really is. Except you, everyone here already knew what I was!”

Sure enough, Medusa already recognized this fact a few days earlier. As for Hussein, his face was as calm as ever, clearly indicating that he knew this long before.

The only one to realize now is probably Du Wei.... Well, maybe not if you include the mouse in his chest pocket.

The old magician’s eyes suddenly lit up with some sort of excitement on his face: “Semel communicated with you? Could you ask her to come out..... Oh, why is she refusing to see me?”

Du Wei has been thinking about the relationship between the old magician and Semel. Asking in his heart, Semel gave out a somewhat confused answer: “I don’t know who this person is... I shouldn’t know him... But I don’t know why my heart is having a negative feeling towards him, as if not wanting to get anywhere near this person!”

Du Wei shrugged his shoulders, not saying a word. Seeing this, the old magician guessed the answer from Du Wei’s face. Letting out a sigh, the old magician said: “Very well... It’s not surprising if she doesn’t want to see me. I just wanted her to come out to have a look at this place. Years ago, both of us came to this place together!”

As soon as the voice fell, Du Wei suddenly felt a chill from behind him and Semel’s hand is already on his shoulder. Taking a look over his shoulder, he could already see Semel materializing behind his back. Her silver colored hair seemed even more elegant when matched with the ice and snow of the surrounding terrain. With bare feet and a red dress, her body was floating in midair as she looked into the distance.

Seeing Semel, the old magician lets out an excited expression as he takes in a deep breath: “You..... You are finally willing to reveal yourself!”

“I don’t know you.” Semel looked into the distance; her faced looked like it was at a loss as she shook her head: “I’m not the Semel that you know. Furthermore,

I have never been here before..... But, why does this place seem so familiar inside my heart and this feeling is growing more intense as time passes.”

Hussein snorted, holding his sword with his eyes shut. While Medusa said nothing, but she was frowning with her head facing the direction of where Semel stood. (Though ordinary people cannot see Semel, but Medusa didn't need to see because her eyes were always shut. From her actions, it was obvious she could sense someone was there.)

“While this kid says you aren't Semel, but a magical creature..... Yet, I have a feeling this is not necessarily true.” The old magician profoundly stared at Semel: “You have a familiar feeling towards this place.... Really? What does it feel like?”

Semel's beautiful face suddenly leaked out a hateful feeling. Her hateful feeling flashed across her eyes as she shouted: “I have no idea! But I only know that by standing here, I suddenly hate you! My heart suddenly hates you to the limit.... I can't help but want to kill you!”

With that said, she raised her slender fingers aiming at the handsome face of the old magician. Now the once handsome face of the old magician is covered in a layer of frost and her fingers still had flashes of cold electricity zapping out!

“HA HA HA HA HA HA!!” The old magician lets out a burst of laughter, then looked the Semel's fingertips: “You see! Look at your own fingers! Can you still say you are just a magical creature? It would be impossible for a magical creature to use magic! Look at your own fingers! What is it! Isn't that the Stars Magic!!?”

Semel was awestruck as she looked down at her own fingers. Lost for words, her eyes showed confusion as her body quivered: “I..... What's going on..... Me, how can I use magic?”

Du Wei sighed

Use magic? Along the way, this woman has used magic more than once or twice already and the last time, she and Hussein were about to commit mutual suicide in their fight. The reason she can't remember was because the first two times, her consciousness wasn't awake, but now, she is wide awake. (Semel has dual personalities)

“Semel.....” The old magician’s voice was soft and gentle as he whispered: “I don’t know exactly what happened to you, but I’m sure I could figure it out, so let me help you remember, okay?”

“No!” Semel’s attitude suddenly changed: “I do not want to recover whatever memories! I’m not the Astrology teacher Courtenay Semel that you speak of! I am what I am, I am a magical creature! Old Gramps! Don’t bother me!”

With that said, Semel was gone with a wave of her hand.

Du Wei and everyone else fell silent, all had a weird look on their face.

The only exception was Gargamel inside Du Wei’s pocket. Suddenly popping his mouse head out of the pocket, he asked in a curious voice: “What did you just say? Who did you speak with? Courtenay Semel? How come I can’t see?”

But it seems that no one will care about the curiosity of the mouse Prime Minister. Du Wei carelessly stuffed the mouse back into the pocket and looked at the old magician: “I say, what other things you not told us yet, old Gramps?”

“When you need to know, I’ll let you know.” The old magician’s face seemed somber and even somewhat painful in his eyes.

“So, what about Semel? She is now linked together with my spirit! I don’t care if she is truly Semel, or a magical creature. I think I need to know something more about her.”

“Fine.” The old magicians thought for a moment.

His eyes seemed painful and his gaunt face looks like it was ten years older as he sat on the spiders back.

“Courtenay Semel.....” The old magician spoke in a low voice: “I knew her a long, long time ago..... Yes, that was more than two hundred years ago. At the time, she was an infamous astrology teacher in the capital.”

“And then what?”

The old magician suddenly smiled, his laughter went from low to high as he looked at Du Wei’s eyes weirdly: “Boy, you are such a clever man, could you not have guessed?”

He gently patted his own mage robe and laughed coldly: “Semel was merely an

astrology master without a hint of magic.... Then suddenly, she was able to perceive the secret of 'Star Magic'! Do you not wonder why? Humph, you have already learned a bit of the Stars Dou Qi. When you hear the name of Stars Magic, don't you find it strange? Could it be that you don't even have a hint of questioning?"

"It was because I thought of this, so that is why I need to find you for proof." Du Wei said this coldly.

"Courtenay Semel..... She was a simple woman, a genius addicted to astrology. A person bent on spreading the knowledge of astrology. Then she suddenly developed the Star Magic.... In fact...." The old magician pointed to his own nose: "In fact, the truth is very simple! She, like me, is also an inheritor of Aragon's will! We were supposed to be partners, but later on..... We became enemies!"

## Chapter 92 - Origin

The old magician spoke with a deep voice and eyes staring far into the distance. "Courtenay Semel has always been a genius." As the cold wind blew against the old magician's beard, a spark of light flashed in his eyes at the mention of the topic.....

"The first time I met Courtenay Semel was at the celebration of the yearly blessing ceremony. Every person with status would attend the ceremony at the invitation of the Emperor and the Pope. During the ritual, these two leading figures would pray to God, asking for the blessing and prosperity of the Roland Empire. It was on that fateful year, I first laid eyes on Courtenay Semel. At the time, she was only turning 20 years old, but she was already recognized as a highly gifted Astrology teacher. And the previous year, she was even invited by his Majesty to become the Palace's Astrology master.

At that time, I have already inherited Aragon's magic and my position within the Magician's Association was very high up in the ladder. No one would have guessed this, but an elder of the magician's association was the sworn enemy of the Temple of Light. Half the time, I was practicing the knowledge left behind by Aragon; the other half is spent looking for a future heir to Aragon's magic. Due to the difficulty of Aragon's magic, by that time, I was already nearing 50 years of age. In order to pass on Aragon's will and knowledge, I must find more successors and spread the seeds in this world. Otherwise, if I were to be exposed one day, or pass away, then everything would be over.

In the end, the person I selected is Courtenay Semel.

I learned in many ways that she is naturally a genius. I've quietly gotten closer to her and tested her a few times on her magical talents. The results were very



pleasing and good. Most importantly, her family background was very simple and clean, or you can even say it was a blank sheet of paper.

The profession of an Astrology teacher has always been respected by the mass, but that was all there is to it. Not many people of the empire would go to great lengths and effort to gain the help of an Astrology teacher. On top of that, the temple also didn't pay much attention to this group. Combining all of these factors together, she was the perfect candidate.

Finally, I went to meet her and befriended Semel. After teaching her some magic... Did you know at the time, Semel already had many interesting hypotheses regarding astrology? The only thing keeping her ideas back was the fact that her theories would be considered whimsical in the minds of others... Ha Ha, it just so happens that my ideas matched with hers, so the both of us had a very good relationship and the days we spent together were very joyful. Finally, inspired by my proposal, she brought forth a new idea: "Why can't the powers of the stars become a source for a new kind of magical power?"

Listening up to this point, Du Wei sighed.

So that's it. The suggestion made by Semel to use the powers of the stars in magic... was inspired by this old magician.

In order to satisfy her desire to study, I accompanied her across the continent in order to search for precious materials. For example, we would travel to locations recorded in historic documents where a star has fallen from the sky. Carefully examining the area, we finally found a few shards of the precious stone left behind by the fallen star.

"The several years I spent traveling with her across the continent was the happiest years of my life. Semel was a smart and savvy woman. Together with her, each day of my life was refreshing!"

The old magician's voice showed great affection.... Perhaps even he himself didn't notice this.

"And then what?" Du Wei whispered.

"And then..... One step at a time, we improved upon Semel's idea. Finally, we created the so called Stars Magic." There was a hint of self-mockery in the old

magician's voice: "In fact, everything was me deceiving her. The so called 'creation', was in many details, I, consciously implying her towards certain results. I took advantage of our meetings and during her studies; I slowly imparted certain key points of Aragon's magic into her. You may not know, but his Majesty Aragon's magic is different in many ways compared to the magic system used commonly across the continent. This is all because its source could be traced back to the lineage of the devils. With all these inspirations, Semel finally made a breakthrough and came up with the so called 'Stars Magic'..... Oh, the naming was also named by me because her so called 'creation' of a new magic system was actually the exact copy of Aragon's magic system. So, I didn't even change the name and just directly named it Stars Magic. Stars Dou Qi, plus Stars Magic, all of these originated from Aragon. Luckily, Semel never heard of these names before and thought it was very fitting, so she accepted the names."

Speaking up to this point, the old magician paused for a moment. With a smile on his face and gentle eyes, the old magician's consciousness looked like it was sinking back into some happy and fond memories.....

"At that time..... We got along very well. She is my good friend, but at the same time, she was like my disciple. Together with her, I also felt like I became somewhat younger." The old magician then shook his head and closed his eyes: "But later on, I started thinking that I would eventually have to tell her everything..... Revealing all the secrets of Aragon to her because she is the one I chose to be my suitable heir.

"Did you tell her?" Du Wei asked.

"I... Was... Very hesitant." From the old magician's complexion, he looked like he was struggling to speak: "She was so happy..... So simple. She liked simple things and liked living a free life in peace..... I felt regretful. Pulling such a carefree and happy woman into this complex and historical grievance is a complete sin. So, I've been delaying in telling her. That is until.... We returned to the Imperial Capital....."

As if struck by an idea, Du Wei thought of something.

"After traveling for three years outside of the capital, we returned that year when a shooting star passed by the Imperial Capital's sky. This strange

phenomenon caused his Majesty to call forth the best Astrologer in the empire to give a divination. It was after the palace banquet that Semel met your ancestor, Zach. Humph, this boy is your great-great-grandfather, Zach Rowling. During that time, he was the youngest high commanding general of his age.”

“And then what?” Du Wei gave a wry smile.

“Then?” The gaze from the old magician caused Du Wei to feel a sense of chill down his spine. With a sneer, he continued: “Then I don’t know what means your great-great-grandfather used, but he managed to deceive Semel and the two couples fell in love!”

It is clear from the old magician’s gaze; there is a strong mixture of jealousy and resentment!

What else can be certain is that other than the feeling of friendship and apprentice relationship, the old magician developed a special sort of feeling in his heart!

What happened afterwards is easy to explain:

Seeing his talented female apprentice fall in love and marry off to the head of the noble Rowling family, Zach Rowling, highest military commander of the Empire. On one hand, the old fellow couldn’t just tolerate his beloved woman falling into another man’s arm. On the other hand, he is about to lose his future heir after spending the past few years cultivating. Wouldn’t this mean that he ended up wasting all those times?

So, just before Semel married Zach, the old magician searched her out and had a deep conversation.

The old magician didn’t explain the details of the conversation, but from his words and phrases so far, Du Wei could deduce two conclusions.

Firstly, the old magician must have confessed his love towards his beloved friend and unofficial genius disciple. What can be certain from this action is that Semel refused him. The truth was that Semel never considered this much older person to be a possible love candidate. (According to their age calculation, the gap is far too big) Her way of thinking was very simple; he was a good friend and played the role of a teacher in her heart.

Mainly because of this reason, it caused the old magician great sadness.

Unfortunately, once their conversation reached this point, the strong willed Semel also rejected all of this! Then, the saddened old magician finally revealed his original purpose of cultivating her and all the secrets surrounding Aragon.

“Her tone at the time was so similar to you, boy.” With a gaunt expression, the old magician whispered, “Still remember two days ago when we had that talk? You said ‘you are not a powerful expert of the continent, nor a Saint Knight, nor a magician, so what does all of this have to do with me?!’ At the time, Semel said something very similar.

At that time, Semel was also very keen to put forward her own rage and anger.

“Whatever Aragon, god, or Devil..... What relationship does all of this have to do with me? If the Gods and the Devils want to fight it out, then let them fight! It don’t matter whether it is the Temple or Imperial power, I don’t have any interest! I just want to live my own life! What right do they have to burden me with these already rotting and foul smelling historical problems? I’m not willing! I will not be a part of this rivalry! I just want to live my life, the life of Semel and not someone else’s life!”

The end result is that the old magician left in sorrow and Courtenay Semel married into the Rowling Household, living a happy life for the next few years.

But a few years later, the old magician once again sought out Semel and secretly met up with her in private.

During those few years after leaving Semel, the old magician traveled in search of different hidden documents. In his search, the old fella even sneaked into the royal palace in order to search through the manuscripts left by the founding emperor himself. Even bolder, he dared to break into the Holy Temple multiple times!!

Finally, from a variety of information gathered, the old magician pieced together a startling message. The startling message required a powerful partner to complete, so in his desperation, the old magician sought out Semel once again.

Although they haven’t seen each other for many years, Semel reluctantly

agreed to lend a hand based solely on their years of friendship.

However, because of this one time, trouble soon followed.

## Chapter 93 - Great Prophecy Skill (Part One)

The Evil Faced Spider Queen was currently crawling through the forest with all its strength. Unlike the demon wolves, this giant spider has been like a bulldozer going through the forest. Some large trees that are unlucky enough to block its path would be chopped down with its sickle like blade arms. After a clicking sound in the air, a path would immediately open up for the group.

This specie of giant spider is naturally adapted to live underground in the ice and snow. If they are capable of freely moving through ice that is as hard as steel, how could mere pieces of wood stop the Evil Faced Spider Queen?

Indulging himself in fond memories, the old magician looked like he was experiencing great sadness in his mind as he sat on the spiders back.

After a period of silence, someone else finally questioned the old magician in Du Wei's stead.

"Then what? What happened afterwards?"

The one to bring up the question is actually Queen Medusa. Up until now, she has been quietly sitting on the side as she listened to the story..

A hint of curiosity could be seen on this indifferent woman's face. With a quiet tone, she asked: "Excuse me, how did the events unfold?"

Du Wei was somewhat surprised and couldn't help but glance at Medusa. Noticing the attention she was getting, Medusa spoke in a very calm voice: "I'm just curious. Isn't this peculiar trait only found in humans? And isn't this also a part of human nature?"

"You also want to continue listening to the story?" The old magician was laughing very weirdly: "Oh Queen Medusa, with your level of intelligence, you should understand that it may not be in your best interest to listen to these

stories.”

“I was born and raised by the heavens.” Medusa coldly spoke: “The so called Gods and Temples you speak of, all of them are not important to me.”

“Alright then.” The old magician bursts out into a ‘HA HA’ and then his tone became serious: “It might as well be since you are also a part of the prophecy.”

Shaking his head, the old sorcerer straightened his pointed hat and then pointed into the distance: “There, in front of us. In about a day’s time, we will get out of the frozen forest! Since ancient times, there haven’t been many that have managed to cross through the frozen forest and reach the northern end. On the whole continent, you could count them all with one hand!”

Surprised by his words, Du Wei spoke in a light tone: “According to my knowledge, the farthest someone has managed to travel was about twenty years ago. A magician by the name of Azreal and his group of knights managed to get to Canyon Valley that we just came from.”

“Well, that’s right. According to the records, it was Azreal, that sly boy.” The old magician laughed coldly: “But two hundred years ago, I have already crossed through the frozen forest and came to the northern end of the forest! Traveling with me was Semel. We entered the frozen forest and crossed the Large Lakes. Afterwards, we came all the way to where we are now and continued heading even further north. In the end, we finally reached our goal... That was the last time I saw Semel and it was the last time she agreed to help me!”

“What exactly is awaiting us after the frozen forest?” Du Wei laughed: “It couldn’t be a prison, right?”

The old magician didn’t laugh at the joke. Instead, he stared at Du Wei for a bit and then sat down. Rummaging through his clothing, the old magician pulled out a piece of parchment.

Not hurrying to open the parchment, the old magician first worked out a wind blocking spell, then placing the parchment on his knees, he slowly opened the scroll.

The state of the parchment was so old, it was practically near ruin as if the slightest touch would cause the paper to crumble. After soaking the material in

some unknown protective syrup, the original color of the parchment could no longer be distinguished. Also, on the edge of one corner, there is clear indication of the scroll being nibbled on by rats. As for the contents of the scroll, there are letters written in an odd fashion with a scarlet red coloration. The weird thing about all this was that the paint didn't have any indication of fading; this strange phenomenon raised some question in Du Wei's mind.

As if seeing through his suspicion, the old magician laughed softly: "This was written with blood.... Written with the blood of Aragon and imbued with magic on its markings. Even if a thousand years were to pass, the markings would not fade away. I was only able to locate this precious item after gathering multiple clues from different sources. Some of these places included a secret room of the Imperial palace and secret documents from the Holy Temple of Light. Piecing together all the information, I was finally able to locate this valuable parchment from a declining lesser noble's family tomb. This item is the last will left behind by Aragon...."

"Declining lesser noble?" The one to raise this question was Hussein. This knight was from a humble origin and growing up under the careful tutelage of the Temple, he would of course have a good understanding of the Royal family lineage. "Aragon's will? How could Aragon's letter of will be hidden in a lesser noble's tomb?"

The old magician glanced at Du Wei.

Sighing, Du Wei understood the reasoning behind why Aragon's will was left behind in the tomb. Since he was an aristocrat, he has always received the best form of education. On top of this, he was always treated coldly since small, so he had spent most of his times reading books. His level of knowledge is comparable to any famous scholar in the Empire.

Spending a moment in thought, he explained the reasoning to the knight.

The founding of the Roland Empire has nearly been a thousand years. After the passing of the first founding emperor Aragon, his second son ascended to the throne. Then after fourteen years of rule, the second emperor passed away, allowing his eldest son to ascend to the throne..... After a thousand years of ascension by all these emperors, or to be accurately speaking, after four hundred



years of ascension, the one to sit on the throne cannot be considered a direct descendant of Aragon anymore.

Approximately four hundred years after the founding of the Roland Empire, the direct descendant to be crowned at the time passed away early in his life. This led to one major problem for the empire because he had no children to inherit his position. To make matters worse, the Roland royal family actually couldn't find a suitable heir in their ranks to ascend to the throne!

Strictly speaking, the emperors to sit on the throne from then on cannot be considered a direct descendant of Aragon.

Instead, they are the descendants of Aragon's siblings.

From a historical point of view, historians believed this is the point where Aragon's direct descendant is severed. Historical documents named this event the end of the "Thorned flower dynasty". (This dynasty was considered to be ruled under the true descendants of Aragon) Another known name for this was the "Withering Lineage Era".

Afterwards, the descendant of Aragon's siblings has been in control of the throne. This period was called the 'Glory dynasty', but this dynasty only prospered for two hundred years before declining. It was at this time, the empire faced its biggest crisis since its founding. (It was mentioned before; this was the time when Du Wei's family, the Rowling household gained its status and authority) The northwestern tribal clans rebelled against the empire and proclaimed self-sovereignty. Even though the empire didn't collapse from this rebellion, but it was nearly enough to cause the empire to perish.

Luckily, it was at this time, an outstanding Emperor emerged after the royal family weathered through this disturbance. Unlike the rest of the royal family that could trace their lineage to Aragon's brothers, this emperor claimed that he was instead a direct descendant of Aragon. If we were to trace the lineage of the royal family members, every descendant from Aragon's male offspring should have perished in the 'Lineage Withering Era'. As for his claim of being a direct descendant of Aragon, he could trace his lineage to one of the several surviving daughters with a direct bloodline to Aragon.

Even during the secession of the throne, there was a heated struggle between

who should take the crown. At the same time, the empire was facing a crisis never before seen. On the other hand, many members of the royal household refused to succeed the throne, thinking this position was like a thundering volcanic mouth.

In the end, the person to take the crown and become the emperor was someone that was forced into the position. Looking into the lineage book, this person cannot even be considered a real descendant of Aragon. The only relationship he had was that his great-great-great-grandmother was a direct descendant of Aragon's bloodline. Before becoming the emperor... This person was not even a prince of the empire; his position was only at best a Duke!

But surprisingly, this emperor was an outstanding individual. Not only did he elevate the Rowling family (Du Wei's family), he paved the road for the prosperity of the Rowling household.

This section of history is very complex, but then again, members of the royal family have always been very scattered. Du Wei could make a comparison to an example of his previous life. In the history of China, the Han dynasty faced a similar situation. The Western Han dynasty and the Eastern Han dynasty were both considered Han Dynasty's. But after the fall of the Western Han dynasty, founded by Liu Bang, the royal family of the following Eastern Han dynasty could no longer be traced back to Liu Bang.

The history of the Roland Empire is very similar to the Western and Eastern Han dynasty of China.

It's just that this certain emperor that managed to revive the Roland Empire seemed to worship Aragon. Not only does he proclaim himself a direct descendant of Aragon, but he also named his dynasty the 'Thorned Flower Dynasty'. Although historians do not agree with this naming and even his descendants do not follow through with this after his death. Now, everyone calls this era the 'Augustine dynasty' because before this outstanding person became the emperor, his title was called Duke Augustine.

The ironic thing was that even though this emperor was a firm worshiper of Aragon and even calls himself a direct descendant, but his very own offspring's do not wish this. Using the current emperor for example, his title is called

Augustine the sixth!

Returning to the question raised by Hussein: “Why is a handwritten letter by Aragon found in a tomb of a declining noble family?” The reason is simple. The true descendants of Aragon have already perished a few hundred years ago!

The royal family that came afterwards can only be considered his relatives and not actually his own bloodline.

“Simply speaking, the first four hundred years since the founding of the empire was to be known as the ‘Thorned Flower Dynasty’. Then the two hundred years that followed was to be known as the ‘Glory Dynasty’. After six hundred years have passed since the founding of the Roland Empire, the one to ascend to the throne cannot be considered a descendant of Aragon anymore. This era is to be known as the ‘Augustine Dynasty’, which is the current dynasty we are living in. Do you understand now?” Du Wei laughed sadly as he finished speaking.

Time line: 0-400 years (Thorned Flower) 400-600 years (*Glory*) 600-present day (Augustine)

After finishing his explanation to the knight, Du Wei immediately turned his head towards the old magician: “Well then, why don’t you tell us what was it in the tomb and what the content in Aragon’s will was?”

“Specifically speaking, it is a prophecy!” The old magician was laughing in a scary manner, as if deliberately lowering his voice: “You know that Aragon was unmatched in his age. His strength was considered invincible, but no one knew exactly how powerful he truly was. Some said his strength could even be nearing the level of a God! Although absurd.... But I personally don’t think so! I believe this saying is possible and his strength is already nearing the level of a God! So.... It is likely that he had in his possession an ability called the ‘Great Prophecy Skill’!”

# The 94th Chapter “Forgotten Ice Field: The Last Barrier” (Part One)

Du Wei felt uneasy about all this, it was like his mood was getting heavier and heavier like a rock. With things continuing like this, the seed of panic will start to sprout in his heart.

Without any doubt, Du Wei didn't like any of this! He didn't like this so called prophecy, or the so called mission of Aragon. And most of all, he didn't have any intention to inherit whatever legacy left behind by the already deceased!

In this regard, Du Wei's thought matched the already deceased Semel from two hundred years ago: I am what I am, I want to have my own life, my own freedom! What right do others have to push their legacy on to me? Even if he is a legendary figure from history and is also a all mighty powerful expert, but even so, what does all of that have to do with me? I don't care!

Since coming to this strange world, there was never any 'Grand' scheme in his heart. Bless the Gods that he was able to reincarnate into a powerful noble family. His expectation towards life is very simple: give up his right to inherit, give up the family burden, become a relaxing rich person that only knows to eat, do a few things he fancied, tinkering around with magic, play some football games, and so on and so on with all these pointless things. As long as he doesn't need to worry about food and clothing, that is enough for him.....

Du Wei had always intentionally kept a low profile, deliberately be misunderstood by others, intentionally be the family idiot, and intentionally be kicked out of the capital by his father. He was actually really happy inside when that happened because he would be able to leave the heavy political spectrum of the capital behind. He was very happy to relocate his home to the Roland Plains.... Every day was joyful and interesting.

But now, everything may end!

Blame it on the god damn..... Prophecy!!

What mission! What inheritor of the already deceased Aragon! Fuck it! I don't want that kind of life!

Inherit Aragon's legacy and be at odds with the Temple of Light? Where do I get such a backing? What is the Temple of Light? It is a thousand years old entity with enormous power! Even the emperor cannot offend such a religious faction! The Temple is rich, powerful, and high in prestige throughout the entire continent!

Inherit the legacy of Aragon and have a big fight with this entity? I fear even my bones would not be left after everything is over!

Hussein is strong, right? The continent's number one Knight! But yet, he is a fugitive forced to flee and be driven into hiding by the temple.

Aragon is strong, right? But even he failed to bring down the temple. What can I possibly do?

I'm what? I just a young nobleman! Eat and die, an unambitious little aristocratic! Used to living a calm and carefree life!

Give all of this away for what? A guy that's already dead a thousand years in the past? To top it all off, I need to offer the rest of my life for his so called legacy? What nonsense!

No way!

As they continued their journey, Du Wei didn't say anything else. Everyone in the group could see the somber mood he had from the changes in his face. Clearly not pleased with all the information he was given.

When fortune falls from the sky, everyone in the world would like it. But if all the fortune fell at once, wouldn't it crush the person in question? If that's the case, it would be a different story. Yes, another story!! (Sorry guys, but even in Chinese, I couldn't really understand this part)

The old magician was still controlling the Evil Faced Spider, but even for a Druid capable of communicating with all manners of creatures, it would still put a strain on him after a long period of time.

This night, the group didn't make camp; instead, they continued traveling on the spiders back. Surprisingly, Hussein offered to be on the night watch..... But throughout the night, Hussein kept the focus of his eyes completely on Du Wei, as if able to see something in him.

There weren't any strong winds to disturb him thanks to the wind barrier projected by the old magician. Even so, Du Wei couldn't sleep throughout the night while lying on the spider's back. Despite being wrapped in a thick coating of leather clothing and performing a few sets of Stars Dou Qi routine, Du Wei still couldn't fall asleep.

He really wanted to get out of here and leave behind this heavy burden and mission!

But with the Knight keeping a close eye on him, Du Wei couldn't do anything. Looking back on this, he was the weakest among this strange group of three men, one mouse, and a snake. If a fight were to really break out, Du Wei feared that he wouldn't even be able to take on Gargamel.

Run? Du Wei believed he had no chance of succeeding.

"Good then....." At dawn, the old magician quietly came over to Hussein's back and looked down at the slumbering Du Wei. With a small laugh, he whispered to the neighboring Hussein: "This is a huge change for him. It is only normal for his emotions to fluctuate after learning something so important, but I believe he will eventually understand. After all, he is the chosen one mentioned in the prophecy."

Dawn is here!

Du Wei still had his eyes closed, but Gargamel had already come out from his chest pocket. Standing upright on Du Wei's leg, his pair of beady eyes stared ahead, uttering a shrill cheer: "We got away! We are out!"

As the mouse continued to jump in celebration, Du Wei rolled over and sat up. Opening his sleepy eyes, Du Wei looked at the scene in front.....

The edge of the forest was already in front of them. No longer filled with dense cropping's of silvery trees, instead, the terrain only contained a sparse collection of trees in their general area.

Further in front of the group was a vast expanse of white snow! Flat and endless snow, god knows how many years did it take to completely submerge the land in this layer of frost. Look into the distance, occasional glaciers of ice with a green coloration could be seen protruding from the ground.....

Under the rays of the morning sun, the sun's light penetrated through the ice, causing ripples of round light circles to arc into the sky, creating a magnificent scene to one's eyes.

After running through the frozen forest and carrying the group for two days, the Evil Faced Spider Queen was looking somewhat exhausted. Now that it has stopped at the edge of the forest, the spider was making a squeezing noise from its mouth, similar to how someone was gasping for breath.

Seeing this, the old magician once again blew into his whistle and called for the spider to come in front of him. As he gently stroked one of the spider's legs, a rippling aura of soft light shot forth from the old magician's palm. This action seemed to bring great comfort to the spider because its condition was suddenly looking a lot better.

"Well then, come down, my friends." The old magician's spirit seemed to be quite excited. With his robe fluttering in the wind, he turned around with his back facing everyone and pointed towards the endless snowy landscape: "Welcome to the 'Forgotten Ice Field', we are the first humans to arrive here after two hundred years!"

After what he said, the old magician seemed to sigh at his own words. In a whispering voice; "Semel, do you still remember the image of the two of us crossing over this land?"

After freeing the Evil Face Spider Queen, the old magician declared: "Whatever is beyond this place, we will need to rely on our legs to get through this. There are hardly any living creatures in this vast expanse of glacial land. It will definitely leave a lasting impression on your minds..... By the way, in this strange place, expect a torrent of tearing winds to strike at us during the night. If you don't want to freeze to death, make sure you don't wander off alone and get yourself lost."

Du Wei was unwilling to move his legs. As if sensing this, Medusa suddenly whispered from behind him: "You seem troubled."

"Yes." Du Wei did not try to evade the question.

Medusa was silent for a few seconds and then spoke in a low voice: "I remember back in my Palace, the first lesson you taught me was that humans

need to face reality, isn't that correct?"

With that said, her highness didn't say anything else. Like the wind, she gently drifted past Du Wei and walked in front of him.

Face reality.....

Du Wei carefully savored this sentence, then let out a bitter laugh.

It's easy to preach, but it's not so easy to put it into real practice.

•

Traveling through the ice field is completely different from traveling through the frozen forest. Continuing forward, the surface of the land had less snow buildup, but at the same time, the snow wasn't soft like that in the Frozen Forest. The snow was hard and smooth, resembling ice more than snow. If not careful, it would be normal for one to slip and fall over more than ten times.

Moreover, there are countless pitfalls hidden in the seemingly smooth looking surface of the ice field. If you were to accidentally step on one, the ice sheet on top would shatter and send you falling deep below the surface! Once below, you can forget about coming back up!

"Why aren't we flying across this place?" Du Wei frowned.

For someone like the old magician, a flying spell shouldn't be a problem for someone of his level. A wind element flying spell should be simple for him and besides, Medusa strength is also very powerful. Conjuring up a flying spell shouldn't be a problem.

As for Hussein..... His strength is at the level of a Saint Knight, so he should be able to rely on his Dou Qi (energy/mana) to soar across the sky.

"Because this place, the 'Forgotten Ice Field' is under a curse from the gods. There is a natural barrier in the air, so flying will not work here." The old magician was smiling after his explanation. But fearing Du Wei wouldn't believe him, the old magician pulled out a pouch from his clothing and took out a piece of paper. Folding the paper several times, the paper quickly took on the shape of a butterfly. With a gentle touch of his finger, it was as if the paper butterfly was suddenly infused with life. Vibrating the paper wings, it gently flew into the



air.....

Very soon, when it flew into the distance of around seven to eight meters in height, the wind flow in the sky suddenly picked up speed! Then suddenly, the area erupted into big gusts of wind and shot towards where the paper butterfly was flying!

Not waiting for Du Wei to speak again; a scraping sound could be heard from the distance and the paper butterfly was already shredded into multiple pieces!

The old magician continued in a light voice: “See that? This is a forbidden zone set by the gods. Even if you are a top expert of the continent, you can only walk on the surface.”

Du Wei got it.

Even if one is a powerful magician, they cannot constantly shield themselves against the endless razor sharp wind blades. Even if your magical defensive ability is strong, the power consumption is enough to kill you!

## **The 94th Chapter “The Forgotten Ice Field: The Last Barrier” (Part Two)**

Incapable of flight and can only rely on one's legs to walk on the glacial surface. Thus, even if one has abnormally high strength, they aren't much different from ordinary people when faced with these limitations.

Taking out a short wand with a transparent silver colored crystal embedded into it, the old magician raised it up into the air and started to spell chant from his mouth. A soft light soon emanated from the crystal and formed a four meter wide magic barrier.

This magic barrier was able to effectively block off the fierce glacial winds!

On top of this endless flat icy surface, the whistling wind was abnormally scary. Without the forest trees to shield them, the force of the wind is strong enough to blow away a person of Du Wei's stature into midair with ease!

With the old magician constantly keeping the wind barrier active, the group is able to move forward while keeping a close proximity to each other.

The physical exertion of walking on ice is high, but without the constant battering of the wind, the difficulty was reduced by a margin.

In order to avoid the many crevasses hidden on top of the ice surface, Du Wei tapped into the knowledge of his previous life and tied the group together with a single rope. Of course, Hussein continued to remain in front because he is physically stronger.

As for Medusa, she didn't speak a single word during this period and was

looking somewhat fatigued. No matter what, snakes are after all cold blooded creatures, such cold temperatures would of course have some sort of impact on her.

The difficult condition of their travels continued like this for two days, and the group's movement speed was beginning to slow down. Even Hussein's breathing was starting to show how much his fatigue was affecting him. Although the knight's eyes were still strong, but Du Wei could tell this method of using pure physical strength to walk is too much of a burden.

Plus, the old magician couldn't always keep the wind barrier erected because the wind in this place has been just too terrifying. Especially at night, the roaring sound of the blasting wind was enough to deafen one's ears, as if a beast is constantly roaring inside someone's ears. To make matters worse, Du Wei almost couldn't fight off the biting cold. Even the effects of the basic Stars Dou Qi movement routine were greatly weakened. In one night, he had to wake up multiple times to perform the routine, or else he would freeze to death.

It was at this time; Hussein performed a much appreciated act of kindness. Without a word, the knight pulled Du Wei next to him and pulled off his cloak to cover Du Wei. Then, using his immense Dou Qi, the knight shielded Du Wei from the cold.

The old magician was already doing his best, but being surrounded by the endless freezing winds, his energy was almost completely drained from maintaining the barrier. Du Wei finally understood why the old magician had to reduce his energy consumption to the utmost till now.

The further north you go, the stronger the wind gets!

Even with his naked eyes, Du Wei could see raging tornados forming down onto the ice from the sky!

With winds like a roaring dragon, the clearly visible columns raged back and forth near the group. If not for the old magician spending sleepless days and nights maintaining the barrier.....

According to Du Wei's estimates.... This degree of attack is equal to the old magician spending countless sleepless days and nights to fend off numerous mid leveled wind spells!

Thus, the circle of light on his wand would inevitably be dimmed down. Also, in order to conserve his magic reserve, the scope of the barrier was almost narrowed down, forcing the group to walk even closer together like one big mass.

By the fourth day, the old magician couldn't keep it up any longer. Maintaining the barrier over the duration of four days while being battered by intermediate wind attacks has completely drained the old magician.

"The last time when I came here..... The wind was not so strong!" There was a hint of weakness in the old magician's voice."

"How much further?" Du Wei shouted through the wind.... But under the roaring sound of the winds, there was no way for his companions to hear his voice.

"There are approximately one and a half days left." The old magician spoke in a helpless way: "Just another one and a half days left, then we can out of this ice field! Once we are out of this ice field, there will no more winds like this!"

"How much longer can you hold up?" Du Wei sighed.

"I need a break." The old magician no longer forced himself to hold out: "I need a rest to restore my magic, but....."

Du Wei nodded: "Let me replace you for a bit!"

Fortunately, the old magician's magic barrier has been just like that in the scrolls. Nothing complicated, only requiring the caster to constantly inject energy into the barrier.

Du Wei took hold of the old magician's wand. At first he thought he would somehow manage for a while, but soon found out he could barely hold up!

Only after experiencing first hand of maintaining the barrier did Du Wei realize the old magician didn't have it easy!

The fierce wind in the surrounding is just too terrifying. The razor sharp winds are like a flood of a densely packed wave of attacks, constantly battering away at the barrier.

Du Wei felt his body tremble the moment he touched the wand. The speed of

the energy drain is just absolutely terrifying! Even so, he somehow managed to hold out for a moment, but the energy reserve he was usually so proud of was nearly depleted!

Less than a cup of tea's worth of time, Du Wei was already feeling his mental strength fading away!

Drain! Drain! And drain! The magic wand in Du Wei's hand was frantically draining away his energy. On top of that, the constant battering of the wind blades in the surrounding increased the speed even faster. Even though Du Wei did his best to hang on, the range of the barrier inevitable narrowed down in size once again.

With his eyes closed in silence, the old magician continued to meditate after drinking two bottles of magic potion. Due to the large energy consumption, simply drinking magic potions cannot restore all the energy he had expended.

Seeing Du Wei's pale colored face, Gargamel called out with his shrill like voice. Somehow, the usually hateful and annoying mouse seemed more lovable by ten times!

Gargamel timidly spoke: "Why not let me give it a try? No matter what, I am at least an eighth level magician."

His saying may be eighth level, but in fact, the real strength of Gargamel, whom specializes in transformation spells, are only at the fifth level. Even so, his powers are still slightly stronger than Du Wei and he was also more experienced than him.

Taking the wand off his hand, Du Wei is about to receive a lesson in class.

Gargamel didn't blindly inject magic into the barrier; instead, he carefully judged the strength of each oncoming wind attack. By increasing and decreasing the defense of the barrier depending on the strength of the oncoming attack, he was able to conserve his energy level, thus, prolonging the length of time he could keep the barrier up.

So, despite the fact that Gargamel's magic is only slightly better than Du Wei's, the length of time the mouse could last was three times of his.

This is not any extremely difficult spell, but by simply observing this efficient

manipulation of magical energy, Du Wei was able to benefit greatly! Originally, the manipulation of magical energy is also a form of strength for a magician, but often more than not, the young magician of the same level would lose in a duel against a more senior peer. This difference is usually based on the effective use of magical energy!

The practice of using energy effectively and avoiding wasting even a drop of energy is enough to make Du Wei's eyes lit up!

As soon as Gargamel couldn't continue maintaining the barrier, Du Wei immediately stepped up to replace him. Despite only restoring a third of his energy level, his performance was able to surprise everyone!

Using only a third of his original energy, Du Wei managed to last the same length of time as Gargamel!

This is all thanks to the devil's horn on top of his head. The horn dramatically increases his magical senses, thus, allowing him to accurately pinpoint the location and strength of each wind attack!

Being forced to perform in this real life condition, Du Wei quickly mastered his ability to manipulate the output of his magical energy!

"Every young magician would unwittingly waste their magic energy. Only with age, will these youngsters gradually improve their skills, in just two days, this kid managed to improve so much that he could match even a regular magician!"

This is Gargamel's evaluation of Du Wei.

With the help of Gargamel and Du Wei alternately maintaining the barrier, the old magicians had enough time to rest and recover his magic reserve. Thus, after a day and a half, the group was able to make it out of the ice field.....

As soon as they stepped out of the ice field, a miraculous thing happened! Far away in their line of sight, a mountain with the shape of a giant hand was protruding from the ground!

Tickle!

Du Wei's heart nearly skipped a beat the moment his boots touched the soft snow!

The boundless storm in the sky instantly disappeared!  
Taking one last look behind him, Du Wei discovered that the wind behind them has stopped!

Bending down, he forced both his arms into the snow below his boots. Then, with a cry of joy, Du Wei looked up and smiled: “We finally came out! There is soil under the snow!”

The old magician was so relieved that he nearly collapsed. With his butt against the snow, he wiped his wand a few times then stored it away. “We’re out, we are finally out!”

Pulling out his sword, Hussein plunged his sword into the ground, leaving only the hilt to be seen! After confirming their words, the knight pulled out the sword and saw that it was covered in soil! With a satisfied smile: “It is! It appears that we have indeed made it out of the ice field! Damn, the winds there were awful!”

“If not terrible, then how can it be called ‘the forgotten ice field’? From legend, this ice field was said to be set by the Gods, specifically aimed at blocking the route leading to the human world. This is just like a natural barrier! In fact, this ice field is actually a magic array left behind from ancient times! Although this magic array is a barrier, but in some ways, this barrier acts as a shield to separate the human world from other worlds.” The old magician gasped.

“I don’t understand.” Du Wei shook his head.

“You’ll understand soon.” The old magician had a smile on his face as he pointed at the horizon towards the mountain: “See that mountain? That mountain is our goal! I heard that it has a name from ancient legend. It was called the Holy Mountain.”

“Holy Mountain?” Du Wei frowned: “Could that be the residence of gods?”

“Of course not.” The old magician laughed out loud: “Why would God live in the mortal world! But on top of the mountain, lived other powerful beings.”

“What’s that?” Du Wei along with Hussein asked at the same time.

But as soon as they began to ask, a sudden sound caught their attention. Far into the distance, a ROAR like sound echoed from the mountain!

There a supreme dignity that one feels from the ROAR could penetrate straight into the very core of someone's heart. Words could not describe the feeling that one would feel after listening to it!

Both Du Wei and Hussein turned pale; it was obvious from their facial expression that both men have guessed what the cause of the sound was!

"The residence on top of the Holy Mountain is not God, but rather the most powerful legendary creature left behind by God. This higher tiered organism is even more intelligent and powerful than humans...." The old magician smiled: "Dragons! On top of the mountain lived the Dragon Tribe! According to the ancient legends, the Dragon tribe's life mission is to guard the border of the human world! With the presence of the powerful dragon tribe there, it would prevent humans to cross over... And on the hand, it would not allow any other powerful species to cross over into the human world. Thus, protecting the human world and keeping the human apart from the other worlds! These dragons are the last barrier!"

The echoing roar far into the distance refused to stop, and very soon, several black dots in the sky could be spotted over the horizon on top of the mountain. These black dots gracefully hovered on top of the mountain.....

That's a dragon! Du Wei focused his sight to see not one, but a group of dragons!

A group!



## The 95th Chapter “Mountain”

Holy Mountain?

The Dragon clan?

Guard?

The barrier stopping the human world and the other worlds from crossing?

He was full of questions, but the old magician has already gone ahead and stepped in front of the group.

This time, he pulled out a large piece of fabric from his miraculous pouch. Just from looking at how tattered it was, there was no way to know for certain what material it was made from, but it did seem to resemble a flag.

Holding the flag up into the air, the old magician stepped into the forefront of the group.

They continued to walk around in the snow like this for a while, and very soon, the group of dragons hovering atop of the Holy Mountain became aware of the intruders closing in on them.

After a series of conversation in the dragon’s language, a group of the black dots in the sky started leaving the mountain and headed towards them.

As the black dots closed in on them, their shape became even clearer!

They really are dragons!

Du Wei had seen dragons before and it wasn’t even that long ago. But from his

initial observation, it was clear that this group of dragons is very different from the two pet dragons kept by Vivian and Joanna. These dragons are much more massive in comparison!!

The group heading towards them contained a total of ten dragons in their mix. From heads to tails, their body was completely black and the length of their body could easily reach ten meters, but if you were to also include the tail; their length could easily reach 20 meters. This must be the so called “Dragons Prestige” because the pressure they were giving off only increased as they drew closer.

The extended wings on their back seemed to be able to cover the entire sky as they drew closer and each flap of their wings caused enough wind force to create giant bursts of wind in the air. This situation was just like standing beneath a helicopter in Du Wei’s past life because even the simple effort of keeping his eyes open became a laborious task.

Ten dragons have already flown over to their location, while the rest of the dragons that was left behind continued to hover in the sky atop of the mountain. As if to support their comrades, the dragons were letting out threatening ROARS the entire time. Suspended in midair, the biggest dragon in their mix lowered its body to gaze down at the intruders with its commanding and terrifying eyes.

Raising the flag in his hand, the old magician cried out: “Oh great respected dragon clan! We are friends from the human world! The thing in my hand is a contract signed by the dragon clan with a human! We are here to seek an audience with the great dragon chieftain!”

Bang!!

After a tremendous Shockwave, the largest dragon has already landed in front of the group. Due to its massive size and weight, several cracks have appeared in the ground below its body. Folding its wings away, the dragon gave a cold look towards the old magician, and then shifted its focus towards the flag in his hand.

“Human!” This gigantic creature was speaking the human tongue: “Humans are not allowed to be here!”

Its voice was tremendous, shocking Du Wei to the point of causing dizziness. On top of that, its mouth was sending out a horrible and indescribable smell.....

Oh heavens, such a gigantic foul breathed dragon!

“We know that.” The old magician’s expression didn’t change: “But according to the contract in my hand, the holder of this contract is allowed to come here and retrieve the things stored away in the Holy Mountain!”

On the flag, symbols were scrawled onto it as if someone was in a hurry. But after a moment of observation, the massive black dragon finally nodded in approval: “Alright, the writing is indeed the language of the dragons. You can pass! But do not cross over the mountain and head into the north!”

With that said, its huge head drew closer to the group and even its nostrils were brushing against them as it sniffed each individual. Once finished, its head shrank back as it gave out a sigh: “Humans.... Hateful humans, I’m going to inform the dragon elder that humans have arrived.....”

Lifting its massive body up into the air, the huge dragon uttered out two long laughs before taking the group of dragons back with it towards the mountain.

Finally relieved at the final outcome, the old magician carefully put the flag away.

“What is this, a contract?” Du Wei asked.

“Yes, a contract.” The old magician said this with a smile: “This is a contract signed by both the Dragon clans Chieftain and Aragon himself. The Holy Mountain in front of us is where Aragon stored his legacy. On the whole continent, what other place is more secure than the lands of the Dragon clan?”

Upon reaching the foot of the mountain, the feeling they were getting felt completely different than before. The mountain was exceptionally strange, with huge black rocks extruding a metallic sheen and carrying a frosty cold around it. Among the flat surrounding lands, this mountain was the only thing standing out as if piercing straight out of the ground and reaching all the way into the sky. And circling atop of the mountain is a couple of dragons constantly letting out booming roars, causing anyone unlucky enough to listen to it to become befuddled at the sound.

“What is north of the Holy Mountain?” Du Wei was very curious. This barrier leading the human world to the outside world... What is there in the outside

world?

“You are curious?” The old magician turned around and looked at Du Wei: “You will know soon, but it’s for the best not to ask this question now because it would enrage those big things in the sky.”

Climbing the Holy Mountains was a serious test for Du Wei’s physical body.

Because the mountain is simply too high!

There are no stairs leading to the top of the mountain, but fortunately, there is a winding mountain road circling around the side. Even though you can call it a road, the width is not very wide, only capable of allowing three people to travel on it at the same time. Facing one side of the road is the wall of the mountain, and the other side is the steep cliff leading to the bottom of the mountain!

The mountain road they were trudging up was completely bare, only filled with dark black rocks. And the entire time they were walking, they could constantly hear the roaring voice of dragons from above their heads. Letting out a sigh, Du Wei spoke: “If anyone lived in this place, they would most definitely get nightmares every night!”

The old magician walking in the front gave the huffing and wheezing Du Wei a glance, and then suddenly smiled as he spoke: “You’re wrong, there was once a person that stayed here for a long period of time and that person was Aragon! His majesty came to the Holy Mountain and stayed here for a full year before leaving!”

Du Wei frowned: “For a year?”

“Do you see the mountain road below your feet?” The old magician sneered: “Can you see the oddity of this mountain? Touch and feel the side of the mountain wall. It’s neither stone, nor soil.... Can you tell what this mountain is made of?”

Du Wei touched the mountain walls and felt it was cold to the touch. Then drawing his face closer, he sniffed the mountain wall to see if there is any scent: “This smell.....”

“Like iron.” Hussein cut in. Using his sword, he pounded it against the wall of the mountain and a buzzing sound echoed off the impact. Then, using one of his

fingers, he flicked it against the mountain wall, causing a deep echoing sound to vibrate back towards everyone. After confirming this, the knight spoke with a solemn face: "This is a mountain of metal and the purity is extremely high!"

"According to the legends that I know of, this is a mountain completely made out of metal." Turning his head towards Du Wei, the old magician looked like he had a shortness of breath as he spoke: "When this place was first created, it was just a mountain but the appearance was not like this."

"Then what did it look like?"

"In the past, this was only a mountain when Aragon passed through the 'frozen forest', the 'forgotten ice field', and finally reached this Holy Mountain by himself.... So how can there be a winding road on this mountain! Don't you find it strange? The residences of this place are dragons, so why would they require a road for people to walk on?"

Du Wei was indeed puzzled. Such a narrow winding road is obviously of no use to dragons..... They can fly, so why would they need a road for? And the road is so narrow; the dragons can't possibly use it with their massive body.

"In the past when Aragon came here, he used his tyrannical power against the whole dragon clan. Despite being outnumbered, none could defeat Aragon." The old magician was so engrossed in the content of the legend; a trace of pride could be heard from his voice: "Therefore, the dragon clan was unable to do anything to him. Seeing the dragon clan's resignation, Aragon made a request, asking them to do him a favor. At first, the proud dragons refused, but none of the clan members could defeat Aragon. In the end, both sides decided to set up a wager."

Wager?"

"It is the contract that I was holding earlier." The old magician smiled: "The dragon clan's most powerful warriors and chieftain lost to Aragon in a duel, thus, they presented him with a challenge. If Aragon could somehow succeed in climbing to the top of the mountain, they would be willing to help him, but there were other conditions involved. First, he cannot fly. Second, he can only walk with his feet!"

"What kind of condition is this?!" Du Wei frowned.

“So the original Holy Mountain was not like this in appearance. The Holy Mountain at the time was like a towering peak without any gaps in between its cliffs! The smoothness would leave little to no room for someone to gain a foothold!”

“But it is not too difficult.” Du Wei said: “With Aragon’s tyrannical powers, it shouldn’t be too hard even if he climbed the mountain bare handed.”

“More than that..... According to the contract, the dragon tribe is allowed to interfere from the sidelines. If he really did climb the mountain bare handed, do you think he would have succeeded while receiving attacks from an endless supply of dragons?” The old magician smiled: “Finally, Aragon came up with this dumb idea. Even though this idea was dumb, but it was able to impress every member of the dragon clan. Since then, the dragon clan obediently followed through on their promise and completed the task left behind for them.”

Speaking up this point, the old magician pointed at the mountain under his feet: “Using his King’s sword, Aragon relied on his supreme power and started from the foot of the mountain and opened up a road leading to the top of the mountain. By spending a year’s worth of time, Aragon was able to single handedly carve out a road to the top!”

“.....”

Du Wei was speechless. His heart was so shocked that he had unconsciously reached out with his hands to touch the mountain walls! As he moved his hands across the iron surface, Du Wei could still feel the faint hacking marks left behind by Aragon! Imagining the scene of such a legendary character, one man, one sword, Aragon was able to single handedly carve out a road to the top of the mountain!

Then subduing the entire Dragon Clan!

Such courage!

Such skill!

Hussein didn’t speak, but the knight’s eyes suddenly emitted a strange glow as he looked at the hacking marks left by Aragon. The knight was so absorbed in his thought that it took him a good while before he regained his senses.....

## The 96th Chapter “Du Wei’s Speculation”

Less than half way up the mountain, Du Wei already felt exhausted. He feared that unless they spend another day or two, they wouldn’t reach the top.

Because flying in this place is a patented right of the dragons, so even Aragon had to rely on his own two feet when he wanted to climb the mountain.

In addition to cold weather in the environment, Du Wei was also tormented by another painful problem.

Sunburn!

This problem seemed very contradictory, but is a real issue.

In his past life, Du Wei often saw TV programs similar to authentic national magazines. In those shows, the expedition team members would often receive sunburns while traveling through the Arctic and Antarctic circles. Most people would often think this is incredible; however, this is the truth in reality!

The ice and snow have been just like a giant spotlight mirror because it was focusing all the gathered UV lights from the sun. And thinking about it, the far north and south had very thin atmospheres, so the harmful rays of the sun are even more likely to penetrate through.

Du Wei felt his body is covered in sunburn. His face, hands, and any exposed skin looked like it had been steamed through with its pink and red coloration. Now, even the slightest touch is enough to give him a severe burning pain. To make matters worse, during the night when the temperature drops, the pain from the blowing wind was like having a knife constantly cutting at his body!

As for his comrades, both Hussein and the old magician seemed to have the same problem, but the two were more tolerant to the pain than he was.

In addition to the sunburns, Du Wei was also suffering from pain in his eyes.

Even during the night, the blue lights reflecting off the snow were very strong and will damage a person's eye if exposed for a long period of time. In his past life, those that traveled through the Arctic and Antarctic Circle would always wear protection glasses against the reflecting lights. Unfortunately, there isn't any equipment like that in this world. Left with no choice, Du Wei could only put on the sunglasses left behind by Dadaneier, this way, it would be better than having nothing on.

Among the group, the one that was the least affected by this situation was surprisingly Medusa because her skin was that of a snake. Her delicate skin was still as pale as ever, and since her eyes are always closed, she was completely indifferent to all the changes around them.

The next afternoon, the group was finally able to bypass the winding mountain road and reach the halfway point of the mountain. Using the backside of the mountain as a shield against the sun, Du Wei could finally take a breather and attempt at lighting a fire.

"Let's take a break for now and continue walking at night." Du Wei's was gasping for breath as he spoke. From his appearance, the skin on his face was beginning to peel off and the slightest sensation of the wind blowing would cause him excruciating pain. The only remedy he had was to wrap his face in layers of torn clothing, this way only his eye would be exposed to the environment.

The old magician nodded at his suggestion. Working his magic, the old magician gave birth to a bonfire that ran entirely on magic and not an ounce of wood. This method expended a lot of energy, but without any other option, this was the only way to gain some warmth.

Moving closer to the flames, Du Wei stretched opens his arms to bask the front of his body in warmth..... Then turned around to do the same with his backside.

He had to do this because his body was stiff cold by now.



With his back against the flames, Du Wei sat at the edge of the mountain with only the cliffs in front of him.... Moreover, the direction he was facing is exactly to the north!

North of the Holy Mountain!

As he looked into the distance, he couldn't help but wonder what was further into the north, so he once again asked: "North of the Holy Mountain, what exactly is there?"

"No one knows for sure." The old magician shook his head: "But according to legends, the Holy Mountain is the barrier guarding the human world, and continuing north is the place where certain races forsaken by god lived! These races betrayed god, so they were exiled from the Roland continent. It is said that an evil world lies beyond the north. This world is believed to be just like the Roland continent, but the inhabitants are races that believed in the Devil during ancient times, so after the defeat of the devil, they were thrown out of the human world. Left without a place to live, these races headed north and went through the north to another world."

"Another world." Hussein frowned: "What could there possibly be? This place is cold enough to freeze a person alive! If it wasn't us, ordinary people would have long fallen victim to this weather! Further north? I can't even begin to image how much colder it would get if one were to continue heading north! How could any race live in such horrid conditions?"

The old magician smiled wryly: "That's why this is the punishment given to them by God.... I don't really know, but that's what's written in the legends."

"I think that may not necessarily be so." Du Wei suddenly cries out a laugh, but then quickly closed his mouth in silence after noticing the odd look he was getting from both Hussein and the old magician.

Not necessarily..... Du Wei could not help but give out a sigh in his heart.

The further north you go, the colder?

These people will certainly think so in this world and age.

But who is he? Du Wei's past is that of someone from a technologically more advanced civilization than this world!

The further north you go, the colder. This saying seems correct from a contextual point of view.

However, once we take into account the geographical location.....

Let's assume the planet shape of this world and his previous are the same, both are in the shape of a ball.

No, Du Wei was almost certain of this... Assuming the Roland Continent is located on a planet with the shape of a ball. Then, assuming the sun, moon, and even the Big Dipper is all the same! He even suspects this place is a planet in a different space!

In any case, at least he can be certain that this world is a planet! According to the geological location of the Roland Continent: the north is cold and the south is hot.

What did that prove? It proved that the location of the Roland Continent is located on the planets northern hemisphere! Continents in the northern hemisphere would be colder as you head north because you would be closer to the North Pole! But if you head south, it would get hotter because the area is closer to the equator!

This is the simplest explanation.

However, because the ball is round (of course, in this world, we should say "this planet is round"), it will be colder as you will draw closer to the 'Arctic'. But then, what would happen if you continue going forward once you reached the North Pole?

Scientifically speaking, this shouldn't be considered north any longer. In fact, once you crossed over the arctic, you are actually heading south!

If that is the case, it will be warmer instead of getting colder!!

This logic is something even a middle school student would understand back in his previous life. Of course, he feared no one in this world would know about this.

So..... In his heart, he kept wondering what kind of world lies beyond the Holy Mountain?

There is no way the weather would be cold, so the possibility of another land mass like that of the Roland Continent is possible!

So, to the North..... No, I should say what is there in “front” of us?

Losing himself in his thoughts, his legs were already dangling off the edge of the cliff and his eyes were staring far into the distance.....

North of the Holy Mountain, the land was still a vast sheet of ice, but it wasn't as flat and vast as its southern counterpart. From the flat land lines visible to the eyes, one could faintly make out the shapes of multiple snowy mountains.... And starting from the foot of the Holy Mountain, there are strangely shaped black rocks protruding out of the ground.....

Within his view, Du Wei suddenly noticed something sticking out at the bottom of the Holy Mountain. Some unknown item with a silvery white color was hanging off a protruding black rock.....

Du Wei is after all a magician, so it was natural that he would have keener senses and longer eye sights than the average person. Struck with a thought, he immediately removed a strip of cloth from his face. Ignoring the fact that it was frozen from the weather, he rolled it up like a cone and peered into the distance....

In accordance with the basic principles of the pinhole, this method allows further sight with the naked eyes. The moment he could make out the true identity of the item hanging off the rock, Du Wei was so shocked that his heart missed a beat!

That's a pair of bones!

Who knows how many years it's been there, but the body muscles have long been dried by the ice crystals. Now, the only thing left was the husk of a mummy hanging off the protruding rock. From the shape of its body, the arms were exceptionally long, far longer than that of any humans. As for its legs, it was exceptionally stout, but short at the same time. Looking over the body, there was still armor hanging off its rib cage, but the strangest thing of all was that it was missing a head!

Du Wei looked even further into the distance, only to find even more similar

cases like the one he saw. There were other dead bodies, each and every one of them hanging off a protruding rock. Under careful examination, he could see all of these bodies were very different and strange when compared to a human!

The bodies are not human! Some of the leg ratios were far too long, and some only had three fingers on their hands..... It was like some kind of animal exhibit?

The more he looked, the more he frowned. Finally, after carefully looking around, he noticed two bones with similar shapes to that of a human.... These may have similarities to that of humans, but they were far too thin! Even a slender woman may not have such slenderness. Other than only having slimmer bones, the residual body clothing's and armor were unusually gorgeous.....

The only common thing was that their backs were always facing him! And, without exception, there were no heads!

## The 97th Chapter “Dragon Clan’s Cave” (Part One)

“Do you see that?” The old magician was standing behind Du Wei for who knows how long, but his tone was very bitter as he spoke: “I saw those things two hundred years ago, at this exact spot.”

“You and Semel came here?” Du Wei bitterly asked: “two hundred years ago?”

“Yes, in search of Aragon’s inheritance two hundred years ago. Unfortunately, I didn’t have the prophecy with me at the time. In the end, I couldn’t open Aragon’s treasure and had to go back empty handed.” The old magician whispered, “Two hundred years ago, I already saw those bones at the northern foot of the mountain.”

“They are..... What?” Du Wei puts forward his question.

“They are the legendary races exiled by God during the ancient periods. Originally, they lived alongside the human race on the Roland Continent, but later on, they betrayed god and was exiled to the north. Once they left the Roland Continent, these races traveled to the northern lands, passed the Holy Mountain, and continued onwards to the unknown lands past this point. No one really knows what lies beyond the Holy Mountain, but one thing is certain, that place is where the exiled races dwelled. As for the dragon clan, they are here to guard against those in the land of the exiled. Since ancient times, members of the exiled races will try to return, but none were able to make it past the Holy Mountain. If by the odd chance, one of these beings does make it past the Holy Mountain, they wouldn’t make it far..... Awaiting them afterwards is the

terrifying snow storms of the 'Forgotten Ice Field', as well as the freezing cold, ice covered forest filled with magical beasts! Based on these obstacles, the exiled races can never return to the Roland Continent!"

The old magician spoke as he pointed towards the bottom of the mountain: "Those bones, all of them belonged to powerful individuals of the exiled races. By relying on their immense strength, these individuals tried to bypass the barriers set by God, but all of them failed. In the end, they were killed by the dragons stationed here on the Holy Mountain."

Du Wei's eyes gleamed with wonder, "How do you know all of this?"

"The dragon chieftain told me." The old magician smiled: "I've been here once two hundred years ago.... The chieftain is a very complex being. Once you meet him, you will understand why."

On the third day of their climb, the group finally reached the top of the mountain.

On top of the Holy Mountain was an enormous cave. From Du Wei's perspective, this cave was just like a hive with seven to eight openings. From inside the cave, a faint dragon's roar could be heard while a group of dragons flew over their heads like sentinels.

The sight and hearing of Dragon's are far superior to other organisms. So on top of this flatly laid out ice field; they could clearly view any sudden movements as far as 10 miles away!

The gigantic black dragon and supposed sentinel leader has already been impatiently awaiting the group. With a low growl: "You're too slow! The Chieftain is already waiting for you!"

Once finished, the dragon pointed one of his paws towards the biggest cave entrance: "Go! But don't go anywhere you are not supposed to!"

The cave was very big, or it's better to say it's super big!

Seeing such a scene seemed to have a strong impact on Du Wei. The metallic mountain of high purity seemed to be hollowed out and faint bursts of wind could be felt coming from the inside.

Upon entering the cave, the insides weren't even dark. On the contrary, there is even a ring of light!

Even more surprising, the walls were embedded with all kinds of valuable treasures: gold, gemstones, and a variety of shiny objects reflecting a brilliant light!

Du Wei thought this was strange, but the old magician ignored all of this and pulled against him tightly to lead the group further into the cave.

After coming all the way to the deeper sections of the cave, what welcomed them was a huge iron gate with a cross shaped winch in the front and a chain dangling above the door! Although unsure of the chains use, it had an obvious faint black coloration to it.

Soundly asleep next to the huge Iron Gate was an enormous black dragon lying on the ground. Each snore it made was comparable to a loud thunder strike and each puff of air it breathed out to create fierce blasts of wind in the air!

Coughing once to clear his throat, the old magician shouted: "We, human friends, come looking to seek an audience with the dragon chieftain!"

The Dragon did not respond.

This time, the old magician's cough was much louder: "Oh great dragon chieftain, this old human friend came to see you!"

The Dragon still did not respond.

The old magician was somewhat angry now. Despite being the same height as the dragon's head, the old magician walked over in big strides and stood at the edge of the dragon's mouth. Taking out his wand, he lightly pointed it at the dragon's nose and spoke: "I haven't seen you for two hundred years, yet a guy like you is still such a heavy sleeper?"

Wiggling his nose a bit, the dragon took in a deep breath of black smog and suddenly sneezed with its jaws wide open!

ROAR!!

This one giant ROAR nearly deafened Du Wei's eardrum and under the intense hurricane like winds, the hat on top of the old magician's head was sent flying

into the air!

“Who is it that woke me?!” The Dragon shook his head in annoyance and opened its big yellow eyes. Staring at the old magician, its eyes turned a few times before finally releasing some of the tension in its voice: “You, you are....”

“I am a human being and your friend. I am here to seek an audience with the great dragon chieftain.”

Finally, completely awake, the dragon stood up with its massive body and looked down at the insignificantly small person in front of it. Puffing out a cloud of gas from its nostrils, the dragon suddenly cried out: “I remember now! You came here the last time!”

“Yes.” Carefully reorganizing his hair, the old magician continued speaking: “Honored guard, please open the door and allow us passage to meet your chieftain.”

“I don’t like you.” The Dragon Roared: “I hate being woken up from my slumber!”

“But I’m in a hurry.” The old magician shrugged: “Also, I have a contract with the dragons. So I have the right to seek an audience with your chieftain.”

“Fine then..... According to tradition, you must first make it past me!” With that said, the dragon stood up with its wings spread open and a grin on its face.

Can it be that we need to first start a fight?

If they must start a fight inside the cave, a magician is not suitable for fighting in an enclosed space. Already quietly standing behind the old magician, Hussein was ready at a moment’s notice. Out of everyone in the group, he was the strongest in close melee combat, so it is only natural that he is the first one to deal with this dragon.

But the old magician only turned his head to smile back at Hussein. Waving his hand, the old magician indicated with his hand movement that force was not necessary. Then, looking back at the dragon, he asked: “So, old rules?”

“Yes! As long as you can use your wisdom to defeat me, I will open the door!” The dragon growled: “Those who win can pass, but those that lose must stay



outside the door!”

Du Wei was stunned. Both Du Wei and the old magician gave each other a glimpse at the same time: “You get it now? This is a fight of intellect! This individual dragon is the dragon chieftain’s leading dragon guard. Over seven hundred years ago, he was already the dragon clan’s number warrior! But instead of seeking power and strength, he is seeking wisdom.....”

Talking up to this point, the old magician suddenly blinked at Du Wei.

Sure enough, the Dragon immediately roared proudly at the statement: “Yes! I am already the dragon clan’s number one warrior! Now I want to pursue the title of being the dragon clan’s ‘number one wisest dragon’! State your question! Unless you beat me, don’t ever think of getting inside!”

Compete with the Dragon..... On intellect?!

Du Wei was stunned.

The old magician has already turned around and pulled Du Wei over. Pushing him a bit, the old magician smiled: “I know you are very smart, so you’re on your own now! The game is set by two wins out of three sets. As long as we beat him twice, we may enter.... Otherwise, don’t even think of getting inside.”

Du Wei sighed: “So it must come to this?”

The dragon beats him to the punch. Holding up its massive head, the dragon roared with pride: “This is my rule!!”

“Fine then.” Du Wei thought for a moment, then nodded.

Competing with a dragon on intellect....

Dragons are widely recognized as higher organisms and even more advanced than humanity, but humanity thought otherwise.

The Dragon race had a longer life span, higher intellect, and wielded powerful strength. With higher intellect and longer life span, dragons had more time to learn new things than a human does in a lifetime.... Theoretically speaking, all these points give dragons a better advantage over humans.

But, all of this is just a theory.

“So, what are the rules in this competition?” Du Wei walked to the front of the dragon and smiled.

“It’s easy, as long as the question you raised can stump me.” The Dragon proudly smiled: “But I need to remind you, do not underestimate my intelligence! I have fully mastered your so called human intelligence! Lord Chieftain has gone to the human world before and learned a lot of things about your human civilization. He taught me a lot! Human, don’t think of deceiving me with your human trickery!”

“Any questions?” Du Wei blinked.

“Any questions!” The Dragon nodded.

“Okay.” Du Wei was smiling maliciously: “Then I’ll start the question.”

Gently coughing, Du Wei lightly laughed: “My topic is this, a very simple mathematical problem: Assuming, there is a row of houses. The first house had one person; the second had two people, the third had three people, and the fourth had four people..... Continuing like this, the next house would always have one more than the previous house! My problem is this, how many people in total are there after the one thousandth house?

1 house = 1 Person

2 houses = 2 Person

3 house = 3 Person

4 house = 4 Person

Combining everything, how many in total is there by the 1000th house?

## The 97<sup>th</sup> chapter “Dragon clan’s Cave” (part two)

The Dragon was stupefied!

Then it started to count its fingers, and when it wasn’t enough, the dragon started to count its toes. But very soon, even that wasn’t enough. Turning its big yellow eyes towards Du Wei, the dragon looked like it wanted to ask if he could borrow Du Wei’s fingers..... (I had a good laugh at this point.)

Du Wei had trouble holding in his laughter as he watched the painful expression of the Dragon clumsily counting his fingers and toes: “Well then, can you figure out the answer?”

“.....” The dragon was suddenly enraged: “This is a lie! Impossible! This topic, how can anyone figure out the answer! And..... And..... Once you count up to the thousandth house, there will be a thousand people packed inside! Where in the world would you find such a house?”

“Ch, our human palace can. Let alone one thousand people, even with ten thousand people, it is not a problem.” Du Wei Smirked: “Oh honored dragon guard, can you answer it or not?”

“This..... Is not a problem! This is a lie! No one can work this out! You would need at least one year to count it all!” The dragon’s confusion was turning into rage: “Not even you can answer the question, what right do you have to ask me of this!”

Du Wei did not bother quarreling with him. Laughing in a ‘HeHe’ manner:

“Really now?”

Crouching down on the floor, he quickly drew something onto the surface of the ground. Once finished, he looked up towards the dragon and answered: “The total is five hundred thousand and five hundred people.”

“Five hundred thousand and five hundred people?” Sweating profusely, the dragon desperately tried to confirm the answer in his mind: “I don’t believe it, how can you possibly work out the answer! You must be making this up!”

With a straight face, Du Wei continued: “The topic was raised by me and I also managed to answer it. Now only you can’t answer the question.... Do you want to go back on your words? Is this the dragons so called pride?”

“.....” Tongue tied at the insult, the dragon angrily screamed out loud, then growled unwilling: “Fine! Cunning man, consider it your win! You win! You may enter!!”

Angrily staring at the old magician, the dragon spoke: “Now... Your turn! You cheated me the last time, but don’t think you will be able to fool me this time!”

Watching the dragon with a sinister smile, the old magician said: “Okay, you ready? Then here I come.... This time, my problem is very simple. Humanity’s simplest game: Rock, paper, scissors.”

Subsequently, the old magician gestured out his hand to point out the rules. He then laughed dismissively: “To be honest, I don’t think you can possibly beat me. So in order to reduce the level of difficulty, you only need to beat me once out of ten tries. Can you? Otherwise, you’ll have to let us pass.”

The results..... In the end was obvious.

Du Wei thought he was evil by using his previous life’s mathematical knowledge to bully the creature, but the old guy was even more devious!

Rock, paper, scissors?

Du Wei was laughing so hard, his belly nearly turned inside out.

Dragon claws only had two fingers! Two fingers!

In other words, no matter what the dragon used, he could only put out rock with a clenched fist and a scissor with an open hand.... No matter what, it wasn’t

possible for the dragon to use paper!

The old magician also didn't want to win, so he churned out rock ten straight times. This action enraged the dragon so much that he was shouting with anger.

"Hey, we won twice now! You should open the door and let us in." Du Wei said.

Sighing helplessly, the dragon moved his huge body towards the Iron Gate and rotated the cross shaped winch on the door. Hearing a 'clickety' sound as the chains rotated, the iron gate was slowly pulled up.....

"Go on then!" Finally giving up, the dragon glimpsed at the two: "Next time! Next time I won't lose to you! I will ask the Chieftain for permission to travel the human world and learn of their wisdom!"

After the group passed through the iron gate, Du Wei could still occasionally hear the angry sounds of the dragon shouting in the back.

"That guy is the number one warrior of the dragon clan, but his personality just likes to mess around." The old magician faintly smiled: "The last time I came, I played him for a fool.... But it was kind of fun."

"I just think he's adorable." Du Wei shrugged: "But comparing the wisdom of dragons and humans, their kind simply doesn't work out very well."

"This is all just a joke." The old magician said it with a smile: "Even if he did mess around and held us back, the chieftain would have summoned us in the end. However, it is in your best interest to humor the guy because his strength is the real deal. If you want to have any future dealings with the dragon clan, you best remember this point."

"In the future?" Du Wei frowned.

But the old magician didn't go on.

After passing through the iron gate, the direction of the passage headed straight downwards.

On both sides of the cave, the walls had countless little cracks with flashing jewels embedded inside. Sighing at the unknown amount of treasure in front of him, it seems the legend of dragons favoring shiny objects is true.

The cave passageway continued to narrow down more and more as they walked deeper inside. After coming out of an ending, the group found themselves standing in front of a domed shaped Hall.

Compared to human constructions, this Hall seemed much more simple and crude in comparison to Medusa's palace. The only redeeming feature was the colorful gemstones embedded into the surrounding walls, most likely used as a decoration.

What surprised Du Wei was that a chair was kept in the middle of the Hall and the size was similar to that of a human's body!!

Sitting on the chair was a male adult with a body no different from an ordinary human.

Looking up, his face was covered with a beard and the only thing he had on was a set of robes.

The only thing that could possibly highlight the fact that he was part of the dragon clan was the horns on top of his head.... But to his surprise... The horn on the left side seemed to be cut off by something.

"This gown was originally gifted by me." The old magician whispered these words into Du Wei's ears, and then the old magician suddenly burst out laughing as he marched forward with open arms: "Old friend, it's been two hundred years, but we finally meet again!"

This dragon chieftain didn't look as happy as the old magician. Only letting out a 'hum' sound from its mouth, the dragon chieftain yawned as he stood up from the chair: "Alas, I see you again. It has been really boring these days, so seeing you again is also a good thing. What interesting news did you bring me this time?"

This human formed dragon came up to everyone... but Du Wei couldn't sense any of the oppressive nature of the dragon race!

It is as if this guy had no power whatsoever. But if you were to use your senses to explore around, you will notice the endless void like that of a deep ocean!

Even his facial features looked ordinary. If not for the set of horn on the head... One would easily mistake this fella as a normal human being that couldn't

garnish the slightest bit of attention.

Even his set of eyes looked droopy and weak.

Du Wei didn't have the habit of judging a person on their appearance, but this old fella just looked so ordinary and trivial. For this person to be the dragon chieftain, Du Wei couldn't stop himself from showing a hint of surprise.

"Old friend." The old magician coughed loudly: "The reason we are here is to complete the contract with the dragon clan.... I have brought the one to open the secret chamber!"

Upon hearing these words, the eyes of the dragon chieftain had a strange glimmer of light in them! Gazing around, the old fella looked at Du Wei and the others beside him.

Then he laughed in an odd way: "Oh, really? You found him? Is it one of these companions you brought along with you? Could it be this beautiful Queen Medusa, or this proud Saint Knight? Oh, let me see... Could it be this young boy?"

With only these very common words, Du Wei no longer dared to belittle this Dragon Chieftain!

It seems that with only a simple glance, this guy was able to see through Medusa's true identity and the true power of Hussein!

The old magician ponders for a moment, and then looked at Du Wei: "You come over here."

Du Wei took a few steps forward and stood there while the dragon chieftain examined him. After a moment, his eyes had a hint of surprise: "Oh, this young noble is the one you found? His body does indeed have the presence of the devil, but his strength is too weak.... You are certain he is able to pull out the thing left by Aragon?"

When the dragon chieftain was examining him, the gaze he was getting made him feel very uncomfortable. This guy may look ordinary; but Du Wei felt completely naked standing in front of this guy..... With just a glance, it seems like this person is able to completely see through him!

“All right, I’ll go get the key, but if you can’t open the door this time, you should know the end result.” The dragon chieftain quietly spoke these words before ignoring everyone and turned around into one of the many passageways behind the hall.

After waiting for the dragon chieftain to completely leave them, the old magician turned around and gave a serious glance at Du Wei: “What has happened to you? You look like you’re occupied by something.”

Du Wei said nothing.

The old magicians took in a deep breath: “Is it because you are disappointed with the dragon chieftain’s appearance?”

Du Wei thought for a bit: “I’m just surprised.”

“Put away your surprise!” The old magician spoke in a solemn tone: “Du Wei, I hope you will.... No, not hope, but required! I require you to show a certain level of respect when facing this guy! I’m not joking because this guy is not someone you want to mess with!”

Du Wei immediately nodded: “Of course, the chieftain of the dragon clan, how can a guy like that be a good person to mess with. I understand.”

“That’s good if you understand.” The old magician then glanced at the passageway the dragon chieftain took, and then whispered: “I must tell you, this guy is a madman. Don’t think his temper is good. If he gets enraged, no one can suppress him, at least no-one here! Also, this guy hates humans, so it is for the best not to provoke him.”

After a pause, the old magician continued speaking: “You all see the horn on top of his head? One of the horns is cut off.”

Du Wei and Hussein both nodded.

“That is cut was made by Aragon!” The old magician spoke in a cold manner: “But I must tell you, this guy is probably the only person alive still that had fought with Aragon! Moreover, even with Aragon’s strength, he wasn’t able to kill this person! This person has a weird personality, if his attitude changes, no one present here can stop him, at least none of us here!”



## **The 98<sup>th</sup> chapter “The Dragon Patriarch’s hatred”**

“Even you can’t?” Du Wei gasped.

“Me?” The old magician smiled: “I can’t. At least in this world, I think there are only two people with enough magic and strength to stand up to him. The first is his Majesty the Pope, the second is the President of the Magician’s Union.”

Du Wei did not understand the old magician’s meaning.

But then the old magician smiled wryly: “The two people I just named ‘may’ have strength higher than the chieftain of the dragon clan, but that was only my opinion because two hundred years ago, I had a fight with him. Using only half his power, the dragon patriarch nearly took my life then and there. I still believe I would have perished two hundred years ago if I wasn’t carrying the contract between Aragon and the dragon clan!”

Just when the old guy finished speaking, the words of the dragon chieftain had reached their ears from the deeper parts of the cave.

“You’re too modest, my friend.”

The dragon patriarch had already returned with a narrow looking box in hand as he walked slowly towards them while slightly smiling: “I would like to correct two errors. First, the others I don’t know, but I think your strength is above the President of the Magician’s Union. Second, the strength of his Majesty the Pope is not ‘maybe’ above you, but definitely above you.”

“How did you know?” Du Wei questioned.

“Because I’ve been to your human world..... Transforming into this appearance, I visited the human world and learned of your culture and civilization..... Because I’m curious, what exactly is the human world to be able to produce such a strong person like Aragon! I would travel to the human world every one hundred years, but in the end, I’m always disappointed! Why? Because it seems that even the race with the largest population in the world could not produce another powerful expert of Aragon’s standard.” The dragon patriarch spoke with a light voice: “I have secretly challenged both the President of the Magician’s Union and the Pope of the Temple of Light before. So my friend, you do not have to be so modest, I think among the human mages in the world, your strength can easily take first place in the rankings..... That is if the Pope never leaves the temple.”

With that said, he readily threw the box down and his tone gradually cooled down: “Well then, take the key and go! My old friend, you know where the secret chamber is! Open it and take away the things stored inside, then leave my territory! You did get one thing right; I still hate humans, especially that scumbag Aragon!”

With that said, the dragon patriarch snorted and turned around to walk away.

Just when he was making the ‘humph’ sound, Du Wei suddenly felt a sound piercing into his ears, as if an invisible hand was mercilessly clutching his heart. Then he could feel the blood pressure in his entire body boiling up!

The sound was like a heavy hammer!

Du Wei’s expression immediately turned white, and the view in front of him suddenly turned black as he was fainting! Fortunately, the old magician pulled against Du Wei with his palm pressing against his chest. After a shining light from a magic spell, Du Wei was able to take in a deep breath and slowly return to normal.

But then, Hussein’s face suddenly changed as he stood behind the two. The proud Knight opened his mouth and spit out a mouthful of blood from his mouth!

The knight looked shocked. Watching the dragon patriarch slowly disappearing behind one of the cave passageways, Hussein, then asked with clenched teeth’s:

This.... What is this.”

“This is Draconian magic.” The old magician sighed: “He already restrained himself.”

“Why is she all right then?” Du Wei pointed towards the quietly standing Medusa.

“Because this chief only hates humans.” The old magician smiled wryly. He took one look at the angered face of Hussein: “Hussein, don’t expect that you can challenge him right now! Believe me; even if you’re a Saint Knight, there is still a large gap between your powers!”

The little bit of draconian magic cast out by the dragon patriarch sure is powerful. Under the light affinity spell of the old magician, Du Wei’s disturbed spirit and boiling blood inside his body had finally started to gradually calm down. As for Hussein, the knight had suffered a huge humiliation after spitting out a mouthful of blood. If not for the old magician’s warning, the proud knight would have probably gone the dragon patriarch to demand a duel.

“It seems the dragon clan’s tolerance is not so good.” Du Wei smiled wryly: “It is all because Aragon suppressed the dragon clan in the past, causing them to lose face. So by hating Aragon, he ended up hating all of us too?”

The old magician frowned and then whispered, “I told you so before, the chief is a complicated guy, From his mouth, he may say he hated Aragon the most, but in fact, he may not only have hatred towards Aragon. From his actions so far, there may be a subtle feeling of respect towards Aragon, after all, he was the only person able to defeat this dragon patriarch. Maybe it is due to this complex feeling that caused him to quietly sneak into the human world.”

After these words, the old magician cried out: “Well then, don’t waste time; finishing our business is more important! Follow me; we will leave this spot and go see Aragon’s secret chamber!”

Then everyone walked out of the Hall while following the old magician. The old guy seems to remember the route very well, and after walking through a passageway, they were faced with numerous forks in the road. Despite the lack of information, he didn’t hesitate for even a moment and he led the group through many left and right turns.

Along the way, Du Wei was surprised by some strange “things” he saw.

Just after passing through the caves main passageway, (to tell the truth, Du Wei wondered if this was not actually a mouse cave. The cave of the dragons extended in all directions, with forks everywhere in the roads.) There are some tall and short rocky platforms and all of these rocks are made out of the unique black metal found only in the Holy Mountain. Lugged on top of the platforms sharp metal tips are skulls of different sizes!!

These skulls came in all manners of different shapes, but what was the most puzzling of all was that none of the skulls seemed to be that of a human!

Every skull placed on top of these platforms varied and some were still wearing helmets of a peculiar style, but they did have one similarity: Du Wei could see all of these skulls were screwed down onto the rocks!

It is not certain how many years have passed, but luckily the temperature in the cave was cold and dry enough that the skulls weren't decaying from moisture. If one were to pay even closer attention, you could just barely make out their original facial appearance!

So, the things that Du Wei saw: The skulls are three to four times larger than the average person, from their facial features and shape of their bones, their appearance seems to be like that of a cat, and the residual skin texture could still be seen from the dried skins..... It was scary enough to be looking at the flat mouth, nose, and ears on top of their skulls..... But what was even more terrifying are the platforms sharp tipped edges piercing right through the skulls necks and coming out of their mouths, this scene was especially scary!

While some of the other skulls had a very long mouth with two nearly unnoticeable holes above the mouth, presumably the nostrils. As for the ears, they were very small.... From the shape alone, it is likely these beings had a similar appearance to that of cattle's, such as a horse.

Some skulls even had long jaws like that of a crocodile. Occupying two thirds of the skull, the teeth were distributed on the upper and lower jaw. No matter what, it is not possible for a human to have teeth's like that/

Seeing the skulls, Du Wei suddenly recalled the vision of those mummies at the bottom of the mountain. This caused his heart to skip a beat! Not knowing how

many years of weathering these skulls had endured, it was obvious their skins have dried up. Although there was no evidence of decay, their looks were abnormal. This was especially true for the unclosed eye lids because it was revealing the empty eye sockets.....

Of course, there are a few that looked very similar to humans. These skulls were slightly smaller and even more slender than a normal human. From the skull size, Du Wei speculated the body size of this race was much smaller and thinner than the ordinary person, but 'they' were the most pleasing to the eyes among all the skulls. Even though the weather has caused the heads to dry up, the skulls still looked vividly alive. From the contours of their face, their features were clearly refined and well-proportioned. Then there were the long pointed ears.....

"These are the Elves." The old magician appropriately reminded him in a low voice: "Those big guys over there are the Orcs."

"You knew?" Du Wei turned his head to look back at the old magician.

"Yes, these are the exiled races." The old magician whispered.

The races that were exiled, Du Wei repeated this sentence in his heart with some emotion. Walking slowly through the sharp rocks, what welcomed them after coming out of the passageway was a bottomless abyss!

The abyss was located on the hillside of the Holy Mountain and the surrounding area was very narrow. But from where Du Wei was positioned, he could see a very big cave entrance and a protruding rock extending above the abyss, thus forming a large platform.

Below the abyss, there was a faint howling wind that was mixed with a haunting aura. Listening closely, one could hear the shrill cries of sadness mixed in the wind. This is enough to send chills into anyone listening!

"This place is the sacrificial altar." The old magician pointed across the abyss at the protruding rocks: "That thing there is the altar. The dragon clan would deposit the skulls of those they killed around the abyss and lunge them on top of these rocks. Then, once every one hundred years, a sacrificial ceremony would take place. By taking one of the skulls around the abyss, they would then hold a ceremony to throw the skull into the bottomless abyss. And then.... Looking

forward to the next century, they will continue killing the powerful experts coming in from the north and repeating this process for eons to come.”

“What meaning is there in doing all of this?” Du Wei was puzzled.

“The mission of the dragons is to guard this place, but this mission was already in place for who knows how many years! Even before the age of Aragon, the dragons were already here! Think about it. On the surface, the saying is to guard, but in fact, isn’t the dragons also being imprisoned by such a mission? Isn’t this mission equal to forever limiting the dragons to this place? What difference is there between this and a prisoner? So, when the dragons received the mission from God, they were not willing. So God gave them a glimmer of hope, a hope to completely rid them of such a mission. That hope was a condition.”

“What condition?”

The old magician had a weird look in his eyes as he glanced at the bottomless abyss below his feet. In a whispering voice: “God and the dragons agreed that if one day they were able to fill this abyss with enough skulls of the evil races, then their mission would be considered complete! Once that happens, the dragon clan would be free to live their lives without being bound by the mission!”

Fill this abyss with skulls..... Du Wei took a look at the bottomless darkness in front of him.... How many skulls would that take?!

# The 99th Chapter “Despicable Aragon” (Part One)

After finally bypassing the terrifying abyss, the group now stood in front of a cave entrance.

Unlike all the other locations, this entrance was vaguely different. The first difference was that it was sealed with a rock and at the same time, a symbol was vaguely inscribed onto the surface. Du Wei only needed to take one look before immediately recognizing the ‘Thorned Flower’ symbol.

Du Wei had only seen this badge symbol in some old literature because in the current Roland Empire, the Thorned Flower symbol that was used is very different from the one in front of him. The reason behind this was because the Royal family had been replaced several times over the course of a millennium. From the Thorned Flower symbol of Aragon’s true descendants, to the Thorned Flower symbol of Aragon’s brothers, to the current Thorned Flower symbol of the Augustine, all of these symbols underwent several changes and modifications.

And from Du Wei’s vast collection of knowledge, he could easily distinguish the symbol in front of him belonged to the earliest version of Aragon’s time.

Opening the long wooden box given to them by the dragon patriarch, the old magician removed the contents inside and held out the ‘key’ for the secret chamber.

Unexpected to all, the so-called “key” was actually a horn!

Recalling the broken horn on top of the dragon patriarch's head, Du Wei immediately understood what was going on.

"Don't look at me like that; I didn't know the key was such a thing either." The old magician touched his nose with one hand, while his other is holding the so called key: "No wonder..... It is no wonder that....."

Two hundred years ago, the old magician once came looking for Aragon's legacy, but the dragon patriarch standing guard here would of course refuse him passage into the secret chamber, nor would he hand him the key because at the time, the old magician still didn't find the one from the prophecy. For this reason, the two ended up fighting over this matter. The result ended with the old magician leaving in regret.

"In order to make the Dragon patriarch hand over the key, there are two conditions. One is the contract with the dragon clan and the last time I came here, I only had the contract. Unfortunately, I didn't meet the second condition because I am not the prophesied person in Aragon's prophecy." The old magician smiles and handed Du Wei the Dragon Horn: "Take it, only you can go into this secret chamber. None of us can do this."

Under the encouragement of the old magician, Du Wei took the half broken horn and stood in front of the cave door.

In front of him, the stone carved Thorned Flower symbol was nearly the size of a basin. Examining the half broken horn in his hand, Du Wei had no idea how to use this so called 'key'.

If it is a key, then there should at least be a Keyhole?

Du Wei couldn't stop his complaints.

But where on this rock surface is there a Keyhole?

"How do you use this?" Du Wei looked back and questioned.

The old magician opened his hands and answered very simply: "Well, I don't know."

Don't know?

Du Wei rolled his eyes.



“Yes, I don’t know.” The words of the old magician annoyed Du Wei to no ends: “You are the prophesied person, so only you can open this door. It is destined by the prophecy. You will definitely be able to open the door. As for how to open it, I believe there must be a way.”

What kind of answer is that?

Du Wei endured his temper and carefully examined the rock surface with his hand. From the touch, this block of rock was rugged and irregular. The only smooth surface was the Thorned Flower symbol, but that was only smoothed out by someone using a sword.

Hold on.....

Carefully touching the rock surface, there seems to be a small bump in the middle of the Thorned Flower badge symbol. Du Wei gently pressed against the bump to see the bump get sucked into the wall and only to reveal....

Two little holes!

Two?

Du Wei hesitated, for he only had one “key”.

Moreover, when comparing the dragon horn in his hand to the two little holes, the size doesn’t seem to fit.

But Du Wei is not someone to be tied down by the normal way of thinking. Spending a moment in thought, his mind had a faint suspicion the placement and spacing of these two holes in the wall were just like that of a person’s eyes.....

Then under the curious gaze of the people behind him, Du Wei moved his head over to where the two small holes were and peered into them.....

Then the next moment, a miracle happened.

Two bright rays of powerful light shot directly into his eyes. Normally, when the eyes are exposed to such an intense beam of light, that person would be momentarily blinded!

But right now, Du Wei felt absolutely nothing and the only sensation he noticed was that his eyes were being exposed to a high concentration of light.

Despite the intensity of the light, there wasn't any sense of pain or irritation in his eyes, instead, there was only a very soft yet comfortable feeling passing through him. As if something ignited inside his body, the once comfortable feeling was replaced with some kind of mysterious power surging through his body. Looking through the two holes, Du Wei felt like his eyes could literally see through all of the underlying rocks.

Focusing his eyes, what he saw the next moment was a.... Illusion?

In front of him, different figures were flashing past his sight, but all of them are of women he had seen and known before.... There was the cute little stuttering Vivian, the violent ice beauty Joanna, the barefooted long robed Semel, and the long legged honorary knight Rolyann....

One by one, beautiful women continued to flash past in front of him... But why were they all females?

Just when Du Wei was starting to feel surprised, a tiny voice gently pierced into his heart: Aha, glamour eyes..... So Chris gave you such a thing.

Without waiting for Du Wei to regain his composure, he suddenly felt empty.....

Now, the several people standing behind Du Wei were shocked with wide eyes (of course, not including Medusa). Du Wei's body was like a ball of melting snow and ice, slowly "melting" into the rock and very soon, disappearing completely.

Du Wei found himself in the darkness, Yes, completely dark without any light.

But it was very strange because he could clearly see everything around him!

The feeling was wonderful, as if he was naturally born with night vision! Du Wei doesn't know how this happened, but he's certain this probably had something to do with that beam of light shooting into his eyes.

The place he was in now is a very narrow passageway, and behind him was a big piece of rock. But as to how he got past the rock, even he didn't know.

Looking in front, there was a strange mist of fog blocking his point of view.

Keep moving forward?

Du Wei instinctively felt the mist had a very strong risk of danger. Thinking for

a moment, he gently took off his hat and threw it into the mists.....

Zap

A subtle but clear noise could be heard. As soon as the hat was exposed to the fog, countless sparks of light appeared and shredded his hat into multiple smaller pieces!

This was no different from a mixer!

Du Wei drew in a gasp of air.

What am I supposed to do? Keep moving?

Du Wei didn't want the fog to shred him into multiple pieces!

It was at this moment, the voice came again:

(You have the key?)

Key?

Du Wei could not help but looked around himself, but there was nothing near him, only the Black Mountain. He exclaimed: "Who! Who is talking to me? "

(You have the key?)

Du Wei looked warily at the fog: "key? I have it!"

With that, he raised his hands while waving the half broken horn in the air.

What followed was complete silence. Du Wei waited for a while... But no reply came and the strange voice was gone.

Key?

The key.....

Looking at the horn in his hand, Du Wei clenched his teeth's and walked a few steps forward....

As soon as his feet touched the edge of the fog, Du Wei immediately felt a powerful force emerging from the fog! Then there was the sound of the boot's tip being cut off! Fortunately, his boots were big, so his toes were fine. The problem now was that they were exposed and barefooted. Quickly retracting his feet, he scolded:

“What the fuck! I have the key! But what fucking good is the key doing me!”

Du Wei quickly regretted his swearing!

As if he had enraged the fog in front of him, the originally unmoving fog suddenly dispersed towards him!

Du Wei lets out a frightful cry and quickly retreated backward, but in this narrow passageway, where could he possibly run to? Soon, he ran out of space to retreat!

Is this actually the place of Aragon’s legacy, or is it some kind of murderous trap!

Seeing the fog sweeping up to him, Du Wei sighed. Steeling his heart, he closed his eyes for the inevitable....

Let the heavens decide my fate!

Who knows how long has passed, but when Du Wei opened his eyes, he found himself still in one piece despite being enshrouded in the fog. Looking at the horn in his hand, the object was projecting a soft light enveloping his entire body. No matter how much the fog tried, it could not invade into the area covered by the illuminating light.

Relying on light to illuminate the path, Du Wei breathed out a sigh of relief as he looked at the torch like horn in his hand. With a relaxed expression, he continued walking forward into the unknown....

# The 99th Chapter “Despicable Aragon – Open Or Not To Open” (Part Two)

Through the fog, Du Wei finally manages to see the so-called “secret chamber”.

It’s neither as magical nor as expected of a place storing a ‘king’s sword’. What it really was is a boring and somewhat cold cave.

The only difference is that this cave is holding a very large and bulky stone coffin..... Well, at least from a modeling point of view, this thing was very much like a coffin!

“You are finally here? A lot slower than I thought.”

As he carefully studied the place, what he saw was very difficult for him to stomach. Just the size alone was very small. Comparing it to the bedroom in his home, this cave was even smaller by a few inches. Looking around, it doesn’t seem like there is any place to hide anything. All it takes is a glance to see the entire cave.

But Du Wei was completely shocked at suddenly having a voice sneaking up on him!

“Who the hell is it?” Du Wei bitterly asked as he looked around: “Think it’s funny taking in the darkness?”

“Very funny.” This voice sounded a little odd, but the most important thing is that the voice sounded somewhat familiar: “Because seeing your face like that is

very interesting.... Are you scared?"

Then a shadow started to emerge from the walls of the cave, and bit by bit, the figure slowly walked out from the mountain rocks.

"It's you?" Du Wei frowns, surprised at seeing the person in front of him. In a low voice: "Your kind was always so prideful, but to see the patriarch of the dragons to break his own oath."

The one to come out of the mountain walls did in fact look like the dragon patriarch with a broken horn!

"I broke the oath?" The Dragon patriarch sneered as he came out, and then just sat on top of the stone coffin in the middle of the room. Acting all carefree, he even waved his hand at Du Wei to come forward: "Come over here. I have been waiting a long time for this day!"

Carefully controlling his emotions, Du Wei knew very well he had no ability to provoke the might of this dragon chief. Even the old magician standing outside is no match for this guy, so Du Wei thought it was for the best to show some respect towards him as well.

"Well then..... You should at least tell me why you're here." Du Wei's tone was much milder now.

The Dragon chief raised his head with a hint of slyness in his eyes: "Aragon, I promised him I would help keep this thing safe until someone with the aura of the devil comes along. Other than such a person, no others are allowed to open the thing that he left behind!"

"I see, so why did you come in?" Du Wei sighed.

"Because this place is my land. This whole mountain is my territory and I can come and go as I please, including this secret room. Also, it states in our agreement that other than his inheritor, no one else are allowed open this thing, this includes me. Although I've been dying of curiosity all these years, I have never once sneaked a look at what he left behind, but...." With an open grin, the chief started laughing: "But in the agreement, there are no prohibitions stating I cannot stand beside you to observe, right?"

Spending a moment in thought, Du Wei smiled wryly: "You mean you can't

touch his things, but you can watch from the sidelines as I open this and see what's inside? Strictly speaking, you did not break your vow then."

"That's right." The Dragon Chief answered very simply

"This guy is gifted with the talent of being a politician." Du Wei stomached this thought.

But as it stands, he was in the other party's place and also the other party can easily destroy him with a flick of a finger. It would be wise to yield when he didn't have any strength to stand up for himself.

"If you want to see, then so be it." Du Wei curled his lips. And besides, in his heart, he really didn't give a shit about this so called destiny and life mission... Also, there is some psychological resistance inside him.

"Are you really the inheritor of Aragon's legacy?" The Dragons Chief looked at Du Wei with great interest: "There is a big difference between you and the guy outside."

"Who, the old magician? The undying old fool?" Anyways, since that guy is not around, Du We didn't need to continue being so polite. After enduring his anger for such a long time, he could finally release all his pent of steam.

"Yes, he respected Aragon like a God." The Dragon Chief smiled: "But you, it's like you do not take any of this to heart."

"What you said is not wrong." Du Wei nodded, making no effort to hide the thoughts in his heart: "Aragon being great is his thing. No matter how great a person is, I wouldn't want to suddenly one day have some random guy show up at my doorsteps, and then force me to give up my own life at great risk and danger. All this just to complete some life mission, not to mention it has been a millennium since Aragon's death."

Dragon Chief paused for a moment, and then laughed loudly: "Good words! But I have to correct you on one point. Aragon is not some really great person, he is a despicable villain!"

Du Wei said nothing, although he was reluctant to inherit Aragon's legacy, but to say Aragon is a lowlife..... Du Wei thought it was probably the dragon chief's heart still feeling sour over losing to Aragon.

“You don’t believe me?” A hint of anger could be seen in the dragon chief as he laughed coldly: “Then look at me right now, strange right? Don’t you think so? For a great dragon patriarch, why must I look like a human?”

“This..... You didn’t turn out like this because you transformed?” Du Wei carefully asked.

“You think this is funny?” The Dragon chief spoke coldly: “Do you think I like looking like a human..... Well, I do like to do so now and then because I can then slide into the human world unnoticed to travel, but that doesn’t mean I like to let my body turn into a mere human! I am of the Dragon race, a Dragon!”

This guy suddenly blew up in rage as he continued speaking. Standing up, he lets out a loud Growl, jarring Du Wei to the point of losing his stability: “I’m telling you, since Aragon laid his poisonous hands on me, I have only been able to stay in this form!! Now, I can no longer restore my body to its original form! This is the only form I can take on now!”

“.....”

Du Wei was speechless. Spending a moment in thought, he suddenly thought of something!

Could it be..... The fountain of youth? The water will permanently solidify any transformed form. That fountain of youth?”

After poor Gargamel drank from the fountain of youth, he is forever stuck in his mouse form.

The dragon patriarch.....

After all, Du Wei knew that Aragorn did in fact locate the fountain of youth!

“In those days, when that despicable person found his way here, I was still in my dragon form! He never could have beaten me! When he first came here, he said he is only here to challenge me! He started lying to me, saying he is only here for the challenge and to prove his status as the continents strongest expert! In the end, I accepted his challenge and we fought for three days and three nights. Humph, what strongest under the stars! These are all titles given by you humans. Even Aragon, the strongest of your kind cannot defeat me! After three days and three nights, we came to a draw..... But that was when he started to



enact his trickery!”

Listening to the roars of anger from the dragon chief, Du Wei couldn't help but sigh: “And then what? When he took advantage of you in your human form, did he trick you into drinking some kind of spring water?”

“That guy, he couldn't beat me, so he used words to offend me, saying, I am a Dragon and that we had God's gift. The body of the dragon race was originally stronger than that of humans, so even if we fought to a draw, it was because I took advantage of the difference between our bodies.... So out of anger, I transformed into that of a human and continued to fight with him!”

“What was the result?” Du Wei asked using a pitying tone.

Result, no question need because from the look on the dragon patriarch's face, it was obvious he lost.

“I did in fact lose to him after taking on the form of a human.” The dragon chief clenched his teeth:

“But he lied to me into drinking this spring water! In this way, I can no longer restore my body to its original form! In the end, I couldn't match his power! He threatened me if I refused his request, he will wipe out all of my dragon kind! He is indeed very strong, and after I took on this form, I could no longer compete with him..... For my people, I can only reluctantly accept a contract with that bastard!! If I didn't drink that water, the proud dragon clan would never tolerate being used by a human for a thousand years just to guard some secret room!” The dragon patriarch's voice was definitely angry now as he looked at Du Wei with an expression ready to swallow him whole: “And clearly knowing he is a believer in the devil, how can our dragon clan help him do something like that when we are so faithful to God! He used trickery to weaken my strength, and then he threatened me by force, leaving me no choice but to accept such a contract! This despicable person!”

For such a thing to happen....

While not willing to believe, but reality is spread out in front of him!!

Also, watching the dragon chief in front of him with his murderous aura, Du Wei suddenly thought of something horrifying!!

Sure enough.

“And now, thank you for coming, the matter can finally be finished.” Without hiding his intent, the dragon chief stared at Du Wei with his cruel and murderous smile: “The contract that I signed was a promise that I would help keep his stuff safe until one day the qualified person shows up to take it away.... But.....”

The dragon patriarch gently pinches his fingers as he smiled: “However, as long as you open this thing here, my contract is finished!! Aragon no longer has anything to restrain me! I’ll kill you and your companions! All the guys outside the door, I’ll kill them all! And.... This is not a breach of the contract!”

Looking at the dragon patriarch’s grin, Du Wei realized that he had encountered a seriously big problem!

Forcing himself to smile, his mind was thinking up strategies at lightning speed: “So, you have to watch me open this thing here and then kill me, this includes my companions outside?”

“That’s right.” Nodding, the dragon chief is definitely not kidding: “There is nothing stated in the contract that after it is finished, I cannot kill you. After everything Aragon has done to me, it is time for retribution!”

“.....”

Du Wei suddenly felt very wronged!

He even wanted to join the dragon chief in his swearing and say: “Fucking Aragon!”

In order to threaten the dragon clan to sign the contract you insulted these prideful beings! Now, they want me dead to vent their anger?”

Aragon, oh Aragon, you thought of everything but one, now you are going to get me killed!

“Come on, poor kid.” The dragon chief laughed in a cruelly cold manner: “Hurry and open this thing, I’m getting impatient.”

With that said, he lifted a finger. From it, a cold and frosty air surrounded the tip of the finger and gently formed into an icy cold blade. From the looks alone, it was reflecting a razor sharp aura....

Du Wei is certain, if he was to be cut by that ice blade, it would be very painful....

Already standing beside Du Wei, the look from the dragon chief was just like a predator looking a lost little lamb, ready to be slaughtered: "Come on, do it."

Du Wei was in chaos, desperately trying to think up strategies, but in the face of such an immense strength and foreign place, what other idea could he possibly come up with?"

Under the killing eyes of the Dragon Chief, Du Wei wanted to regret ever meeting the old magician, regret ever coming to this place, regret why he ever blackmailed Vivian, and regret going south instead of staying in the castle!

Back then if he didn't take the others south to play, then he would never have met Vivian. If he had never met Vivian, then he would never have met Joanna, then he would never have met the old magician. If all of this never happened, there was no chance he would have received the devil's horn and be kidnapped to the Frozen Forest.....

Finally, he wouldn't be in this secret room and be at the mercy of this dragon patriarch that wants to butcher him with a knife!

But is it not too late to regret now?

His hands already resting on top of the stone coffin, it should easily be open with a little push. But Du Wei was struggling inside, as if Hamlet's classic question is reverberating inside his heart.

Open, or not to open.... This is a problem.

In addition, there is a very serious request that he wanted to ask his majesty.

If there is a chance to meet Aragon face to face, Du Wei really wanted to ask him one thing: Can I fuck your mother? (Not what I expected from the author)

# The 100th Chapter “Aragon’s Heavenly Beast” (Part One)

Open or not to open?

Du Wei’s hands are already placed on top of the sarcophagus, and the dragon chief stood beside him with awe inspiring eyes.

Suddenly sighing, Du Wei then retracts his hands and even took a step backwards. With a straight back, he turned his head towards the dragon patriarch and smiled: “I suddenly changed my mind.”

“What are you talking about?” The Patriarch looked gloomy.

“I said I had changed my mind.” Referring to himself by pointing at his own nose: “I am a human and no more than 14 years old at that. The life span of a human has always been shorter than a dragon. The most I would probably live is at best a hundred years. With such a short amount of time, I still have many things I want to do, many things I need to complete, and many things to achieve in my life... So I don’t want to die yet – I haven’t lived long enough yet.”

“HA!” The Dragon chief laughed coldly: “If everyone can live by simply not wanting to die, then in this world, there wouldn’t be dead people.... Boy, just resign yourself to your fate. Aragon’s debt must be repaid by someone.”

“I’m not stupid.” Du Wei’s tone was tougher: “At least for now, before the unfinished business is complete, I am still under the protection of the contract signed by Aragon and the dragon clan! You can’t kill me! Just like two hundred years ago, you can’t kill that undying old foolish magician, right?! Until the unfinished business is completed, you can’t kill me... Otherwise; it is a breach of the contract! This way of doing things doesn’t match your usual proud way of doing things, right?” Speaking up to this point, Du Wei swirled his eyeball around, intentionally catching a glimpse of the dragon patriarch and deliberately stalling for time: “I heard the Dragons are a race that values their tradition very highly.”

Still holding the frosty knife in hand, the Dragon chief was shocked with amazement and doesn’t seem to know what to do.

“This problem is simple.” Pointing to the sarcophagus, “I open it and I die immediately. If I don’t open it, I won’t die immediately. Even an idiot knows how to choose.”

“But you will eventually have to open it.”

“Just wait then.” Du Wei casually perched himself on top of the coffin: “I’m in no hurry, not in a hurry at all.”

The Dragon chief looked like he was about to rage, but then a flash of thought crossed his eyes. In a sneering tone: “Then am I in a hurry? I have been waiting for nearly a millennium; giving it a bit more time doesn’t matter. Listen up, now that you are in this secret chamber, don’t even think about getting out unless you open this thing! You are merely a human and your strength is so pitifully weak. How long do you expect to last without food and water? For two days? Three days? The taste of starving to death is not a welcoming experience.”

Not conceding even an inch: “Then I could at least live a few more days. For a dying person, even a few extra moments are good enough, not to mention two or three extra days!”

With an amiable smile on his face, Du Wei spoke in a subtle manner: “But what if I ended up starving to death here..... Oh respected chieftain, think about it. The destined person ended up starving to death because of you, although this isn’t a breach of the contract, but..... In the future, no one would be able to open this thing anymore! Unless you are willing to forgo your pride and break the contract.... Otherwise, the contract can never be completed! Even if you were to wait another thousand years, or even ten thousand years! Your dragon clan will forever be burdened with this contract.... Don’t you think this choice is very wonderful?”

Du Wei sneered with cold eyes at the dragon chief.

Not opening it, then so be it, piss you off to the death! Want my life? All right! After this little master passes away, there will never be the day for your dragon clan to complete this contract!!

“You.....” Du Wei has truly incurred the patriarch’s wrath, a burning light shined in the dragon chief’s eyes: “You opening it or what! If you don’t open it now, I’ll kill you now!”

“You will then violate the contract and throw away the Dragon clan’s tradition, pride and dignity!” Du Wei held his head high.

“YOU!” The dragon chief was absolutely enraged. Suddenly palm striking the wall beside him, the noise oscillating back towards them was so powerful that it reached the entire mountain. From the single palm strike, the terrifying force it released was enough to create several small cracks in the mountain walls. Just the echoing noise vibrating back towards Du Wei is enough to make him dizzy.

“You’ll starve to death here!” The Patriarch continued to intimidate him.

“Then your Dragon race will carry this burden forever!” Clenching his teeth, Du Wei hanged on.

“！！” Cornered, the dragon chief suddenly yelled out loud in some language he couldn’t understand—presumably some kind of swearing word in Draconic tongue, Du Wei maliciously speculated

The chief’s face changed colors a few times, then stretching out his hands; he aimed his fingers at Du Wei and gently slashed at him a few times. After hearing a few sharp sounds in the air, all of the clothing on Du Wei’s body burst apart, leaving only his skin exposed.

Du Wei barely managed to keep his calm as he laughed in a ‘Ha Ha manner: “What are you doing? I’m not even a woman, what good will it do by taking off my clothes? Could it be the dragon chief likes the tune of it?”

Seeing all of the clothes on Du Wei’s body getting shredded into fragments, the dragon chief lets out a humph sound before waving his sleeves at Du Wei’s naked body. From the small gust of wind created by the dragon chief, Du Wei could immediately felt a biting cold invading his body. Not even a moment had passed before a subtle ‘Ka Ka’ noise could be heard from under him. Starting from under his feet, countless ice crystals started to appear and very soon, everything below his knee was enveloped in ice!

“Are you going to open it or not! Your human body is fragile, if you continue to insist, then after a little while; your leg below your knee will be lost forever. Even after it is defrosted, you can only amputate it!” The dragon chief clenched his teeth.

“One can still live without a leg, it is still better than not living at all.”

Du Wei clenched his teeth. While his legs are frozen in ice, the sensation he was getting is just like having numerous thorns subtly piercing into him. The numbness and pain alone are enough to cause the muscles on his face to stiffen.

“See how long you can last!” Coldly smiling, the Dragon chief then gently lifts his hand into the air. From the movement of his hand, the ice under Du Wei’s knee once again started to spread, reaching all the way up to his waist: “If you still don’t yield, then you will freeze! Not only will you lose your legs, I fear you won’t even be able to perform the duty of a man!”

Du Wei finally opened his mouth.

He did not yield.... Instead, he began to curse!!

“You’re a lizard with horns on his head and a face like a rat, bitch! Your ancestor curses your pimples to rot and fester! You are a narrow minded, perverted old lizard! Fuck, you are nothing more than a big footed snake! You lacked motherly and fatherly love when you are a child. Psychopath!! Even when you are small, you like to peek at your mother bathing, and peek at your father masturbating!

(Oh man I had a strong urge to change this part, but in the end I didn’t. Not sure if it was wise or not.)

The sequence of continuous insults sent the old dragon hitting the ceiling in anger, even the veins on his face popped!

The dragon chief did indeed travel through the human world before, but never once did he hear of such nasty cursing words?

You need to know, in this world, the street cursing slangs usually revolves around something simple like ‘jerk’ ‘shit’ ‘bitch’ and stuff, but who is Du Wei? He is someone that has inherited five thousand years of swearing knowledge from his previous world. When it comes to the diversity of swearing, the language of the east can easily take first place in the world! None of this can possibly be imagined by the people of this world.

Du Wei was cursing all the way from “spicy block mother” to “you are a turtle’s son” and even brought out “bang your godmother” to “kick your ass”..... From

ancient times to modern to china, the 'essence' of every dialect was extracted into his curses. From when the old dragon was still in his egg, to how he peeked at his own bathing daughter at five hundred years old.....

Du Wei was almost frozen to death as half his body was already submerged in ice. Due to the poor blood flow, his breathing was becoming weaker and his body was so numb, he could barely feel any pain. Even his face was starting to turn pale green, but the more he swore, the more he was mentally awake. As he continued to talk, his spit was flying all over the place and some even hit the old dragon in the face.

“You are an old dragon with rotten sores and a pus butt! If you dare then kill me, then for the exchange of my one life, your dragon clan will never shake off this burden! It’s worth it! Come on! Come on! Come on!!”

What kind of status is this dragon chief? Every person he encountered in his life would either be respectful or revere him. Anyone capable of meeting him would either be extremely powerful or of status, there is no way they would act in such a manner like what Du Wei is doing right now.

Du Wei was also on his last straw. The only reason he dared to spew such insults was because he knew the dragon elder can’t kill him. With this certainty, he would rather enrage the old dragon with the hope of him dying of anger.

“You! Boy, I’m dying of anger!!!”

Finally, a raging howl came rumbling out of the Holy Mountain. This noise pierced straight into the sky, and even the oscillating echoes were enough to cause the mountain to tremble in shock. Back inside the mountain caves, cracks along the walls were collapsing like caving hills. Even the old magician and the others standing outside the secret chamber turned pale at the sudden noise, unsure of what is happening.....

Being in such close proximity to the dragon chief, Du Wei immediately sprayed out a mouthful of blood upon listening to the raging howl. Within moments, his organs fell victim to extreme pain, causing him to black out completely.

Unsure of how long the time has passed, Du Wei faintly woke up to his surroundings. The only thing he could keep his mind focused on was the haunting pain of his upper and lower body. No longer encased in ice, he quickly



came to the realization that he was currently lying on top of the stone coffin. Turning his body around, he somehow managed to get up before spitting out another mouthful of blood. Standing beside him, the Dragon chief was breathing very heavily and eyeing him like a predator wanting to skin him alive and swallow him whole.

“You old..... Fuck, you are not a Dragon! You old bastard! You coward! If you have the ability, then go look for Aragon and duke it out to the death with him, why flaunt your shit down here! \*\*, Fuck you.....” Du Wei regained his composure in one single breath. Seeing the other party didn’t dare kill him and even went as far as to remove the ice encasing his lower body, he now even more certain the other party didn’t dare to harm him in any way. He must continue cursing while he can.

You! Haven’t you cursed enough yet?!” The old dragon was breathing so heavily who knows if he had heart problems. If he did, then he would be the first dragon in a thousand years to die of a heart attack.

“Enough? Of course, it’s not enough!” Du Wei was also very tired, but his blood continued to boil inside his chest despite shivering in the cold: “Too bad little master here can’t beat you, otherwise, I’ll skin your mother and rip out your veins!”

Seeing the tenacious will of Du Wei, the elder dragon helplessly shouted: “You can keep swearing in this place alone! Let’s see how long your lips will last before giving in!”

With that said he turned into the wind and disappeared, leaving only Du Wei alone in the secret chamber. Stiff from the cold, Du Wei sat there in the middle of the room wanting to scream out in agony at his own suffering.

It was at this time, a gust of wind swept past his flank and the red robed Semel appeared in front of him. With a horrified expression, she looked at Du Wei’s stuttering mouth: “The..... The dragon clan’s strength is so overwhelming!”

Du Wei grunted a glance at Semel: “Of course they are strong, otherwise, how can he be Aragon’s opponent? Crap, I’m going to freeze to death, hurry and lend me a hand.”

Semel nodded and with a flick of her fingers, all of his clothing was restored to

its original state. Although Du Wei was currently naked as he hurried to redress, but life was at stake here so he didn't care how he looked in front of Semel. After he is finished putting on his clothes, he spoke in a whispering tone: "We don't know when that old bastard will return, hurry and go warn the old fool outside. Make sure they leave this place immediately!"

Semel paused for a moment and Du Wei was somber as he spoke: "What are you looking at! That old bastard is not someone we can deal with! If they don't go, then everyone will die here! Although I'm not a good man, but I'm stuck in here already! There's no need to let them die in vain here with me! Go, go!"

Semel is after all a smart person, spending only a moment in thought, she immediately saw through Du Wei's intent: "Ah! You did it on purpose! You intentionally trashed the old dragon away, knowing I will come out afterwards! Isn't it?"

Du Wei smiled grimly: "Waste of words!! If I didn't get him to leave, how can I possibly talk to you under his surveillance! Quickly now, go out and tell the others! The old dragon is not a fool, once his temper cools down, he will come looking for me! Now is the only chance to escape! Go, go!"

Semel lets out a long sighing sound before stealthily leaving him in the secret chamber. Not knowing how the situation was proceeding, Du Wei simply knew his body was far too cold and he could barely put up with the chest and abdominal pain. Struggling to stand upright, Du Wei carefully performed a couple of the Star Dou Qi movement routines to warm up his body.

Empty from all four walls, the only thing of notice was the stone coffin under him. Just by looking at it, he couldn't stop himself from wanting to get a peek.....

It was at this moment, a sudden small voice quietly whispered into his heart.

(Open it! I have a way to deal with him!)

Surprised by the sudden voice, he cried out: "What stuff! AHA, you old dragon, you want to scare me into opening this thing eh?! Puff, like hell I would fall for such thing!"

The voice echoed in his heart again.

(I'm not that old bastard. I am right under your butt!)

These words fell into the very core of his heart. Du Wei was really scared now!

Jumping right off the sarcophagus, he looked at the thing in front of him with utter shock!

The thing inside is talking and not the old dragon messing around to fool him! At least with all his pride, the old dragon would never call himself 'old bastard'; he was certain of this at least!"

In the sarcophagus..... What the hell!?

# **The 100th Chapter “Aragon’s Heavenly Beast” (Part Two)**

Du Wei felt frightened.

From appearance, this may seem like a coffin, but Du Wei did not think the stuff inside would be a-“living creature”.

Since the era of Aragon, this thing had already been placed here for nearly a Millennium. Even if there is something inside, Du Wei thought it would most likely be something like a legendary artifact, a powerful magical item, or even the king’s sword of legend.

But now, there was suddenly a voice from the coffin!

After a pause, Du Wei clenched his teeth: “Are you a human or a ghost!”

The answer was (non-human, non-ghost).

Du Wei started to leak cold sweat: “What are you then?”

(Not a thing.)

HA HA! Du Wei wanted to simply laugh, but he could never laugh it out.

Just think, in this mysterious land of the dragon clan, you are stuck in a cold and dark secret chamber next to a coffin hidden away for a millennium..... With all these elements, can you still laugh?

Calming down, Du Wei began recalling the contents of the prophecy.....

I’ll be left with Aragon’s heritage and pull out the king’s sword..... What else?

Ah, Yes... The prophecy says I will get the help of his heavenly beast!

The heavenly beast left behind by Aragon?

Du Wei was a little nervous looking at the sarcophagus in front of him.

Heavenly beast? What could it be? Dragon? Most likely since this place is the land of the dragons..... However, Aragorn won't leave behind a dragon for him, would he? Seems unlikely.

So, a Phoenix? A behemoth? A snake hydra? But this thing is so small, they can't possibly fit into this sarcophagus.

Coughing to clear his throat, Du Wei spoke with a somber voice: "Are you sure I can open this sarcophagus? The old dragon said once I open this, I'll be dead."

(I told you I can handle it, so... Please let me out of it.)

Let it out.....

Du Wei hesitated for a moment, but thinking about it, Aragon's "heavenly beast" shouldn't play him, right? Moreover, he's already at a dead end by now. Other than this, there doesn't seem to be any alternative.

Silently praying for a moment, Du Wei secretly sighed: Oh Aragon, Oh Aragon, I'll trust in you for once!

With that, Du Wei rolled up his sleeves and walked over to the sarcophagus with his hands holding the lid. Taking a deep breath, he pushed it to the side.....

Originally, Du Wei didn't have much strength left from his ordeals, and just then he spewed out a few mouthfuls of blood. It was inevitable that his effort would fail. Even with his all strength, the best he could do was move the coffin lid half way....

Looking inside, the weak rays of light revealed what the insides of the coffin looked like. Stacked inside are some pell-mell debris, bottles, and some unknown materials stored inside a box.

In addition, there was also a 'creature' about the length of a meter clumsily struggling to straighten its posture. Unfortunately, the opening of the coffin cover was still too small for its obese like body to move properly. Looking at Du Wei, the two beans like eyes of the creature kept blinking at him and coming out

of its pointed mouth, an elegant and polite voice started talking.

“Excuse me please, could you move this part a bit more?”

Getting a clearer look at this thing’s appearance, Du Wei wanted to go crazy!

Enduring the panicking feeling inside his heart, his fingers were trembling as he pointed towards the thing that came out of the coffin: “You! You are what Aragon left behind.....”

This thing is what Aragon left behind.... This heavenly beast?

Heavenly beast?

This guy is about a meter in length with a body full of fat, its back hairs are colored in black while the bulging fat belly in the front was white. Its sharp beak was red-orange in color and below its neck had a faint orange appearance.....

Perhaps the people in this world would be very surprised to see this beast..... But to Du Wei... It was all too familiar!

Gracefully flapping its wings, what emerged from the sarcophagus was a creature with an appearance of a noble gentleman.....

This..... This fucking thing is, actually, actually.....

A Penguin!!

A Penguin!!!

“Thank you, thank you for letting me out.” The attitude of this Penguin was very polite. Facing Du Wei, the creature nodded his head slowly and sighed: “I’ve been asleep in there for far too long.... But no matter what I did, I couldn’t get out.”

Widening his eyes, Du Wei stared at this heavenly beast in front of him and then shot out these words: “You’re a Penguin.”

The heavenly beast seemed to be very happy and excited at his words. Looking at Du Wei with much surprise, it vigorously waved its two ridiculously short wings: “Yes! That’s right! Thank the heavens, you know my name! Other than Aragon, others have always called me ‘the ugly bird’, but don’t they know? Penguins are the most elegant of birds!”

All right!

Inwardly, Du Wei added another name: A talking Penguin.

Even so, it is nothing but a Penguin!

Du Wei really felt like he was wrong

Really wrong! Wrong at trusting the bastard Aragon! To even think that whatever he left behind would be enough to deal with that old dragon!

Right now, he does not know whether to laugh or to cry.

Can you count on a Penguin (well, a talking Penguin), to deal with the thousand year old enraged dragon?

“You look very disappointed at seeing me?” The Penguin’s elegant voice brought Du Wei back from his wandering thoughts: “I can see your face; you seem to be very disappointed at seeing me.”

“No, I’m not disappointed.” Du Wei spoke with a straight face: “I am despairing, despairing!”

“Why?”

“Why?” Waving his arms around, Du Wei suddenly shouted: “Why! You ask me why? All right! That bullshit prophecy said I am the one prophesied. I will inherit Aragon’s legacy! Awaken the heavenly beast he left behind! Pull out the king’s sword! But now? I’m trapped here by that terrifying and powerful dragon! As soon as I open this coffin, he will immediately kill me! If I didn’t do as you asked, I would still have a few days to think and come up with strategies. But I listened to you and opened it! I thought Aragon would at least leave me with something useful! Maybe a mighty sword? Or a powerful magic item? At the very least a heavenly beast of great strength to help me! But now? My God! What do I get?

Near the end of his words, his voice was almost a groan: “I am about to face the butchering knife of the dragon clan’s strongest member.... And my help is only a talking penguin?! What the fuck is this!”

“I see.”

This elegant bird jumped down from the coffin and walked two circles around Du Wei before tapping one of his funny looking wings on top of Du Wei’s head:

“Please first calm down, anger is not good for one’s heart. Before you get a heart attack, can you first listen to what I have to say?”

“Go ahead, then.” Du Wei spoke bitterly: “At least I’ve never seen a talking Penguin.”

“First of all, my original owner is Aragon, but he left me in there. Before locking me up, he asked me to have a good night’s rest and left me these words. He will die after he leaves, so wait here for your new owner to come. Whoever can let you out, will be your new owner.” The penguin looked at Du Wei before spitting these words out: “Even though you may not look very graceful and can’t be called an elegant gentleman, but at least you brought me out.... So you will be my master from now on.”

“Thank you.....” Du Wei weakly curled his lips: “Well then, wait a moment and both servant and master can go meet Aragon.”

“Rashly interrupting others when they are speaking is an impolite behavior. No one ever teaches you what good manners are?” Showing some dissatisfaction, the penguin clears its throat with a cough before continuing to speak in a leisurely manner: “I can assure you, what you say won’t happen. The old dragon..... I think I have a way to deal with him.”

Du Wei was silent, only giving this guy a suspicious glance.

Perhaps..... There is a glimmer of hope, right?

Although only a Penguin, but at the very least it is something left behind by Aragon.... To be able to speak, and can live for thousands of years..... Maybe it has some uncommon ability?

“Could it be that you have some very powerful magic?” Du Wei carefully asked.

“No.” The Penguin lets out a sigh: “I’m a bird, though an elegant talking bird, but do you think a bird can wield a lot of power? I like art, music and all lofty things. Magic..... I have never learned such boring and useless stuff.”

(Someone get me a roast pit and I’ll make myself a roast penguin!!)

Du Wei patiently continued to ask: “So, your martial art is very strong? Like, whatever Stars Dou Qi technique and stuff? No? Holy Dou Qi? No? Are you a



Saint Knight? No! What can you do? 18 Dragon Palm strike? Nine Yang martial arts? Flower God manual? Black Dragon wave? Kamehameha? ..... You are nothing!?”

Du Wei did not say a word as the penguins proudly shake his head. In the end, Du Wei lost his temper, but the penguin continued to speak in a slow and bleak tone: “All the stuff you said or what rough people use. Holding a sword and swinging it around with a sweaty body is not my style! I’m a graceful animal, how can I possibly learn those stuff?!”

Du Wei: “.....”

As he and the Penguin looked at each other speechlessly, a terrible sound like you would hear in a hopeless situation echoed into their ears!

Filled with pride and murderous intent, the laughter of the old dragon chief echoed through the cave walls: “HA! Boy, you finally opened it! You finally opened it! YOU OPENED IT!”

The moment the sound reached them, the dragon Patriarch was already slowly emerging from the walls with a delighted smile on his face. Eyes flashing with excitement, the sneering lip of his carried a very thick layer of murderous intent!

Subsequently, the dragon patriarch then too noticed the penguin. Even for an ancient and powerful dragon like him, he couldn’t stop himself from being stunned by what he saw: “What is it.....”

Immediately after his initial stumble, he burst out laughing: “HA HA HA! Aragon! The so-called treasure he left behind is an ugly bird?”

Dissatisfied by his comment, Penguin protested with his weak voice: “Please allow me to correct you, Honorable patriarch of the dragon clan. What I am is not an ‘ugly bird’, I am a Penguin! This world’s most graceful animal!”

Already lost his patient, the dragon chief ignored all of his words. Already raising a hand, he smiled as he spoke: “OK! Youngster, since it came to this, the contract is done! The chains holding my body back is finally gone! Now it’s time we got even! Aragon used trickery to restrain me for a thousand years! Now use your life to pay it for this! Oh, although your companions had already ran away. Hmm, what method did you use to notify them? It seems I can’t look down on

you, kid! But it doesn't matter, I'll kill you here! And then I'll go out and kill them! Rest assured, it won't take much time! However, I would consider leaving the old mage with his life, after all, though he is a part of the annoying human race, but at least he is considered half a friend."

Du Wei is already sighing.

Since it had reached this point, his biggest playing chips are already gone. In the face of such a powerful entity, what other chance does he have against this dragon chief?

Already raising his hand, every nail on his fingers instantly grew longer and sharper!

"I'll throw your head into the abyss! Then dig out your heart and hang it on my body as jewelry!" The razor sharp knife like nails was already next to his neck. Letting out a sigh, Du Wei averted his eyes in resignation as he waited for death.

"Wait a minute!" The penguin suddenly screamed: "Lord Chief, allow me to say a few words?"

A spark of light flashed across the Dragon Chief's eyes. Thinking perhaps what other value does this thing has, he took one look at this "ugly bird" left behind by Aragon,....

"First....." Penguin sighed: "From an aesthetic standpoint, I feel regretful towards your taste of using someone's heart as jewelry....." Speaking up to this point, Du Wei felt the killing intent from the Dragon patriarch flew up a few levels.

"And then....." Penguin issued out a strange smile: "My previous master told me before I went to sleep; the dragon chief will most likely want to kill my new master..... So if I do encounter such a situation, I am to use this solution."

"Solution?" The Dragon chief smiles: "Could Aragorn climb out of his grave to duel?"

"Of course not." Laughing lightly, Penguin then spoke in a calm voice as he threw out a condition capable of changing the dragon chief's mind!

At this moment, even the steady hands of the dragon chief were trembling!

“You want to get back into dragon form? So..... I think we can negotiate.” The penguin said this calmly.